

COURSES OF STUDY

COURSES OF STUDY

EDITED BY _____
J. M. ROBERTSON.

THIRD EDITION—REWRITTEN TO DATE

Faciendi plures libros nullus est finis.

ECCLES. XII, xii.

LONDON:
WATTS & CO.,
5 & 6 JOHNSON'S COURT, FLEET STREET, E.C.4.

<i>First edition</i>	1904
<i>Second edition</i>	1908
<i>Third edition (re-written to date)</i>		1932

Printed and Published in Great Britain by C. A. Watts & Co. Limited,
5 & 6 Johnson's Court, Fleet Street, London, E.C.4

PREFACE TO THE THIRD EDITION

THOUGH the last edition of this handbook has been long out of print, inquiries for it have been so continuous that the publishers and the editor have been induced to undertake a new edition brought up to date, but still with an eye to economy. This has necessarily involved much inclusion of fresh matter, and considerable elimination of old; the number of works newly specified being nigh two thousand.

Experience seems to have justified the form of "Courses." As was explained in previous editions, the undertaking began as a series of articles compiled many years ago in response to the continual appeals made to the editor by readers of a weekly journal. A number of the editor's friends contributed; and he is glad to preserve some traces of their personalities. Publication in book form involved an attempt at still greater comprehensiveness.

The purpose being, however, not to compile anything like a series of complete bibliographies, but to provide private students with lines of guidance in a number of fields of non-professional study, order of arrangement of Courses was of minor importance, as any student may choose to begin on any one Course. It seemed reasonable, however, to present a certain schematic continuity of studies; and this is perhaps better secured in the present edition. As before, a beginning is made with Anthropology, which is now followed by the courses on Geography and General or Political History. Civilisation, in the older and specific sense of the term, seems best to be studied after some knowledge of History proper. But the student can choose his own path.

As in previous editions, no attempt is made to give more than general guidance in the study of the Natural or "Exact" Sciences. Indeed, the attempt has now been restricted. It is obvious that some, in particular, cannot be properly studied without practical

tuition and laboratory facilities; and inasmuch as some good judges hold that mathematics cannot be learned from books without oral tuition, any more than chemistry, it has been thought fit to drop the Course on Mathematics, Physics, and Chemistry. And seeing that, further, the pressure on space caused by the expansion of so many other Courses threatened to make the costs prohibitive, the same compulsions have dictated some further curtailments, though the Courses on Geology, Botany, and Biology have been retained, revised.

As these Courses of Study are designed for English-speaking readers in general, they deal mainly with books in the English language; though, as so many English people read French, references to books in that language are frequently given; and for national histories and national developments of philosophy and literature in particular native writers are of course cited in large number. The student need not be reminded that the acquisition of foreign languages—now made more easy by many books for home-learners—is a great help to a really wide knowledge. But we do not aim at an encyclopædia of learning; we simply offer a set of useful clues to the independent study of important subjects.

It may be necessary to explain, as before, that it would be impossible without additional volumes to give any such detailed guidance or information as some critics in the past called for on “literature” in the sense of *belles lettres*. The fact that the editor has spent much of his life in the critical study of *belles lettres* should absolve him from the charge of indifference on that side. Sketches or surveys of separate literatures, of literary periods, of world literature in general, and of literary forms, however, are all that can be indicated within the limits of our scheme and space. A mere series of Courses on the critical literature surrounding each of the great writers of the world would require at least a volume; and the four great fields of Fiction, Poetry, Drama, and Biography, viewed in detail and not merely in respect of their history as species, would each demand a volume on the scale of this. Besides, there is already a competent ‘Guide to the Best Fiction’ by E. A. Baker; and there are several books on Biography, to say nothing of the library on Poetry.

On the other hand, some guidance towards the principles of

critical science is supplied in the Course on *Æsthetics*. Always has the editor been faced by the contrary difficulties of covering many fields and of not attempting too much; and those who are moved to criticise on either side may fitly be besought to realise how great the difficulties are. Of special bibliographies there are many: of general surveys, accessible and serviceable to "the general reader," there appears still to be a lack. This being so, a new Course has been added to the present edition—that on 'The World-War and Post-War Problems'—and fresh matter on International Law has been added to Course LIV. At the same time, over two hundred topics have been added to the Subject Index.

Even thus, demur is likely to be made to the non-inclusion of an adequate Course on *ARCHÆOLOGY*. But the obstacle here is the same as in the treatment of *belles lettres*. It is difficult enough to compass a reasonably comprehensive Course on *ANTHROPOLOGY*, in view of the expansions forced on that class-term in the past generation. But an adequate Course on *ARCHÆOLOGY*—the vast specialist literature of "ruins, remains, and excavations," would again require a whole volume, in which the special researches made in all countries or regions should be geographically arranged. There would have to be as many Courses as countries. *ARCHÆOLOGY*, accordingly, has been only incidentally handled in the Course on *ANTHROPOLOGY*, and in the separate Courses on National Histories. In a word, this volume could not be made more than a general guide-book to selected studies.

As the original method of indicating books for beginners or unlearned readers by blacker type, and titles of admittedly standard works by spaced type, seems to have been found useful, it has been adhered to. The great increase in the number of books now mentioned has inevitably curtailed even the former amount of critical comment, and perhaps properly so, as one of the aims is to indicate the scope of divergence of opinions. Seeing, however, that all the books characterised have been examined either by the editor or by trusted critics or the qualified experts who have so kindly assisted him, it may be hoped that in this regard there has been no loss of utility, as against the greatly increased number of references.

Omissions to name particular books, now as formerly, should

not be taken as necessarily indicating disapproval, though that sometimes may be the cause. Either oversight or the compulsions of space or scope must too frequently lead to some disregard even of meritorious books; and the student will always in fairness remember that no pretence has been made of supplying him with complete lists. Books named there will guide him to many others. As all readers are aware of the existence and use of cyclopædias, frequent references to these would mostly be supererogatory.

The mere bulk of such a work as the great compilation entitled *The Best Books*, by the late W. S. STALLYBRASS, should satisfy anyone of the impossibility of offering complete book-lists in moderate space; and the facilities now offered to the reading world by public libraries permit of special consultation of that valuable collection, which constitutes a memorable public service by its esteemed compiler. The present editor desires to avow his own obligations to it, as well as to pay tribute to the incomparable industry of his old friend and exemplar.

At the same time the editor would venture to repeat his reminder to students that book-buying is one of the least questionable modes of personal expenditure, and that no form of study is so thorough as that which is made in leisurely re-perusals of a book always accessible. For this reason, save in the case of books believed to be out of print, publishers' names are always given—space being saved in the present edition by abbreviations of both firm-names and titles of series, of which abbreviations a list is given on page xi.

In a number of cases, dates of issue are not given for books known to be on sale by their publishers, as it is difficult to ascertain the year of the last editions.

CONTENTS

	PAGE
PREFACE TO THIRD EDITION	v
ABBREVIATIONS	xi
<i>A. MAN, HIS EMERGENCE, HABITAT, AND SOCIAL EVOLUTION</i>	
<i>COURSE</i>	
I. ANTHROPOLOGY (INCLUDING ETHNOLOGY) . . .	I
II. GEOGRAPHY	21
III. GENERAL OR POLITICAL HISTORY: GENERAL SURVEYS AND PERIOD SURVEYS	24
IV. GENERAL HISTORY OF CIVILISATION	30
<i>B. SCIENCES OF THE MENTAL LIFE</i>	
V. COMPARATIVE MYTHOLOGY	35
VI. COMPARATIVE HIEROLOGY (= "COMPARATIVE RELIGION")	46
VII. THE MAKING OF JUDAISM	68
VIII. THE MAKING OF CHRISTIANITY	77
IX. PHILOSOPHY (THEORIES OF EXISTENCE AND KNOWLEDGE)	104
X. MORAL PHILOSOPHY (ETHICS)	134
XI. LOGIC	149
XII. PSYCHOLOGY	156
XIII. ÆSTHETICS	165
XIV. POLITICS	178
XV. ECONOMICS	194
XVI. SOCIOLOGY	206
<i>C. HISTORIES: NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL</i>	
XVII. 1. SUMER-AKKAD, BABYLONIA, AND ASSYRIA . . .	221
XVIII. 2. HISTORY OF EGYPT	224
XIX. 3. HISTORY OF PHENICIA AND OTHER SEMITIC STATES	229
XX. 4. HISTORY OF GREECE	232
XXI. 5. HISTORY OF ROME (ANCIENT ITALY)	242
XXII. 6. HISTORY OF ITALY	250
XXIII. 7. HISTORY OF SPAIN AND PORTUGAL	259
XXIV. 8. HISTORY OF FRANCE	264
XXV. 9. HISTORY OF THE NETHERLANDS (HOLLAND) . . .	282
XXVI. 10. HISTORY OF BELGIUM	285
XXVII. 11. HISTORY OF GERMANY	287
XXVIII. 12. HISTORY OF AUSTRIA-HUNGARY	294
XXIX. 13. HISTORY OF SWITZERLAND	297
XXX. 14. HISTORY OF THE SCANDINAVIAN STATES	299
XXXI. 15. HISTORY OF RUSSIA	302
XXXII. 16. HISTORY OF POLAND	309
XXXIII. 17. HISTORY OF THE MINOR SLAVONIC PEOPLES . . .	311
XXXIV. 18. HISTORY OF TURKEY	314

COURSE		PAGE
XXXV.	19. HISTORY OF THE SARACENS	316
XXXVI.	20. HISTORY OF CHINA	319
XXXVII.	21. HISTORY OF JAPAN	323
XXXVIII.	22. HISTORY OF PERSIA	326
XXXIX.	23. HISTORY OF INDIA	328
XL.	24. HISTORY OF MINOR ASIATIC PEOPLES	337
XLI.	25. HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND:	
	(A) BRITAIN AS A GEOGRAPHICAL WHOLE	341
XLII.	26. (B) ENGLAND	344
XLIII.	27. (C) SCOTLAND	358
XLIV.	28. (D) WALES	365
XLV.	29. (E) IRELAND	367
XLVI.	30. HISTORY OF BRITISH "DOMINIONS"	373
XLVII.	31. HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES	379
XLVIII.	32. HISTORY OF CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICAN	
	REPUBLICS	388
XLIX.	33. HISTORY OF THE AFRICAN RACES	393
L.	34. THE POLYNESIAN AND MELANESIAN RACES	397
LI.	THE WORLD WAR AND POST-WAR PROBLEMS	398
<i>D. HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION</i>		
LII.	1. THE LIFE OF WOMEN	406
LIII.	2. SLAVERY	410
LIV.	3. HISTORY OF JURISPRUDENCE AND INTER-	
	NATIONAL LAW	411
LV.	4. HISTORY OF COMMERCE AND INDUSTRY	414
LVI.	5. HISTORY OF EDUCATION	416
LVII.	6. HISTORY OF CHURCHES, ORDERS, AND SECTS	421
LVIII.	7. HISTORY OF AMUSEMENTS, SUPERSTITIONS,	
	AND SOCIAL USAGES	424
LIX.	8. HISTORY OF PHYSICAL SCIENCES	428
LX.	9. HISTORY OF MEDICINE	431
LXI.	10. HISTORY OF THE INDUSTRIAL ARTS	433
<i>E. HISTORIES OF THE FINE ARTS AND LITERATURE</i>		
LXII.	1. ARCHITECTURE	437
LXIII.	2. SCULPTURE, PAINTING, AND DRAWING	441
LXIV.	3. MUSIC	446
LXV.	4. THE DRAMA	450
LXVI.	5. HISTORY OF LITERATURES	455
<i>F. THE SCIENCES, "EXACT" AND "NATURAL"</i>		
LXVII.	1. GEOLOGY	464
LXVIII.	2. BIOLOGY, PHYSIOLOGY, AND ZOOLOGY	468
LNIX.	3. BOTANY	475
	INDEX OF SUBJECTS	481
	INDEX OF AUTHORS	491

ABBREVIATIONS

To save space, the names of firms of publishers, and of popular series, have generally been given in an abbreviated form. A list of the shortened references is here given. (E. tr. = English translation; v. = vol. or vols.)

Ph.A.	Philip Allan & Co.
A. & U.	Geo. Allen & Unwin.
App.	Appleton.
B.L.	Bohn Library (Geo. Bell & Sons).
Bld.	Blackwood.
B.H.	Bodley Head (John Lane).
B.M.	British Museum.
B. & O.	Burns & Oates.
But.	Thornton Butterworth.
Cl. Pr.	Clarendon Press.
C.A.H.	Cambridge Ancient History (C.U.P.).
C.H.S.	Cambridge Historical Series (C.U.P.).
C.M.H.	Cambridge Modern History (C.U.P.).
Cas.	Cassell's.
C. & D.	Chapman & Dodd.
C. & H.	Chapman & Hall.
C. & W.	Chatto & Windus.
C.-S.	Cobden-Sanderson.
Col. U.P.	Columbia University Press.
Con.	Constable.
C.S.S.	Contemporary Science Series.
C.T.L.	Crown Theological Library Series.
C.U.P.	Cambridge University Press.
Duck.	Duckworth.
E. & S.	Eyre & Spottiswoode.
E.M.L.	English Men of Letters Series (Macmillan).
E.S.S.	English Statesmen Series (Macmillan).
Ev. Lib.	Everyman Library (Dent).
F. & F.	Faber & Faber.
F.S. Ser.	Foreign States Series (Macmillan).
For. Ser.	Forum Series (Watts).
F.U.	Fisher Unwin (now Benn).
G.P.S.	Great Peoples Series (Heinemann).
G.W.S.	Great Writers Series.
Har.	Harrap.
Harp.	Harpers.
Hei.	Heinemann.
Hop.	Martin Hopkinson.
H.U.L.	Home University Library (Butterworth).
H. & B.	Hurst & Blackett.
Hut.	Hutchinson & Co.
H. & S.	Hodder & Stoughton.

H.M.	Houghton Mifflin (Boston).
I.S.S.	International Scientific Series.
K.P.	Kegan Paul, Trübner, Trench & Co.
Lipp.	J. B. Lippincott Co.
Lmns.	Longmans & Co.
Low	Sampson Low, Marston & Co.
M. & E.	Macdonald & Evans.
Macl.	Maclehose.
Mac.	Macmillan & Co.
Met.	Methuen & Co.
Mur.	John Murray.
M.W.S.	Modern World Series (Benn).
O. & B.	Oliver & Boyd.
O.C.	Open Court Publishing Co. (Chicago).
Or. Ser.	Oriental Series (now Routledge).
O.U.P.	Oxford University Press.
P.B. Ser.	People's Books Series (Jack; Nelson).
Per.	Percival.
Ph.Cl.	Philosophical Classics Series (Blackwood).
Pit.	Sir Isaac Pitman & Sons.
P. & Son	George Philip & Son.
P.P.	Pioneer Press.
P.S.S.	Progressive Science Series (Murray).
Put.	G. Putnam's Sons.
Quar.	Bernard Quaritch.
R. & T.	Grant Richards & Humphrey Toulmin.
Rem.	Remington.
Riv.	Rivingtons.
Rout.	Routledge & Sons.
R.P.A.	Rationalist Press Association.
R.T.S.	Religious Tract Society.
S.B.B.	Sacred Books of the Buddhists.
S.B.E.	Sacred Books of the East.
Scrib.	Charles Scribner's Sons.
S.E.	Smith, Elder & Co. (now Murray).
S.M.	Simpkin, Marshall & Co.
Sm. Inst.	Smithsonian Institute, Washington.
S.N.S.	Story of the Nations Series (Benn).
S.P.	Stanley Paul & Co.
S.P.C.K.	Society for Promotion of Christian Knowledge.
S.S.	Seeley, Service & Co. (Seeley & Co.; Service & Co.).
S.S.S.	Social Science Series (Allen & Unwin).
Son.	Sonnenschein (now Allen & Unwin).
Stan.	Stanford.
Th.Lib.	Thinker's Library Series (Watts).
Th.P.S.	Theosophical Publishing Society.
T.P.S.	Temple Primers Series.
U.E.M.	University Extension Manuals (Murray).
U.L.Pr.	University of London Press.
U.L.S.	Universal Library Series (Routledge).
W. & D.	Ward & Downey.
W.E.S.	Wisdom of the East Series (Murray).
W.L.	Ward, Lock & Co.
W. & N.	Williams & Norgate.
Y.U.P.	Yale University Press.

COURSE I

ANTHROPOLOGY

(INCLUDING ETHNOLOGY)

ANTHROPOLOGY is a term covering several meanings, ranging from the anatomical study of ostensibly racial peculiarities to the survey of the whole field of "primitive" life in terms of all archæological vestiges and of the life of contemporary or modern savages. That this collocation is scientifically hazardous may be seen in the vivid booklet '**The Savage as he Really Is,**' by **J. H. Driberg** (Rout. 6d. Lib.). But the procedure is in a measure predetermined. The survey is always expanding and deepening, and always under critical revision, the outstanding feature being that the concept of Evolution now dominates the entire literature.

Matter formerly classed as ETHNOLOGY is now frequently treated as part of Anthropology, though much of it might still more fitly be termed ETHNOGRAPHY. Prof. A. C. HADDON's very able book on 'The Study of Man' (P.S.S. Mur. 2nd ed. 1908), which "does not profess to be a treatise on Anthropology, or its methods," and is subtitled on the back 'An Introduction to Ethnology,' has the remark in its introductory chapter that Ethnology "may be divided into several branches, the four most important of which are: Sociology, Technology, Religion, and Linguistics." At that theoretic elevation the term could not live, ethnology being already labelled by some "a bankrupt science" on its original ground; and ANTHROPOLOGY, which is the better "omnibus" word, has won the titular precedence.

On the other hand, the terms "History" and "Civilisation" have been freely used in anthropological as in sociological research to cover ages more exactly termed "pre-historic" and periods formerly described as "before civilisation."

§ 1. It is now impossible to reduce such terms to exact use. Thus the very good little manual of **E. N. Fallaize**, '**The Origins of Civilisation**' (Benn, 6d. Lib.) could equally be entitled 'The Origins of Savagery' or 'Humanity before Civilisation,' since it is really a bird's-eye view of Anthropology, and ends before "civilisation" in the old sense of the term is reached.

On the other hand, Mr. J. McCABE's '**The Evolution of Civilisation**' (Watts, 1921) fitly covers the prehistoric as well as the historic period.

The present Course aims broadly at including under Anthropology a fairly large selection, under subdivisions, of works dealing with (a) the "Evolution of Man" as a relatively late figure; (b) his progress from "animal beginnings"; (c) the evidence for different lines of social progression in the prehistoric period; (d) the much larger mass of information on the life of "primitives" so called, who include the large body of observed savagery, past and present, as well as the primitives of pre-history.

General. Some of the primers or popular surveys of the last generation are still attractive as introductions. Among these are the little manual '**Primitive Man**,' by Prof. MORITZ HOERNES (T.P.S. 1900); EDWARD CLODD's '**The Childhood of the World: A Simple Account of Man's Origin and Early History**' (Mac.), and '**The Childhood of Man**' by LEO FROBENIUS (E. tr. by Keane, 1909, S.S. & Co.), which has over 400 educative illustrations. The '**Anthropology**' of R. R. MARETT (H.U.L. 1923) represents comprehensive recent knowledge and an original standpoint, as do his sixpenny manual '**Man in the Making**' (Benn, 1927), and the primer entitled '**Savage Survivals**,' by J. HOWARD MOORE (Watts, 1918). The collection of essays entitled '**Anthropology and the Classics**' (Cl. Pr. 1908), by EVANS, LANG, MURRAY, JEVONS, MYRES, and WARDE FOWLER, may be found attractive on another side, and the recent collection of Polytechnic lectures entitled '**Early Man: his Origin, Development, and Culture**' (Benn, 1931) makes a wide appeal in respect of the expert qualifications of the six contributors.

DR. HADDON's '**Study of Man**,' above mentioned, opens up by-ways of inquiry in a fascinating manner; and an excellent survey of the subject-matter of the science as it is commonly regarded in England is made in the manual entitled '**Anthropology: An Introduction to the Study of Man and Civilisation**,' by Sir E. B. TYLOR (Mac.: new ed. by R.P.A. rep. of orig. ed. 2 v. Watts). Probably no better handbook has been written on any subject. '**The Making of Man**' (N.Y. Mod. Lib. 1931) is a very useful selection from a large number of writers, on many problems. '**Anthropology**,' by Prof. A. L. KROEBER (Univ. of Calif.), and '**Early Civilisation: An Introduction to Anthropology**,' by Prof. A. A. GOLDENWEISER of Columbia (both Harrap), are up-to-date expositions embodying much recent research. They proceed upon later investigations than those which underlay (a) the older '**Introduction to Anthropology**,' trans. (1863) from the first vol. of WAITZ's great and once

standard work, *Anthropologie der Naturvölker*; (b) Sir E. B. TYLOR's remarkable 'Researches into the Early History of Mankind' (1865) and 'Primitive Culture' (2 v.; 4th ed. 1904; both Mur.); and (c) Lord AVEBURY's (Sir JOHN LUBBOCK's) 'Prehistoric Times' (Lmns. 6th ed. 1912); but these classic works are still of much service.

The 'Everyday Life in the Stone Age' (Batsford, 1921) of M. and C. A. B. QUENNELL, and the recent series of monographs (Har.) by HOWARD V. BROWN:—(i) 'The Tree Dwellers'; (ii) 'The Early Cave-Men: the Age of Combat'; (iii) 'The Later Cave-Men: the Age of the Chase'; (iv) 'The Early Sea-People'; (v) 'The Early Herdsmen: First Steps in taming Animals'; (vi) 'The Early Farmers: First Steps in Agriculture,' are "reconstructional" on a basis of archæological and anthropological lore, pointing at once back and forward. There is a similar series (Cl. Pr. 1927, etc.), 'The Corridors of Time,' by H. PEAKE and H. J. FLEURE, beginning with 'Apes and Men' (vol. vi, 'The Way of the Sea'; 4 v. to follow).

The older work of Prof. N. Joly, 'Man before Metals' (I.S.S.), has still value as a conspectus of the remains of prehistoric man. 'Prehistoric Man,' by Dr. W. L. H. DUCKWORTH (C.U.P.), is an excellent manual; and the work of the same title by JACQUES DE MORGAN (E. tr. K.P. 1924) is a readable and scientific survey, embracing later research; as does the noteworthy 'Ancient Hunters and their Modern Representatives,' by W. J. SOLLAS (Mac. 2nd ed. 1924). The 'Primitive Labour' of L. H. DUDLEY BUXTON (Met. 1924) is a special survey of real value. 'Earliest Man' by F. W. H. MIGEOD, an expert in African languages (K.P. 1916), is one of the best books of its kind. 'Prehistoric Man and his Story,' by Prof. G. F. SCOTT ELLIOT (S.S. & Co. 3rd ed. 1920), deserves popularity by its vividness, though the many "imagined" pictures of early men are not any more convincing than those of HEINRICH DRIESMANS' popular book, *Der Mensch der Urzeit* (1907).

§ 2. *The Pre-Human Past.* Those who still seek the grounds for the evolutionary view of man as merely the highest form of animal life, which is now accepted by all scientific men, may profitably turn to the two leading works of CHARLES DARWIN, 'The Origin of Species,' which raises the general problem of the evolution of the forms of life on the planet; and 'The Descent of Man,' which takes up the special problem of the development of man from lower forms. Or he may prefer to take up a briefer, later, and more general treatise such as Prof. OSCAR SCHMIDT's 'Doctrine of Descent and Darwinism' (E. tr. I.S.S.); or Mr. J. McCABE's 'A.B.C. of Evolution' (Watts, 1920). The application of Darwinism to

sociology is sketched in 'Darwinism and Race Progress' by Prof. J. B. HAYCRAFT (Son. 1895).

A direct and compendious survey of the inferred steps in the long evolution of man from lower forms is supplied with scientific care in 'Arboreal Man' by Prof. F. WOOD JONES (Arnold, 1918); and in 'The Evolution of Man' by Dr. G. ELLIOT SMITH (O.U.P. 1924), of which the constructive speculation, if free, is highly suggestive. Earlier works, such as EDWARD CLODD's 'The Story of Creation' (Lmns.); J. McCABE's 'The Story of Evolution' (Hut. 1912; now rewritten as 'The New Science and the Story of Evolution,' Hut. 1931); and 'The Evolution of Mind' (Watts); and the later 'The Earth before History: Man's Origin and the Origin of Life' by M. EDMOND PERRIER (E. tr. K.P. 1925), will helpfully direct the student beginner.

There can hardly be a more trustworthy presentment in small space of the theoretic case for "The Evolution of the Earth" than the little volume '**From Meteorite to Man,**' by four experts, of whom one, Prof. J. W. GREGORY, edits the work (Watts, 1931). On another interesting line of approach, 'Our Face from Fish to Man,' by W. K. GREGORY (Put. 1929), traces the evolution of the human countenance. '**The Search for Man's Ancestors**' by Prof. G. ELLIOT SMITH (Watts, 1931) is the latest narrative and summary of the debate on the very earliest forms of man.

The important problem of the progressive effect of the erect posture on brain development is handled in ch. ii of Dr. R. MUNRO's 'Prehistoric Problems' (Bld. 1897), and further by Prof. F. W. JONES in 'Arboreal Man,' and by Dr. BRIFFAULT in *Scientia* (June, 1927, rep. in 'The Making of Man,' N.Y. 1931).

§ 3. *Antiquity of Man.* The standard work on this question is that of SIR ARTHUR KEITH, '**The Antiquity of Man**' (new ed. 2 v. 1929, W. & N.), which marks the distance travelled since the theme was first effectually broached in Sir CHARLES LYELL's 'Geological Evidences of the Antiquity of Man' in 1863 (Mur. 4th ed. 1873). On the general movement of opinion the 'History of Anthropology' by Dr. HADDON and A. H. QUIGGIN (Watts, 1910) is a trustworthy guide up to its date, with a bibliography. A concise bibliography up to 1912 is prefixed to the seventh ed. of AVEBURY's 'Origins of Civilisation.' But over many points there is still conflict of evidence and argument; and the works of M. C. BURKITT, '**Prehistory**' (C.U.P. 1921) and '**Our Forerunners**' (H.U.L. 1923)—the latter a particularly good manual—have a marked critical value, inasmuch as they argue the points.

Other good guides are: O. G. S. CRAWFORD, 'Man and His Past' (O.U.P. 1921); A. H. QUIGGIN, 'Primeval Man: The Stone

Age in Western Europe' (M. & E. 1912); Dr. L. CAPITAN, *La Préhistoire* (Payot, 1922); and MARCELIN BOULE, 'Fossil Man: Elements of Human Palæontology' (E. tr. from Fr., O. & B. 1923).

§ 4. *Racial or Ethnological.* The studies classed under the term ETHNOLOGY are now, as aforesaid, much combined with aspects of anthropology; the "cultures" of early regional groups, traced by their remains, being recognised as evidentially important. A newly searching criticism was brought to bear on Ethnology in the work of the American W. Z. RIPLEY on 'The Races of Europe' (1900: 2nd ed. K.P.); and the useful handbook of the late A. H. KEANE, '**Man: Past and Present**,' latterly received a necessary revision (new ed. by A. H. QUIGGIN and A. C. HADDON, C.U.P. 1920), bringing it abreast of the later views. A series of works of standard value, 'The Racial History of Mankind,' by R. B. DIXON (1923, Scribners); *Les Races et les Peuples de la Terre*, by the French ethnologist J. DENIKER (1926); and 'The Races of Men and their Distribution' by A. C. HADDON (C.U.P. new ed. 1929) have now brought the available knowledge to a stage of exactitude not approached before Ripley.

Thus the work 'Race and History: An Ethnological Introduction to History,' by Prof. E. PITTARD of Geneva (E. tr. K.P.), stands on a scientific basis; as also does the 'Psychology and Ethnology' of Dr. W. H. R. RIVERS (K.P.). 'The Primitive Races of Mankind: A Study in Ethnology,' by Prof. MAX SCHMIDT of Berlin (E. tr. 1923, Har.), is also a systematic and learned work, more strictly an Ethnography than an Ethnology. Its copious presentment of anthropological results is only at theoretical points affected by theistic assumptions. The illustrations and maps are well selected; and as a survey of primitive peoples the work is comprehensive.

The older 'Anthropology' of M. TOPINARD (E. tr. C. & H. 1890) belongs to the anatomical approach, which it ably represented. Recent discussion on 'Nordic' qualities appears to proceed on the doctrinary line of race-characterisation initiated by GOBINEAU, whose *Essai sur l'inégalité des races humaines* (4 t. 1853-55) has latterly been made much of. It was the work of a versatile man of affairs and man of letters, latterly an epic poet, not of a man of science. In the last century its bias was reproduced, with a difference, in the vogue of the concept of an "Aryan race," ably criticised in 'The Origin of the Aryans' (C.S.S. 1890) by CANON I. TAYLOR, who so undermined the "Aryan" structure, even in using the term, as to compel a larger conception. His opening chapter on "The Aryan Controversy" is an excellent conspectus of the ethnological progression from and beyond linguistics. Originated by Max Müller, the thesis was by him in effect

abandoned, and has now substantially disappeared from scientific discussion. (Criticisms in *L'Aryen et l'Anthroposociologie: Étude Critique*, by Dr. ÉMILE HOUZE, 1906: *Trav. de l'Inst. de Sociol.*, Fasc. 5; and by the editor in 'The Saxon and the Celt,' 1897, and 'The Germans,' 1916.)

The theory of "race character," involved in all such discussions, was first separately and systematically criticised in 'Fallacies of Race Theories as applied to National Characteristics,' by W. D. BABINGTON (Lmns. 1895), who was followed by FRIEDRICH HERTZ in *Moderne Rassentheorien* (Wien, 1904) and, later, in *Rasse und Kultur* (Leip. 1915); tr. as 'Race and Civilisation' (K.P. 1928). (Discussions in 'The Saxon and the Celt,' 1896). Racial assumptions are again involved in 'The Renewal of Culture' by LARS RINGBOM (E. tr. pref. by Westermarck; A. & U. 1929).

§ 5. *Social or Sociological.* Speculation as to "Social Origins" has turned much on theories as to exogamy and the primary significance of Totems, and on the question as to whether "man" emerged in a "horde" life, analogous to that of many monkeys and other wild animals, or in a recognisable "family" stage, such as is found among some of the anthropoid apes. The conflicting theories, so far as they are not fully indicated in works above named, are to be studied as set forth in 'The History of Human Marriage' by Dr. EDWARD WESTERMARCK (rev. ed. 1925: 3 v. Mac.) and 'A Short History of Human Marriage' (same, 1926). The preface to the 7th ed. (Lmns. 1912) of Lord Avebury's 'The Origin of Civilisation' gives a view of the debate so far, justifying his own theory of a primitive "communal" marriage.

On Totemism, Sir J. G. Frazer's early monograph (Black, 1887) is still a good introduction, though his views have modified. 'The Secret of the Totem,' by ANDREW LANG (Lmns. 1905), deserves attention; and the very suggestive vol. consisting of Lang's 'Social Origins' and 'Primal Law' by J. J. ATKINSON (Lmns. 1903) is specially interesting as to the probable factors in the substitution of family for "herd" or "horde" life. The problem is also handled from his special point of view by Dr. SIGMUND FREUD in his 'Totem and Taboo' (E. tr. Rout. 1919). But Totemism remains an obscure subject, its very antiquity being doubtful. Dr. GOLDENWEISER, in his 'Totemism: an Analytical Study' (doct. thesis, 1913), examines all previous evidence and theories, and in showing the great variety of the practice leaves the origins indeterminate, with a definition lacking content. He supplies, however, a useful bibliography, besides noting all the theories.

Concerning T. there are special studies besides those above

named. Sir J. G. Frazer's great work '*Totemism and Exogamy*' (Mac. 4. v. 1910) covers only Australia, Africa, America, Melanesia and Polynesia, leaving the difficult problem of totemism in Europe and Asia for future exploration. Lord AVEBURY gave a final exposition and defence of his general views in '*Marriage, Totemism, and Evolution: an Answer to Critics*' (Lmns. 1911), in which he replies to Lang, Frazer, and others. The subject is also discussed in many of the above-named general works.

The problem is approached from other angles in '*Primitive Paternity*' by E. S. HARTLAND (Nutt, 2 v. 1909), '*Primitive Society*' by the same writer (Met. 1921), and the important works of ROBERT BRIFFAULT, '*The Making of Humanity*' and '*The Mothers*' (A. & U. 3 large v. 1927, with good bibliography). The latter is one of the outstanding books in its field, for massiveness and power, being founded on an extremely wide knowledge of anthropological literature, and at the same time highly original in its thinking. The scientific colligation is always thorough. Yet at nearly every stage the generalisations tend to excite criticism, and an appeal for consideration of the divergent and the exceptional as standing for upward variation. Setting out with the generalisation that "*The animal family, out of which the human social group must be supposed to have arisen, is matriarchal,*" it constitutes a cyclopædia of all the ideas associated with the matriarchal theory, and must be reckoned with by all anthropologists accordingly. On "*matriarchy*" so called, as now existing in Malaysia, there is a notable recent treatise by G. A. DE C. DE MOUBRAY (Rout. 1932), '*Matriarchy in the Malay Peninsula and Neighbouring Countries.*'

Other works on the double problem of familial and social beginnings are: '*Primitive Society*' by R. H. LOWIE (K.P. 1921), and the valuable '*Ancient Society*' of Dr. LEWIS H. MORGAN (N.Y. 1878). In the two standard works of Prof. L. T. HOBBHOUSE on '*Morals in Evolution*' (C. & H. 2 v. 1906) and Dr. E. WESTERMARCK on '*The Origin and Development of the Moral Ideas*' (Mac. 2 v. 1906), these and other anthropological problems are directly and indirectly implicated.

Recent and penetrating studies, again, have been made on the sex side of the problem by Prof. B. MALINOWSKI in '*Sex and Repression in Savage Society*' (K.P. 1927), which follows on his '*Crime and Custom in Savage Society*' (same, 1926); and is again followed by his '*Sexual Life of Savages in N.W. Melanesia*' (2 v. Rout. 1929)—all works of first-hand study, well illustrated.

To the theoretic or philosophic side of the problem belongs

'The Mystic Rose,' by E. CRAWLEY (1902: new ed. 2 v. Met. 1927, rev. and enlarged by T. Besterman; small ed. R.P.A. 1932, Watts). The same author has also produced 'Studies of Savages and Sex' (Met. 1929). In this connection students will find suggestive discussion in 'Taboo and Genetics' by M. M. KNIGHT, J. L. PETERS, and P. BLANCHARD (K.P. 1921), a 'Study of the Biological and Psychological Foundations of the Family'; in 'Marriage, Past, Present and Future' by RALPH DE POMERAI (Con. 1930), which applies a scientific treatment alike in its anthropological and sociological sections; and in 'Social Origins and Social Continuities' by Prof. A. M. TOZER (Mac.). The problem of primal family or horde life is involved.

One of the most important contributions to the subject is the theory put forward by the late Prof. **Carveth Read**, first in his larger works on 'The Metaphysics of Nature' (Black, 1905) and 'Natural and Social Morals' (1909), and elaborated by him in '**The Origin of Man**' (C.U.P. 2nd ed. rev. 1925). This is to the effect that human "society," after an arboreal state, entered on a series of changes which "began and, until recently, were maintained by the practice of hunting in pack for animal food." On this theory a primary monogamy (still observable) in the non-social state may have disappeared in the "pack" stage, and been recovered in the nomadic or the agricultural.

For the literature see App. A to Murdock's tr. of LIPPERT (Course IV, § 1). The strife largely arises out of disregard of the *variability* of early social forms, as of the life of nature in general.

§ 6. An acute controversy has arisen over the original adoption by Westermarck of the traditionary view that not only has the human species been primordially monogamous but that monogamy was inherited from the pre-human, as still typified in the gorilla. He is partly supported by H. S. JENNINGS, MALINOWSKI, and others. In so far as the monogamic theory proceeds on the alleged monogamy of gorillas, it is negated by the bulk of the competent evidence; and Westermarck has latterly modified his position. The subject is polemically but ably handled (with unnecessary political implications) by V. F. Calverton, *Amer. Jour. of Sociology*, March, 1931, who cites many American articles; and in his Introduction to 'The Making of Man' (N.Y. 1931). The argument should be checked by the theory of Read.

It may still be found instructive to approach the discussion on social origins by way of the debates of half a century ago. At the head of his list of works on early civilisation, Dr. Tylor places the late Sir HENRY S. MAINE'S 'Ancient Law.' This work is still of value, but its assumptions as to the beginnings of human society, which were partly derived from *Genesis*, were in large

part shaken by the investigations of the late J. F. McLENNAN, as set forth in his 'Studies in Ancient History' (1876; rep. Mac. 1886), and the second (posthumous) series of 'Studies' (Mac. 1896); also in 'The Patriarchal Theory' (1885) by his brother, based on his papers. The latest ed. of Maine's work (Mur. 1931) is thoroughly revised by Sir F. Pollock, with introd. and notes. The issues raised in these works were fully treated in '**The Primitive Family**' by the Danish scholar Starecke (I.S.S.), in which, however, the material collected is of more value than the criticism. In this connection attention is still due to the work of JULIUS LIPPERT, *Die Geschichte der Familie* (1884); and to the epoch-marking research of BACHOFEN, *Das Mutterrecht* (1860). A translated work of much interest is M. LETOURNEAU'S 'Evolution of Marriage and the Family' (C.S.S.), which of course is to be checked by the later discussion, ably represented by the works of the late W. H. R. RIVERS, 'Kinship and Social Organisation' (K.P. 1914), and 'Social Organisation' (K.P. 1924). N. W. THOMAS'S 'Kinship Organisation and Group Marriage in Australia' (C.U.P. 1906) deals helpfully with a specially difficult problem. Prof. ROBERTSON SMITH'S 'Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia' (exp. ed. 1903, Black) is a valuable contribution in this field.

§ 7. *The Composite Civilisations.* In the great area of British India, where during many centuries growths of high intellectual life and culture have subsisted in the same wide regional boundary with tribal life of a partially or markedly primitive kind, the latter forms supply a mass of material for the anthropologist. They have been studied in many monographs and in large collections of impartial studies. Thus we have a short general account in '**The Peoples of India**,' by Dr. J. D. ANDERSON (C.U.P.); the 'Indian Village Folk,' by the Indian T. B. PANDIAN (Stock, 1897); 'The Indian Village Community,' by B. H. BADEN-POWELL (Lmns. 1896); 'With the Jungle Folk: A Sketch of Burmese Village Life' by E. D. CUMING (Osgood, 1897); the memorable account of Khond life in Col. MACPHERSON'S 'Memorials of Service in India' (1865); W. CROOKE'S 'The Popular Religion and Folk-Lore of Northern India' (rev. ed. 2 v. Con. 1896); and the copious but very readable cyclopædia, 'Castes and Tribes of Southern India,' by E. THURSTON and K. RANGACHARI (Madras, Gov. Pr. 1909; 7 large v.). 'Suttee,' by E. THOMPSON (A. & U.), is an outstanding monograph. The 'Ethnographic Notes in Southern India' by EDGAR THURSTON, in its one vol. gathers a rich store of anthropological description of primitive life, arranged with the skill and extensive knowledge of a museum superintendent (Madras, Gov. Pr. 1906; with 40 well-chosen illustr.).

In the case of Morocco, we have the expert researches of Dr. E. WESTERMARCK, 'Ritual and Belief in Morocco' (2 v. 1926) and 'Marriage Ceremonies in Morocco' (1914: both Mac.). The vast field of Chinese life is perhaps the least systematically explored in this connection, in proportion to its extent; but it is more or less presented in the works on its hierology and history. 'In Unknown China' by S. POLLARD (S.S. & Co.) points to the largeness of the field.

§ 8. *Regional Savagery.* Under this head may be classed the great and ever-accumulating mass of works on the actual life of modern and contemporary savages, of which a general view is given by Prof. Schmidt. Regional division guided the survey of Waitz, which was based on the literature of exploratory travel up to its time; and only a selection can be made from the library since accumulated.

(a) Valuable fresh light on the savage mind and life is given as to Africa by the Mackie Ethnol. Exped. Reports by J. ROSCÖE on 'The Bakitara, or Banyoro,' 'The Banyankole,' and 'The Bagesu,' as well as by that writer's 'The Northern Bantu' and his 'Twenty-Five Years in East Africa' (all C.U.P.); also by Major A. G. LEONARD in his 'The Lower Niger and its Tribes' (Mac. 1906); R. E. DENNETT's 'At the Back of the Black Man's Mind: or, Notes on the Kingly Office in West Africa' (same); and 'Nigerian Studies' (same, 1910); D. KIDD's 'The Essential Kaffir' (Black, rev. ed.); the late MARY KINGSLEY's 'Travels in West Africa' and 'West African Studies' (Mac. 1898-99); DOUGALD CAMPBELL's 'In the Heart of Bantuland' (S.S. & Co.) and 'Wanderings in Central Africa' (same, 1929); the first-hand records of Sir A. B. ELLIS, 'The Tshi-Speaking Peoples of the Gold Coast' (C. & H. 1887), 'The Ewe-Speaking Peoples of the Slave Coast' (same, 1890); 'The Yoruba-Speaking Peoples of the Slave Coast' (same, 1894); A. H. KEANE's 'Africa' (2 v. P. & Son, 1895) and 'The World's Peoples' (Hut. 1908); H. A. JUNOD, 'The Life of a South African Tribe' (Mac. 2 v. 1928, revised ed.), the valuable harvest of a Swiss missionary's life; 'The Baganda at Home,' by C. W. HATTERSLEY (R.T.S. 1908); 'The Baganda: An Account of their Native Customs and Beliefs,' by the Rev. JOHN ROSCÖE (Mac. 1911); 'Cross River Natives,' by CHARLES PARTRIDGE (Hut. 1905); 'The Lango: A Nilotic Tribe of Uganda,' by J. H. DRIBERG, with pref. by Sir R. T. Coryndon (F.U. 1923); 'The Basuto of Basutoland,' by E. A. T. DUTTON (Cape, 1923); 'Savage Man in Central Africa,' by A. L. CUREAU (E. tr. 1915, F.U.); 'The Native Races of British Central Africa,' by A. WERNER (Con. 1906); 'The Victoria Nyanza,' by PAUL KOLLMANN (Son. 1899); 'Through Masai

Land,' by JOSEPH THOMSON (Low, 1885); 'Land and People of the Kasai,' by M. W. HILTON SIMPSON (Con. 1911); A. J. N. TREMEARNE's 'Hausa Superstitions and Customs' (Bale, 1913), and 'The Ban of the Bori' (same, n.d.); 'Among Bantu Nomads,' by J. TOM BROWN (S.S. & Co.); D. CAMPBELL 'In the Heart of Bantuland' (same, 1922).

Bushmen and Hottentots are so studied in 'The Khoisan Peoples of South Africa,' by I. SCHAPERA (Rout.); and 'On the Trail of the Bushongo,' by E. TORDAY (S.S. & Co. 1925) presents a hitherto unknown African people. 'The Cliff-Dwellers of Kenya,' by J. A. MASSAM; 'The Spirit-Ridden Konde,' by D. R. MACKENZIE; and 'Wild Bush Tribes of Tropical Africa,' by G. CYRIL CLARIDGE (all S.S. & Co.), are also "off the beaten track" even of African exploration.

The more comprehensive works collect such matter; but the original explorations convey a certain intimacy of knowledge, and are more or less richly illustrated. 'Uganda and its Peoples,' by J. F. CUNNINGHAM, F.R.G.S., F.Z.S., with pref. by Sir H. Johnston (Hut. 1905); 'Great Benin: Its Customs, Art, and Horrors,' by H. LING ROTH (Halifax, Eng. 1903), are massive illustrated works; the latter throwing important light on sacrificial religion; and Captain R. S. RATTRAY's 'Ashanti' (1923) and 'Religion and Art in Ashanti' (Cl. Pr. 1927) render a similar service concerning that famous savage State.

(b) As to AUSTRALIA we have the massive and systematic works of those devoted inquirers SPENCER AND GILLEN, 'The Native Tribes of Central Australia' (Mac. 1899); 'The Northern Tribes of Central Australia' (Mac. 1902); and Sir BALDWIN SPENCER's 'The Arunta: A Study of a Stone Age People' (2 v. 1927, Mac.); also Dr. A. W. HOWITT's 'The Native Tribes of South-East Australia' (Mac. 1904); A. F. CALVERT's 'The Aborigines of Western Australia' (S.M. 1894); G. TAPLIN's 'The Narrinyeri: An Account of . . . South Australian Aborigines' (Adelaide, 1878); FISON and HOWITT's 'Kamilaroi and Kurnai' (Melbourne, 1880) and 'The Euahlayi Tribe' of Mrs. LANGLOH PARKER (Con. 1905; introd. by A. LANG), which is not the least valuable of tribal surveys. 'The Eaglehawk and Crow' of the Rev. JOHN MATHEW (Nutt, 1899) gives a comprehensive view of the problems of the derivation of the Australian and Tasmanian populations, their physical and social characters, their institutions, and their religion or religions. N. W. Thomas's 'Natives of Australia' (Con. 1906) is a good conspectus, well illustrated.

(c) For the SOUTH SEAS in general Dr. R. H. CODRINGTON's 'The Melanesians' (Cl. Pr. 1891) is still of import-

ance, as having furnished new grounds for speculation on the bases of religion; though it has been followed by the massive research of W. H. R. RIVERS, 'The History of Melanesian Society' (C.U.P. 2 v.); that expert's 'Essays on the Depopulation of Melanesia' (same); Dr. C. G. SELIGMAN's 'The Melanesians of British New Guinea' (same); and the magistral work of R. W. WILLIAMSON, 'The Social and Political Systems of Central Polynesia' (3 v. C.U.P.). Earlier works of permanent importance are W. MARINER's 'Tonga Islands' (3rd ed. 2 v. 1827); W. ELLIS's 'Polynesian Researches' (2nd ed. 4 v. 1831); Dr. G. TURNER's 'Samoa a Hundred Years Ago' (Mac. 1884: pref. by Tylor), and his 'Nineteen Years in Polynesia' (1861); 'Old Samoa,' by the Rev. JOHN B. STAIR (R.T.S. 1897); and the Rev. T. WILLIAMS's 'Fiji and the Fijians' (rep. 1870, H. & S., ext. by J. CALVERT).

Among the many later works of interest and importance in this field are H. CAYLEY-WEBSTER's 'Through New Guinea and the Cannibal Countries' (F.U. 1898); BASIL THOMSON's 'The Fijians: a Study of the Decay of Custom' (Hei. 1908); 'Fijian Society,' by the Rev. W. DEANE (Mac. 1921); 'The Hill Tribes of Fiji,' by A. G. BREWSTER (S.S. & Co. 1922); 'The Savage Solomons, as they Were and Are,' by S. G. C. KNIBBS (S.S. & Co.); Dr. GEORGE BROWN's 'Melanesians and Polynesians' (Mac. 1910); 'The Savage South Seas,' by E. W. ELKINGTON (Black, 1907); 'Wanderings among South Sea Savages,' by H. WILFRID WALKER (Witherby, 1910); 'Two Years Among New Guinea Cannibals,' by A. E. PRATT (SS. & Co. 1906); 'In Unknown New Guinea,' by W. J. V. SAVILLE (same); 'In Primitive New Guinea,' by J. H. HOLMES (S.S. & Co. 1924); 'The Threshold of the Pacific' (Solomon Islands), by Dr. E. C. Box with pref. by Elliot Smith (K.P.).

Most of these instructively employ photography; some add good colour pictures. Mr. E. MUSPRATT's 'My South Sea Island' (Hop. 1931) is instructive without these aids, being a "human document." Sir HUBERT MURRAY's 'Papua of To-day' (1925) is exceptionally well-informed; and as a rule judicious. Its treatment of the population problem is an exception.

(d) The MAORI have been separately studied. 'The Maori, Past and Present,' by T. E. DONNE (S.S. & Co. 1927), is a general view; and the 'Maori and Polynesian: their Origin, History, and Culture,' by J. MACMILLAN BROWN (Hut. 1907), is a very suggestive investigation. Another survey, largely illustrated, is supplied in 'The Maori Yesterday and To-day' (N.Z. 1930), by JAMES COWAN; and the book entitled 'Ta Kuiti,' "Where the White Man Treads," by W. B. (Auckland, 1905), would appear to be an

interesting development of the older work of the Rev. RICHARD TAYLOR, 'Te Ika a Maui; or, New Zealand and its Inhabitants' (1870), which remains an important compilation.

(e) Perhaps the most extensive and intensive studies of recent regional savage life are those by U.S. students in the case of the North American Indians; and the great list of treatises produced by the Smithsonian Institute should be procured or studied by those seeking to specialise. 'The American Indian: An Introduction to the Anthropology of the New World,' by CLARK WISSLER (N.Y. 1922), is a competent survey; and 'The Indians' Book' comprises much folk music and lore (N.Y. 1923). W. H. MINER's 'The American Indians North of Mexico' (C.U.P.) is a compact manual. Of the older books, Adm. LINDESAY BRINE's 'Travels amongst American Indians: Their Ancient Earth Works and Temples' (Low, 1894) has a special interest; and the copious old compilation of GEORGE CATLIN, 'North American Indians' (1841), has been rep. (Edinb. 1926, 2 v.). 'The North Americans of Yesterday: A Comparative Study of N. A. Indian Life,' by F. S. DELLENBAUGH (N.Y. 1901) and HAMLIN GARLAND's 'Book of the American Indian' (Harp. 1923) variously extend the record; and 'The Story of the Red Man' by FLORA W. SEYMOUR (Lmns.) is a readable general survey.

'The Civilization of the South American Indians,' by Prof. RAFAEL KARSTEN of Helsingfors (K.P. 1926), which specially deals with their Magic and Religion, is vouched for by Dr. Westermarck's introd.; and 'Among Wild Tribes of the Amazons,' by C. W. DOMVILLE-FIFE (S.S. & Co.), is one of the most recent of explorations in that region.

(f) 'Pagan Races of the Malay Peninsula,' by W. W. SKEAT and C. O. BLAGDEN (Mac. 2 v. 1906), is a work of standard rank; and the 'Malay Magic' of the former (same, 1900) is a good collection of its kind. His smaller work, 'The Past at our Doors' (same), is thus based on special study. The Nagas of Assam have received special attention in the two solid works of J. O. MILLS, 'The Lhota Nagas' and 'The AO Nagas,' with notes by J. H. Hutton; also in 'The AO Naga Tribe of Assam: A Study in Ethnology and Sociology,' by Prof. W. C. SMITH, also with notes by Mr. Hutton (1925: all Mac.).

For BORNEO we have O. RUTTER's 'The Pagans of North Borneo,' introd. by C. G. Seligman (Hut. 1926, 75 illustr.); W. H. FURNESS's 'Home Life of the Borneo Head-Hunters' (Lipp. 1902); and 'Natural Man: A Record from Borneo,' by Dr. CHARLES HOSE, with pref. by Prof. Elliot Smith (Mac.): and for other fields the 'Head Hunters—Black, White, and Brown' of Dr. A. C. HADDON (R.P.A. rep. Watts).

(g) "OUTLYING" forms of savage life are obviously as important to anthropology as the more largely massed forms, and are of course presented in the general works on the Human Races. Among the former are the peoples of the Arctic and Antarctic Circles—the Eskimos (or Esquimaux) receiving the greater attention, as in 'Among Unknown Eskimo,' by JULIAN W. BILBY (S.S. & Co. 1923), 'Among the Eskimos of Labrador,' by S. K. HUTTON (same); 'A Naturalist at the Poles,' by R. N. RUDMOSE BROWN (same, 1923); '**The People of the Polar North : A Record,**' by KNUD RASMUSSEN, ed. by G. Herring (K.P. 1908)—with noteworthy illustrations by Count Harald Moltke; and 'Aboriginal Siberia,' by M. A. CZAPLICKA (O.U.P. 1914). There are two interesting monographs on Eskimo life, 'Some Ethical Phases of Eskimo Culture,' by R. N. GILBERTSON (Doct. Diss. 1914) and 'The Lamp of the Eskimo,' by Dr. WALTER HOUGH (Smithsonian Inst. 1898). Lights from the missionary side are cast by 'Forty-Two Years amongst the Indians and Eskimo,' by BEATRICE BATTY (S.P.C.K. 1893), founded on the letters and papers of the Rev. J. Horden, first bishop of Moosonee.

Another monograph on an outlying stock is that of R. W. WILLIAMSON on 'The Mafulu Mountain People of British New Guinea,' with introd. by Dr. A. C. HADDON (Mac.); and yet another is 'The Kiwai Papuans of British New Guinea : A Nature-born Instance of Rousseau's Ideal Community,' by Dr. GUNNAR LANDTMAN, with introd. by Dr. Haddon (same). The native life of Java—as to which, see 'Romantic Java: As it Was and Is,' by H. S. Banner (S.S. & Co.)—has been specially studied in much detail by Dutch experts, whose results have been availed of in the works of Sir J. G. Frazer as well as in the general anthropological surveys.

(h) In 'The Ainu of Japan' (R.T.S. 1892), by the Rev. JOHN BATCHELOR, another variety of backward humanity is brought to view, the Ainu being "hairy aborigines of Japan." A book of the same period, written on independent knowledge, 'Life with Trans-Siberian Savages,' by R. DOUGLAS HOWARD (Lmns. 1893), extends the theme in detail. But Mr. A. H. S. LANDOR's 'Alone with the Hairy Ainu' (Mur. 1893) is fully the most intimate study.

In respect of their isolation and primitiveness, no surviving race has received from students of primary morals and sociology more attention than has been given to the Veddas and the Yahgans. On the former see 'The Veddas' by C. G. and B. Z. SELIGMAN, with ch. by Dr. C. S. MYERS and App. by A. M. GUNASE KARA; also 'The Andaman Islanders,' by A. R. BROWN (both C.U.P.). As to the Yahgans see the *Mission Scient. du Cap Horn* of MM. HYADES and DENIKER (1891), and the extracts in HOBHOUSE's 'Morals in Evolution.'

(i) The PYGMY race or races constitute a special problem, in ethnology and anthropology alike. Prof. A. de QUATREFAGES gathered up the available knowledge a generation ago in a general treatise on 'The Pygmies' (E. tr. Mac. 1895), discussing both the physiological and the psychological phenomena. An old 'Philological Essay concerning the Pygmies of the Ancients,' published in 1699 by Dr. E. Tyson, was in 1894 edited by Prof. B. C. A. WINDLE with an introduction on Pygmy Races and Fairy Tales, which drew further attention to the problem; and it has been touched on in various works of travel. A. F. R. WOLLASTON'S 'Pygmies and Papuans' (Mur. 1912) is a traveller's survey; and A. B. LLOYD'S 'In Dwarf Land and Cannibal Country' (F.U. 3rd ed. 1907) is 'A Record of Travel and Discovery in Central Africa,' with many vivid photographs, some presenting pygmies. The works of G. BURROWS, 'The Land of the Pigmies' (1899); S. S. DORNAN, 'Pygmies and Bushmen of the Kalahari' (S. S. & Co. 1925); and Col. C. D. RAWLING, 'The Land of the New Guinea Pygmies' (same); and CUTHBERT CHRISTY'S 'Big Game and Pygmies' (Mac. 1924) are also informative and illustrative. The recent work of VIVIAN MEIK, 'The People of the Leaves' (Ph. A. 1931), concentrates on the problem in an exceptionally interesting fashion. P. SCHEBESTA'S 'Among the Forest Dwarfs of Malaya' (E. tr. by Chambers, Hut. 1929) treats freshly of yet another regional group. On distribution of pygmies see ch. xi. of SCOTT ELLIOT'S 'Prehistoric Man.'

§ 9. *Localised Archaeology.* The comprehensive 'Text-Book of European Archaeology,' by Dr. R. A. S. MACALISTER (C.U.P., in prog.) will on completion constitute a cyclopædia for its region. So much special research, however, has been devoted to the archaeology of certain areas, that some students may seek a few references to it as apart from the more general works in which it is summarised. Thus there is a special interest for British readers in 'The Stones of Stonehenge' by E. HERBERT STONE (R. Scott, 1925); Prof. BOYD DAWKINS'S important works on 'Cave-Hunting' and 'Early Man in Britain' (Mac.); E. T. STEVENS'S 'Flint Chips' (1870); J. EVANS'S 'Ancient Stone Implements of Great Britain' and 'Ancient Bronze Implements of Great Britain and Ireland' (Lmns.)—two standard works of great value; W. PENGELLY'S researches on the Cave Men (Memoir, 1897); Dr. J. FERGUSSON'S 'Rude Stone Monuments' (Mur. 1872); Dr. R. MUNRO'S 'Lake Dwellings of Europe' (Black, 1890), and Dr. B. C. A. WINDLE'S 'Remains of the Prehistoric Age in England' (Met. 1904). Of co-ordinate interest are 'The Bronze Age in Ireland,' by Prof. GEORGE COFFEY (S.M. 1913); 'Earthwork in England,' by A. H. ALLCROFT

(Mac.); and the same student's 2 vols. on 'The Circle and the Cross.' The English County Histories now in course of publication (St. Cath. Pr.) are storehouses of local archæology.

Recent intensive study deals instructively with a vast variety of areas from that set forth in 'The Glamour of Near East Excavation,' by JAMES BAIKIE (S.S. & Co.) to the case of Prof. V. GORDON CHILDE's 'Skara Brae: A Pictish Village in Orkney' (K.P. 1931), which proceeds on fresh investigations; as do 'Prehistoric Malta: the Tarxien Temples,' by Sir T. ZAMMIT (O.U.P. 1930); 'The Glastonbury Lake Village,' by A. BULLIED and H. GRAY (2 v. 1911-17); Dr. R. MUNRO's 'Palæolithic Man and Terramara Settlements in Europe' (Black, 1912: many illustr.); 'Ruins of Desert Cathay' by Sir AUREL STEIN (Mac. 2 v.). In particular, the student may take note of the work of Dr. R. MUNRO, 'Archæology and False Antiquities' (Met. 1905).

The B.M. supplies good 'Guides,' with many illustrations, to the antiquities of the Stone Age, the Bronze Age, and the Early Iron Age, as well as to Greek, Roman, and early English remains; and the Dilettanti and Hellenic Societies' publications (Mac.) describe and illustrate their fascinating excavations.

§ 10. *Primary Morals, Rudimentary Religion, and Mentality.* (a) These aspects are necessarily considered in all general works on Anthropology, such as those of WAITZ, TYLOR, AVEBURY, HADDON, MARETT, GOLDENWEISER, KROEBER, RIVERS, MALINOWSKI, SCHMIDT, READ, JONES, and MIGEOD; and AVEBURY's **Origins** covers the ground suggestively; but the themes have also been separately handled, as by Hobhouse and Westermarck. An able sketch of the problem of primary morals in savage life was supplied by the '**Primitive Manners and Customs**' of the late J. A. FARRER (C. & W. 1879), which has the critical value of all that writer's treatises. WALTER BAGEHOT's '**PHYSICS AND POLITICS**' (1872, often rep. I.S.S.) is an original but deductive rather than inductive theory of the rise of the moral faculties. (Inductive and deductive views are set forth in ch. i of Pt. II of the editor's 'Short History of Morals,' Watts, 1920.) 'Primitive Folk,' by ELIE RÉCLUS (C.S.S.), remains an instructive survey; and E. S. HARTLAND's 'Primitive Society' and 'Primitive Law' proceed upon much investigation (Met. 1921-24).

Cannibalism, which is dealt with in all general works on anthropology, may be specially viewed in the ethical connection. It is traced in the pre-metal stage (Joly), but has not been shown to be primary in the human era. A short survey of contemporary aspects in Africa is given by D. CAMPBELL (§ 8a) whose account (e.g. ch. iv) yields a somewhat different impression from that of missionaries and others who have found cannibals likeable.

(Refs. in 'Short Hist.' p. 67.) CARL LUMHOLZ's 'Among Cannibals' (2 v. 1903) is also critical. The interesting and popular work 'Trader Horn' pays notable tribute to the monogamous and other 'morality' of African cannibals. The older 'Five Years with the Congo Cannibals,' by H. WARD (C. & W. 1890) adds to the data for the period.

Sacrifice, which like cannibalism lies near the roots of primitive institutional religion, is necessarily studied in many of the works mentioned in this section, and forms a stepping-stone in the study. As to the origins, the most recent theological inquiry ('Hebrew Religion,' S.P.C.K. 1930, p. 160) pronounces: "the evidence suggests that in their origin sacrifices were a development of magical rites."

(b) The subject of the *beginnings* of religion, though that is not the same thing as the comparative study of savage religion, may be usefully approached through the manuals of Edward Clodd, 'Animism,' and Dr. A. C. Haddon, 'Magic and Fetichism' (Con. 1s ser. on Religions). It is further to be studied in Tylor and Lubbock (with an eye to the elements of presupposition in the work of the latter), and in the theoretic discussions in the monumental work of Sir J. G. Frazer, 'The Golden Bough' (Mac. 12 v. summarised ed. in 1 v. 1929); 'Primitive Religion,' by ROBERT H. LOWIE (Rout. 1926), a soundly scientific survey; and the 'Introduction to the History of Religion,' by Prof. F. B. JEVONS (Met. 1896) and 'The Making of Religion,' by ANDREW LANG (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1900), two able works embodying religious assumptions, against which may be set 'The Evolution of the Idea of God,' by Grant Allen (R.P.A. rep. Watts), which abounds in original anthropological views.

The brilliant and suggestive work of Dr. Marett, 'The Threshold of Religion' (Met. 2nd ed. 1914; 3rd n.d.), does not confine itself to the concept given in its title, but stimulatingly presents that. His phrase 'the pre-animistic stage' incurs the criticism that if 'animism' (Comte's and Tylor's word) is understood in the light of Darwin's study of the fear of the dog in presence of a suddenly moved inanimate object, there is no room for a "pre-animistic" stage in anthropology; and the refinements on "animism" and "animatism" are superfluous. Dr. Marett's acceptance of Lang's 'high Gods,' again, is cancelled by the thesis of 'prior' ideas, which negate Lang's theory. But importance attaches to Dr. Marett's criticism of Frazer's differentiation between magic and religion (discussed, with other dichotomies, in the editor's 'Pagan Christs').

(c) On primitive religious *practice*, as distinct from the more developed rituals of ancient civilisation (which drew from savage

beginnings), much is to be gathered from the general mass of descriptive works. A theory of its primary motivation is involved in the work of GÉZA RÓHEIM on 'Animism, Magic, and the Divine King' (Course V, § 8). Useful works of concrete observation are 'The Medicine Man: A Sociological Study of the Character and Evolution of Shamanism,' by Dr. J. L. MADDOX (Mac.) and 'The Religion of Lower Races as Illustrated by the African Bantu' (same). A large body of descriptive literature, further, is specified in RÓHEIM's references. The best grounds for supposing that contemporary savagery throws light on the "beginnings" of religion are that it is difficult to imagine anything more childishly crude than the religious mentality there set forth, and the unquestionable conservation in "civilised" countries of a mass of superstition on the plane of early savagery.

Of standard importance, but subject to criticism in respect of its assumption that all religion is fundamentally a process of social control or machinery, is 'The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life' (E. tr. A. & U. 1915), by the eminent French anthropologist and sociologist, E. DURKHEIM. The snares of this inquiry, on the anthropological side, have been disregard of detail and, in some cases, laxity of thought, in respect of prepossessions. The 'MEDICINE, MAGIC, AND RELIGION' of W. H. R. RIVERS (Rout. 1926) points usefully to the data, which are apt to undergo deductive deflection. Against this the work of Dr. Lowie is a safeguard. (The interesting debate on the "ghost" or dream-basis for religion, set up by HERBERT SPENCER in vol. i of his 'Principles of Sociology' (1877), is discussed in the editor's 'Hist. of Freethought in the 19th Cent.,' p. 355 sq. with refs. [Watts, 1929]). Dr. FELIX SCHULTZE's *Der Fetischismus* (1871) took at once an independent and scientific view of that problem; as did GUSTAV ROSKOFF (1880) in *Das Religionswesen der rohesten Naturvölker*. 'Primitive Ordeal and Modern Law,' by H. GOIBEIN (Met.) is an instructive survey, as is 'The Art and Religion of Fossil Man,' by G. H. LUQUET (E. tr. 1930: Yale U.P. and Milford).

(d) The term "psychology," in this connection, tends somewhat to misdirect the anthropological inquiry, which is apt to miss the abundantly demonstrated fact that mental range and power vary among savages as among the civilised. Exact report, therefore, should be consulted even when studying competent works such as 'An Introduction to Social Psychology,' by W. McDUGALL (15th ed. 1920); *La Raison Primitive*, by M. O. LÉROY (1929); 'The Mind of Primitive Man,' by F. BOAS (Mac. 1911); and the able (translated) treatises of L. LÉVY BRUHL,

'How Natives Think,' 'Primitive Mentality,' and 'The Soul of the Primitive' (A. & U.). Dr. P. RADIN, 'Primitive Man as Philosopher' (App. 1927), corrects some fallacious assumptions as to uniformity in primitive thought, while proceeding on anti-evolutionary and theistic assumptions.

The German investigations of 'Race Psychology' (*Völkerpsychologie*), despite the partial vindication of the term by Schmidt (p. 28), do not appear to justify the conception in a scientific fashion. But the work of Friedrich Ratzel, *Völkerrkunde* (Description of Peoples), trans. in English under the somewhat confusing title 'The History of Mankind' (Mac. 3 v. 4to, 1896-98), with pref. by Sir E. B. Tylor, is at once popular and comprehensive as an "ethnography." Other German researches are indicated in Schmidt's introd. The 'Human History' of Dr. ELLIOT SMITH (Cape, 1920) is of another order, being directed to a theory of peaceful tendencies in primitive man; but is well illustrated.

§ 11. TYLOR in his manual rightly takes up LANGUAGE before proceeding to deal with the origin and growth of the "Arts of Life." The problem of the beginnings of human speech, effectively raised by HERDER in 1770, was one of the stepping-stones to the scientific concept of evolution, zoological and mental. Before and after it had been newly posited by Darwin, it was much discussed by Prof. F. MAX MÜLLER (who began by being hotly anti-evolutionary) in his various works, for instance the 'Lectures on the Science of Language' (rev. ed. in 2 v.), 'Biographies of Words, and the Home of the Aryans,' 'Chips from a German Workshop,' and 'The Science of Thought' (all Lmns.). On the whole question of the function of philology in ethnology and anthropology, solid value inheres in the great work of Dr. O. SCHRADER, 'Prehistoric Antiquities of the Aryan Peoples' (E. tr. by F. B. Jevons; Griffin, 1890). The small work by Hensleigh Wedgwood, 'On the Origin of Language' (1866), was a useful corrective to Müller's dogmatism. In this connection should be studied the relative sections of Dr. ELLIOT SMITH's 'Evolution of Man' (§ 2), 'Mental Evolution in Man,' by Dr. G. J. ROMANES (1888); the work of L. T. HOBHOUSE on 'Mind in Evolution,' above mentioned, and L. GEIGER's 'Contributions to the History of the Development of the Human Race' (E. tr. 1880). It is still well worth the student's while to read the famous 'Diversions of Purley,' by HORNE TOOKER, which exhibits an amount of philosophic originality and penetration not always to be found in later English writers on the principles of language.

The untranslated works of GEIGER are also educative. Recent scientific investigation is to be followed with the help of Prof.

OTTO JESPERSEN'S 'Language, Its Nature, Development and Origin' (A. & U. new ed. 1925).

§ 12. *Gorillas and other "Primates."* Inasmuch as the evolutionary study of the beginnings of human life, mind and social practice leads back to that of the species of lower grades, from one or some of which man has descended, note should be taken of the literature as to the gorilla, "orang-outang," etc. Some works of the last generation (as Dr. H. HARTMANN'S 'The Anthropoid Apes,' I.S.S.) proceeded on imperfect knowledge, though Darwin was accurate at points which were later obscured. WINWOOD READE ('Savage Africa,' 1863, and 'The Habits of the Gorilla' in *The American Naturalist*, vol. i) began notation from personal observation.

Other testimonies have accumulated as:—T. A. BARNES, 'The Wonderland of the Eastern Congo' (1922, Put.); C. E. AKELEY, 'In Brightest Africa' (N.Y. 1923); MARY H. BRADLEY, 'On the Gorilla Trail' (N.Y. 1922); R. L. GARNER, 'Gorillas and Chimpanzees' (1896), a pioneer's book, and 'Apes and Monkeys: their life and language' (Boston, 1900); 'Almost Human,' by Prof. R. M. YERKES, of Yale (Cape, 1925)—a work of special interest, with a short bibliography and many illustrations. The "orang utan" is carefully described in A. R. WALLACE'S 'The Malay Archipelago' (Mur. 17th ed. 1922).

The anthropoid apes in general are fully described in BREHM and STRASSEN'S *Thierleben* (1911-22), vol. xiii; and the scientific studies of H. O. FORBES, 'A Handbook of the Primates' (Allen's Nat. Lib. 1894, 2 v.), and C. F. SONNTAG, 'The Morphology and Evolution of the Apes and Man' (Bale, 1924), competently cover the field; while W. KOEHLER'S 'The Mentality of Apes,' tr. by E. WINTER (K.P. 1925) deals intensively with the psychological problem. See also 'The Monkey-Folk of South Africa,' by F. W. FITZSIMMONS (Lmns. 1911, with 60 illustr.).

COURSE II

GEOGRAPHY

§ 1. AN interesting introduction to this study is supplied by the O.U.P. manuals, '**The World About Us**' and '**The World and its Discovery**'; and an instructive historic approach may be made through the expert **History of Geography**, by Sir J. SCOTT KELTIE and O. J. R. HOWARTH (Watts), which indicates the beginnings in antiquity, the Renaissance, and the eighteenth century, and supplies a good short bibliography. Dr. A. WILMORE's '**Ground-work of Modern Geography**' (Bell: new and enl. ed.) is a sound handbook. The pre-war manual, '**Modern Geography**,' by **Marion L. Newbiggin**, is also a good short introduction to the study, and its bibliography is little affected, though changed conditions occasion new handbooks. For a fuller treatment of the modern synthetic departure see BEAZLEY's '**Dawn of Modern Geography**' (Cl. Pr. 3 v. in 4, 1897-1906).

The connection between geography and geology is well brought out in HUXLEY's manual of '**Physiography**' (rev. ed. Mac. 1904), and in '**The Surface of the Earth**' (Cl. Pr. 1925) by JOHN JOLY; while the great work of EDUARD SUSS, '**The Face of the Earth**' (E. tr. 5 v. Cl. Pr.), is of standard rank. The C.U.P. also supplies expert works on Geological and Physical Geography.

An agreeable approach to this side of geography (geomorphology) is made in J. E. MAIR's '**The Scientific Study of Scenery**' (Met. 1899); with which may be read Sir A. GEIKIE's '**The Scenery of Scotland**' (Mac. 3rd ed. 1901) and Lord AVEBURY's '**The Scenery of England**' (Mac. 3rd ed. 1904); and there is an analogous appeal in '**A Course in Human Geography**' by J. Fairgrieve and E. Young (Philip: also in three separate Books).

§ 2. In view of modern political changes it is desirable to refer to the latest manuals; and the series edited by Dr. N. RUDMOSE BROWN (Harrap) may be recommended. '**The Physical Basis of Geography**' by V. F. SEARSON is a good starting-point for the student; and the manuals on '**The Countries of the World**' and '**The British Isles**' (Bell) or those in the C.U.P. Geographical and Travel Books lists, with those on '**Map-Reading**' (CAMERON)

and 'The Geographical Interpretation of Topographical Maps,' with an Atlas of Maps (Garnett), will guide detail study.

Dr. L. Dudley Stamp's 'The World' (Lmns.) is a good concise handbook. 'A History of Geographical Discovery and Exploration,' with many maps, by J. N. L. BAKER (Har.) embodies the latest records. There is also a special 'History of Geographical Discovery in the 17th and 18th Centuries,' by E. HEAWOOD (C.U.P.); and Sir C. R. MARKHAM's 'The Lands of Silence' (same) is a History of Arctic and Antarctic Exploration. Latterly we have 'The Polar Regions in the Twentieth Century,' by Gen. A. W. GREELEY (Har.).

§ 3. Commercial Geography is an obvious practical application of the science. The late G. G. CHISHOLM's 'Handbook of Commercial Geography' (Lmns. 11th ed. 1928, rev. by L. D. STAMP) is of great practical value; as are Dr. A. WILMORE's 'Industrial Britain' (Har.) and 'Modern Business Geography' by E. W. HUNTINGTON and S. W. CUSHING—with 100 maps and 84 photos (same). 'The Commercial Geography of the World' (Pit. new ed. 1931, rev. by W. P. RUTTER) is a comprehensive text-book of recognised standing; and 'Economic Geography,' by JOHN MACFARLANE (same: 3rd ed. rev.) is a still more extensive treatise. 'Social and Economic Geography,' by L. BREFFLE (same, 1931) is yet another survey of the twofold field. Dr. A. MORGAN's 'Economic Geography of Europe' (Lmns.) is a concise manual; and Dr. DUDLEY STAMP's 'Intermediate Commercial Geography' (2 pts.) and 'Regional Geography' (5 pts.: both Lmns.) give a wide guidance. 'High Lights of Geography,' by D. S. JORDAN and Miss R. D. CATHER (Har.) is broadly attractive; and A. C. HARDY's 'Seaways and Sea Trade: a Maritime Geography' is of practical service.

§ 4. Many of the older standard works retain their value. In particular, the studies of classical geographology are as such unaffected by modern changes; Sir E. H. BUNBURY's 'History of Ancient Geography' (Mur. 2 v. 1879) and TOZER's 'History of Ancient Geography' (Camb. Geog. Ser. 1897) are of scholarly importance; and FREEMAN's 'Historical Geography of Europe' remains indispensable for the student of history. In respect of comprehensiveness, Stanford's 'Compendium of Geography and Travel,' edited by the late A. H. KEANE (8 vols.), with a supplementary vol. giving a glossary of geographical and topographical terms, will always repay study. The most popular, perhaps, of the comprehensive geographers of the last generation was ELISÉE RECLUS, whose *Géographie universelle* ran to 19 v. in the English trans.; and whose *L'Homme et la Terre* received two translations.

§ 5. The older atlases retain their importance for the historic

past; but the political redistribution after the World War necessitated new ones. Among these are Philip's 'Historical' and 'International' Atlases (P. & Son: 229 maps), which give the political, commercial, climatic, and population data; also an 'Atlas of Physical, Political, and Commercial Geography,' an 'Atlas of Classical Geography,' and a convenient 'Record Atlas.' The 'Statistical Atlas of the World,' by J. STEPHENSON (Pit.), is a useful accompaniment to the study of the newer conditions. The *Times'* Atlases, old and new, are of standard merit, as are the 'Atlas of Commercial Geography' (1913) of FAWCETT ALLEN (C.U.P.), the 'Oxford Economic Atlas' (rev. ed. 1925) and 'Oxford Advanced Atlas' (rev. ed. 1928) of J. G. and JOHN BARTHOLOMEW (O.U.P.). Philip & Son also supply up-to-date Globes, and a Handbook to the use of them; and further, a 'League of Nations Map of the World'; and are agents for the Ordnance Survey Maps.

As in the case of Economics, the continuous study of Geography is usefully to be guided by the special periodicals—the *Geographical Journal* of the R.G.S.; the *Geography* of the Geog. Assoc., and the *Scottish Geographical Magazine*. The R.G.S. from time to time publishes a Guide to Geog. Books and Appliances (Philip).

§ 6. With Geography may be connected that Study of Weather which is a standing feature of modern journalism, and is conducted by the Weather Bureau connected with Greenwich Observatory. The study, which roots in immemorial forecasting, had early acquired the title of METEOROLOGY, and under that title its *modus operandi* was presented in the 'Modern Meteorology' of Dr. FRANK WALDO (C.S.S. 1893). The scientific progress made since that date is competently set forth in 'Climate: a Treatise on the Principles of Weather and Climate' by W. G. KENDREW (Cl. Pr. 1930); and there is a good comprehensive survey in the section 'Modern Geographical Ideas' by L. DUDLEY STAMP in 'An Outline of Modern Knowledge' (Gollancz, 1931). 'Meteorology' by David Brunt (O.U.P. 1928) is the latest manual.

Yet another general study, more correctly named by the term SEISMOLOGY, or the study of earthquakes—as to which see the 'Seismology' of J. MILNE (I.S.S. 1898)—connects with the foregoing, and is included in the current works on Geography. The 'Volcanoes: Past and Present' of Dr. EDWARD HALL (C.S.S. 1892); T. G. BONNEY's 'Volcanoes: Their Structure and Significance' (P.S.S. 1899); and 'The Physics of Earthquake Phenomena' by G. CARGILL KNOTT (Cl. Pr. 1908), may serve, with a use of the geographical journals, to keep the student abreast of the subject.

COURSE III

GENERAL OR POLITICAL HISTORY

GENERAL SURVEYS AND PERIOD SURVEYS

§ 1. THE "history of the world," in senses which cover the prehistoric ages and even planetary evolution, has been extensively re-handled in recent decades, in the light of the advance of archæological research. Of such surveys, one of the fullest is described in the next Course, as being broadly a survey of historic civilisation. But that aim marks many recent 'World Histories.' Thus the '**Outline History of the World**' by H. G. WELLS (5th rev. 1930. Cas.; also condensed to '**A Short History of the World**,' R.P.A. rep. Watts, 1s.) is a brilliant attempt to reduce the mass of pre-human, prehistoric and historic human evolution to a conspectus, with implications which make it sociologically doctrinal.

Of another order are 'An Outline History of the World' by H. A. DAVIES (O.U.P.; also in 2 Pts., 'The Ancient World,' 'The Medieval and Modern World'); 'A History of Mankind' by Prof. HUTTON WEBSTER (Har. 1930); and 'The Story of Mankind' by Dr. H. VAN LOON (same), which variously meet the desire for objective treatment. On the other hand, 'The Emergence of Man' by GERALD HEARD (Cape, 1931), is a subjective construction, theoretically and quasi-poetically substituting for a vast complexity a schemed simplicity, in small compass. 'A Guide to World History,' by A. R. COWAN (Lmns. 1923) is worth study.

§ 2. This Course deals mainly with written or otherwise recorded history, as distinct from the inferred order of events in the times "before civilisation." For such inferred history the sources will be found indicated in Course I, on Anthropology, a knowledge of which subject is the best scientific preparation for the study of history proper. But the very competent manual entitled '**The Dawn of History**' by Prof. J. L. MYRES (H.U.L.) is a good preliminary bridge from anthropology to history proper, embodying careful scientific theorising.

It seems judicious to read a good deal of history before one attempts to form views as to the best mode of studying it; but those who are ready for such views will do well to peruse the

Brit. Acad. lecture of the late Lord Bryce on 'World History' (Walford, 1920) and to master the *Introduction aux études historiques* of MM. LANGLOIS and SEIGNOBOS (2e édit. 1899; E. tr. Duck. 1898). With or without such a control, the British student of the history of the World has to face what the late Oscar Browning, in 1913, called "a study almost entirely neglected by ourselves." The 'Language: A Linguistic Introduction to History,' of Prof. J. VENDRIGES of Paris, and the 'Geographical Introduction to History' of LUCIEN FEBVRE (E. tr. both Rout. 1925) are also helpful.

'Outline' histories cannot in themselves yield the knowledge of which they indicate the need, but a helpfully practical conspectus was made in the last generation by Prof. Carl Ploetz, and translated with extensive and valuable additions by W. T. Tillinghast, of Harvard, under the title '**An Epitome of History, Ancient, Mediæval, and Modern**' (1884; rev. and enlarged to 1925 by Dr. H. E. BARNES as 'Ploetz' Manual of Universal History': Har.). This renders all the service that an epitome can. The 'Manual of Historical Literature' compiled by Prof. C. K. ADAMS of Michigan (N.Y. 1889) was a service of another kind, worth reproduction. Of subjective or didactic general views, some of the last century retain interest and attraction. The *Essai sur l'histoire universelle* of PRÉVOST-PARADOL (2 t. 1865) is a condensed history of national developments. Another survey, marked by mordant earnestness and original thought, is set forth in the impressive work of WINWOOD READE entitled 'The Martyrdom of Man' (1872 rep. Rout.; R.P.A. rep. Watts; also Cape).

§ 3. For the English reader there is available the compilation edited by Dr. H. F. HELMOLT, of which the English adaptation, under the title of 'The World's History: A Survey of Man's Record,' has an introd. by J. Bryce (Hei. 8 vols. 1901-7). Of this compendium some sections are notably well done; but the level of excellence varies a good deal. The 'Historians' History of the World,' edited by the American scholar Dr. H. S. WILLIAMS (Lond. 1904, 25 large vols.) is a compilation from the works of many writers, ancient and modern, carefully grouped and dove-tailed. Like most recent histories on a large scale, it is copiously if not well illustrated. The 'History of All Nations,' edited by the American Prof. J. H. WRIGHT (1902-7, 24 large vols.), is in the main a translation of the *Allgemeine Weltgeschichte* of TH. FLATHE and others, with a number of additional sections and additional volumes by American scholars. This too has unquestionable value.

In German there are the *Weltgeschichte* of H. SCHILLER (Berlin, 1900-01) in five massive volumes, well and industriously written,

with many good portrait illustrations, and the copious *Weltgeschichte* of J. B. WEISS (22 Bde. Graz, 1890-98), which has had great and deserved popularity. Almost alone among such works, it gives detailed references for its statements. The many shorter German treatises on universal history tend to be works of philosophical self-expression rather than historical narratives. The older *Allgemeine Geschichte in Einzeldarstellungen* is a series of highly scholarly histories begun under the editorship of ONCKEN (Berlin, 1879). Of this work, which comes down to the latter part of the nineteenth century, there have been issued 32 vols.

§ 4. Non-universal but still comprehensive surveys of 'continental' history are also available. Thus the H.U.L. '**Short History of Europe**,' by Herbert Fisher is an able conspectus, and '**A History of European Nations** from the earliest records to the beginning of the 20th century,' by A. S. RAPPOPORT (Greening, 1912) covers concisely and lucidly European history in general. E. Freeman's '**General Sketch of European History**' (Mac.) is the most popular of previous English surveys of the kind. On a larger scale, the '**European History: An Outline of its Development**,' by Prof. G. B. ADAMS of Yale (Mac. 1899), has special merit; and OSCAR BROWNING's '**History of Europe in Outline**' (same, 1901) has a living quality. Solid works of present-day scholarship are '**The End of the Ancient World and the Beginning of the Middle Ages**,' by Prof. LOT, of Paris (E. tr. Rout.); '**A Thousand Years of the Tartars**,' by Prof. E. H. PARKER (same); '**The Roman World**' by Prof. VICTOR CHAPOT (E. tr. same); and '**From Tribe to Empire: Social Organisation among the Primitives and in the Ancient East**,' by Profs. MORET of Paris and DAVY of Dijon (E. tr. Rout.).

§ 5. The "Ancient World" has been so much more fully explored by modern research that the older manuals on that field are more or less superseded, both as to Semitic and "classic" history. '**A History of the Ancient World**' by M. ROSTOVITZEFF (E. tr. by J. D. Duff, Cl. Pr. 2nd ed. 1930) deals in vol. i with 'Greece and the Orient' in a comprehensive fashion; and A. E. DOUGLAS-SMITH's '**The World of the Ancients**' (Har.) is a good conspectus. M. MASPERO's *Histoire Ancienne* (Hachette, rev. ed.) is still a good general manual, representing as it does the results of much research in Egyptology and Assyriology. All ancient Asiatic history, of course, is to be controlled by the scholarship of the later researches in Sumer-Akkad (as to which see Course VI); and '**The Sumerians**' of Mr. C. LEONARD WOOLLEY is a good conspectus. Ancient India is covered by VINCENT A. SMITH's '**Early History of India, from 600 B.C. to the Muhammadan Conquest**' (4th ed. rev. by S. M. Edwardes, Cl. Pr. 1924); and in

'The Heroic Age of India' by Prof. N. K. SIDHANTA of Lucknow (Rout.). Egypt is included in the other Histories of Antiquity, but is freshly studied in 'The Nile and Egyptian Civilisation' by Prof. A. MORET (E. tr. Rout.).

§ 6. A comprehensive '**History of the Greek and Roman World**' has been well compiled by Dr. G. B. Grundy (Met. 1929); and *La Cité Antique*, by FUSTEL DE COULANGES (1864; 12th ed. 1889: E. tr. Boston, 1874), is a standard research, added to at points by W. WARDE FOWLER in '**The City State of the Greeks and Romans**' (Mac. rev. ed.). Of more bulky histories of periods there are many, in English, German, and French. For ancient history MAX DUNCKER's '**History of Antiquity**' (E. tr. by Dr. Evelyn Abbott—Mac. 6 v.) may be consulted. It covers Egypt, Assyria, Babylon, Phœnicia, Israel, India, and Persia (the Greek section is separately translated), and is helpful in all sections save those dealing with Israel. But a later *Geschichte des Alterthums* has been produced by EDUARD MEYER, whose first volume (1884), *Geschichte des Orients bis zur Begründung des Perserreichs*, deals with Egypt, Babylonia, Assyria, the Semites, and the Iranians; the second (1893), *Geschichte des Abendlandes bis auf die Perserkriege*, with the Indo-Germanic races, early Greek civilisation and its evolution, the Persian Empire, and the Carthaginian and Etruscan civilisations; and the third, fourth, and fifth (1901-2), *Das Perserreich und die Griechen*, with those themes only. Later editions have been published, correcting the earlier. This is a work of great learning and accuracy, and of generally sound judgment, and quite superseded Duncker as regards all Hebraic connections.

The results of the latest archæological discoveries in the Greek islands are presented in 'The Ægean Civilization' by Prof. G. GLOTZ of Paris (E. tr. Rout.) and 'Minoans, Philistines, and Greeks: B.C. 1400-900' by A. R. BURN (same); while Greek civilisation in general is covered by Prof. GLOTZ's 'Ancient Greece at Work,' which opens the period from Homer to the Roman Conquest. 'The Formation of the Greek People' is surveyed by Prof. A. JARDÉ (E. tr. same); and the 'Ancient Rome at Work' of PAUL LOUIS (same) covers the economic history of Rome from the origins to the Empire.

§ 7. It is as linking up the classic world with mediæval Christendom that a special status is still held by one of the greatest works of historic-architectonic art, GIBBON's '**History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire**,' which, though constantly criticised, has never been superseded. Shelley's account of it as a bridge from the old world to the new has been generally accepted. The best edition is now that of Prof. Bury

(Met. 7 v.); but the Bohn ed. (7 v.) will serve very well for many readers, and has an interest of its own in respect of its copious variorum notes.

A work of much less bulk, but in its way of the highest reputation, is '**The Holy Roman Empire**' of **James** (afterwards Lord) **Bryce** (Mac. exp. ed. 1904), which should be read with Gibbon as exhibiting the continuity of ancient and modern history in Western Europe. A much fuller work of acknowledged merit is '**The Medieval Empire**,' by H. A. L. FISHER (Mac. 2 v. 1898). The latest authoritative treatises on that theme are the '**Medieval Europe: 395-1270**' of C. BÉMONT and G. MONOD (E. tr. Bell); the '**Guide to the Study of Medieval History**' of Prof. L. J. PAETOW (K.P. 1931), a new and greatly enlarged ed. of his '**Guide**' of 1917; the '**History of the Middle Ages, 300 to 1500**,' by D. J. WESTALL THOMPSON (same); the '**Medieval Europe**' of Prof. L. THORNDIKE (Har. 1920); J. H. ROBINSON's convenient '**Medieval and Modern Times, an Introd. to the History of Western Civilisation from the Dissolution of the Roman Empire to the Present Time**' (Ginn, 2 v. 1927); '**A History of Europe**'—'**The Middle Ages**,' by IERNE L. PLUNKETT; and '**The Modern World, 1492-1914**' by R. B. MOWAT (Cl. Pr. 1930: 842 pp. 144 illustrns., 28 maps). The history of Islam as a general political factor is separately, concisely, and competently presented in *L'Islamisme* by Prof. O. HOUDAS (Paris, 1904).

Value still attaches to the old panoramic work of Prof. W. SPALDING, '**Italy and the Italian Islands from the Earliest Ages to the Present Time**' (3 v. 1845). The more copious history of Dr. HODGKIN, '**Italy and her Invaders**' (Cl. Pr. 8 v. 1892-99) is a learned study of the military and political side of Italian evolution. Of similar value are the *Geschichte der Stadt Rom* of F. GREGOROVIVS (E. tr. '**The City of Rome in the Middle Ages**,' Bell, 2nd ed. 1900-2, 9 v.) and the earlier Catholic work of the same German title by VON REUMONT (3 Bde.) which in less space covers a longer time. HALLAM's '**View of the State of Europe in the Middle Ages**' (Mur. 3 v.) has still a general interest. As to the Papacy, and Church History, see Course VIII, §§ 16, 22. The O.U.P. Manual by Prof. E. Barker on '**The Crusades**' (1923) has fresh merit.

§ 8. For the Post-Reformation period, European history is more difficult to bring into a general view; but such manuals as those of Prof. F. SCHEVILL of Chicago, '**A History of Europe from the Reformation to the Present Day**' (Har.) and Dr. J. E. MORRIS, '**A History of Modern Europe from the middle of the 16th Century**' (C.U.P. 3rd ed. 1928) and '**Europe in the Nineteenth Century, 1815-1914**,' are very serviceable. The "**Napo-**

leonic Era" has been much handled in a large fashion, from ALISON's copious History down to Dr. J. H. ROSE's '**The Revolutionary and Napoleonic Era: 1789-1815**' (C.U.P.); and among the Histories of the Nineteenth Century may be noted 'A History of Modern Times, from 1789 to the Present Day' (Har.), and the handbooks of Prof. HEARNshaw, 'Main Currents of European History, 1815-1915,' and S. HERBERT, 'Modern Europe: 1789-1914' (both Mac.). Mr. G. P. GOOCH's compact 'History of our Own Time: 1885-1911' (H.U.L.) is an expert's survey; and F. LEE BENNS' 'Europe since 1914' (Bell) carries the record down to recent years.

§ 9. The question of the temper or attitude in which history is to be envisaged or written is discussed from divergent stand-points by Prof. Sir CHARLES FIRTH, 'A Plea for the Historical Teaching of History' (O.U.P. 2nd ed. 1905), and Prof. G. O. M. TREVELYAN, 'Clio a Muse' (Lmns. 1913). A substantial solution of the dispute is provided in 'Prolegomena to History' by Prof. F. G. TAGGART (Univ. of Cal. Pr. 1916), which discusses 'The Relation of History and Literature, Philosophy and Science,' with a breadth of learning and judgment not always exhibited in the debate. C. G. CRUMP's 'History and Historical Research' (K.P.) is also worth noting. Two brilliant booklets by young writers, 'History' by R. H. GRETTON (Secker, n.d.), and 'On History: A Story of Present Tendencies,' by A. L. ROWSE (K.P. 1927); and the older booklets of the late Prof. J. B. BURV, 'An Inaugural Lecture' (C.U.P. 1903), and LORD ACTON, 'A Lecture on the Study of History' (Mac. 1895), supply what may be rectifying judgments. Prof. TAGGART's 'Prolegomena' provides a good bibliography of the theoretic literature. Signor B. CROCE's 'Theory and History of Historiography' (E. tr. Har.) enters upon philosophy.

One of the best of recent books handling the matter is 'The Art of History,' by Prof. J. B. BLACK of Sheffield (Met. 1926), whose introduction is weighty at once in knowledge and in criticism, and whose four studies of 18th c. historians are masterly. The *Méthode Historique et Science Sociale: Étude Critique* of FRANÇOIS SIMIAND (*Rév. de Synthèse Histor.* 1903) carried on the French discussion set up by MM. LACOMBE and SEIGNOBOS alongside of the debate in England.

GENERAL HISTORY OF CIVILISATION

As we have already seen, the term "civilisation," like so many other "terms of art" in the humanist sciences, has been variously applied without an agreed definition. Thus it has been used as describing a process which began with the earliest forms of society, and so covers what is specifically named savagery; while it is claimed in terms of usage, concerning English history, that "the Roman period is the foundation of our civilisation." A basis for definition was formerly found in the concept of the *civitas* as a stage later than the tribal; but the recent practice covers earlier stages. These are more or less adequately indicated in our first and third Courses; and the present is addressed to Civilisation as commonly regarded and objectively studied. Doctrinary or didactic works, as distinct from studies of historic development, are indicated in later Courses, and SOCIOLOGY is separately dealt with.

§ 1. 'A Brief History of Civilisation,' by J. S. HOYLAND (O.U.P. 1930), or the work of Mr. McCABE (Course I, § 1), may serve as an introduction to the study; and the 'Short History of Civilisation' by LYNN THORNDIKE (Mur.) enlarges the record. In the last generation the only history of civilisation in English was the Rev. JOHN VERSCHOYLE's trans. and revision (C. & H. 1889-91) of the *Histoire sommaire de la civilisation* of GUSTAVE DUCOUDRAY, on which the translator made improvements in arrangement and otherwise. A more academic survey has been provided for English readers in the trans. of the 'History of World Civilization from Prehistoric Times' by Prof. E. H. SCHNEIDER of Leipzig (E. tr. 2 v. Rout. 1931), which represents twenty-five years of research. This, however, is partly apriorist in its "philosophy" of history and tends to treat separate civilisations as entities with terminable lives rather than as evolutions of organism and environment. On the scale of a conspectus, the massive work of the late JULIUS LIPPERT, 'The Evolution of Culture' (E. tr. abr. with introd. by the translator, Prof. G. P. MURDOCK of Yale: A. & U. 1931), is one of the strongest books of its kind produced in the last century (1886-7).

Something like a complete history of civilisation, abstracted from national and racial limitation, was supplied in the variously competent series of lucid surveys compiled by Professor CH. LETOURNEAU in the last generation: *L'évolution de la morale* (1887; 2e éd. 1894); *L'évolution du mariage et de la famille* (1888: E. tr. C.S.S.); *L'évolution de la propriété* (1889: E. tr. C.S.S.); *L'évolution politique dans les diverses races humaines* (1890); *L'évolution juridique dans les diverses races humaines* (1890); *L'évolution religieuse dans les diverses races humaines* (1892); *L'évolution littéraire* (1894); *La guerre* (1895); *L'évolution de l'esclavage* (1897); *L'évolution du commerce . . .* (1897); *L'évolution de l'éducation . . .* (1898); *La condition de la femme . . .* (1903).

§ 2. The German literature of learning is rich in the department of "culture history," which in German has a broader meaning than in English. A recent series, *Der Mensch aller Zeiten*, of which there have appeared several vols. (Regensburg), is a very comprehensive undertaking, on ethnological lines. Older studies still remain serviceable. R. GUNTHER's *Allgemeine Kulturgeschichte* (Zürich and Leipzig, 1897) is a good compendium, proceeding on a number of previous German works, including J. J. HONEGGER's *Allgemeine Kulturgeschichte* (2 Bde. Leip. 1882-86); FR. VON HELLWALD's *Kulturgeschichte in ihrer natürlichen Entwicklung bis zur Gegenwart* (Leip. 1885); and O. HENNE AM REYN's *Allgemeine Kulturgeschichte von der Urzeit bis zur Gegenwart* (1875)—all solid and instructive treatises. The last-named writer has a shorter *Handbuch der Kulturgeschichte* (Leip. 1900), which deserves special recommendation; and a treatise on *Die Kultur der Vergangenheit, Gegenwart, und Zukunft in vergleichender Darstellung* (1900), which set a notable example in the legitimate method of sociology. But the *Allgemeine Kulturgeschichte in Grundriss dargestellt* of J. NIKEL (1895) is also a work of ability and good method, though affected by religious sentiment. More popular, and exceptionally interesting, is the *Illustrierte Cultur-Geschichte* of C. FAULMANN (1881), in which the illustrations are reproductions of tasteful drawings.

No previous culture-history or history of civilisation, however, can be said to surpass in range or in variety of illustration the 'Universal History of the World' edited by Sir J. A. HAMMERTON (Amalg. Pr. 8 v.). That sets out with the cosmic "birth" of the earth, its geological history, human evolution, and prehistoric life; and, after a set of outlines of "aspects" of history in the abstract, presents the actual process in a series of ten eras, from about 4000 B.C. down to 1929; the totality being the work of nearly 200 writers. The richness of the illustration is remarkable.

§ 3. A helpful new departure has been made in the last decade by

the 'Legacy' series, begun by 'The Legacy of Greece,' the work of many specialists, edited by Gilbert Murray (Cl. Pr. 1921); which was followed on a somewhat larger scale by 'The Legacy of Rome,' also the work of many specialists, ed. by Cyril Bailey with introd. by Mr. Asquith (1923); 'The Legacy of the Middle Ages,' ed. by C. G. Crump and E. F. Jacob (1926); 'The Legacy of Israel,' planned by the late I. Abrahams, ed. by E. R. Bevan and Charles Singer (1927); and 'The Legacy of Islam,' ed. by A. Guillaume and the late Sir T. Arnold (1931). These books are all well illustrated, and variously comprehensive of the evolution of all sides of mental and social life, so far as they are involved.

§ 4. Histories of periods and areas of civilisation are naturally more common than complete surveys; and the regional histories of periods named in the last Course are in large part histories of "civilisation" as well as of culture. 'A Short History of Chinese Civilization' by RICHARD WILHELM (E. tr. with intr. by Dr. L. Giles: (Har.) is a welcome contribution. The civilisation of Europe as a whole is surveyed with ability and learning in 'The Dawn of European Civilization' by the Rev. G. HARTWELL JONES (K.P. 1903), whose copious references enable the student to check his careful generalisations. The work of the same title by V. GORDON CHILDE (K.P. 1925) stands for the latest scholarship. Of special value for their clearness of outline and exact knowledge are the three manuals of Prof. CH. SEIGNOBOS of the Sorbonne, *Histoire de la civilisation dans l'antiquité jusqu'au temps de Charlemagne* (4e édit. 1893; E. tr. 1910, F.U.); *Histoire de la civilisation au moyen âge et dans les temps modernes* (E. tr. 1908, F.U.); and *Hist. de la civ. contemporaine* (E. tr. 1909, F.U.).

§ 5. 'A History of Modern Culture' by Prof. PRESERVED SMITH of Cornell (Rout. 1931) is one of the most comprehensive of culture-histories for any period; and A. F. HATTERSLEY'S 'Short History of Western Civilisation' (C.U.P.) is a good compendium. 'Chivalry: Its Historical Significance and Civilising Influence,' ed. by Prof. E. PRESTAGE (Rout.); the 'Chivalry' of F. W. CORNISH (Son. 1901); and the 'Monasticism: What Is It? A Forgotten Chapter in the History of Labour,' by H. J. FEASEY (Sands, 1898), are in their different ways relevant to the study. But the massive 'Historical Sketch of Sacerdotal Celibacy' of H. C. LEA (W. & N. 3rd ed. 1907; Watts, 1932) is an intensive study of great learning; and the no less massive and learned 'Five Centuries of Medieval Life and Thought' by G. G. COUTLON (C.U.P. 1923, etc.) is the most comprehensive sociographical history of mediæval monasticism.

While special aspects of political, ecclesiastical, and industrial

history are set forth in the Courses on History, Politics, The Life of Women, Education, etc., there may be included in the present a number of instructive monographs, as: **METCHNIKOFF's** *La civilisation et les grands fleuves historiques* (Paris, 1889); **MISS EDITH SIMCOX's** 'Primitive Civilisations' (Son. 2 v. 1894); **R. E. ANDERSON's** 'Story of the Extinct Civilisations of the West' (Newnes, 1903); 'The Beginnings of Writing,' by **DR. W. J. HOFFMANN**, with intr. by Prof. F. Starr (Mac. 1879); 'The Revolutions of Civilisation' by **SIR FLINDERS PETRIE** (Harp. 1912); 'The Civilisation of Greece in the Bronze Age' by **H. R. HALL** (Har. 1928) and 'From Savagery to Commerce' by **T. S. FOSTER** (Cape, 1930); **V. GORDON CHILDE's** 'The Ancient East' (K.P. 1928); 'The Bronze Age' (C.U.P. 1930); and 'The Aryans: a Study of Indo-European Origins' (K.P.); **DR. W. CUNNINGHAM**, 'An Essay on Western Civilisation in its Economic Aspects' (C.U.P. 2 v. 1898-1901); **J. C. CARTER**, 'Law, its Origin, Growth, and Function' (Mac. 1907); **DR. J. W. DRAPER's** 'History of the Intellectual Development of Europe' (B.L. 2 v.); **C. T. GORHAM's** 'Christianity and Civilisation' (Watts, 1914); **J. McCABE's** 'The Bible in Europe' (Watts, 1907), and such treatises as **C. LORING BRACE's** 'Gesta Christi' (H. & S. 1889); and that of **Prof. C. SCHMIDT** (E. tr. 1885) on 'The Social Results of Early Christianity,' against which may be set **Mr. McCABE's** 'The Church and the People' (Watts, 1919), as to the Christian treatment of slavery and labour, and **Mr. C. COHEN's** 'Christianity and Slavery' (P.P.).

§ 6. **LORD ACTON's** 'History of Freedom and other Essays' (Mac. 1907) is suggestive; and **Prof. J. B. BURY's** 'History of Freedom of Thought' (H.U.L.) is a vivid summary by a very scholarly historian. Philosophies of History, so called, belong to Sociology; but the old work of **HERDER**, *Ideen zur Geschichte der Menschheit* (current ed. in 3 Bde.), which is tr. in French, but only in an old version in English (2nd ed. 2 v. 1803) has still concrete interest.

To the concept of freedom as a civilising force attaches that of mental tyranny, studied quite objectively in the two great works of **H. C. LEA**, 'A History of the Inquisition in the Middle Ages' (3 v. 1888, 1906) and 'A History of the Inquisition in Spain' (4 v. 1906-7). On this general theme, a concise exposition is supplied by the monographs of **C. T. GORHAM**, 'The Spanish Inquisition' (1906) and 'The Medieval Inquisition' (1918: both Watts). There is also an *Histoire de l'Inquisition en France*, by **T. DE CAUZONS** (2 t. 1909). Of correlative importance, on the social as distinct from the political side, is the work of **W. E. H. LECKY**, 'History of the Rise and Influence of the Spirit of Rationalism in Europe' (1865, 2 v. ;

sev. reps., one by R.P.A., Watts), of which the learning is more important than the ratiocination.

§ 7. The general conception of civilisation, finally, turns to a large extent on the progress of the sciences, the arts, and mechanical invention, though invention obviously begins as early as fire and the first resort to weapons. The arts and sciences are specially considered in later Courses, as are other phases of civilisation; but Invention, which has been noted in the early stages included under Anthropology, has its special interest as a series of finger-posts to the general development. 'The Origin of Inventions: A Study of Industry among Primitive Peoples,' by Dr. O. T. MASON (C.S.S. 1895), is a stimulating introduction; and special works such as W. D. HAMBLEY'S 'Origins of Education among Primitive Peoples: A Comparative Study in Racial Development' (C.U.P.) and those specified in Course I, § 10, dealing with fire, language, and colour sense, open up the subject.

The late process began to be specially recorded when the "Age of Invention" was dawning. The old 'History of Inventions, Discoveries, and Origins,' by J. BECKMANN (1780-1805; E. tr. 4th ed. exp. B.L. 1846), by its very disorder reveals the miscellaneity of the evolution; and with the old 'History of Inventions and Discoveries' of FRANCIS S. WHITE (1827) brings the general record down to about a century ago.

For the nineteenth century see A. R. WALLACE'S 'The Wonderful Century' (Son. 1898, and later), and 'The Recent Development of Physical Science' by W. C. WHETHAM (Mur. 1904); and E. CRÉSSY'S 'Discoveries and Inventions of the Twentieth Century' (new ed. rewr. 1929, Rout.). J. McCABE'S '1825-1925: A Century of Stupendous Progress' (Watts, 1925) surveys the social aspects of civilisation in general.

As to the rapid and unceasing march of invention, details may be studied in Dr. C. R. GIBSON'S 'Electricity of To-day,' 'Wireless of To-day,' and 'Scientific Ideas of To-day'; I. W. CORBIN'S 'Mechanical Inventions of To-day,' and other vols. in the 'Science of To-day Series' (S.S. & Co.); also in 'The Conquest of the Air: an Histor. Survey,' by C. L. M. Brown (1927: O.U.P. Manual).

Such a work as 'Invention and the Unconscious,' by J. M. MONTMASSON, with intr. by Dr. H. Stafford Hatfield (E. tr. Rout. 1931), links up the latter phenomena with sociology, as indicating the dependence of the Civilisation of Man on the ideas of the few.

COMPARATIVE MYTHOLOGY

§ 1. THE study of the myths of all races has within the past three generations been carried out with much industry, but thus far without the establishment of any save a few simple general laws which are undisputed, one being the natural kinship of myths of all races. The 'Poetry and Myth' of Prof. F. C. PRESCOTT (N.Y. Mac. 1927) is a literary or æsthetic synthesis of the general ideas involved in the themes of the title, to which might have been added "religion," since that is also contemplated as myth in most of its historical aspects. As a concrete introduction to the subject matter, the reader may use the manual of the late Miss **Jane E. Harrison**, '**Mythology**' (Har.); the 'Introduction to Mythology' of LEWIS SPENCE (same); the 'Greek and Roman Mythology' of Dr. J. H. STEUDING and the 'Northern Mythology' of Prof. D. F. KAUFMANN (T.P. Ser. Dent); or any of the long series of scholarly books on the myths of the various races in the 'Myths Series' by Mr. Spence and others (Harrap).

"Classical" mythology being the most widely known, Dictionaries of that are usefully to be consulted. The old 'C.D. of Greek and Roman Biography, Mythology, and Geography,' by Sir W. SMITH (Mur.), has been competently revised by G. E. MARINDIN. (Smaller C.D. also largely rewritten.) The 'Dictionary of Classical Antiquities, Mythology,' etc. of Dr. O. SEYFFERT, rev. and ed. with add. by H. NETTLESHIP and Dr. J. E. SANDYS (Son. 1906), is trustworthy and well illustrated.

§ 2. The brilliant treatise of K. O. MÜLLER, translated as 'Introduction to a Scientific System of Mythology' (1844), is an admirably suggestive but not a definitive generalisation; and the essay published by Prof. PAUL REGNAUD under the title *Comment naissent les Mythes?* (Alcan: 1898) does not decisively answer that question, his thesis being simply that "the whole Indo-European mythology derives from verbal substitutions and personifications," and his evidence being confined to Sanskrit texts. This was an adhesion to the sectarian etymological school of Forchhammer and other German scholars, who would use only

one key. Of greater scientific value as pointing to the true psychological roots of the myth-making faculty is the essay of **Tito Vignoli** on 'Myth and Science' (I.S.S.). Cf. the editor's 'Christianity and Mythology' (Watts), which discusses the principles of the science in a general survey of 'The Progress of Mythology.' The 'Mythology as a Historical Science' of **G. LAWRENCE GOMME** (Met. 1908) is largely a search for the historical data embedded in racial and local myths. Further scientific study of the myth-making process is best to be conducted by following the series of elucidatory hypotheses which arose in the research of the last century. See **E. E. KELLETT**, 'The Story of Myths' (Rout.) On that basis there is already much stimulating discussion, in 'Myth and Religion: an Enquiry into their Nature and Relations,' by **WILLIAM NICOLSON**, M.A. (Helsingfors, 1892); and in 'Religion and Myth' by the Rev. **J. MACDONALD** (Nutt, 1893).

§ 3. It is not a bad beginning in the study of Comparative Mythology to take up some collections of the so-called **FOLK LORE** of our own and other races. A good comprehensive view of the subject is given in 'The Childhood of Fiction: A Study of Folk Tales and Primitive Thought,' by **J. A. MACCULLOCH** (Mur. 1905). **Edward Clodd's** 'Tom Tit Tot: an Essay on Savage Philosophy in Folk Tale' (Duck. 1898), is a very suggestive introduction, as is his 'Myths and Dreams' (rev. ed. 1891), a book which, with an irrelevant beginning, contains much thinking. **E. S. Hartland's** work on 'The Science of Fairy Tales' (C.S.S.) gives many clues, as does **G. L. GOMME's** 'Ethnology in Folklore' (K.P.) **KEIGHTLEY's** old 'Fairy Mythology' is still useful; and **GRIMM's** 'Fairy Tales' are easily procurable.

Among special collections may be specified, besides the 'Myths Series' above mentioned, which covers nearly all countries and periods, the series 'Myth and Legend in Literature and Art,' by **D. A. MACKENZIE**, **A. R. HOPE-MONCRIEFF**, and **C. SQUIRE** (Gresham Pub. Co. 10 v. illustr.). These cover Celtic, Teutonic, Egyptian, Cretan, Indian, and Babylonian myth.

Older studies are **Dr. BRINTON's** 'Myths of the New World' and 'American Hero Myths,' published in the U.S. These works, and the extensive compilation of **H. H. BANCROFT** on 'The Native Races of the Pacific States' (N.Y. 5 vols.), bring us in view of the process by which myths harden into religious systems. To these may be added **J. CURTIN's** 'Creation Myths of Primitive America' (1899); **R. M. DORMAN's** 'Origin of Primitive Superstition' (1881); **A. A. MACDONELL's** valuable 'Vedic Mythology' (1896); and the able and erudite *Vedische Mythologie* of **ALFRED HILLEBRANDT** (Breslau, 1910).

Among special researches may be noted the scholarly 'Mace-

donian Folklore' of G. F. ABBOTT (C.U.P. 1903), and the critically original pro-Christian work of J. C. LAWSON on 'Modern Greek Folklore and Ancient Greek Religion' (C.U.P. 1910); J. F. CAMPBELL'S 'Popular Tales of the West Highlands' (new ed. Gaelic and English, Gardner, Paisley, 4 vols. 1890-93); J. CURTIN'S 'Myths and Folk Lore of Ireland' (Low, 1890); the 'Celtic Folk Lore' of Prof. JOHN RHYS (Frowde, 1901), and the 'Celtic Fairy Tales' of JOSEPH JACOBS (Nutt, 1891); Dr. R. C. MACLAGAN'S 'Scottish Myths' (Edinb. 1882); W. W. GILL'S 'Myths and Songs from the South Pacific,' with pref. by Max Müller (1876), not to be superseded, but well followed up, by J. C. ANDERSEN'S 'Myths and Legends of the Polynesians' (Har. 1928); R. H. CODRINGTON'S 'The Melanesians: Studies in their Anthropology and Folklore' (Cl. Pr. 1891); J. BATCHELOR'S 'The Ainu and their Folk-Lore' (R.T.S. 1901); E. SHORTLAND'S 'Maori Religion and Mythology' (1882); Sir G. GREY'S 'Polynesian Mythology' (1s. rep. Rout.); Dr. W. H. I. BLEEK'S 'Reynard the Fox in South Africa' (1864); W. W. SKEAT'S 'Malay Magic' (Mac. 1900); W. R. S. RALSTON'S 'Russian Folk Tales' (1873) and trans. of 'Tibetan Tales' (1882); and J. CURTIN'S 'Myths and Folk Lore of the Russians, Western Slavs, and Magyars' (Low, 1890). See also, in general, the systematic accounts of savage life mentioned in Course I, § 7.

§ 4. The first comprehensive and scientific English repertory of facts as to primitive thought was Sir E. B. TYLOR'S 'Primitive Culture' (4th ed. 2 v. Mur. 1904), which is of prime importance to the student alike of mythology and early civilisation. But the most exhaustive investigation that has yet been made as regards the bases of a large order of myths is Sir J. G. FRAZER'S 'The Golden Bough' (Mac. 3rd ed. 12 v. 1911-15), of which there is a useful condensation in 1 vol. (same, rep. 1932). With this may be grouped Sir James's masterly compilation 'Pausanias' Description of Greece' (6 v. same), in which the priceless store of data on Greek mythology, compiled in the 'Description of Greece' by that ancient archaeologist (tr. in B. Lib. 2 v.) is elucidated and commented with consummate scholarship. Frazer's vast research in 'The Golden Bough' may be described as a development of the principles laid down by the German MANNHARDT, who expounded his folk-lore method in his *Mythologische Forschungen*, but especially in his *Wald- und Feldkulte* (all posthumously published: 2 v. 1874 and 1875-77). All subsequent mythology has been influenced towards scientific method by his, though he can be at times fantastic in his speculations. Of this fruitful line of research, Mrs. J. H. Philpot's monograph, 'The Sacred Tree, or, the Tree

in Religion and Myth' (Mac. 1897), is a notably interesting product.

Another valuable collection of one order of folk-lore and myth was made by A. DE GUBERNATIS under the title 'Zoological Mythology' (2 v. 1872). Of the same order of interest is 'The Horse in Magic and Myth' by M. O. HOWEY (1923), *Hermes der Mondgott*, by ERNST SIECKE (Leip. 1908), an interesting research made with the object of elucidating the myths concerning that deity, who had been presented as a Wind-God by W. ROSCHER (1878). A multitude of such detail problems are dealt with in the three large vols. of S. REINACH'S *Cultes, Mythes, et Religions* (1908).

§ 5. Mythological science made an advance when, latterly, it was generally realised that ancient popular tales were part of the raw material of myth, and that the classical mythologies are to be studied in that light. The idea seems to have been first broached by Fontenelle in his *De l'origine des Fables* (circa 1700?). A useful introduction to the method of one sometime influential school is supplied by Prof. J. Fiske's 'Myths and Myth-Makers' (1873). A more copious and systematic treatise is Sir G. W. COX'S 'Mythology of the Aryan Nations' (K.P. revised ed. in 1 v.), which, though its theories cannot be taken as final, the student should consult. The same writer has published an 'Introduction to the Science of Comparative Mythology' (1881), which also is helpful. Sir G. W. Cox and Prof. Fiske were both inspired by, and in a considerable measure followed, Prof. F. MAX MÜLLER in respect of that author's application of the Solar or Sun-Myth Theory (which involves other explanations from natural phenomena) to as many myths as possible. Prof. MÜLLER in turn was first inspired by the German Kuhn (*Die Herabkunft des Feuers und des Göttertranks*, 1859); and he has expounded his views in his 'Introduction to the Science of Religion,' 'Selected Essays on Language, Mythology, and Religion,' 'Natural Religion,' 'Physical Religion,' 'Anthropological Religion,' and 'Chips from a German Workshop' (all Lmns.). He has written much in these volumes on the rise and modification of myths through misconception and misuse of words—an important topic, on which there is still much conflict of opinion. The idea was summarily and uncritically presented in the anonymous 'Aryan Sun-Myths the Origin of Religions' (1889: with pref. by Ch. Morris).

The Solar Theory of myths is really very old, having been ably and ingeniously applied to mythology in the *Saturnalia* of the Latin writer MACROBIUS (5th c. C.E.), as to whom see the 'Macrobius' of THOMAS WHITTAKER (C.U.P. 1923). Macrobius in all

probability got his lore, or part of it, from the Egyptian and other priests, who explained their myths by astronomical principles. (On this see Plutarch's treatise 'On Isis and Osiris,' in Bohn ed. of Plutarch's 'Morals'; and compare Prof. MAHAFFY'S 'Prolegomena to Ancient History,' p. 241.) The Solar Theory was ably if prematurely applied by such scholars as DUPUIS (*Origine de tous les Cultes*, 1795, last ed. 1834, in 10 v.; *Abr.* in 1 v. 1798 and later); and VOLNEY, whose 'Ruins of Empires' was long popular. Sir W. Drummond applied these views to Judaism in his *Œdipus Judaicus* (rep. 1866); and they are founded on in the *Anacalypsis* of GODFREY HIGGINS (3 v. 4to, 1833-36). It was after a period of reaction against all such "unsettling" science that Comparative Mythology entered on a new period in France and England, the impulse coming from Germany.

It must be kept in view that the solar principle is not bound up with any one writer's applications of it; and much of the criticism passed on Müller and Cox (e.g. Professor Mahaffy's in his 'Prolegomena') in no way touches the solar theory in itself. Again, 'Our Sun-God, or, Christianity before Christ' by J. D. PARSONS (priv. pub. 1895) is the work of an English Broad Churchman. For a defence of his own method by Prof. Müller, see the *Nineteenth Century*, Dec. 1885; and his 'Contributions to the Science of Mythology' (Lmns. 2 v. 1897), replied to by Lang in 'Modern Mythology' (same, 1897). The problem should now be connected with the theory of the rise of solar religion in the northern world and its diffusion thence to the south and east. See the work of Schneider, Course IV, § 1.

§ 6. More popular than the Solar Theory among the ancients was that associated with the name of EUEMEROS or EUHEMEROS (4th c. B.C.), who held that the stories of the Gods were based on episodes in the lives of heroes. Even that principle is not devoid of truth, as has been shown (see § 10) by Herbert Spencer, and by Sir A. LYALL in his 'Asiatic Studies,' 2nd Ser. (Mur. 1899).

§ 7. Of the view that mythology is to be studied inductively, on the lines of FONTENELLE and of DE BROSSES (1760) and of B. CONSTANT (1824), on the basis of savage folk-lore, the chief modern exponent in England has been **Andrew Lang**, who demurred to the prevailing "vegetation" principle of Frazer, as to the solar principle of Müller. His '**Custom and Myth**: Studies of Early Usage and Belief' (Lmns.) is an interesting and attractive exposition, of which the bulk is reproduced, revised, with other essays in his '**Origins of Religion**' (R.P.A. rep. Watts, 1908). The same vivacity pervades his 'Magic and Religion' (Lmns. 1901). More elaborate and comprehensive is his '**Myth, Ritual,**

and Religion' (Lmns. 2 v. 2nd ed. 1899). Mr. Lang, however, tended to fall into an extreme opposed to that of the Solarists, and against all generalisation, especially what is rationalistic. The criticism of his later methods by R. BROWN, jun., in 'Semitic Influences in Hellenic Mythology' (W. & N. 1898), though flightily phrased, is mostly valid. The general problem of the literary preservation and conveyance of myth-matter is ably handled in the essay of HEINRICH LESSMANN, *Aufgaben und Ziele der vergleichenden Mythenforschung* (Leip. 1908).

§ 8. Another key is that of "Phallicism" or "nature worship"—that is, the primitive tendency to symbolise and worship the principle of life and the generative organs. It may be taken as certain that this way of thinking entered into all primitive religion; but here also some theorists tend to strain facts to fit one explanation. How far the theory can be carried is seen in the 'Animism, Magic, and the Divine King' of GÉZA RÓHEIM (K.P. 1930), author of 'Australian Totemism' (A. & U.), a very widely read Freudian anthropologist. In his serried treatise the phallic motive is found within every species of myth, from Adam and Eve to Romulus and Remus, King Arthur, and the Holy Ghost, governing savage mentality from the Primary Horde to contemporary sorcery and cannibalism. See also Miss J. L. WESTON's 'The Quest of the Holy Grail' (Bell, 1913).

Important matter in this connection is to be found in Dr. T. INMAN's 'Ancient Faiths Embodied in Ancient Names' (o.p.: 3 v.) and 'Ancient Pagan and Modern Christian Symbolism' (2nd ed. 1875), and in General FORLONG's large work, 'Rivers of Life' (Quar. 2 v. 4to), which is in some ways more trustworthy, as well as more comprehensive. General Forlong published with his book four instructive maps or charts, setting forth his conception of the process of blending of the various primitive principles into the historic religions. Smaller works are 'Primitive Symbolism as Illustrated in Phallic Worship,' by HODDER M. WESTROPP (Redway), and C. S. WAKE's 'Serpent Worship' (same). The old *Histoire Abrégée de differens cultes* of DULAURE (2e éd. 2 t. 1825) and the *Recherches sur le culte de Bacchus* of P. N. ROLLE (3 t. 1824) need checking.

The latest work on the subject, 'The Sacred Fire: A History of Phallic Worship,' by Z. GOLDBERG (Jarrold, 1931), claims to be the most comprehensive study. Of a more esoteric order is the *Vénus, La Déesse Maligne de la Chair* of PIERRE PIOBLI (Paris, 1909), who sets forth a scheme of ten possible forms of religion, typified in as many names of Gods and Goddesses.

§ 9. Yet another key to the more elaborate ancient mythologies is that of the Zodiac, of which the symbols entered largely into

mystical and mythical narratives. The importance of a thorough comparative method in this field is shown by the fact that Hermann Gunkel's derivation of the Mother and Child myth in REVELATION solely from Babylonia had to be corrected by notation of similar myths in Egypt and elsewhere. The subject calls for fresh handling in the light of modern science and by modern methods; and the best recent work done in it is perhaps that embodied in the comprehensive 'Asiatic Mythology' by many Professors, trans. from the French by F. M. Atkinson, with introd. by Paul Louis Couchoud (Har. 1931). The study was advanced notably by the German scholars PETER JENSEN, in *Die Kosmologie der Babylonier* (1890), and E. STUCKEN, *Astralmythen der Hebräer, Babylonier und Ägypter*, (2 Th. Leipzig, 1896-97). With this may be bracketed the 'Astronomy in the Old Testament' of G. SCHIAPARELLI (E. tr. rev. Cl. Pr. 1905). The readable and interesting work of J. F. BLAKE, 'Astronomical Myths' (1877), founded on Flammarion's 'History of the Heavens,' does not go far into the mythological inquiry; but the 'Researches into the Origin of the Primitive Constellations of the Greeks, Phoenicians, and Babylonians,' by R. BROWN, jun. (W. & N. 1899), is independent and important. The inquiry blends with that into Babylonian religion, as to which see Course VI, § 5. The 'Ancient Calendars and Constellations' of the Hon. EMMELINE PLUNKETT (Mur. 1903) throws considerable light on Asiatic myth.

§ 10. Another explanatory principle, put forward by HERBERT SPENCER in his 'Principles of Sociology,' has won some acceptance. Spencer traces religious beliefs generally to ancestor-worship, which he supposes to have arisen from the phenomena of dreams. An increasing mass of evidence goes to show that this is a source of God-ideas, though not the only one. In partial correction of Spencer's teaching (which is also countered at various points by other mythologists, including Tylor and Lang) should be read Tito Vignoli's essay on 'Myth and Science,' above mentioned, as well as the literature of phallicism.

§ 11. It is useful to have at hand some of the standard collections on the mythologies of distinct peoples. The 'Manual of Mythology in relation to Greek Art' of MAXIME COLLIGNON (E. tr. by Miss Harrison, 1890) and the old 'Manual of Mythology' of A. S. Murray (1874) may still serve as introductions on the most attractive side of the "classic" mythology. Much independent thinking on mythology is embodied in Miss HARRISON's 'Prolegomena to the Study of Greek Religion' (C.U.P. 2nd ed. 1908), as in her 'Themis' (same, 1912). In English there is no collection of Greek and Roman mythology that will compare

for learning and thoroughness with the great German compilation edited by W. H. ROSCHER, *Ausführliches Lexikon der griechischen und römischen Mythologie* (1884-1921) or even with the earlier works of PRELLER, *Römische Mythologie* and *Griechische Mythologie*, which represent the accumulation of generations of scholarship. (Later scholars revised and expanded Preller: 4th ed. of the *Griechische Mythologie*, by C. Robert, Bd. i, 1887; 2nd ed. of the *Römische*, by R. Köhler, 1865.) In French, VICTOR BÉRARD's *De l'origine des cultes arcadiens* (1894); ÉMILE BURNOUF's *La légende athénienne* (1872); and Prof. DECHARME's *La mythologie figurée de la Grèce* (1886) have still scholarly value; and PAYNE KNIGHT's 'Symbolical Language of Ancient Art and Mythology' (ed. with annot. N.Y. 1876) contains much suggestive matter. But there has been no more searching and scientific study in Greek Mythology than the late E. S. HARTLAND's 'The Legend of Perseus' (Nutt, 3 v. 1894-6). There is originality and learning in L. R. FARNELL's 'The Cults of the Greek States' (Cl. Pr. 4 vols. 1896-1907); and high praise is due also to Miss JANE E. HARRISON's 'Mythology and Monuments of Ancient Athens' (Mac. 1890) for its original elucidations. Miss Harrison's primer on 'The Religion of Ancient Greece' (Con. 1s. ser.) and the work of R. Brown, jun., on 'Semitic Influence in Hellenic Mythology,' already named, give light on the Oriental sources of many Greek myths and beliefs.

The research of Preller and his German predecessors was followed on new lines and on a very wide scale by OTTO GRUPPE in *Die griechischen Culte und Mythen in ihren Beziehungen zu den Orientalischen Religionen* (1887) of which the huge first volume (706 pp.) is but an introduction. It was followed by his *Griechische Mythologie und Religionsgeschichte* (2 Bde. 1897-1906).

§ 12. In regard to Northern or Teutonic mythology, there is still much value in GRIMM's 'German Mythology' (E. tr. by Stallybrass; Bell, 4 v.); but a most learned and exact treatise was begun by the Swedish scholar RYDBERG, of whose 'Teutonic Mythology' one large volume was trans. into English (Son. 1889). More popular works are the older English trans. of MALLET's 'Northern Antiquities' (B.L.), now somewhat out of date, BRAND's 'Popular Antiquities' (B.L. and C. & W.), and THORPE's 'Northern Mythology.' Of narrower scope, but of greater scientific value than any of these, is H. M. CHADWICK's short but excellent essay on 'The Cult of Othin' (Clay, 1899). In German, several standard works on Teutonic mythology have appeared since Grimm's, the two of

best standing being SIMROCK'S *Handbuch der deutschen Mythologie* (6te Aufl. 1887), and E. H. MEYER'S *Germanische Mythologie* (2te Aufl. 1903). See also MANNHARDT'S *Germanische Mythen* (1858) and other works above mentioned. For Celtic mythology see the works of Anwyl, Rhys, Wood-Martin, Bertrand, and Gaidoz, specified in Course VI, § 16; also 'Cuchulainn, the Irish Achilles,' by ALFRED NUTT (1900); and C. SQUIRE'S 'Mythology of the British Islands' (Black, 1905); also in the 'Celtic Myth and Legend' of C. Squire (Gresham Co.); and in J. F. Campbell's 'The Celtic Dragon Myth,' ed. by Dr. G. HENDERSON (Edinb. 1911).

§ 13. The mythologies of Egypt and India are usually dealt with under the head of "Religions"—it is not quite clear why, though the embodiment of Hebrew (traditory) myth in the Bible explains the same practice in that instance. The *Vedische Mythologie* of ALFRED HILLEBRANDT (kl. Aufl. 1910) is a scholarly work. But the student can make the formal transition from Mythology to Religion by way of such standard works as Prof. JASTROW'S 'Religion of Babylonia and Assyria' (Ginn, 1898); Prof. TIELE'S 'History of the Egyptian Religion' (E. tr. Or. Ser.); M. BARTH'S 'Religions of India' (E. tr. same); and W. J. WILKINS'S 'Hindu Mythology' (Calcutta, 2nd ed. 1901). Those who read Italian will further find much suggestive matter in the *Letture sopra la mitologia vedica* of Prof. ANGELO DE GUBERNATIS (Firenze, 1874).

The fundamental kinship of mythology and religion is still more closely brought home to the student by such a work as GOLDZIEHER'S 'Hebrew Mythology' (E. tr. Lmns.), which is, however, a work of more ingenuity than solidity as regards its interpretations. The old *Biblische Mythologie der Alten und Neuen Testaments* of F. NORK (= F. KORN) may still repay scrutiny (2 Bde. 1842). The anonymous 'Bible Folk-Lore' (1884), by Prof. THOROLD ROGERS, contains some valuable matter; but there, too, the solutions cannot always be relied on. It is, of course, latterly eclipsed by the massive 'Folklore of the Old Testament' by Sir J. G. FRAZER (Mac. 3 v. 1913). The most advanced work done in Hebrew mythology is, however, French and German—*Les Mythes de la Bible* by ÉMILE FERRIÈRE (1893) and HUGO WINCKLER'S *Geschichte Israels* (Bd. II. 1900).

§ 14. A special mythological investigation of great interest is 'The Pedigree of the Devil,' by F. T. HALL (1883). A later research, 'The Devil,' by M. GARÇON and J. VINCHON (E. tr. Gollancz, 1929) gives a broad view of demonology; and the trans. of the Italian work of ARTURO GRAF, 'The Story of the Devil' (Mac. 1931) has sociological interest. With this may be bracketed 'The History of the Devil and the Idea of Evil from the Earliest

Times to the Present Day,' by Dr. PAUL CARUS (with 311 illustrations; O.C. Pub. Co.); and Dr. MONCURE D. CONWAY'S 'Demonology' (rep.). Of special researches in English, 'The Great Dionysia k Myth,' by ROBERT BROWN, jun. (2 v. Lmns.) is one of the most serviceable, though partly unscientific. His 'Poseidon: A Link between Semite, Hamite, and Aryan' (1872), has the same qualities of scholarship, insight, and somewhat capricious bias; but like the other work it carries its point as to Oriental derivations.

§ 15. Even as Greek and Roman mythology absorbed Oriental elements, so did the Christian system rapidly embody a mass of pagan myth. *Les Fils de Dieu et les célestes intermédiaires*, by P. DE ST.-LÉONARD (1892), gives a general orientation. In addition to the older English works bearing on this point, noted in Course V, § 11, the scientific student would do well to turn to such systematic treatises as those of H. TREDE, *Das Heidentum in der römischen Kirche* (4 Bde. 1889-91); BERNARD SCHMIDT, *Das Volksleben der Neugriechen und das Hellenische Alterthum* (1871); and P. SAINTYVES, *Les Saints Successeurs des Dieux* (Nourry, 1907)—the last a work at once of copious learning and of literary charm. No less interesting is his *Les Vierges Mères et les Naissances miraculeuses* (Nourry, 1908). The subject of the Virgin Goddesses is to be studied in connection with that of the Matron and Mother Goddesses, on which MAX IHM collected data in *Die Mutter- oder Matronen-Kultus* (1887). The 'Curious Myths of the Middle Ages' by the Rev. S. BARING GOULD (Riv. 1888) is a very interesting miscellaneous collection, including such themes as the Wandering Jew, Prester John, St. George, Melusina, and William Tell. In this connection the student should note the neglected but important research of JULIUS LIPPERT, *Christenthum, Volksglaube, und Volksbrauch* (1882).

§ 16. The active student of mythology will do well to keep in view a principle repeatedly mooted in separate researches, to wit, the function of ICONOGRAPHY or the usage of religious images, in the distribution of myths among different peoples. This, a different matter from 'The Migration of Symbols' expounded by D. A. MACKENZIE (K.P. 1926), though long noted by scholars, was perhaps first clearly propounded in the original ed. (1876) of H. PETERSEN'S work *Ueber den Gottesdienst des Nordens während der Heidenzeit* (Ger. tr. 1883), and soon after, independently, in *L'Imagerie Phénicienne et la Mythologie iconologique chez les Grecs* (1880), by CLERMONT-GANNEAU, accepted and applied by COLLIGNON (*supra*, § 11) and REINACH. It had been recognised in the past as explaining the Christian acceptance of many pagan myths and doctrines. Cf. 'Christianity and Mythology,' 2nd ed. p. 318

sq. as to the derivation of the Temptation Myth, through Greek myths and figures of the same order, from a glyph of Babylonian astrology. The Jewish and Christian Devil, like Pan, is thus traceable to the zodiacal Capricorn. Other modes of iconic transmission are illustrated in the interesting monograph of Dr. CHR. BLINKENBERG, 'The Thunder-weapon in Religion and Folklore' (C.U.P. 1911). The work of Count GOBLET D'ALVIELLA on 'The Migration of Symbols' (E. tr. with intr. by Sir G. BIRDWOOD, Con. 1894) gives many concrete examples of further wide diffusion of symbols across the ancient world.

In 1908 the late Prof. O. GRUPPE published *Die Mythologische Literatur aus den Jahren 1898-1905* (Leip.) in 645 closely printed pages. Later surveys will probably appeal only to specialists. But Gruppe's Supp. to Roscher's *Lexikon* (1921) is a valuable history of mythological ideas.

COURSE VI

COMPARATIVE HIEROLOGY

(= "COMPARATIVE RELIGION")

§ 1. THE lore of the "beginnings" of religion having been indicated in Course I, and that of mythology in Course V, the present is devoted to the literature of the religious "systems" or *corpora*, and of the general conception underlying the incorrect expression "Comparative Religion"—Judaism and Christianity being treated in separate Courses. For a start, the compendious survey of '**Primitive Religions**' by G. T. BETTANY (W.L. 1891) remains a good pointer; and the work of Prof. LOWIE (Course I, § 10*b*) supplies scientific guidance.

Of the recognised bearing of anthropological lore on the subject, some idea may be had from 'The Study of Religions' by Stanley A. COOK (Black, 1914); the primer by the Rev. J. A. MACCULLOCH, '**Religion: Its Origin and Forms**' (Dent, 1904), which is occasionally marred by dogmatism—as in his verdict on M. Senart's work on the myth of Buddha—or from the '**Comparative Religion**' of Prof. F. B. JEVONS (C.U.P.). For other developments of the general problem, resort may be had to the interesting sketch of Prof. L. H. FARNELL entitled 'The Evolution of Religion: An Anthropological Study,' in the C.T.L. (W. & N. 1905), and the larger work of Prof. JEVONS (Course I, § 10*b*), of which the dogmatic bias is criticised in the editor's 'Pagan Christs,' Pt. I. There is still value in the competent and compendious '**History of Religion**' of Dr. ALLAN MENZIES (Mur. 1895). A good working knowledge of the whole matter, again, is to be had from the '**Concise History of Religion**' of F. J. GOULD (3 v. 1893-97, Watts), which treats all systems impartially in the spirit of a tolerant rationalism, and gives many references, with bibliographies. Less stored with detail, but of similar merit as regards lucidity and rationality, is the French *Histoire Naturelle des Religions*, by EUGÈNE VÉRON (2 t. 1885). The later *Handbuch der Religionsgeschichte* of PAUL WURM (2te Aufl. 1908), surveys previous treatments and applies a pro-Christian one. A more impartial and a more brilliant if a more compendious

survey is supplied in the many times reprinted book of **Salomon Reinach**, '*Orpheus : A History of Religions*' (E. tr. of rev. ed. Rout. 1931), which proceeds upon a very wide scholarship. The same *savant's* 3 vols., *Cultes, Mythes, et Religions* (1908) is an almost unrivalled treasury of critical learning.

§ 2. To obtain a more detailed and exact acquaintance with the great religions of the world, the student may usefully study first the old '*Outlines of the History of Religion to the Spread of the Universal Religions*,' by **Dr. C. P. Tiele**, tr. from the Dutch by **J. E. Carpenter** (1877). He will there find a sound method of study, correct information, and copious references to the best books up to 1876. The French ed., tr. by **Maurice Vernes** (1885), has a more carefully prepared bibliography, with more complete characterisation of books. The subsequent German manual of **DE LA SAUSSAYE**, of which the first vol. was trans. under the title '*Manual of the Science of Religion*' (Lmns. 1891), by **Mrs. Colyer-Fergusson**, has merit, and contains much useful matter, but is less scientific than the '*Outlines*' of Tiele. An attempt has been made by the **Rev. J. A. MACCULLOCH** towards a quasi-scientific survey of '*Comparative Theology*' from the point of view of Christian belief (Met. 1902). For separate studies, the vol. of lectures delivered at South Place Institute under the title of '*The Religious Systems of the World*' (Son. 2nd ed. 1892) may still be of service.

'*The Psychology of Religion*' by **Prof. E. D. STARBUCK** (C.S.S. 1899) is substantially a study of the process of Christian "conversion," aiming at a discovery of "the ends nature has in view in religious development."

§ 3. For a comprehensive survey of the early ground the reader of French may consult **G. FOUCART's** *Histoire des Religions et méthode comparative* (Picard, 1912) and the older work of **ALBERT RÉVILLE**, *Histoire des Religions* (3 t. 1883-89). This treatise of a French Protestant deals first with the forms and tendencies of religion among non-civilised peoples—Negroes, Aborigines of America, Polynesians, and Finns, passing to the faiths of ancient Mexico and Peru, and thence to China, etc. The "*Prolegomena*" (3rd Fr. ed. 1881) to the work was trans. with an introd. by **Max Müller** (1884). Réville classified religions as Polytheistic or Monotheistic, and divided the former into five classes: (1) Primitive Natural Religion; (2) Animistic and Fetichistic Religions, which indeed are No. 1; (3) The great Natural Mythologies, as of China, Egypt, India, Greece, etc.; (4) The Religions which are Legalist as well as Polytheistic—i.e. Brahmanism, Parseeism, Confucianism, and Taoism; and (5) Buddhism, a religion at once universal and redemptive. There is more scien-

tific value in **Kuenen's** Hibbert Lectures (1882) on '**National and Universal Religions**,' though he also has some arbitrary definitions. *Les Religions Actuelles*, by JULIEN VINSON, the fifth vol. of the old *Bibliothèque Anthropologique* (1888), gives a good view of the history and development of all existing faiths.

MAX MÜLLER'S 'Introduction to the Science of Religion' (1873) deals with some preliminary points, such as the value of the comparative method, the classification of faiths, etc., and is illustrated by examples from the sacred books of the world. J. F. CLARKE'S 'Ten Great Religions' (Boston, 1871) deals readably with Confucianism, Brahmanism, Buddhism, Zoroastrianism, Egypt, Greece, Rome, Scandinavia, Judaism, and Mohammedanism, but is marked by an attempt to show that the best of all these faiths is embodied in Unitarian Christianity. It is followed by a second part, 'A Comparison of all Religions' (Boston, 1883). A more thorough and equally sympathetic work from the same side is the Rev. SAMUEL JOHNSON'S 'Oriental Religions' (K.P.), dealing with India, China, and Persia. ÉMILE BURNOUF'S 'Science of Religions' (E. tr. Son. 1888) is an attempt to show that primitive Aryan nature-worship lies at the root of Brahmanism, Zoroastrianism, and Christianity. It still deserves reading, but with caution. On the general question of the "naturalness" of all religion there are critical investigations in 'Christianity and Mythology,' and 'Pagan Christs.'

'An Encyclopædia of Religions,' by MAURICE A. CANNEY (Rout. 1921), though marked at points by doctrinal bias, is largely informative. The posthumous 'Faiths of Man: A Cyclopædia of Religions,' by General FORLONG (3 large v. Quar. 1906), has similar merit, as being the copious record of very wide reading, with a discursive but always benevolent bias.

§ 4. The great national religions of antiquity have been specially studied in the past generation and the present. To that of Egypt Sir **Flinders Petrie's** '**The Religion of Ancient Egypt**' (Con. 1905) is a competent introduction; and C. P. TIELE'S 'History of Egyptian Religion' (E. tr. K.P.) is still a standard manual, with which may be compared 'The Old Egyptian Faith' by Prof. E. NAVILLE (E. tr. C.T.L.), and the interesting and independent work of **F. W. Read**, '**Egyptian Religion and Ethics**' (Watts, 1925), which sets forth fresh views. Sir **FLINDERS PETRIE'S** 'Religion and Conscience in Ancient Egypt' (Met. 1898) is an earlier presentment of that expert's views on Egyptian ethics, which is supplemented by his 'Personal Religion in Egypt before Christianity' (Harper, 1909). Prof. **ALFRED**

WIEDEMANN's 'Religion of the Ancient Egyptians' (E. tr. 1897) was followed in 1907 by ADOLF ERMANN's 'Handbook of Egyptian Religion' (E. tr. Con. 1907), a work of high scholarly authority; and by 'The Development of Religion and Thought in Ancient Egypt' by J. H. BREASTED (H. & S. 1912), one of the leading experts in the Egyptian field.

With their views may be compared those of Sir E. A. WALLIS BUDGE, as set forth in 'The Egyptian Heaven and Hell' (3 v. rep. in 1 v. K.P. 1925). The latter expert has separately dealt with 'Egyptian Ideas of the Future Life' and 'Egyptian Magic'; and WIEDEMANN has a small vol. on 'The Ancient Egyptian Doctrine of Immortality' (E. tr. 1895). RENOUF in his Hibbert Lectures sketches the sources of information, and is valuable for his facts, though less so for his theories. Sir J. GARDNER WILKINSON's 'Manners and Customs of the Ancient Egyptians' (Mur. rev. ed. 3 v. 1878; abr. ed. in 2 v.), though half a century old, is still valuable. So are the texts translated in the even-numbered volumes of the first 12 v. of 'Records of the Past' (Bagsters)—the odd numbers being Assyrian. Of the great Egyptian funerary ritual called 'The Book of the Dead' the best translation is that of Sir E. WALLIS BUDGE (K.P. 1898), who also edited facsimiles. There is also available, however, a good English version of the competent French tr. (1882) of P. PIERRET (Put. 1894, 4to).

Since the researchers have realised that the concrete "Mysteries" of the ancient religions are fundamentally akin, these have been specially studied as keys to the psychics of the faiths. The *Mystères Égyptiens* of Prof. ALEXANDRE MORET (Colin, éd. rev. 1923) is one of a number of notable books by that expert, whose 'Kings and Gods of Egypt' (E. tr. Put. 1912), 'In the Time of the Pharaohs' (same, 1911), and *Du caractère religieux de la royauté pharaonique* (Leroux), constitute with it a body of scientific Egyptology of a high order. Among the special topics of later research and speculation has been the short-lived quasi-monotheistic cult set up by the Pharaoh Akhnaten (name spelt in ten ways), as to which see BREASTED's 'Development.'

Special intensive study of the manifold Egyptian theology has produced many important monographs, among which are to be noted 'The Gods of the Egyptians, or Studies in Egyptian Mythology' of Sir E. WALLIS BUDGE (2 v. 4to, Met. 1904) and his 'Osiris and the Egyptian Resurrection' (Medici Soc. 2 v. 1911), and the same scholar's 'The Teaching of Amen-Em-Apt, Son of Kanekht, being the Philosophy of an Egyptian Official of the Fifteenth Century B.C.' (Hop. 1924). The recent 'Osiris: A Study in Myths, Mysteries and Religion,' by H. P. COOKE (Daniel,

1931) deals freshly with the most fundamentally interesting aspect of Egyptian Religion.

The older work of the Dutch scholar W. PLEYTE, *La religion des Pré-Israélites* (Utrecht, 1862), is a body of researches on the God Seth, with many interesting plates; and was followed by a *Lettre* (1863) on the same theme, with more plates and a pamphlet, *Set dans la Barque du Soleil* (1865). There is a later monograph by EDUARD MEYER, *Set-Typhon: eine religionsgeschichtliche Studie* (1875).

For the Ptolemaic and Roman periods there is an interesting monograph, *Mönchtum und Sarapiskult* (2te Aufl. 1903: Giessen) by ERWIN PREUSCHEN, which has bearings on the rise of Christian Monasticism.

§ 5. From Egypt the student may pass to the religions of Assyria and Babylonia, taking as a preliminary record Sir E. WALLIS BUDGE's 'Rise and Progress of Assyriology' (Hop. 1925); as primer 'The Religion of Babylonia and Assyria,' by T. G. PINCHES (Con. 1905), and as guides JASTROW's 'Religion of Babylonia and Assyria' (Ginn, 1898) and L. W. KING's 'Babylonian Religion and Mythology' (H. & S. 1899; C. & W. 1910). Dr. Jastrow and others warn us against inaccuracies in the Hibbert Lectures of the Rev. A. Sayce; but these are well worth study. Other sources of information are the Assyrian texts in the odd-numbered early volumes of 'Records of the Past'; MAX DUNCKER's 'History of Antiquity,' vol. ii; and in particular the more recent *Geschichte des Altertums* of EDUARD MEYER, which in its later editions follows the movement of discovery. On the side of its influence on later religions and other life, Babylonian religion, considered as a starting-point, is ably presented in Dr. HUGO WINCKLER's *Die Babylonische Geisteskultur* (2te Aufl. 1919), which treats it historically and philosophically in its radical connection with the "culture-evolution of mankind."

Of scholarly monographs in this field, note may be taken of *Das Land ohne Heimkehr* by Fr. DELITZSCH (1911); *Israel und Babylonien* by Prof. H. GUNKEL (1903); and *La Déesse Nue Babylonienne: Étude Iconographique Comparée*, by Dr. G. CONTENAU (Paris, 1914), which, like Sayce's Hibbert Lectures, recognises how sculptural figures and emblems influenced or elicited mythic and religious belief in the ancient world.

All study of Babylonian religion, however, must now be oriented to the discovery of its substantial derivation, with the "Mosaic," from the older system of the non-Semitic Sumerians. This view was well developed in the last century by the labours of SCHRADER, OPPERT, HINKS, NORRIS, SAYCE, LENORMANT and others, and

was embodied in Dr. JULES SOURY's 'The Religion of Israel' (E. tr. 1881). It has latterly been fully established by the excavations at Ur, and a compendious survey is supplied in 'The Sumerians' by C. Leonard Woolley (Cl. Pr. 1928). An earlier stage in the reconstruction, which largely turns on the excavation of Ur, is well presented in Prof. L. W. KING's 'History of Sumer-Akkad' (C. & W. 1910). The famous "Code of Hammurabi"—as to which see the ed. by Chilperic Edwards (Watts) or chs. vii and viii of the interesting work of W. ST. CHAD BOSCAWEN, 'The First of Empires: "Babylon of the Bible"' (Harp. 1903), is now known to be of Sumerian derivation.

On the Northern and other Semites the handbook of S. A. COOKE, 'The Religion of Ancient Palestine' (Con.) is a good guide. The student should further consult the article PHOENICIA by EDUARD MEYER in the *Encyc. Bib.* Meyer and other experts warn students strongly against the once authoritative work of MOVERS, *Die Phönizier*; but there is unquestioned merit in TIELE's work, tr. in French under the title *Histoire comparée des anciennes religions* (1882), of which the second part covers the Phœnician as well as the Mesopotamian cults. The religious evolution is also dealt with in PIETSCHEMANN's *Geschichte der Phönizier* (1889). The famous 'Tell-el-Amarna Tablets' were edited by HUGO WINCKLER (1896) and again by J. A. KNUDTZON (Leip. 1907-8). As regards the religion of the Hebrews, the student is referred to the special course (No. VII) dealing with that subject; but he may profitably make the transition from Phœnician to Arab religion by way of ROBERTSON SMITH's 'Religion of the Semites' (Black; 2nd ed. 1894). The 'Primitive Semitic Religion To-day' of S. L. CURTISS (H. & S. 1902) further exhibits the process of survival.

§ 6. For a historical view of Chinese religion the reader cannot do better than turn to Prof. E. H. PARKER's 'China and Religion' (Mur. 1904) and to the later 'Studies in Chinese Religion' by the same expert (C. & H. 1910), which more fully reproduces the matter on which the first is founded. On Confucianism the chief English authority is Dr. J. LEGGE, who translated the 'Chinese Classics,' in 7 vols. (1867-76). Dr. Legge's eminence as a scholar does not prevent an obvious bias as a missionary. The most important part of the Chinese Classics has been published in smaller form, as 'The Life and Teachings of Confucius' and 'The Life and Works of Mencius.' For a good general view see Prof. GILES's 'The Religions of Ancient China' (Con. 1905); and compare Legge's 'Religions of China' (1880). The missionary ERNST FABER has also published an 'Introduction to the Science of Chinese Religion'

—a criticism of Max Müller and others (1879); 'A Systematical Digest of the Doctrines of Confucius'; and 'The Mind of Mencius' (Or. Ser. 1882). There are now also available cheap translations of two Confucian classics, 'The Book of History (Shu-King)' and 'The Book of Odes (Shi-King),' both trans. by L. Cranmer-Byng (Mur.); also, 'The Odes of Confucius' tr. by the same scholar; and 'The Sayings of Kung the Master,' intr. by Allen Upward (W.E.S.).

On Taoism we have the trans. of the 'Tao-teh-King,' by J. Chalmers, under title 'The Speculations on Metaphysics, Polity, and Morality of the Old Philosopher Lau-Tze' (1868)—also translated by L. GILES under the title 'The Sayings of Lao-Tzū' (W.E.S.); by W. G. OLD as 'The Simple Way' (Welby, 1905), with a commentary; and by Gen. G. G. ALEXANDER under the title 'Lao-Tze the Great Thinker' (K.P. 1895). There is yet another edition, by Dr. Paul Carus, with introd., transliteration, and notes (O.C.). In the enchiridion of Lao-Tsze, Taoism is seen at its best, the deep interest of the book being the secret of the number of versions. For the more superstitious side of the system—a late development—the student may consult the work of Pfizmaier, given in Tiele. [On Chinese Buddhism the student should see the volume with that name by JOSEPH EDKINS (K.P.); S. Beal's 'Buddhism in China' (S.P.C.K.); and the same writer's more elaborate and important 'Catena of Buddhist Scriptures from the Chinese' (K.P.).] See also 'Confucianism and Taouism,' by R. K. DOUGLAS (S.P.C.K.); and a highly intimate and competent presentment of Chinese religion as it latterly exists, supplied in *La Religion des Chinois*, by MARCEL GRANET (Paris, 1922), which incidentally exposes the practical futility of Protestant missions as a means of "Christianising" China. *Les Religions de la Chine*, by C. DE HARBERZ, is also worth study; and the booklet 'Christianity in China: an Exposure of Foreign Missions,' by WALTER MANN (P.P. 1927), is a notable indictment.

In Tibet Buddhism has had a special evolution; and the resultant cult is competently described in 'The Religion of Tibet' by CHARLES BELL (Cl. Pr. 1932), who is an expert in Tibetan life and history.

§ 7. With the religion of China that of Japan has a certain affiliation, traceable in Shinto, as to which see 'Religion in Japan' by G. A. COBBOLD (S.P.C.K. 1905), or the concise manual of Dr. W. G. Aston, 'Shinto, the Ancient Religion of Japan' (Con. 1907), which is a very competent introduction. The same author's 'Shinto: The Way of the Gods' (1905) is a fuller survey of the subject. The older 'Religions of Japan,' by W. E. GRIFFIS, is

written from a missionary point of view, but informative; and the lectures of G. W. KNOX on 'The Development of Religion in Japan' are illuminating. A good French book on Shinto is *Le Shintoïsme* of MICHAEL REVON (1907, etc.); but G. SCHURHAMMER's 'Shin-To, the Way of the Gods in Japan' (Leip. 1923), appears to be the most fully documented record. The latter-day position of national religion in Japan, as between Shintoism and "liberalism," was vigorously discussed by B. H. CHAMBERLAIN in a pamphlet 'The Invention of a New Religion' (Watts, 1912). See also the section on Japan in 'A History of Freethought in the Nineteenth Century,' p. 591 sq. There is now available the very competent 'History of Japanese Religion' by Prof. MASAHARU ANESAKI of Tokyo (K.P. 1930), which covers the whole field, including Buddhism, with expert intimacy of knowledge.

§ 8. Passing to India, we find remnants of almost every known faith. The 'Hinduism' of Dr. D. L. Barnett (Con. 1906) is a good primer; and a thoughtful view of the primary problem is given in 'The Evolution of Ancient Hinduism' by A. M. FLOYER (1888); while the brightly illustrated vol. on 'The Great Indian Religions' in BETTANY's series (W.L.) is variously attractive. Sir MONIER WILLIAMS, who writes with a Christian bias, gives in his 'Religious Thought and Life in India,' pt. 1, chaps. viii to xiii, a view of the many elements that go to make up modern Indian religion, as does W. J. WILKINS's 'Modern Hinduism' (2nd ed. 1900). In A. BARTH's 'Religions of India,' trans. by J. Wood (Or. Ser.), there are lucid and scholarly sketches of the Vedic religion, Brahmanism, Buddhism, Jainism, and Hinduism. A competent handbook of later date is E. W. HOPKINS's 'Religions of India' (Ginn). For the Vedas in particular, Prof. H. OLDENBERG's *Die Religion des Veda* (1894) is of the highest authority. On the general subject of Hindu religion the 'Miscellaneous Essays' of H. T. COLEBROOKE, and the 'Essays on the Religion of the Hindus' by H. H. WILSON, are still of value, but must be supplemented by such works as MAX MÜLLER's 'History of Ancient Sanskrit Literature' (W. & N.); his Hibbert Lectures on Indian religion; his 'India: What Can it Teach Us?'; and Prof. A. WEBER's 'History of Indian Literature' (Or. Ser.). Above all J. MUIR's 'Original Sanskrit Texts' (1858-72, 5 v.) are indispensable to a close study of the Vedas. The problem is scientifically handled in *L'Histoire des idées théosophiques dans l'Inde* of the Swiss Prof. PAUL OLTRAMARE (t. i, *La Théosophie Brahmanique* (Leroux, 1906)).

There is an unfinished translation of the Rig Veda by Max

Müller, and of the Sama Veda by Stevenson. Ludwig's German translation of the Rig Veda is more complete, and vol. iii gives an introduction to these ancient hymns. There is still much serious dispute as to the proper rendering of the Veda; and Ludwig's version often departs very widely from the generally accepted interpretations. There are good scholarly studies in BALA A. TILAKER, 'Researches,' 1893. Value still attaches to the English trans. by H. H. Wilson (6 v. 1850, etc.), which, however, follows the late commentary of Sankara, and must always be taken tentatively.

For the Upanishads there are MAX MÜLLER'S translations, S.B.E., vols. i and xv. For the Brahmanas, the 'Satapatha-Brahmana,' translated by J. Eggeling, vols. xii and xxvi. For law, 'The Sutras of Apastamba and Gautama,' translated by G. Bühler, vols. ii and xiv; the 'Institutes of Vishnu,' translated by J. Jolly, vol. viii; and 'The Laws of Manu,' translated by Bühler, vol. xxv. Of the 'Dharmashāstrā of Manu' there is an able exposition by Bhagavān Dāsa, 'The Science of Social Organisation' (Lond. and Benares, 1910). For religious philosophy there are the Bhagavat Gitā, which in vol. viii is rendered by a Hindoo Pundit, K. T. Telang; and the Vedānta Sutras, translated by G. Thibaut, vol. xxxiv. Of the 'Bhagavat Gitā,' a late classic of the Krishna cult, there are several other translations (Davies, 1882; E. Arnold, 1885). For exposition, see 'Essays on the Gita' by A. GHOSE (Calc. 1926).

One of the most ancient and still the most popular of Hindu cults is that of Krishna, concerning whose myth—sometimes mistakenly held to be derivative from Christianity—there is a long exposition and discussion in the editor's 'Christianity and Mythology.' As to his cult, see Barth and Hopkins.

§ 9. From Brahmanism, in the second half of the fifth century B.C., flowed the more Catholic creed of **Buddhism**, of which there is an excellent concise account in the manual of Prof. **Rhys Davids** (S.P.C.K.); in the same scholar's primer in Religions Series (Con. 2 v.); and in his Hibbert Lectures. 'Buddhism, Primitive and Present, in Magadha and in Ceylon,' by R. S. COPLESTON (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1908), may be read for a concise historical view of the cult; and 'Buddha and the Gospel of Buddhism' (Har. 1916, illust.), by A. COOMARASWAMY, is a sympathetic exposition by a Hindu scholar. For fuller information on the founder one must turn to H. OLDENBERG'S 'Buddha: His Life, his Doctrine, and his Order' (E. tr. W. & N.). These give mainly the Cingalese view; the Tibetan may be found in W. W. ROCKHILL'S 'Life of the Buddha'; the Burmese in P. BIGANDET'S 'Life or Legend of Gaudama' (both K.P.);

and the Chinese in S. BEAL's translation of the 'Fo-Sho-Hing-Tsan-King' (vol. xix of S.B.E.). H. HACKMANN's *Der Buddhismus* (1906) is a good all-round record. The great work on the problem of the historicity of Buddha (raised in 'Pagan Christs') is the *Essai sur la légende de Buddha* of M. E. SENART (2e édit. 1882).

[This has been adversely criticised by Weber and Oldenberg; but its view continues to gain ground. See KERN's (Dutch) 'History of Buddhism,' tr. in French, *Histoire du Bouddhisme dans l'Inde* (2 t. 1901-3). L. de MILLOUÉ in his *Le Bouddhisme dans le monde* (1893) reduces the Buddha to very slight historical bases, as does H. HACKMANN in his *Der Buddhismus* (Halle, 1906). See also Kuenen's Hibbert Lectures. In the posthumous *Recherches sur le Bouddhisme* of I. P. MINAYEFF (Fr. tr. 1894) the bases are further disintegrated.]

A Siamese view of Buddha and Buddhism may be found in H. ALABASTER's 'Wheel of the Law' (1871). For the general history and doctrines of Buddhism the *Introduction à l'Histoire du Bouddhisme Indien* of EUGÈNE BURNOUF (1844) still ranks as a classic, though that of KERN is naturally fuller. E. HARDY's *König Asoka* (Mainz, 1902) and R. SPENCE HARDY's older 'Manual of Buddhism' (2nd ed. 1880), 'Eastern Monachism' (1860) and 'Legends and Theories of the Buddhists' (1866) may also be consulted.

For the ethics of Buddhism the 'Dhammapada' should be studied. This will be found with the 'Sutta Nipata' in vol. x of S.B.E.; in the W. E. S. as 'Buddha's Way of Virtues,' and also in the 'Hymns of the Faith: Dhammapada,' tr. from the Pali by A. J. EDMUNDS (O.C. 1902); other Suttas in S.B.E. vol. xi; Vinaya Texts, dealing with discipline and metaphysics, in vols. xiii, xvii, and xx; and the 'Questions of King Milinda,' on Buddhist philosophy, in vol. xxxv. But perhaps the most interesting of all is the trans. by Prof. RHYS DAVIDS of the 'Dialogues of the Buddha' (S.B.E. vol. ii, 1899). See also 'Buddhism in Translations,' by R. C. WARREN (Harvard, 1900). On modern Buddhism the student may still consult ALABASTER's 'The Modern Buddhist' (1870) and 'The Wheel of the Law' (1871); E. SCHLAGINTWEIT's 'Buddhism in Tibet' (E. tr. 1863); L. A. WADDELL's 'The Buddhism of Tibet' (1895) and 'Lhasa and its Mysteries' (Mur. 1905); "SEWAY YOE's" (Sir J. G. Scott) 'The Burman, his life and notions' (Mac. 1896); H. FIELDING's 'The Soul of a People' (Mac. rep. 1903); W. SCHOTT's *Ueber den Buddhismus in Hochasien und in China* (1846), and the works of Bea already mentioned. A peculiar evolution, mythological and pietistic, is traced in W. SIMPSON's 'The

Buddhist Praying Wheel' (Mac. 1896). 'Gleanings in Buddha Fields,' by LAFCADIO HEARN (Harp. 1898) is a charming work standing apart from other research.

§ 10. ARTHUR LILLIE's 'Buddhism in Christendom: or, Jesus the Essene' (K.P. 1887), is an attempt to show that Buddhism influenced Christianity through the Essenes and Gnosticism; and his shorter work, 'The Influence of Buddhism on Primitive Christianity' (Son. 1893), maintains the same thesis. Similar views were advanced by R. Seydel in German: *Das Evangelium von Jesu in seinen Verhältnissen zu Buddha-Sage und Buddha-Lehre* (1882), and *Die Buddha-Legende und das Leben Jesu nach den Evangelien* (2te Aufl. 1897). These views should be compared with the negative conclusions of Kuenen in his Hibbert Lectures (App.) and of Prof. Rhys Davids in his article on 'Buddhism and Christianity' (*Intern. Qily.* 1903).

§ 11. Of Jainism, another offshoot of Brahmanism, in many respects similar to Buddhism and probably contemporary with it, an account is given, with a theory of origins, by E. THOMAS in his 'Jainism: The Early Religion of Asoka' (K.P.); also in 'Outlines of Jainism' by J. JAINI (C.U.P.); in 'An Epitome of Jainism: A Critical Study,' by PURAN CHAND NAHAR and K. GHOSH (Calc. 1917), and in Dr. H. JACOBI's learned Introduction to the 'Gaina Sutras,' vol. xxii of S.B.E., and the early translation of the Kalpa Sutra by the Rev. J. STEVENSON. On the religion of the Sikhs, founded by Nanak (1469-1539) as a reform of Hinduism arising from the contact with Moham-medanism, Dr. E. TRUMPF, the translator of their sacred book, the 'Adi Granth,' is the chief authority.

§ 12. The ancient religion of Persia, of which the Parsis of India are the surviving maintainers, in its origin showed many similarities with the Vedic faith. A primer is provided in 'The Religion of Ancient Persia,' by Prof. A. V. Williams Jackson (Con. ser.), and expert studies are supplied in J. H. MOULTON's 'Early Zoroastrianism' (Hib. Lect. 1913), and the *Ormuzd et Ahriman* of Prof. J. DARMESTETER (1877). Like Buddhism, Christianity, and Islam, it claims a personal founder—in Zarathustra or Zoroaster—and has its sacred book, the Zend Avesta, which is trans. by DARMESTETER in S.B.E. vols. iv and xxiii; while the Pahlavi texts are rendered by E. W. WEST, in vols. v and xviii and xxiv, and the Gathas by Prof. L. H. MILLS in vol. xxxi. A good survey of the subject is supplied by Dr. I. A. Kapadia's 'The Teachings of Zoroaster and the Philosophy of the Parsi Religion' (W.E.S. 1905). Prof. MILLS further contributes a study on 'Avesta Eschatology, compared with the Books of Daniel and Revelation' (O.C. and K.P. 1908). M. ABEL HOVE-

LACQUE gives a good account of *L' Avesta, Zoroastre, et le mazdéisme*, in t. iv of *Les Littératures de l'Orient*. In *La vie future d'après le Mazdéisme* (Mus. Guimet, 1901) M. NATHAN SÖDERBLOM throws fresh light. M. HAUG's 'Essays on the Sacred Language, Writings, and Religion of the Parsees,' edited and enlarged by E. W. West (Or. Ser.), should be consulted; while for the Parsees of the present day there are the work of DADABHAI NAOROJI, 'The Parsi Religion, and the Manners and Customs of the Parsis' (Mur.), and 'The History of the Parsis,' by DOSABHAI SOHRABJI (Mac.).

A sympathetic introduction to **Mithraism**, a development of the old Persian religion which spread through the Roman Empire and largely influenced Christianity, is supplied in the scholarly pro-Christian manual of the Rev. W. J. **Phythian-Adams** (Con. 1915); and a critical survey of the discussion on the subject will be found in the editor's 'Pagan Christs.' The student can follow up the references there given—particularly in the great work of Professor CUMONT, *Textes et Monuments relatifs aux mystères de Mithra* (1894-96), of which the main essay, apart from the *apparatus criticus*, has been translated under the title 'The Mysteries of Mithra' (K.P. 1903). The subject is well handled in ch. vi of Prof. SAMUEL DILL's 'Roman Society from Nero to Marcus Aurelius' (Mac. 1904); also in CUMONT's *Les religions orientales dans le paganisme romain* (1906; E. tr. O.C. Co. 1911); in J. REVILLE's *La Religion à Rome sous les Sévères* (1886, ch. iii); in A. GASQUET's *Essai sur le culte et les Mystères de Mithra*; in S. REINACH's *La morale de Mithraïsme*, in tome ii of his *Cultes, Mythes, et Religions*; and in the temperate pro-Christian essay of the Rev. L. PATTERSON, 'Mithraism and Christianity: A Study in Comparative Religion' (C.U.P. 1921). [The manual of Mr. Phythian-Adams, which sympathetically notes that Mithraism "fell at the last, not because it was so entirely bad, but because it was so nearly good," accepts as historical the legendary dying cry of Julian, "Thou hast prevailed, O Man of Galilee." This item, first set forth eighty years after Julian's death, is generally regarded by critical historians as an invention.]

For Manichæism, another development, amalgamated with Christianity on the one side and Buddhism on the other, see Course VIII, § 14.

§ 13. For the religion of Greece see firstly Course V, § 11, the mythology of Greece being an integral part of its religion. Miss **Harrison's** manual, 'The Religion of Ancient Greece' (Con. 1905), is an excellent introduction, and with 'The Elements of Greek Worship,' by S. P. KAINES SMITH (Griffiths, 1906), and the other researches of Miss Harrison, gives a large view, condensed in her 'Ancient Art and Ritual' (H.U.L. 1913). The student may still

usefully consult the first chapters of **Grote's History**: also the *History of Curtius*, book ii, ch. 4.

Among the most important of the modern additions to our knowledge on the subject are the works of Prof. FOUCART, *Des Associations religieuses chez les Grecs* (1873), dealing with the imported "private" cults, *Recherches sur l'origine et la nature des Mystères d'Eleusis* (1895); *Le Culte de Dionyse en Attique* (1906); and the magistral *Mystères d'Eleusis* (Picard, 1914); also the works of Bérard and Decharme, mentioned in Course V, § 10; and DECHARME's research, *La Critique des traditions religieuses chez les Grecs, des origines au temps de Plutarque* (1904). In HAVET's *Le Christianisme et ses Origines* (4 t. 1872-84) will be found a brilliant outline of Hellenism and its influence on Christianity; and *La Cité Antique* of FUSTEL DE COULANGES (E. tr. 1874) gives a vivid idea of the relation of primitive beliefs to civic and private life in both Greece and Rome.

The most original modern work on Greek religion is probably the 'Psyche' of the German scholar ERWIN ROHDE (E. tr. 'Psyche: The Cult of Souls and the Belief in Immortality among the Greeks': K.P. 1925), which is at once a scientific and a literary classic. In English, the 'Four Stages of Greek Religion' by GILBERT MURRAY (Cl. Pr. 1912) is the most attractive work of its kind. The Gifford Lectures of Prof. FARNELL, 'Greek Hero Cults and Ideas of Immortality' (Cl. Pr. 1922), so far conform to religious sentiment as to suggest the possible historicity of Herakles. More important are the studies of Greek religion embodied in FRAZER's 'Golden Bough,' notably in the vols. on 'Adonis, Attis, Osiris.'

There are, further, some suggestive papers bearing on Greek religion in the late Bishop WESTCOTT's 'Essays in the History of Religious Thought in the West' (Mac. 1891). LOUIS DYER's 'Studies of the Gods in Greece at certain Sanctuaries recently Excavated' (Mac. 1891) is rhetorical, but informative. Among scholarly contributions to the large study of Greek religion may be noted the work of Dr. W. H. D. ROUSE, 'Greek Votive Offerings' (C.U.P. 1902), which throws much light on its subject. The later *Opfergebräuche der Griechen*, by PAUL STENGEL (Teubner, 1910), is an independent and learned research in the same field. In regard to the average Greek religion at the time of the rise of Christianity the 'Pagan Regeneration' of Prof. H. R. WILLOUGHBY (Chicago Un. Pr. 1929) is one of the most intelligent and dispassionate of modern surveys.

§ 14. To the '**Religion of Ancient Rome**' the manual of that title by CYRIL BAILEY (Con. 1907) is a notably competent intro-

duction. The subject is one not much or searchingly handled by English scholars, though Prof. GRANGER's 'The Worship of the Romans' (1895) and 'The Religion of Numa' by J. B. CARTER (Mac. 1906) are fresh and interesting; and the Gifford Lectures of Dr. W. WARDE FOWLER, on 'The Religious Experience of the Roman People' (Mac. 1911), with their notes, and with his previous treatise on 'The Roman Festivals of the Period of the Republic' (same), constitute the ripest performance of that good scholar. But the more scientific treatises are German—*Die Religion der Römer* by E. AUST (1899) and *Religion and Kultus der Römer*, by G. WISSOWA (Munich, 1902); though the handling of the theme by MOMMSEN in his 'History of Rome' has neither critical consistency nor scientific content. The works of Granger, Dill, Carter, and Fowler are relatively inductive, apart from a priori treatment of the idea by the latter; but nothing in English on the same lines exceeds in fullness the work of G. BOISSIER, *La religion romaine d'Auguste aux Antonins* (2 t. 1892). To that may be added the work of A. DUFIEUX, *La Sentiment religieux dans l'antiquité: Le Christianisme avant le Christ* (Lyon, 1904). In this connection the survey made in the lectures of Professor F. CUMONT on *Les Religions orientales dans le paganisme romain* (Leroux, 1928) is instructive. The last outstanding phase of specifically Roman religion is also set forth most fully in the French treatise of the Abbé E. BEURLIER, *Le culte impérial, son histoire et son organisation* (1892).

§ 15. On the religion of Islam a good primer is supplied by the 'Islam' of Syed Ameer Ali (Con. 1905) and a further guide by the expert handbook of Prof. D. S. Margoliouth, 'Mohammedanism' (H.U.L. 1911), which supplies a full bibliography up to its date. Among the books dealing with modern Mohammedanism entitled to notice are *L'Islamisme* by Prof. O. HOUDAS (1904); 'Development of Muslim Theology, Jurisprudence and Constitutional Theory' by D. B. MACDONALD (Scribners, 1903); the compilation 'The Mohammedan World of To-day,' ed. by S. M. ZWEMER (N.Y. 1906); Sir W. HUNTER's 'Indian Empire'; MARSHALL BROOMHALL's 'Islam in China' (Morgan, 1910). Prof. MARGOLIOUTH's work, 'Mohammed and the Rise of Islam' (Put. 1908), is a fuller presentment of his historical research.

Missionary J. W. H. STOBART's 'Islam and its Founder' (S.P.C.K.), is a one-sided summary account; and the more important 'Life of Mahomet and History of Islam,' by Sir W. MUIR, was affected by the same bias; but the ed. of 1923, enlarged and revised by Dr. T. H. WEIR, has documentary value. 'The Teaching of the Qur'an,' by the Rev. Dr. H. U. W. STANTON (S.P.C.K. 1919) is creditably impartial. In Prof. T. W. Arnold's

'Islam' (Con. 1905); R. BOSWORTH SMITH's 'Lectures on Mohammed and Mohammedanism' (1874); and in Kuenen's Hibbert Lectures, something like an impartial standpoint is also taken. The reputed best history of Islam is the German one of AUGUST MÜLLER (Oncken's Ser. 2 Bde. 1885-87). 'The Origin of Islam in its Christian Environment' (Gunning Lect. by R. BELL: Mac. 1926) is the work of a qualified scholar. Nöldeke's essay on the Koran with trans. of its author's essay on 'Islam' and other papers, in his vol. of 'Sketches from Eastern History' (Black, 1892), gives a useful survey. For the later developments of Islam in the East, the work of the Comte de GOBINEAU, *Les Religions et les philosophies dans l'Asie Centrale* (2e éd. 1866) is in some respects illuminating; as is the work of Prof. H. VAMBERY, *Der Islam im neunzehnten Jahrhundert* (1875). The spread of Islam in Africa has naturally received much attention. Thoughtful explorers have seen in it a "menace," and D. CAMPBELL (Course I, § 8) discusses its range and limits (ch. xix).

The English work of a rationalistic Mohammedan, SYED AMEER ALI, must not be omitted. It is entitled 'A Critical Examination of the Life and Teachings of Mohammed' (W. & N.). See also his 'The Spirit of Islam' (1896) and 'The Personal Law of the Mohammedans' (1880); also 'The Faith of Islam' by E. SELL (S.P.C.K.). The best translations of the **Koran** are those of the Rev. J. M. Rodwell (2nd ed. 1876) and Prof. Palmer (S.B.E. vols. vi and ix, 1880), though that of SALE is still interesting for its notes. The 'Dictionary of Islam,' by the Rev. T. P. HUGHES, is a standard work of reference on the doctrines, rites, customs, and theological terms of the Mohammedan religion. D. B. MACDONALD'S 'Development of Muslim Theology' (Semit. Ser. Rout. 1903) should be noted in this connection, as also his 'Aspects of Islam' (Mac. 1911), and the old work, 'The Bible, the Koran, and the Talmud,' by Dr. G. WEIL (E. tr. 1846).

§ 16. Another separate field of great interest is that of the religions of the pre-Spanish peoples of the Pacific and South American States (see 'Pagan Christs,' Pt. iv). On the former, H. H. BANCROFT'S 'Native Races of the Pacific States of North America' is a mine of information, as is the *Geschichte der Amerikanischen Urreligionen* of Prof. J. G. MÜLLER (1867). As to the extinct 'Maya' religion see the B.M. Guide to the Maudsley Collection (1923), which has many illustrations. Yet other species of regional religion are presented in H. ROWLEY'S 'Religion of the Africans' and Fernandez's 'Account of the Polynesian Races' in the Or. Ser. Of both groups detailed accounts are also given in books specified in Course V.

The pre-Christian religions of the other European races are dealt with in Tiele's 'Outlines' and other manuals above recommended, and also in several of the works named in Course V, especially as regards the religion of the Teutonic peoples. For "Scandinavian Religion" and "Celtic Religion" there are the excellent primers of W. A. CRAIGIE and Prof. ANWYL (Con. "Religions" series). There are other valuable researches, notably the Hibbert Lectures of Prof. JOHN RHYLS 'On the Origin and Growth of Religion as Illustrated by Celtic Heathendom' (1886); 'Survivals in Belief among the Celts,' by G. HENDERSON (Mac. 1911); W. G. WOOD-MARTIN'S 'Traces of the Elder Faiths of Ireland: A Folklore Sketch' (Lmns. 2 v. 1892); and 'Pagan Ireland: A Handbook of Irish pre-Christian Traditions' (same, 1895); A. BERTRAND'S work, *La Religion des Gaulois* (1897); and the *Esquisse de la religion des Gaulois* of HENRI GAIDOZ (1879). Among German works on Teutonic religion may be named ELARD MÜLHAUSE'S *Die Urreligion des deutschen Volkes* (1860); Dr. H. BÖTTGER'S *Sonnencult der Indogermanen* (Breslau, 1890); JULIUS LIPPERT'S *Die Religionen der Europäischen Culturvölker* (1881); A. WUTTKE'S *Geschichte des Heidenthums in Beziehung auf Religion* (1852-55); GUMMERE'S 'Teutonic Origins: A Study in Primitive Culture' (1892); R. KARSTEN'S 'The Origin of Worship: a Study in Primitive Religion' (1905); and F. J. MONE'S old *Geschichte des Heidenthums im nördlichen Europa* (1822-23). See also the later work of H. Petersen, mentioned in Course V, § 16. In this connection also should be mentioned the *Finnische Mythologie* of Castrén (Ger. tr.) and the old religion embodied in the Finnish epic *Kalevala* (now available in an 'Everyman' ed.) and dealt with in D. COMPARETTI'S work, 'The Traditional Poetry of the Finns' (E. tr. 1898); also in an essay by Andrew Lang on the 'Origins of Religion.' The work of COMPARETTI deals with the facts of Shamanism, as to which see Bettany, Avebury's 'Origins,' and Frazer, 'Golden Bough,' per index.

§ 17. The systematic study of religion obviously connects finally with those of psychology and philosophy, and these are implicated in the modern debate, following on the establishment of the Theory of Evolution. On the one hand, religion is contemplated as a way of thinking arising out of primeval ignorance: on the other, the adherents of theology and theosophy present it as a progressive attainment of supernormal knowledge of an "unseen"; the old claims to "revelation" being thus latterly subordinated to a quasi-evolutionary conception of "the supernatural" as becoming progressively present to human intelligence.

The two lines of the debate may be indicated through a number

of books, some of which are named in previous Courses. Thus the Naturalist or Rationalist standpoint is concisely given in the 'Animism' of **Edward Clodd** and the 'Magic and Fetishism' of **Dr. A. C. Haddon** (Con. series), of which the latter provides a bibliography for detail study. An intermediate stage was long ago indicated in the 'Natural History of Religion' by **DAVID HUME**. Later positions are set forth in **GRANT ALLEN'S** 'Evolution of the Idea of God' (R.P.A. rep. Watts) and *Les Formes élémentaires de la vie religieuse* of **Prof. ÉMILE DURKHEIM** (Alcan, 1912). The modern theistic or pantheistic position is variously expounded in 'The Making of Religion' by **ANDREW LANG** (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1900), which embodies his Gifford Lectures; his final views on the debate are set out in the last essay in his vol. 'The Origins of Religion' (R.P.A. rep. Watts, 1908); in the 'Introduction to the Study of Religion' by **Prof. F. B. JEVONS**; in the concise 'Pantheism' of **J. A. Picton** (Con.); and in the above-named manuals of **McCulloch**, **Farnell**, and others, as well as the more detailed surveys of **Max Müller** and **Réville**.

§ 18. The general polemic which in the latter decades of the last century opposed the "orthodox" defence may be exemplified in the propaganda of **BRADLAUGH** ('Humanity's Gain from Unbelief,' R.P.A. rep. Watts); of **Colonel INGERSOLL** ('Lectures,' rep. by Watts); of **CHARLES WATTS**, 'Rationalism and Other Essays' (rep. Watts, 1905); and of **G. W. FOOTE**, 'The Book of God' (1897); in the controversial essays of **T. H. HUXLEY** against **Gladstone** and others; in those of **W. K. CLIFFORD** (R.P.A. reps. Watts), and in the widely influential works of **Samuel Laing**, 'Modern Science and Modern Thought' and 'Problems of the Future' (same). On the scientific side it was continued by such experts as **Sir RAY LANKESTER**, whose vol. of essays, 'The Kingdom of Man' (same), set forth his attitude, and **ERNST HAECKEL**, as represented not only by his 'Evolution of Man' but by 'The Riddle of the Universe' (R.P.A. rep. Watts). On the psychological side, 'An Analysis of Religious Belief,' by **Viscount AMBERLEY** (2 v. 1877), developed the Spencerian view; as did 'An Agnostic's Apology' by **Sir LESLIE STEPHEN** (1893, S.E. & Co.).

Of the large body of serious "defensive" literature called forth by the general revision of opinion, the following books may be cited as more or less representative or prominent: 'A Study of Religion' by **Dr. JAMES MARTINEAU** (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1888), the greatest master of reasoning eloquence on the side of theism; 'The Foundations of Belief' by **A. J. (afterwards Lord) BALFOUR** (Lmns. 8th ed. rev. 1901); 'The Tree of Life' by the **Rev. [A.] E. CRAWLEY** (Hut. 1905), an application of the later Nietzschean

ethic to the vindication of religion in general and Christianity in particular; 'Religion as a Credible Doctrine' by W. H. MALLOCK (C. & H. 1903); the same author's 'Studies of Contemporary Superstition' (W. & D. 1895); 'The Quest of Faith' by T. BAILEY SAUNDERS (Black, 1899); the composite work 'Lux Mundi,' ed. by Bishop GORE (Mur. 1889: 16th imp. 1902), defending 'The Religion of the Incarnation,' but accepting Evolution; the Gifford Lectures of Prof. W. JAMES, 'The Varieties of Religious Experience' (Lmns. 1902); A. J. DADSON, 'Evolution and its Bearing on Religions' (Son. 1901); JOHN BUCHAN, 'The First Things: Studies in the Embryology of Religion' (Bld. 1902); JOSEPH MORRIS, 'A New Natural Theology, based upon the doctrine of Evolution' (Scott, 1905); 'The Religion of a Layman' (Waddie, 1907); MORRIS JASTROW, 'The Study of Religion' (C.S.S.); G. GALLOWAY, 'Studies in the Philosophy of Religion' (Bld. 1904); R. EUCKEN, 'The Life of the Spirit' (C.T.L.; W. & N.); Prof. F. B. JEVONS's 'Religion in Evolution' (1906) and 'The Idea of God in Early Religion' (C.U.P. 1910); and 'Naturalism and Religion' by Dr. RUDOLF OTTO (E. tr. W. & N. 1907).

The "mystical" position may be taken as represented, for English readers, by the works of EVELYN UNDERHILL: 'Mysticism: A Study in the Nature and Development of Man's Spiritual Consciousness' (Met. 1911), and 'The Mystic Way: A Psychological Study in Christian Origins' (Dent, 1913), and 'Studies in Early Mysticism' by MARGARET SMITH (Sheldon Pr. 1932). Historically, it is ably presented in 'Mysticism in Heathendom and Christendom' by Prof. E. LEHMANN (E. tr. Luzac, 1910); and it is criticised in 'The Psychology of Religious Mysticism' by Prof. J. H. LEUBA (Rout.).

§ 19. Later rationalistic work on the general problem, as apart from special research, may be exemplified by GOLDWIN SMITH's 'Guesses at the Riddle of Existence' (Mac. 1897); 'Mr. Balfour's Apologetics Critically Examined' (no name: Watts, 1902); representative books (besides those named in previous and later Courses) by Mr. JOSEPH McCABE: 'The Growth of Religion: A Study of its Origin and Development' (1918); 'The Existence of God' (1914); 'The Bankruptcy of Religion' (1917); and 'The Twilight of the Gods' (1923; all Watts); and similarly representative books by Mr. CHAPMAN COHEN:—'Four Lectures on Freethought and Life' (1929); 'Religion and Sex: A Systematic Study of the relations between the sexual instinct and the sense of religious exaltation'; 'Theism and Atheism: the Great Alternative'; and 'The Other Side of Death' (all P.P.); 'Religion and Moral Civilisation' and 'Ritual, Faith and Morals,' and 'On the Influence of Religion upon Truthfulness,' by F. H. PERRY-

COSTE (Watts, 1913, etc.); 'In Quest of Truth: A Study of Religion and Morality' by HUBERT STANSBURY (1913); 'The Churches and Modern Thought: An Inquiry into the Grounds of Unbelief and an Appeal for Candour' by PHILIP VIVIAN (1906: many reps.); and 'The Religion of the Open Mind' by ADAM GOWANS WHITE, B.Sc. (1913; with Foreword by EDEN PHILLIPOTS: all Watts). 'The Great Secret: Being the Letters of an Old Man to a Young Woman: A Book for Beginners' (same, 1911) is an intimate record of personal experience. '**A Plain Man's Plea for Rationalism**' by C. T. Gorham (Watts, 1919), and '**The Religious Revolution of To-day**' (same, 1915), by Prof. J. T. Shotwell of Columbia, are very compact statements.

The notable work of Dr. R. P. PARANJPYE (late Minister of Education, Bombay), 'The Crux of the Indian Problem' (Watts, 1931), is a powerful exposition of the retardative effect of religion on Indian political life.

The "agnostic" position, which is still strangely misdefined in the dictionaries, may be studied in Spencer's 'First Principles' (Course IX, § 22); in the Essays of T. H. HUXLEY (Works, Mac. vols. iv and v) and LESLIE STEPHEN'S 'An Agnostic's Apology' (2nd ed. 1908); and in 'The Faith of an Agnostic' by Sir G. G. GREENWOOD ("George Forrester": Watts, 1919). 'The Future of an Illusion,' by Dr. SIGMUND FREUD (E. tr. Wolff, 1928) is a judicial forecast of religious decline. 'An Agnostic's Progress,' by W. S. PALMER (Lmns. 1906), describes a progress back to religious views. The 'Living Issues in Religious Thought, from George Fox to Bertrand Russell,' of H. G. WOOD (A. & U. 1924) may be regarded as setting forth the message of "Neo-Quakerism," being critical towards Neo-Unitarianism and Rationalism alike. *Der moderne Unglaube in den unteren Ständen*, by Pastor W. STUDE-MUND (1901), surveys popular German freethought at its date.

§ 20. In recent years the unrivalled labours of Sir J. G. FRAZER have been specially expended on 'The Belief in Immortality' (Mac. 3 v. 1913); 'Folk-Lore in the Old Testament' (same, 3 v. 1918); and 'The Worship of Nature' (vol. i, 1926)—all *magna opera* even on his scale—the last being planned as a colligation of the world's lore on the racial forms of the primary 'High Gods' discussed by Mr. Lang and others. With 'The Golden Bough,' his edition of Pausanias, and his compilation on Totemism, they constitute the largest existing body of scholarly anthropological, mythological, and hierological literature from one hand. The critical debate on his positions continues.

§ 21. There have been many English statements of a "religion of the future" (noted in 'Spoken Essays' viii: Watts, 1925), some of them being implicit in books named in § 19. Such theses

in general proceed on the assumption that, after the abandonment of the historic creeds, men will continue to label as "religion" their philosophy or ideal of life—a view rejected by most "rationalists" so called, but not by all. The 'Scientific Meliorism and the Evolution of Happiness' of the late JANE H. CLAPPERTON (K.P. 1885) thus presented a Religion of Humanity—a term introduced by PAINE ("my religion is to do good") and adopted by COMTE (see § 22). 'Troasm' (= "The Religion Of All Sensible Men"—a formula dating from the "deistic period," 18th century) is finally affirmative of a God "with an attainable purpose" (Watts, 1925). 'Public Worship: A Study of the Psychology of Religion' by J. P. HVLAN (O.C. 1901) propounds, without proposals of machinery, a "religion of science" analogous to the "Free Religious" movement of the last century in the U.S.

§ 22. While religious systems or practising cults have in the historic past been regarded as instituted either in respect of primordial knowledge of the Gods or by supernaturally or supernormally inspired "Founders," they cannot be comprehensively classed without including in religion certain modern cults or movements which make neither of these claims. Thus (a) Comtism, of which the Founder, AUGUSTE COMTE, used the term "Positivism" to name a cult of abstract "Humanity" with a ritual and sacraments and Calendar imitating those of the Catholic Church, repudiated Theism while refusing the description of "Atheism." The "religion" was grafted on Saint-Simonism (as to which see A. J. BOOTH, 'Saint-Simon and Saint-Simonism,' 1871). The latter cult, long fruitful in literary propaganda, disappeared within the century.

On the other hand, in the same period (b) polygamous Mormonism claimed to found a special revelation, with Sacred Books, collected in 'The Book of Mormon.'

Latterly (c), in the English-speaking countries in particular, Spiritualism, a movement broadly devoted to communication with alleged disembodied "spirits" of the dead, has widened its activities while the Christian Churches in general avow shrinkage, and is to be broadly classed as a partly non-Christian and religious movement, though supported from time to time by professional men of science, as Sir W. Crookes and Sir Oliver Lodge. Still more recently, (d) the movement of "Christian Science," founded in the U.S. by the late Mrs. M. BAKER G. EDDY, has developed in England and elsewhere a large number of C. S. "Churches," proceeding on the writings of Mrs. EDDY, which claimed to have a Biblical basis, though departing from Biblical theism.

(a) Considered as a philosophy of cosmic and social life, COMTE'S

doctrines will be considered in the next and later Courses. As a religious propaganda, they are expounded in his own 'Discourse on the Positive Spirit' (E. tr. by Prof. E. S. BEESLY; Reeves, 1903); 'A General View of Positivism,' etc. (1848: E. tr. of 2nd ed. by Dr. Bridges, n.d. also Rout. 1910); and 'The Catechism of Positive Religion' (E. tr. from 2nd ed. 1883). L. LEVY-BRUHL's 'The Philosophy of Auguste Comte' (E. tr. 1903) is a friendly exposition. For criticism see J. S. MILL's 'Auguste Comte and Positivism' (2nd ed. 1866) and E. LITTRÉ's *Comte et la Philosophie Positive* (1863). Dr. J. H. BRIDGES replied to Mill in 'The Unity of Comte's Life and Doctrine' (1866: rep. 1910). T. WHITTAKER's 'Comte and Mill' (Con. 1908) is an impartial estimate. Further criticism in 'Spoken Essays.' See also F. J. GOULD's 'Short Life of Comte' (Watts, 1920) and Dr. BRIDGES' 'Essays and Addresses' (C. & H. 1907) for sympathetic expositions of the cult. The monograph *Comte*, by G. CANTECOR (n.d. in ser. *Les Philosophes*) is a work of scientific criticism, treating the philosopher as done with.

(b) Mormonism, primarily represented by 'The Book of Mormon,' is officially vindicated by N. L. NELSON in 'Scientific Aspects of Mormonism' (Put. 1904). There is a popular history, 'The Story of the Mormons' (Mac. 1902). It is more critically treated in 'The Mystery of Mormonism' by STUART MARTIN (Odhams, 1920), and in 'Brigham Young' by M. R. WERNER (Cape, 1925)—both dispassionate records. The ethics and the social success of the cult are discussed in 'The Rise of American Civilisation' by CHARLES and MARY BEARD, vol. i (Cape, 2 v. 1927). [The practice of polygamy in Utah was made illegal in 1862, 1882, and 1887, but the prohibition was accepted only in 1890 by Utah, which entered the Union in 1896.] C. SHERIDAN JONES's book, 'The Truth about the Mormons' (Rider, 1920), charges continuance of polygamy, but is poorly documented.

(c) The history of Spiritualism as a movement of the nineteenth century is fully narrated in 'Modern Spiritualism: A History and a Criticism,' by FRANK PODMORE (Met. 2 v. 1902), and his 'Studies in Psychical Research' (K.P. 1897) and 'Apparitions and Thought Transference: An Examination of the Evidence for Telepathy' (C.S.S. 1894). Critical replies, on the rationalistic side, are embodied in J. MCCABE's 'Spiritualism: A Popular History from 1847' (F.U. 1920) and 'The Religion of Sir Oliver Lodge' (Watts, 1914); also in EDWARD CLODD's 'The Question: "If a man die, shall he live again?" : A Brief History and Examination of Modern Spiritualism' (Richards, 1917: p.s. by Prof. H. E. Armstrong), and 'Occultism: Two Lectures' (Watts, 1922).

(d) Mrs. BAKER EDDY's principal work is 'Science and Health;

With a Key to the Scriptures' (Boston, rev. ed. 1907), which sets forth a view of Deity as at once masculine and feminine, its revision of the Lord's Prayer beginning "Our Father-Mother God." A. STETSON'S 'Reminiscences, Sermons and Correspondence, proving adherence to the principles of Christian Science as taught by M. B. Eddy' (N.Y. 1913), is in support. M. C. STURGE'S 'The Truth and Error of Christian Science' (Mur. 1903) is a short critical survey. MARK TWAIN'S 'Christian Science' (Harp. 1907) is the most vivacious criticism of the subject: the most weighty is the recent work of H. A. L. FISHER, 'Our New Religion: an Examination of Christian Science' (Benn. 1931). F. PODMORE'S 'Mesmerism and Christian Science: A Short History of Mental Healing' (Met. 1909) is a critical and scientific review of the matter.

§ 23. The survey of Hierology would be incomplete without notice of the current movement of theological thought in Germany associated with the names of RUDOLF OTTO, KARL BARTH, FRIEDRICH HEILER, EMIL BRUNNER, and Prof. E. SCHAEDEER, in which the "old dogmatic" is transformed into a "new dogmatic," which has been described as a "theology of crisis." Otto's work, *Das Heilige* (E. tr. 'The Idea of the Holy,' O.U.P. rev. ed. 1928), seeks to extract, in terms of its title, the "highest" concept underlying all religions, and in effect presents that as validating their "aim." The philosophic criticism of Feuerbach, which went, as in the case of SCHAEDEER, to the root issue, is not met. The new movement, along with or apart from Otto, rejects previous religious philosophies as "anthropocentric," claiming now to be "theocentric." The philosophic and psychic position remains, however, the same, as they made the same claim.

F. BARTH writes a *Dogmatik* in which a *quasi* "super-rational" polemic reaffirms a "super-historical Christ," postulating the historical working of "the Holy Spirit" in this and other forms. BRUNNER'S *Der Mittler* ('The Mediator') is on the same "mystical" footing. HEILER, whose 'Spirit of Worship' is Englished (H. & S. 1926), as is his 'Gospel of Sadhu Sundar Singh: An Apostle of the East and of the West' (A. & U.), has published *Das Gebet* (1918) in which Prayer is sought to be transported from the traditional evangelical basis or status to one of mystical contemplation. The entire "alogical" movement has been described as a result of war-disillusionment, moving men to a new form of theosophic self-exaltation. Alongside of the emotional movement there proceeds, in a spirit of new exactitude, the strictly historical study of early and later Christianity as a process of cult-building on normal historical lines, apart from any thesis of Personality.

THE MAKING OF JUDAISM

§ 1. SINCE this manual was first planned, there has been such a revolution in the attitude of educated theologians to the history of religion that much of the literature formerly indicated for study as innovating may be regarded as having carried its point. In 1888 Sir M. E. GRANT DUFF wrote ('Notes from a Diary,' 1900, ii, 12) of the excellent old handbook of the Rev. A. W. Oxford, '**A Short Introduction to the History of Ancient Israel**' (F.U. 1888), that "thirty years ago these [quoted] words would have created a scandal; thirty years hence they will be little better than a commonplace."

And this holds true for scholars, though not even yet for all "educated" readers. Recently a High Church Anglican Canon (Lacey, d. 1931) has avowed that he could not bring himself to "speak of the Bible as the Word of God." The history entitled 'Israel among the Nations' written for the "Students' Christian Movement" by NORMAN H. BAYNES (1927), while defending the usual assumptions as to Moses, the Patriarchs, and the Exodus, accepts the bulk of the documentary disintegration wrought by the previous half-century of scholarship, and would a generation ago have been assailed as intolerably "advanced." It is useful to the student as giving an extensive bibliography. Dr. G. H. B. WRIGHT's 'Was Israel ever in Egypt?' (W. and N.) indicates the fresh obtrusion of an old challenge.

Scholarly literature on the lines indicated is now published by the S.P.C.K., which has also produced (1919), under the editorship of Dr. OESTERLEY and G. H. Box, 'Jewish Documents of the Time of Ezra, translated from the Aramaic' by A. COWLEY—a work almost freshly revolutionary, the first of a series of 'Palestinian-Jewish Texts (Pre-Rabbinic).' The rise of the "Higher Criticism" may accordingly now be treated as matter of culture-history, to be gathered from such works as A. WESTPHAL's *Les Sources du Pentateuque*: tome i, *Le Problème Littéraire* (1888); the interesting survey of Dr. T. K. Cheyne, 'Founders of Old Testament Criticism' (Met. 1893), and his 'Bible Problems and

the Material for their Solution' (1904); 'The Scientific Study of the O.T.' by Dr. R. KITTEL (both C.T.L.); 'The Old Testament in the Twentieth Century' by the Rev. JOHN LEWIS (A. & U.); 'The Story of the Bible' by Dr. MACLEOD YEARSLEY (Watts, 1922); 'What Remains of the O.T., and other Essays,' by HERMANN GUNKEL (E. tr. A. & U. 1928).

Criticism, however, is continuously progressive, the proof of Babylonian derivations being followed by that of a remoter parentage for Semitic religion in general. At the same time, Sir FLINDERS PETRIE, under the ægis of the S.P.C.K., has produced a volume on '**Egypt and Israel**' (1911), which announces in its preface that "there is scarcely any historical statement in the Bible that has not been compiled—generally more than once—out of the editing of earlier documents," and at the close presents Egyptian figurines of Isis and Horos as the first models for Christian figures of the Virgin Mother and Child.

§ 2. The manual 'Judaism' (Con. Rel. series) by ISRAEL ABRAHAMS is mainly a manifesto; but that on '**The Religion of Ancient Palestine**' by S. A. COOK in the same series (also O.U.P. 1908) leads the way to historic study, which must now start from the discovery that the Semitic systems broadly derive from that of the ancient Sumer-Akkad, as set forth in C. L. WOOLLEY's '**The Sumerians**' (C. VI, § 5). Mr. Oxford's old handbook reproduced concisely the views set forth in STADE's *Geschichte des Volkes Israel* (Oncken's ser. 2 Bde. 1881-88); and Wellhausen's edition of BLEEK's *Einleitung in das Alte Testament*. WELHAUSEN's 'Prolegomena to the History of Israel' (Black, 1885), with which was published a reprint of his *Enc. Brit.* article '**Israel**' (the latter, also separately published, being a valuable concise history), is indispensable to a thorough study of the subject; and KUENEN's great work, '**The Religion of Israel to the Fall of the Jewish State**' (E. tr. 3 v. W. & N. 1874-75), is hardly less so. For later critical views HUGO WINCKLER's *Geschichte Israels*, or the historical articles in the *Encyclopædia Biblica*, may be consulted. A half-way position was taken up in the careful work of the German Prof. C. H. CORNILL, '**The History of the People of Israel**' (W. & N. 1900). The *Altorientalischer und Israelitischer Monotheismus* of Prof. B. BAENTSCH (Tüb. 1906) is a reasoned protest against a too rigid conception of a unified Israel. '**The History of the Hebrews**,' by R. KITTEL (E. tr. W. & N. 2 v. 1895-6), while conservative, has scholarly merit. '**The Religion of Israel**,' by Prof. (ex-Abbé) Alfred Loisy (E. tr. by A. Galton, F.U. 1910), represents a further though not a definitive critical advance, having been originally written for the *Revue du clergé*

français, with ironic touches, though with a more scientific attitude at points (e.g. Magic) than that of some leading English hierologists.

§ 3. The general scholarly analysis of the Hebrew sacred books may be gathered from such an accepted theological manual as CANON DRIVER's 'Introduction to the Literature of the Old Testament' (Clark, 8th ed. 1909), or from Prof. H. CREELMAN's 'Introduction to the O.T.: Chronologically Arranged' (Mac.). The old defensive work of the American scholar Prof. BISSELL ('The Pentateuch: Its Origin and Structure': H. & S. 1885) has a bibliography of the "literature of the Pentateuch," appalling but instructive. Of that defence, Canon DRIVER writes that the author is "singularly unable to distinguish between a good argument and a bad one." Results in advance of Canon DRIVER's are to be studied even in the 'New Commentary on Holy Scripture,' edited by Bishop Gore, H. Leighton, and A. Guillaume (S.P.C.K. 1928), which is inevitably conservative on fundamental historical and ethical problems, but is preferable to the Bible Cyclopædia of Dr. PEAKE. It indicates the continuous output of German and other research on all the Biblical books separately.

It should be noted, however, that, as against the "Higher Criticism," a defence of orthodox tradition has latterly been maintained by Dr. E. NAVILLE, and in *Moïse et la Genèse*, by E. DOUMERGUE (1920), in the name of "*bon sens*."

For a simple scholarly survey of past procedure the student may advantageously turn to the Eng. trans. of E. KAUTZSCH's 'Outline of the History of the Literature of the Old Testament' (W. & N.). A competent professional study of the general problem was supplied by Prof. JAMES ORR's prize essay, 'The Problem of the Old Testament considered with reference to recent Criticism' (Nisbet, 1906). For plain speaking against the orthodox conception of the authority and inspiration of the Bible, on the other hand, nothing surpasses the essay on 'The Theology of the Past and the Future,' in the First Part of M. M. KALISCH's 'Commentary on Leviticus' (1867). The same scholar's 'Bible Studies' (2 v. Lmns. 1877-78) exhibit an equal sincerity and candour.

§ 4. Readers who desire to trace in detail the process by which the traditional view of the Hebrew sacred books has been overthrown may consult, in addition to books already named, the *Études Critiques sur la Bible* of MICHEL NICOLAS (1862), and for the later process GEORGE SMITH's 'Chaldean Genesis' (2nd ed. 1880: Low), and 'The Witness of Assyria,' by Chilperic Edwards (1892)—the latter being especially instructive as against orthodox attempts to minimise the results of Assyriology. A flood of fresh

light was next thrown on the subject by the discovery of the Code of Hammurabi, for which see 'The Hammurabi Code,' by CHILPERIC EDWARDS (Watts, 1904), or 'The Oldest Code of Laws in the World,' trans. by C. H. W. Johns (Clarke, 1903), or the trans. by Prof. HARPER, 'The Code of Hammurabi' (Luzac). The whole problem was grappled with by Prof. Delitzsch in his celebrated lectures on '**Babel and Bible**' (E. tr. 1903: W. & N.); also by Prof. H. GUNKEL in his *Israel und Babylonien* (Gött. 1903), and by Prof. D. S. OETTLI in *Das Gesetz Hammurabis und die Thora Israels* (Leip. 1903). For further details the student should refer to the first series of '**Records of the Past**' (Bagsters) in twelve volumes, and the 'New Series' (same), under the editorship of Prof. A. H. Sayce, where translations of many important inscriptions are given.

The attempt, partly conducted by Prof. Sayce, to vindicate the historical character of O.T. books in regard to the doubts raised by Oriental research, has probably quickened the critical movement by compelling closer study, and a discrimination between the two disparate issues of "special revelation" and historical facts. A scholarly attempt to vindicate the historicity of the books of JOSHUA and JUDGES has recently been made in 'The Foundations of Bible History—Joshua and Judges,' by Prof. JOHN GARSTANG (Con. 1931). Bible study is thus ever being critically renewed. The student should always use the Revised in preference to the Authorised English version, and will further gain by comparing the former with the 'Variorum Teacher's Bible' (E. & S.). Dr. S. Davidson's old manual on '**The Canon of the Bible**' (3rd ed. 1880) is learned and candid; and Sir F. G. KENYON's 'Our Bible and the Ancient Manuscripts' (E. & S. 3rd ed. 1898) supplies a competent history of the text and its translations. Alternatively, there is 'A Short History of the Hebrew Text of the Old Testament,' by T. H. WEIR (W. & N.). On all Biblical questions, above all, the student should refer to the articles in the *Encyclopædia Biblica* (Black) for enlightened theological scholarship.

§ 5. The necessity of attention to the mythological side of the problem has been indicated in Course V; and 'The Religion of Israel' by Dr. JULES SOURY (E. tr. 1876) was well sub-titled 'A Study in Comparative Mythology.' In the same volume with GOLDZIEHER's work, there named, is published a translation of H. Steinthal's essay on '**The Legend of Samson**,' one of the most successful investigations in Hebrew myth, which has established the solar basis of the Samson saga, long before mooted by the eighteenth-century scholar, SEMLER; also the same writer's essay on 'Prometheus,' in which the mythical side of the Moses legend

is partly considered. A similar interest attaches to the elucidation of a particular myth in 'The Jonah Legend,' by W. SIMPSON (Richards, 1899)—a fresh application of an important mythological principle. On another line of criticism may be noted 'King David of Israel,' by C. CALLAWAY (Watts, 1905). But some of the light thrown on Hebrew mythology in detail long ago in BÄHR'S *Symbolik des Mosaischen Cultus* (2 Bde. 1837-39) is still ignored, and the mythological arguments in WINCKLER'S *Geschichte Israels* are resisted by a scholarship which has not made comparative mythology a part of its discipline.

§ 6. On the later Jewish literature there are many special treatises. Among these may be mentioned Prof. Sir G. A. SMITH'S 'The Book of Isaiah' (2 v. H. & S.) and 'The Book of the Twelve Prophets' (same, 2 v.); KUENEN'S 'Prophets and Prophecy in Israel' (E. tr. Lmns. 1877), recognised by Canon Driver to be "very full of information, but written from an avowedly naturalistic standpoint"; ROBERTSON SMITH'S 'The Prophets of Israel and their Place in History' (rep. 1895); Dr. CHEYNE'S 'The Book of Isaiah Chronologically Arranged' and 'Introduction to the Book of Isaiah' (Black); the same scholar's commentary with his translation of the Book of Psalms; and his work on 'Job and Solomon' (K.P.). Later treatments of Job are 'The Dramatic Poem of Job,' a metrical trans. with notes, by the Rev. W. JENNINGS (Met. 1912); Dr. G. H. B. WRIGHT'S 'The Book of Job' (W. & N. 1908); and Canon DRIVER'S 'The Book of Job' (C.U.P. 1906).

Kuenen, Wellhausen, and Stade, in their above-mentioned works, give for most readers a sufficient account of the sources and circumstances of the prophetic and other literature, canonical and uncanonical. Closer study may be directed to KUENEN'S 'The Hexateuch' (E. tr. Mac. 1886). Other instructive studies are:—Archdeacon CHARLES'S 'Commentary on the Book of Daniel' (Cl. Pr. 1929); 'Sacrifice in the O.T.' by G. B. GRAY (Cl. Pr. 1929); 'The Psalmists' by five scholars (introd. by D. C. SIMPSON: same, 1926); the copious and minutely critical work of Prof. W. E. BARNES, 'The Psalms, with intr. and notes' (2 v. Met. 1932); Dr. E. T. DILLON'S vivid study on 'The Sceptics of the O.T.' (1895), which examines 'Job' and 'Ecclesiastes'; Sir G. A. SMITH'S Brit. Acad. Lectures on 'The Early Poetry of Israel in its Physical and Social Origins' (O.U.P. 1912); A. K. FISKE'S 'The Myths of Israel; the ancient Book of Genesis' (Mac. 1897); 'The Hexateuch according to the Revised Version,' ed. by J. E. CARPENTER and G. HARFORD-BATTERSBY (Lmns. 2 v. 4to); 'The Documents of the Hexateuch,' trans. and arranged by W. E. ADDIS; Prof. H. GUNKEL'S 'The Legends of Genesis'

(E. tr. O.C.); and Dr. JOHN CULLEN's important essay, 'The Book of the Covenant in Moab: A Critical Inquiry into the Original Form of Deuteronomy' (Macl. 1903), which gives a list of other works on its theme.

§ 7. Attention should be paid to the Apocryphal books, which, now that they are no longer published with all Bibles, are almost entirely neglected by ordinary readers, but are of great importance to the understanding of Judaic culture-history. [For the old Greek translation, guidance is given in 'A Handbook to the Septuagint' by R. R. OTTLEY (Met. 1920).] There is now available the 'Apocrypha and Pseudepigrapha of the O.T.,' ed. by Archdeacon CHARLES, with the collaboration of other scholars (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1913). Dr. CHARLES's eds. of 'The Apocalypse of Baruch' (1896), 'The Assumption of Moses' (1897), 'The Book of Jubilees' (1902) and 'The Testaments of the Twelve Patriarchs' (1908) are also available separately (all Black). A careful revision of the standing English translation of the Apocrypha was made by the Rev. C. J. Ball for the last ed. of the 'Variorum Teacher's Bible' (E. & S.), and was also pub. separately. For critical views may be consulted the research of L. E. TONY ANDRÉ, *Les Apocryphes de l'Ancien Testament* (1903).

Pharisaism and Sadduceeism have been the subject of expert studies. WELLHAUSEN's *Pharisäer und Sādūcäer* (1874) was an awakening research. In English, R. TRAVERS HERFORD has contributed an able manual in the C.T.L., 'Pharisaism, its Aim and Method' (1912), and a larger and later work, 'The Pharisees' (A. & U. 1924); with which may be bracketed the 'Studies in Pharisaism and the Gospels' by I. ABRAHAM (2nd ser. C.U.P. 1924), a recognised expert. In this connection should be noted the interesting essay of Dr. M. D. CONWAY on 'Solomon and Solomonic Literature' (1899), which sets up various trains of inquiry as to the early evolution of Christianity and the later evolution of Judaism. The 'Book of Wisdom' (*Sophia Salomon*) was carefully edited, in Gr. Vulg. and A.V., with intro. and comm. by the Rev. W. J. DEANE (Cl. Pr. 1881).

§ 8. On later Jewish religious and social history, in addition to the general historians, the student may consult Dr. CHEYNE's 'American Lectures on Jewish Religious Life after the Exile' (Put. 1908); 'Judaism in the N.T. Period' by R. TRAVERS HERFORD (Lindsey Pr. 1928); 'Judaism in the First Centuries of the Christian Era: The Age of the Tannaim,' by Prof. G. F. MOORE of Harvard (O.U.P. 3 v. 1928-32); 'The Jewish Religion in the Time of Jesus' by Dr. G. HOLLMANN (E. tr. Ph. Green, 1909); 'Israel before Christ,' by A. W. F. Blunt; and 'Light from Egyptian Papyri on Jewish History before Christ,' by Dr. C. H. H.

WRIGHT (W. & N. 1908). Dr. A. W. STREANE's 'The Age of the Maccabees' (Bib. Stud. Lib. E. & S. 1898) is the most noteworthy book in that series. Dr. E. R. BEVAN's 'Jerusalem under the High Priests' (Arnold, 1904) deals with the period after Nehemiah. The most comprehensive study in this field is Prof. SCHÜRER's scholarly and comprehensive 'History of the Jewish People in the Time of Jesus Christ' (E. tr. 6 v. Clark). JOSEPHUS (rev. tr. B.L., also Rout.) must of course be used as a main original authority, though always with caution, even in his non-antiquarian portions.

The lengthy History of Dr. GRAETZ (E. tr. Nutt. 5 v.) has a strong racial bent, and is on various grounds open to challenge, though a work of great learning; and on Jewish history as a whole there is room for a work free at once from the racial and the religious bias; but there is merit in 'The Story of the Jewish People: A History of the Jewish People since Bible Times' by J. M. MYERS (Rout. 3 v. or in 1); and E. E. KELLETT has produced a good 'Short History of the Jews down to the Roman Period' (same). A German scholar, A. SCHLATTER, has written *Israels Geschichte von Alexander dem Grossen bis Hadrian* ("Reiche der Alten Welt" ser. Bd. iii); and one of the most enlightened of recent works in the field is that of LAURIE MAGNUS, 'The Jews in the Christian Era from the First to the Eighteenth Century' (Benn, 1929). 'The Chosen People' of M. M. THARAUD has been trans. by Frances W. Huard (Lmns.). The manuals of A. W. F. BLUNT, 'Israel before Christ' (1924) and 'Israel in World History' (1927: both Cl. Pr.) are concise and helpful.

§ 9. The sociological analysis of the beginnings of Judaism, as apart from controversy about the Bible, may be approached through the manual of W. E. ADDIS, 'Hebrew Religion to the Establishment of Judaism under Ezra' (C.T.L. 1906), and further studied in Prof. ROBERTSON SMITH's 'Religion of the Semites,' which specially deals with the origin of the practice of sacrifice, and illustrates the subject with much learning. This line of study may be carried on in the light of the Sumerian, Assyrian and Babylonian literature before noted. See also Prof. A. DUFF's 'Theology and Ethics of the Hebrews' (Rout. 1902), an investigation of fundamentals as apart from documentary questions; the Rev. MORRIS JOSEPH's 'Judaism as Creed and Life' (same); and M. FRIEDLÄNDER's 'Text-book of Jewish Religion' (K.P.); with which may be compared the R.T.S. manuals: 'The Manners and Customs of the Jews,' by Dr. E. P. BARROWS; 'The Laws and Polity of the Jews' by E. W. EDERSHEIM; and 'The Rites and Worship of the Jews' (1890). The student cannot ignore, in this connection, RENAN's *Histoire*

du Peuple d'Israel (E. tr. 3 v. C. & H. 1888-91); though RENAN's method is rather literary than scientific, involving unhistorical positions as to the patriarchs, and an adhesion to his primary assumption of a special faculty for monotheism in the Semites. A real service was done to the whole study of Palestinian history by the work of Prof. ELSWORTH HUNTINGTON, of Yale, on 'Palestine and its Transformation' (Con. 1911), which studies the effects of climatic change and other forces of environment on the historical evolution. The older work of C. R. CONDER 'Palestine' (Philip, 1889) is still serviceable on this line of inquiry, as also are the 'Handbook to the Bible' by F. R. and C. R. CONDER (Lmns.) and the 'Aids' published with the 'Variorum Teacher's Bible.'

§ 10. On the Talmud, EMANUEL DEUTSCH (essay in his 'Literary Remains') has been a popular authority; but his is a rose-coloured sketch. It may be corrected by Dr. PICK's detailed study in McClintock and Strong's (Amer.) Bib. Cyclop. which gives a good general analysis of the Talmudic treatises, or by Dr. Samuel Davidson's shorter article in Kitto's Cyclop. of Bib. Lit. (Black). On the Jewish side a sympathetic presentment is given in 'Some Aspects of Rabbinical Theology' by Dr. S. SCHECHTER (Black, 1909). Of the immense collection called the Talmud, the general reader may further gather some concrete notion from such works as Hershon's 'Treasures of the Talmud' (1882), and the same writer's 'Genesis with a Talmudical Commentary' (Bagsters). There is no complete translation of the Talmud in English, but the Jerusalem Talmud is now available in French—*Le Talmud de Jérusalem*, tr. by Moïse Schwab (Paris, 11 t.); and there has been published in the U.S. an Eng. tr. of the Talmud of Babylon, edited by M. L. Rodkinson (N.Y. 1896, etc.), simultaneously with a German trans. by L. Goldschmidt (Berlin, 1896, etc.). Mr. Rodkinson has also produced a 'History of the Talmud' (N.Y. 1903). Later Jewish philosophy is partly to be gathered from the *Kabbalah*, on which there is a useful essay by Dr. Ginsburg (Lmns.); and a more elaborate work by A. FRANCK, *La Kabbale, ou la philosophie religieuse des Hébreux* (1843, new ed. 1889). There is a vol. of selections on 'Rabbinic Philosophy and Ethics' by G. FRIEDLÄNDER (Valentine, 1912).

§ 11. As to modern and contemporary Judaism, an orthodox or official view is set forth in M. FRIEDLÄNDER's 'Text-book' (K.P.); and there is a good 'Short History of Hebrew Literature,' by Israel Abrahams (F.U. 1906), which was followed by a larger 'Literary History of the Jews' (same). C. G. MONTEFIORE's 'Outlines of Liberal Judaism' (1912) is an accepted presentment

of what may be termed 'Modern Judaism.' On the liberal movements of Jewish thought, much information is given in the interesting 'Studies in Judaism' of S. SCHECHTER (Black, 1896); and some interesting lights are thrown at once upon ancient Judaism and upon the survivals of Semitic religion in the East by the work of Dr. SAMUEL CURTISS, 'Primitive Semitic Religion To-day' (H. & S. 1902). On the religious and social life of modern Jews, there may be consulted the work of C. K. SALAMAN, 'Jews as They Are' (S.M. 2nd ed. 1885); that of Sir R. F. BURTON, 'The Jew, the Gypsy, and El Islam' (Hut. 1898); and that of LEROY-BEAULIEU, 'Israel among the Nations' (E. tr. Hei. 1895).

In the S.N.S. there is a vol. by Prof. J. K. HOSMER on 'The Jews: in Ancient, Medieval, and Modern Times'; and one on 'The Jews under Roman Rule,' by Dr. W. D. MORRISON. A Jewish philosophic view of race history is set forth in the essay of S. M. DUBNOW, 'Jewish History' (1903). Many scholarly studies, further, appear in the *Jewish Quarterly Review*; and there is a 'Jewish Year Book.' The ideal of Zionism is ably presented in 'The Jewish Question and Zionism' by P. HORROWITZ (Benn, 1927); and there is a 'History of Zionism: 1600-1918' by N. SOKOLOW (Lmns. 2 v. with introd. by Lord Balfour and Stephen Pichon).

THE MAKING OF CHRISTIANITY

§ 1. As in regard to the history of Judaism, so in regard to that of Christianity, the past generation has witnessed a revolution in the attitude of theological scholars. RENAN's 'Life of Jesus,' perhaps the least scholarlike if the most charming of his series on 'The Origins of Christianity,' has been republished in the English translation (Ev. Lib. Dent) with an introduction by Bishop GORE; and Renan's Neo-Unitarian view of the Founder, which in 1860 was generally denounced for its "unbelief," appears to be now the most common among the more studious clergy of the Protestant Churches. The entire problem, therefore, has to be newly faced. A scientific view of the rise of Christianity will involve the tracing of its derivations on the one hand from Judaism, and older cults, and on the other hand from the other religious systems spread through the Roman Empire at the time of the Christian beginnings—that is to say, in the first four centuries of our "Christian era." It is natural, however, to begin with the problem of the Gospels.

(a) The student who prefers to go straight to the present position of the critical debate may set out with three books of one of the most distinguished of living theological scholars, Prof. F. C. Burkitt: '**Christian Beginnings**' (U.L. Pr. 1924), '**The Gospel History and its Transmission**' (Clark, 1906: 5th imp. 1925) and '**The Earliest Sources for the Life of Jesus**' (Con. new ed. 1926). Of these the first, which is by eighteen years later in production than the second, avows that of the orthodoxy of Gibbon's day there is hardly one stone left standing upon another. The third is a stand for "Mark" as the original and truly "biographical" gospel.

(b) The copious adaptive literature produced by scholarly churchmen is represented by such books as Prof. B. W. Bacon's '**The Making of the New Testament**' (H.U.L. 1910); Prof. F. EAKIN's 'Getting Acquainted with the N.T.' (Mac.); 'The Gospels as Historical Documents,' by V. H. STANTON (3 v. 1903-20, C.U.P.); 'The Origin of the N.T.,' by Dr. W. Wrede (Harp. 1909); 'Landmarks in the History of Early Christianity' by Prof. KIRSOPP LAKE (Mac. 1920) and 'The Beginnings of

Christianity,' ed. by Profs. LAKE and FOAKES-JACKSON (4 v. Mac.); 'The Acts of the Apostles' and 'The Date of the Acts and the Synoptic Gospels' by Prof. ADOLF HARNACK (E. tr. C.T.L.); and the other C.T.L. volumes:—'The Books of the N.T.' by Baron H. VON SODEN; 'The Virgin Birth of Christ,' by PAUL LOBSTEIN (E. tr.); 'What is Christianity?' by HARNACK (E. tr.); 'The Early Christian Conception of Christ,' by O. PFLEIDERER (E. tr.); 'The Doctrine of the Atonement and its Historical Evolution,' by A. SABATIER (E. tr.); 'Jesus,' by W. BOUSSET (E. tr.); 'Luke the Physician' by HARNACK (E. tr.); 'Some N.T. Problems,' by ARTHUR WRIGHT (Met. 1898); and 'The Historical Evidence for the Resurrection of Jesus Christ' (C.T.L.) by Prof. KIRSOPP LAKE. As against the last, a critical inquiry is carried out in 'The First Easter Dawn,' by C. T. GORHAM (Watts, 1908) which examines alike the "evidence" and the Easter mythology.

(c) Of outstanding importance are the article GOSPELS, by Prof. PAUL SCHMIEDEL, in the *Encyc. Biblica*, and the *Einleitung in die drei ersten Evangelien* of WELLHAUSEN (Berlin, 1905). Of 'Introductions to the Study of the N.T.' though there is much historical interest in older manuals, as that of Dr. B. WEISS (E. tr. 2 v. 1887-8), those of Dr. A. H. MACNEILE (Cl. Pr. 1927); Dr. J. MOFFATT (Scrib. I.T.L. ser. 1911), A. JÜLICHER (E. tr. Smith, 1903), and B. W. BACON (Mac. 1900) are preferable to the older orthodox handbooks. 'The Origins of Christianity' by C. BIGG (O.U.P. 1909) is a standard manual of the kind. 'The Mystery of the Kingdom of God' (Black, E. tr. 1925; with introd. by W. Lowrie, 1913) represents the position of Prof. ALBERT SCHWEITZER before the writing of his 'Quest' (§ 2); and the treatise on 'The Four Gospels,' by Canon BURNETT H. STREETER (Mac.), claims to be a 'Study of Origins' in the light of modern scholarship; while the Rev. Dr. MAURICE JONES's 'The New Testament in the Twentieth Century' (same) is 'A Survey of Recent Christological and Historical Criticism of the N.T.'

During the latter half of the past century much critical energy went to the establishment of the priority of "Mark" among the Gospels—a view rejected by both Strauss and Baur. The priority view is competently expounded in A. E. J. RAWLINSON's 'St. Mark' (Met. 1926). See below, §§ 4, 14.

Among the many German treatises giving new views on early Christian evolution may be noted Prof. ARNOLD MEYER's *Die moderne Forschung über die Geschichte des Urchristentums* (1898); JOH. HOFFMANN's *Das Abendmahl im Urchristentum* (Berlin, 1903); and ERICH HAUPT's *Zum Verständnis des Apostolats im Neuen Testament* (1896). The work of Dr. W. BRANDT, *Die evangelische*

Geschichte und der Ursprung des Christenthums, proceeding on a critique of the Passion and the Resurrection (1893), had already carried dissolvent criticism to a new stage.

§ 2. (a) While the scholarly ecclesiastical literature thus follows with reserves the critical movement of modern Continental scholarship, that continues to advance. The '**Radical Views about the New Testament**' by the Dutch Prof. **Van den Bergh van Eysinga** (Watts, 1912) indicates the special critical progress made in Holland. The '**Quest of the Historical Jesus: A Critical Study of its Progress from Reimarus to Wrede**,' by Dr. **ALBERT SCHWEITZER** (E. tr. Black, 1910, with introd. by Prof. Burkitt), gives a clear-cut and in general well-informed view of the entire German critical activity in the period indicated, the later stage being progressively "destructive," though **STRAUSS's** '**Life of Jesus**' had given the commanding lead from 1835 onwards (E. tr. [by George Eliot] 3 v. 1846; rep. 1 v. Son. 1892). (The Dutch movements of the later 19th c. decades, as well as the others, earlier and later, are outlined in the editor's '**History of Freethought in the 19th Century**.' See also the conspectus of Prof. **VAN EYSINGA**, named below, § 3.)

(b) The positions of Schweitzer and of **WREDE** (*Das Messiasgeheimnis*, 1904; 2te Aufl. 1913; Göttingen), though not at the furthest advance of "negative" criticism, were so far from those of even liberal orthodoxy that they prepared for a further movement. It was Schweitzer's claim that if only half of their case stood, the canonical tradition of the Life was destroyed. Whereas in the previous generation the stress of conflict lay between the supernaturalist and the Neo-Unitarian or biographical positions, it has latterly become one between the affirmation and the denial of the historicity of Jesus, the Neo-Unitarian school being, of course, greatly the more numerous, though the traditional orthodox view has practically disappeared from scholarly discussion.

The work of **W. Soltau**, '**The Birth of Jesus Christ**' (E. tr. Black, 1903) is a good introduction, though not to be regarded as exhausting the historical question. Prof. **W. M. RAMSAY's** '**Was Christ born in Bethlehem?**' (H. & S. 1898) belongs to the literature of defence. Of the books which affirm the priority and authenticity of "Mark" may be noted Prof. **BURKITT's** '**The Earliest Sources for the Life of Jesus**' (§ 1a), **T. H. ROBINSON's** '**St. Mark's Life of Jesus**' (S. C. Mov. 1922) and **J. M. THOMPSON's** '**Jesus according to St. Mark**' (Met. 1910). Of a different order is the erudite work of Prof. **GUSTAF DALMAN**, '**The Words of Jesus: I. Introduction and Fundamental Ideas**' (E. tr. Clark. 1902), which deserves careful study. Proceeding on the "biographical"

assumption, it yields to that a somewhat dubious support. The general problem of the beginnings is concisely handled in the recent C.U.P. Manual, 'The Rise of the Christian Church,' by Rev. L. E. BURNS, the Ven. J. W. HUNTER, and the Rev. J. F. BETHUNE-BAKER.

§ 3. (a) The modern theory (as distinct from the ancient mystic and quasi-Christian view taken by the Docetists) of Jesus as a non-historical figure appears to have been first (privately) mooted by followers of Bolingbroke, known to Voltaire, in the 18th c. It began to be widely discussed in the French Revolution period, as put forth by the astrological mythologists, DUPUIS and VOLNEY (Course V, § 5), and was later mooted in England (1830-40) by Robert Taylor and 'A German Jew' (Blumenfeld?). To these early treatises may be added 'Our Sun-God; or, Christianity before Christ,' by JOHN DENHAM PARSONS (pub. by author, 1895); 'Christianity before Christ; or, Prototypes of our Faith and Culture,' by C. J. STONE (1885: leaning to Indian derivations); 'The Evolution of Christianity,' by CHARLES GILL (2nd ed. 1884), a careful and scholarly work, which, however, does not trace the Pagan sources; and 'The Sources and Development of Christianity,' by T. L. STRANGE (1875). The old 'Diegesis' of Robert Taylor is still worth attention.

On the special problem of the historicity of the Founder, which was prepared for by the great works of Strauss and Baur, a new critical step was taken by BRUNO BAUER in his *Kritik* of 1841, with a proposition as to the gospels being a mythic construction, which seems much later to have influenced the Dutch critics PIERSON (1878) and LOMAN (1882). A notable thesis of the Jesus myth as rooting in ancient vegetation-worship was set forth in *Das Leben Jesu, Eine Sage*, etc. by M. KULISCHER in 1876.

The work of GEORGE SOLOMON, 'The Jesus of History and the Jesus of Tradition Identified' (1880), contends that Judas of Galilee and the Jesus mentioned by Josephus as crying 'Woe to Jerusalem' (*Wars*, vi, 5, § 3) were at the foundation of the Christian legends. A new investigation of the mythological problem was attempted in the editor's 'Christianity and Mythology,' and 'Pagan Christs,' the Pagan as well as the Judaic myth-analogies being enumerated. A constructive historical theory is led up to in Sir J. G. FRAZER's 'Golden Bough.' Meantime, GRANT ALLEN, in his 'Evolution of the Idea of God' (1897; R.P.A. rep.; Watts, 1931), had pointed to the anthropological solution that the Gospel story of the Crucifixion is a complex of actual popular rites of human sacrifice.

(b) In the present century the literature of this problem has

significantly increased. In Germany appeared *Das Christus-Problem* (Leip. 1903) and *Die Entstehung des Christentums* (1904), by Pastor A. KALTHOFF (E. tr. by Mr. McCabe, 'The Rise of Christianity,' Watts, 1907), denying the historical reality of Jesus. Specially important is the work in German of the American Prof. W. BENJAMIN SMITH, *Der vorchristliche Jesus*, with pref. by Prof. SCHMIEDEL (1906). And in Italy, in 1904, appeared the *Gesù Christo non e mai esistito* of 'Milesbo' (EMILIO BOSSI).

In 1909 was published the new and powerful polemic of Prof. Arthur Drews (a philosophic theist), *Die Christusmythe* (E. tr. 'The Christ Myth,' from 3rd Ger. ed. of 1909 by C. Delisle Burns: F.U. 1910), which at once created widespread discussion and debate in Germany, where Pastor Fr. STEUDEL (1910) powerfully replied to the critical attack in *Im Kampfe um die Christusmythe*. In previous years, without attempting to meet in detail the negative case, several writers had undertaken to establish on new lines the affirmative, notably Prof. O. PFLEIDERER, 'Christian Origins' (E. tr. F.U. 1906); Prof. W. BOUSSET, *Was wissen wir von Jesus?* (Halle, 1904); Prof. WERNLE, *Die Quellen des Lebens Jesu* (Halle, 1905); ARNO NEUMANN, 'Jesus' (E. tr. Black, 1906), with a pref. by Prof. Schmiedel; and the lecture by the latter, 'Jesus in Modern Criticism' (E. tr. Black, 1907), in reply to criticisms. Prof. Schmiedel there freely admits that in the preceding five or six years the negative view had gained much ground. For criticism of his biographical construction—which is further developed in his short treatise *Das vierte Evangelium gegenüber den drei ersten* (Halle, 1906)—see Dr. W. B. Smith's able work in English, 'Ecce Deus' (1912); Dr. DREWS's 'Christ Myth'; 'Pagan Christs,' Part II, §§ 4-6, and the *Agnostic Annual* for 1907 (Watts).

In 1911 appeared Pt. II of Prof. Drews's *Christusmythe*, 'The Witnesses to the Historicity of Jesus' (E. tr. by J. McCabe, Watts, 1912), a critical survey of the whole "biographical" case on the documentary side; and in 1910 his essay *Die Petrus Legende*, a separate study of myth. The systematic reassertion of the "astro-mythological" doctrine of Dupuis was now undertaken in *Der Astralmythos von Christus: Die Lösung der Christusfrage durch Astrologie*, by CHRISTIAN PAUL FUHRMANN, with a Star-map and a Star-sketch indicating the zodiacal figures involved, and an up-to-date bibliography (n.d. and no place of publication: 1912) which has naturally received small public attention. In 1917 the editor attempted to fuse the concurring lines of the myth argument in 'The Jesus Problem: A Restatement of the Myth Theory' (Watts), with an appended trans. of 'The Teaching of the Twelve Apostles,' annot. and an App. on

'The Myth of Simon Magus.' On the latter theme there is a separate study by G. R. S. MEAD (Theos. Soc.).

(c) The entire myth theory was violently opposed by the late Dr. F. C. CONYBEARE in his work 'The Historical Christ' (Watts, 1914)—replied to in 'The Jesus Problem' in detail. Conybeare's work, which caused much clerical satisfaction, and is highly praised by Dr. F. C. Burkitt, makes the repeated assertion that in "Mark" Jesus is represented as "the son of *Joseph and his wife Mary*"; and that we there "learn quite incidentally the names of his brothers and sisters." This vital error has been noticed by no clerical eulogist. The student will accordingly do well to examine "Mark" for himself, noting the recent thesis of Dr. Couchoud: *L'Évangile de Marc a été écrit en latin* (rep. in *Prém. Écrits du Christianisme* (Rieder, 1930)—the original patristic tradition. It should be noted that previously, in his 'Myth, Magic, and Morals' (Watts, 1909), Dr. Conybeare had countered on naturalistic lines the whole supernaturalist tradition.

(d) The fresh thesis of M. EDOUARD DUJARDIN, *Le Dieu Jésus : Essai sur les origines et la Formation de la Légende Évangélique* (Messein, 1927), made some new and interesting contributions, with a polemic on the side of the virtue of all cultism, and against all previous theorists save Couchoud as "non-constructive." In 1927 were published also the able and scholarly work of L. GORDON RYLANDS, 'The Evolution of Christianity' (Watts, 1927), which proceeds on the myth theory; the excellent condensation of the case by EDWARD GREENLY, D.Sc., F.G.S., in 'The Historical Reality of Jesus: A Concise Statement of the Problem' (Watts); and 'Jesus and Judas: A Textual and Historical Investigation by J. M. R.' (Watts), with App. on 'The Problem of "Mark".' Read with the short work of Prof. VAN EYSINGA, Dr. Greenly's conspectus constitutes a summary for the general reader.

A French work, on comprehensive principles of historical criticism, *Le Christ a-t-il existé?* by MOUTIER-ROUSSET, came out in 1922. In 1924 appeared Dr. Paul-Louis Couchoud's *Le Mystère de Jésus : Ie Ptie., L'Énigme* (E. tr. 'The Enigma of Jesus,' by Mrs. Whale: Watts, 1924, with introd. by Sir J. G. FRAZER, who did not in this case repeat his previous denunciation of the myth theory).

Dr. COUCHOUD's treatise was followed in 1925 by Dr. GEORG BRANDES' Danish work on 'The Jesus Saga' (Ger. tr. 1925; E. tr. by E. Björkman [Amer.]: 'Jesus: A Myth'; Brentano, 1927), which elicited much English outcry, one mistake by Brandes being balanced by many on the side of the defence. Of the strongest scholarly quality is the compact research of Prof. VAN EYSINGA (Rieder, 1926), *La Littérature chrétienne*

primitive, which puts the documentary case with new force; and the modern movement of criticism was historically outlined by Dr. DREWS in *Die Leugnung der Geschichtlichkeit Jesu* (1926), which brought the record to that date.

(e) In recent years fresh attention has been evoked by the so-called "Slavonic Josephus" a late MS. tr. of the 'Wars,' traced to the Byzantine period (11th or 12th c.); containing an account of Jesus as a political agitator, greatly differing from the known passage in the Greek text. The argument is that Josephus had written in an original Aramaic version matter which he dared not insert in the Greek, and that the Aramaic was preserved by Chazars, from whom it passed to Russians. Discussion of the matter began in 1906, when the recovered MS. was made known; the great preponderance of opinion being against the authenticity of the interpolations. In the recent discussion (see § 4) the critical balance has not changed, though S. REINACH appears partly to accept the authenticity. On the merits see 'The Christ Passage in Josephus' by Prof. S. ZETTLIN (Philad. Heb. Coll. 1928), who finds the additions to be late Christian fabrications.

§ 4. While the usual official defence is to the effect that no "scholar of the first rank" has yet adopted the myth theory (a tactic employed against every new position in turn), explicit negation of the myth theory, apart from incidental and usually scornful repudiations, has inspired a number of manifestos:— 'Mythic Christs and the True: A Criticism of Some Modern Theories,' by the Rev. Dr. W. ST. CLAIR TISDALL (1909); 'Did Jesus Really Live?' by H. J. ROSSINGTON, B.D. (Ph. Green, 1911); Dr. T. J. THORBURN, 'Jesus Christ, History or Myth?' (Clark, 1912); H. VON SODEN's *Hat Jesus gelebt?* (1910); Fr. LOOFS, 'What is the Truth about Jesus Christ?' (E. tr. Clark, 1913); S. J. CASE, 'The Historicity of Jesus' (Chicago Un. Pr. 1912: rev. ed. 1928).

More recently, a series of works variously presenting a historic Jesus in a biographical light indicates the ferment of inquiry on the subject:—Prof. M. GOGUEL, 'Jesus the Nazarene: Myth or History?' (E. tr. F.U. 1926); 'Jesus: A New Biography,' by S. J. CASE (Chic. U. Pr. 1927); 'Jesus of Nazareth: His Life, Times, and Teaching,' by Dr. JOSEPH KLAUSNER (of Jerusalem), tr. by Canon Danby (Mac. N.Y. 1927); 'The Historical Life of Christ,' by Dr. J. WARSCHAUER, pref. by Dr. Burkitt (F.U. 1927); 'Jesus Christ and his Revelation,' by Dr. V. BURCH (C. & H. 1927)—applying the "Josephan" argument; 'The Messiah Jesus and John the Baptist, according to Josephus,' etc., by Dr. ROBERT EISLER (E. tr. Met. 1931); 'The Historic Jesus,' by Prof. JAMES MACKINNON (Lmns. 1931), a Neo-Unitarian reconstruction, dis-

missing the myth-theory as *à priori* untenable; and J. MIDDLETON MURRY'S 'The Life of Jesus' (Cape, 1926), which is highly eclectic.

The earlier work of G. R. S. MEAD, 'Did Jesus Live 100 B.C.?' (Th. P.S. 1903), deals learnedly and minutely with the clues of the 'Jesus of the Talmud' and the "Toledoth Jeschu." Dr. H. D. A. MAJOR'S 'Reminiscences of Jesus by an Eye-Witness' (Mur. 1925) assumes the primary historical quality of Mark as reporting the discourses of Peter. He mutilates the canonical evidence and dismisses as "semi-educated" those who accept more critical views. Thus far, it would appear, the "biographical" position, now generally Neo-Unitarian, is supported negatively by the normal ecclesiastical temper of emotional hostility, and positively by the "Necessary Personality" thesis—urged formerly by Sir J. G. Frazer and M. Loisy, and latterly, with marked amenity, by Prof. Burkitt.

The recent work, 'The Riddle of the New Testament' by Sir E. HOSKINS and N. DAVY (Faber, 1931), adopting that thesis, claims to prove, without meeting the myth theory, that the otherwise confused and contradictory character of the N.T. books as a whole becomes at once "intelligible" on the acceptance of the "life and death" of the nominal Founder, and on that assumption only. The *à posteriori* or inductive case is thus abandoned as untenable save on an *à priori* deduction which is obviously applicable to all or any of the leading Pagan God and Demigod myths, down to Jack the Giant-Killer. It is accordingly impugned as a paralogism; but some scholars apply it constructively—*e.g.* to the myths of Herakles, Zeus, and Osiris, and to the debated cases of Buddha and Zoroaster, though not to Yahweh, or Aphrodite, or Isis. In the 18th c., it was applied to Mercury and Mithra by MOSHEIM and others.

§ 5. Apart from the special problem of the historicity of the Founder, that of the sources and relations of the Gospels calls for exact critical study, and has produced an immense literature. Preliminary guidance is indicated above in §§ 1, 2, the introductory works there named giving retrospects of the discussion. The modern progress has been rapid since the appearance (1874-79) of the learned (anonymous) work of WALTER R. CASSELS, entitled 'Supernatural Religion' (Watts, 3 v. rev. rep. in 1 v. 1902). The accuracy and the reasoning of that work were bitterly impugned by the late Bishop LIGHTFOOT ('Essays on "Supernatural Religion,"' 1889). Cassels made a temperate and effective 'Reply to Dr. Lightfoot's Essays' (Lmns. 1889). In Prof. PFLEIDERER'S work, 'The Development of Theology in Germany . . . and . . . Great Britain' (W. & N. 1891), there will be found

a forcible vindication of the critical value of 'Supernatural Religion,' and a severe criticism of Lightfoot.

Later scholarly clerical views are represented on the one hand by the writings of WELLHAUSEN and SCHMIEDEL, and on the other by those of BURKITT, JACKSON and LAKE, and the very interesting treatise 'The Synoptic Gospels, Edited with an Introduction and a Commentary' (2nd ed. Mac. 2 v. 1927), by Dr. C. G. MONTEFIORE, a "liberal" Jewish scholar, whose criticism is relatively impartial as between the various critical schools and Judaism, but avoids discussing the myth theory. In general the orthodox 'Dictionary of the Bible' edited by J. Hastings (Clark, 4 v.; short ed. in 1 v.) and 'Dictionary of Christ and the Gospels' (same 2 v.) may be consulted for the clerical views of the last generation; and the S.P.C.K. 'Commentary' ed. by Bishop Gore (Course VII, § 3) for later scholarship. There are a 'Philology of the Gospels' and a 'Grammar of the New Testament' (Mac. 1898) by the German Prof. F. BLASS, and a trans. of Prof. EBERHARD NESTLE's 'Introduction to the Textual Criticism of the Greek New Testament' (W. & N. 1885); and the 'Variorum New Testament' (E. & S.) may be found helpful in that connection.

§ 6. The process of documentary disintegration has been carried far in the series of critical studies by the Abbé LOISY, of which the result was his retirement from the Church of Rome; and his hostility to the myth theory (expressed in the demand for a "match" to account for the traditional combustion in the first century) does not prevent the turning of his own "destructive" work to the purposes of that. His critical status, built up from the starting-point of his Histories of the O.T. and N.T. Canons (1890-1) and of the O.T. text (1893), was fully established by his *Les évangiles synoptiques* (2 t. 1893-4 and 1907-8), followed in 1903 by his *Le quatrième évangile*, and in 1912 by his *Jésus et la tradition évangélique*. The later book on Luke (1924), revising, like the other, his large treatise; and his *Les Actes des Apôtres* (1920, abr. ed. 1925), with his *L'Apocalypse de Jean* (1923), form with these a body of translation and commentary of the highest order; and his complete translation of the N.T. books, with separate discussions (1922), is worthy of special recognition. His insistence on the rhythmic or cadenced character of the gospel and other texts deserves special attention. The thesis has been more recently developed in the translations of Dr. COUCHOUR.

The later academic movement in Germany has reached newly "destructive" positions in *Die Geschichte der synoptischen Tradition* of Prof. D. RUDOLF BULTMANN (Gött. 1921), whose concise study *Jesus* (in the *Unsterblichen* series: Berlin, n.d.) still further

minimises the historical element left by Wrede and Schweitzer. In England, 'The Synoptic Problem and a New Solution,' by R. H. CROMPTON (Clark, 1928), leans to the side of non-historicity, the "new solution" being a view of the symbolic-didactic method of the gospels. The small treatise 'Is Jesus the Christ? By a Clergyman of the Church of England' (Watts, 1927) is of a somewhat esoteric character.

§ 7. The special debate on the Fourth Gospel, which had begun before Strauss, may be followed in 'The Johannine Writings' by Dr. Schmiedel (E. tr. Black, 1908), and the Unitarian 'Inquiry into the Character and Authorship of the Fourth Gospel,' by Principal DRUMMOND (W. & N. 1903), which is careful and comprehensive. Among theologians, the balance of opinion appears to lie heavily against the "authenticity" of the Fourth Gospel. On the orthodox side there are Dr. SANDAY'S 'The Criticism of the Fourth Gospel' (Cl. Pr. 1905) and Dr. H. L. JACKSON'S 'The Problem of the Fourth Gospel' (C.U.P.). The attack, on the other hand, was notably strengthened by LOISY'S *Le quatrième évangile*.

The derivation of the Christian doctrine of the *Logos* from Platonic philosophy has been held to have taken place by way of the Judæo-Greek system of PHILO, before mentioned. On this head may be consulted the learned work of Principal Drummond, 'Philo and the Principles of the Jewish-Alexandrine Philosophy' (Lmns.), in connection with Havet; and with the noteworthy work of Dr. PAUL CARUS, 'The Pleroma: An Essay on the Origin of Christianity' (O.C. Co. 1909), which sets forth alike the Gentile and the Jewish elements built into Christianity. For comparative views of the connections between the Jewish and the Christian ideas of the *Logos* see also 'Supernatural Religion' (R.P.A. rep. Watts), per index.

This problem in turn is latterly being carried in a new direction by such research as that of ROBERT STAHL, *Les Mandéens et les origines chrétiennes* (Rieder, 1930), which leads up to the well-argued theory of a primary Jewish but anti-Judaic basis of the Fourth Gospel—the latter being redacted from it in the interests of the Church of the 2nd century. On the documentary side, M. Stahl's research may be checked by Dr. A. J. H. WILHELM BRANDT'S learned work, *Die Mandäische Religion* (1889). As to the relations of Jews and Christians, the 'Jewish Christians and Judaism: A Study of the First Two Centuries,' by W. R. SORLEY (Bell, 1881), is still worth consulting. (See also § 12.)

§ 8. (a) The authenticity and historical veracity of the Acts of the Apostles came under discussion with the problem of the Gospels. Apart from the radical criticism of the history by Baur, the documentary problem was handled in E. ZELLER'S 'The

Contents and Origin of the Acts of the Apostles Critically Investigated' (E. tr. W. & N. 2 v. 1875-6); also in WEIZSÄCKER'S 'Apostolic Age' (2 v. 1894-5). Of the 'Apostolic' age a wide conspectus is given in HAUSRATH'S 'History of the New Testament Times' (E. tr. W. & N. 4 v. 1895). Later researches of scholarly competence are the *Neutestamentliche Zeitgeschichte* of Prof. O. HOLTZMANN (1895), and the 'History of N.T. Times in Palestine' by Prof. S. MATHEWS (Mac.).

This problem in turn was greatly advanced by LOISY, who in his *Les Actes des Apôtres* (1920 and 1925) broadly established the twofold composition of the Acts by two main authors, one a Paulinist and Hellenist, and the other a Judaiser, whom Loisy antagonised. In their joint essay of 1928 (in the *Revue de l'histoire des Religions*) on *Les deux Auteurs des Actes des Apôtres* (rep. in *Prem. Écrits du Christianisme*, Rieder, 1930) MM. COUCHOUD and ROBERT STAHL have searchingly elucidated the solution. See also 'The Making of Luke-Acts' by H. J. CADBURY (Mac.).

Little attention has been paid, but much is due, to 'The Web Unwoven, or, The *Dolus Theory* of the Book of Acts,' by W. GLANVILLE (Watts, 1900), an acute and independent inquiry; as are the addresses printed in 'The Book of the Acts of the Apostles: Is it History or Romance?' by JOHN CAMPBELL, B.A. (N.Z. 1910).

(b) A prominent phenomenon in Church history, the "Apostles' Creed," so called, is the subject of an extensive literature. The gist of the question may be ascertained from the essay of MICHEL NICOLAS, *Le Symbole des Apôtres* (1867), and HARNACK'S 'The Apostles' Creed' (E. tr. Black, 1901). There is also a trans. of Harnack's 'Sources of the Apostolic Canons' (same). See also H. B. SWETE, 'The Apostles' Creed: Its relation to primitive Christianity' (3rd ed. 1899).

(c) The "Diatessaron" or "Harmony of Four" [gospels] ascribed to the Syrian TATIAN (2nd century), but after him much redacted, is reproduced from a late Arabic MS. in the Vatican, in Eng. tr. by the Rev. Dr. J. H. HILL (Clark, 1894), as 'The Earliest Life of Christ.'

§ 9. (a) On the documentary problems of the Gospels and the Acts follows that of the Pauline Epistles, first effectively broached by F. C. BAUR (1845) in his 'Paul the Apostle of Jesus Christ' (E. tr. 2 v. W. & N. 1873-5). In his work 'Christianity and the Church in the First Three Centuries' (Ger. 1853; E. tr. W. & N. 2 v. 1878), Baur was the first to establish clearly (though Semler had long before indicated) the existence of a sharp conflict of Judaising and Paulinising sects in

the early Church, founding his theory on the data of the New Testament books, and working it out so as to explain these. (On the latter-day minimisation of this thesis, cp. 'Jesus and Judas.') Recent ecclesiastical scholarship is represented by Dr. A. H. MACNEILE's 'St. Paul: His Life, Letters, and Christian Doctrine' (C.U.P.). Of the Pauline discussion in general, a useful survey is presented in Dr. A. SCHWEITZER's 'Paul and his Interpreters: A Critical History' (E. tr. Black, 1912), which supplies bibliographies of the relevant (chiefly German) literature. Apart from the textual analysis, the most searching modern criticism is the 'Paul' of Dr. W. Wrede (E. tr. Ph. Green, 1907), which insists on the divergence of the Pauline from the Jesuine religion.

(b) All previous views have been radically challenged by the arguments of the Dutch school of VAN MANEN, who insist that, whereas Baur held four of the Pauline epistles to be unquestionably genuine, in reality not a single one is so. For these views see the article of Van Manen on Paul in vol. iii. of the *Encyc. Bib.* and the valuable compendium of Thomas Whittaker, 'The Origins of Christianity: With an Outline of Van Manen's Analysis of the Pauline Literature' (Watts, 2nd ed. 1914), which conjoins Van Manen's theorem with the myth theory (not held by him). In its full sweep, Van Manen's view of the Epistles has not been widely accepted; and the recent 'Critical Analysis of the Four Chief Pauline Epistles,' by L. GORDON RYLANDS (Watts, 1929), expounds a less destructive theory, in which Paul figures as an early Gnostic Christist, whose original letters have been partly embodied and overlaid in the N.T. More orthodox views of the subject are to be found in Dr. ANDERSON SCOTT's 'Christianity According to St. Paul' and W. L. KNOX's 'St. Paul and the Church of Jerusalem' (C.U.P.).

A further intensive and extensive study of the Paulines has been and is being carried on by French scholars, following up Loisy. Thus the series of new translations, with introductions and notes, of *Les Écrits de Saint-Paul* (I, *L'Épître aux Romains*; II and III, the *Épîtres aux Corinthiens*; IV, *L'Épître aux Philippiens*) by HENRI DELAFOSSE, now appearing, are all of high scholarly and critical value; as is Loisy's own *L'Épître aux Galates* (1916). The powerful critical movement thus indicated in contemporary France may be followed back through the record of ALBERT HOUTIN, *La Question Biblique au xxe Siècle* (Nourry, 1906).

"Henri Delafosse" is one of the pseudonyms used for a time by the inhibited priest JOSEPH TURMEL, before his expulsion from the Church; and that writer carries on, besides his translations and analyses of canonical and patristic books, and of Thomas Aquinas, such studies as *La Vierge Marie*, *La Messe*, *Catéchisme pour Adultes*

("par Louis Coulange"), besides having produced, with A. HOUTIN, a *Courte Histoire du célibat ecclésiastique* (all Rieder). His latest undertaking is a massive *Histoire des Dogmes*: I, *Le Péch  Original: La Rédemption* (1932, Rieder), a work of consummate ecclesiastical learning. *La Messe* is tr. by C. B. Bonner as 'The Evolution of the Mass' (Watts, 1930).

Following on "Delafosse," Prof. VAN EYSINGA has produced a criticism *L' p tre aux Galates* (rep. in *Prem.  crits du Christianisme*, 1930), which trenchantly argues for a Marcionite original, redacted for the Catholic Church.

  10. Another separate problem, bearing vitally on that of Christian origins, is presented by the Apocalypse, otherwise the 'Revelation of St. John the Divine.' In what may be termed the pre-scientific period, there was an immense literature of orthodox "interpretation" on the book which partly inspired the astrological myth-theory of Dupuis. Before the decisive connection of it with Babylonian zodiacal mythology (as to which see Course V,   9), a Judaic basis for the existing document was inferred in Germany, and, after being rejected by HARNACK, was by him accepted. Critical scholarship has long dissociated the book from the John of either the Fourth Gospel or the writer of the Johannine epistles; though clerical apologetics now dwells on its unity. The German scholar Dr. SPITTA in his *Streitfragen* studies argued for two Judaic hands and one Christian.

Fresh light was thrown on the problem by Prof. BOUSSER's 'The Antichrist Legend' (E. tr. Hut. 1896), with which may be compared the earlier *L'Ant christ* of Renan. A recent Unitarian critic, J. OMAN, in 'The Text of Revelation: A Revised Theory' (C.U.P.), has ably contended for a rearrangement of the text which will yield a new coherence. But the book belongs to the class of Jewish Apocalypses in general; and the recent study of Dr. COUCHOUD, *L'Apocalypse: Traduction nouvelle du po me avec introduction et notes* (Rieder, 1930: E. tr. by C. B. Bonner, Watts, 1931), claims to reveal its part in building up the early Christist movement before the age of the gospels. The "poem" form of the book is well presented in the translation.

  11. The most important of the modern documentary lights thrown on the beginnings of the Christian system is that supplied by the recovery of the ancient document, 'The Teaching of the Twelve Apostles,' found in 1873, and published in 1883. Of the 'Teaching' there are a number of English translations, with notes and comments. One by the Rev. A. Gordon is, or was, sold at the Essex Hall, London; price 1d. One by Canon Farrar appeared in the *Contemporary Review*, May, 1884. The text, translation, and critical apparatus are given in the American

edition of Profs. Hitchcock and Brown (1885), and the earlier discussions concerning the document will be found for the most part specified in that edition. A noteworthy edition, claiming to "restore the text to its original form," by C. H. HOOLE, appeared in 1894 (Nutt). A valuable edition, prepared by J. Rendel Harris (Clay, 1887), gives a facsimile of the MS. For a strictly orthodox view of the subject the student may consult 'The Church of the Sub-Apostolic Age' by the Rev. A. HERON (H. & S. 1888), who gives a translation, as does Canon SPENCE in his ed. of the text (Nisbet, 1885). On the other hand, the critical inference that the 'Teaching' in its first six paragraphs is a Judaic document was promptly maintained in England (without any reference to the Judaic Twelve Apostles) by Dr. C. TAYLOR, in two lectures, 'The Teaching of the Twelve Apostles: with Illustrations from the Talmud' (1886), and by Dr. SALMON in the Supplement to his 'Introduction to the Study of the Books of the New Testament'; and was later accepted by Harnack in 2nd ed. of *Die Apostellehre* (1896).

§ 12. In this investigation the student will frequently meet with references to the "Talmudic" Jesus. The Talmud passages in question are given by LARDNER in his 'Large Collection of Ancient Jewish and Heathen Testimonies,' ch. v (Works, ed. 1835, vi, 505 sq.), and in the Rev. S. BARING-GOULD's 'The Lost and Hostile Gospels' (1874). Later and fuller discussions are those of R. TRAVERS HERFORD, 'Christianity in Talmud and Midrash' (W. & N. 1905); H. LAIBLE, *Jesus Christus im Thalmud* (1900); S. KRAUSS, *Das Leben Jesu nach jüdischen Quellen* (1902); and E. BISCHOFF, *Jesus und die Rabbinen* (1905). The important question of the relation of primitive Jewish Christianity to Essenism should be studied in the light of Dr. C. D. GINSBURG's essay, 'The Essenes, their History and Doctrines' (Lmns.), in which are given ample references to the extensive literature of the subject. A competently scholarly discussion from the Christian point of view is that by Bishop LIGHTFOOT, reprinted in his 'Dissertations on the Apostolic Age' (Mac. 1892).

On another side, Jewish affiliations are set forth in 'The Jewish Antecedents of the Christian Sacraments,' by Dr. F. GAVIN (1928), described by the publishers, the S.P.C.K., as proving "that early Christian sacramentalism was a *natural growth* from Judaism." See also 'The Development of Sacramentalism' by J. W. C. WARD (1925). A lead on the same lines was given in 1884 by the Rev. F. H. REICHARDT's 'The Relation of the Jewish Christians to the Jews in the First and Second Centuries' (S. S. & Co.).

In the last decade of the 19th c. were made a number of recoveries of early evangelical and other documents, partly from

monasteries in the Near East, partly from exhumed Egyptian papyri, all of which were eagerly edited and discussed. 'The Newly Recovered Apology of Aristides: Its Doctrine and Ethics' by HELEN B. HARRIS (H. & S. 1891) gives selected passages; and J. R. HARRIS's 'Newly Recovered Gospel of St. Peter' is a popular account (same, 1893) of that fragment, with trans. Later came the Egyptian find, the *Logia Iesou*, described as 'Sayings of Our Lord' in the ed. with notes by B. P. GRENFELL and A. S. HUNT (Frowde, 1897). Among more recent studies are 'Egyptian Papyri and Papyrus-Hunting' by J. BAIKIE (R.T.S. 1925); and ch. v of 'Christianity in the Light of Modern Knowledge,' by Dr. G. MILLIGAN.

A further discussion of 'The Oxyrhynchus Logia and the Apocryphal Gospels' was published in 1899 by Dr. CHARLES TAYLOR (Cl. Pr.); and 'New Sayings of Jesus and the Fragment of a Lost Gospel from Oxyrhynchus' by Messrs. Grenfell and Hunt in 1904 (Cl. Pr.). HARNACK had discussed the first ed. in his tract *Ueber den jüngst entdeckten Sprüche Jesu* (1897) and in 'The Sayings of Jesus' (E. tr. C.T.L.); and ADOLF DEISSMANN in popular lectures, 'New Light on the New Testament from Records of the Græco-Roman Period' (E. tr. Clark, 1907) and 'Light from the Ancient East' (E. tr. H. & S. 1927).

§ 13. (a) The earlier historical as distinct from the religious documents—the ecclesiastical histories of EUSEBIUS, SOKRATES, SOZOMEN, THEODORET, and EVAGRIUS—are available in B.L. translations, which may be studied with Gibbon's chapters. A main part of the history of the Church in that era is the immense growth of heresies, which are noted in detail in the more exact histories, such as MOSHEIM's (18th c.) 'Institutes of Ecclesiastical History' (best tr. Murdock's, ed. by Reid in 1 vol. with many notes, o.p.). More massively learned is HILGENFELD's *Die Ketzergeschichte des Urchristenthums* (1884: not tr.). An exact guide to the documents is furnished by GIESELER's 'Compendium of Ecclesiastical History' (E. tr. Clark, 4 v.), of which the first volume covers the period of formation of the Church. For all periods it is worth while to consult NEANDER's 'General History of the Christian Religion and Church' (E. tr. B.L. 9 v., also Clark); but a greater critical and philosophic power is brought to bear throughout the five volumes of the *Kirchengeschichte* of F. C. BAUR (1853-62). Archdeacon CHEETHAM's 'History of the Christian Church during the First Six Centuries' (Mac. 1894) is a compendious work, of competent learning, orthodox in standpoint.

(b) In addition to ecclesiastical histories proper there are a number of compilations on the history of Christian dogmas in

general and of particular beliefs. BINGHAM's old work, 'Christian Antiquities' (best ed. 8 v. 1855; also rep. in 1 large vol., 1856) is a mine of learning. HAGENBACH's 'History of Doctrines' (E. tr. Clark) and SCHAFF's 'History of the Creeds' (H. & S. 3 v. 1877-8) and 'History of the Christian Church' (12 v. Clark), Prof. KURTZ's 'Handbook of Church History' (E. tr. Clark), are standard compilations; and among later works may be mentioned HARNACK's rugged 'Outlines of the History of Dogma,' ruggedly translated by Prof. E. Knox Mitchell (H. & S. 1893), and the same writer's voluminous 'History of Dogma' (E. tr. 7 v. 1894-99, W. & N.).

In addition to the clerical histories there is a brilliant rationalistic 'Short History of Christianity' by SALOMON REINACH (Hei.), which expands the sections on the subject in his 'Orpheus.' [The present editor has attempted, in 'A Short History of Christianity' (3rd ed. Watts, 1931), to trace from the first the economic determination of the historic process, usually ignored in academic histories. The student may do well to note that when academic writers discuss, say, the failure of Mithraism to survive, they invariably assume that its defect of popular "appeal" is the sole explanation, never positing the fact that the Christian Church, *copying Jewish example*, established a popular economic organisation (which Mithraism did not), and thereby survived. We get, on the contrary, the untrue generalisation that it is the persecuted creeds that survive. This is obviously false as to Manichæism, and the Christian Church in the lands in which Islam conquered.]

(c) Of various value are the Rev. T. G. CRIPPEN's 'Popular Introduction to the History of Christian Doctrine' (Clark); Prof. W. G. T. SHEDD's 'History of Christian Doctrine' (same); PFLEIDERER's 'Paulinism' (W. & N. 2 vols.); BAUR's *Die christliche Lehre von der Versöhnung* (1838); DORNER's huge 'History of the Development of the Doctrine of the Person of Christ,' in 5 v. (Clark); A. RÉVILLE's shorter treatise on the same subject; and RAEBIGER's useful 'Encyclopædia of Theology' (same; 2 v.), which is not of the order of the larger encyclopædias previously named.

§ 14. The three chief *organised* heresies of the early church, from the 2nd c. onwards, were those associated with the names of MARCION (properly Markion), MONTANUS, and MANICHÆUS. The first named is the most certainly historical, and his influence has latterly received special attention. There is a good summary of Marcionism in CASSELS' 'Supernatural Religion,' Pt. II, ch. vii; a sympathetic survey in Prof. BURKITT's 'The Gospel History and its Transmission,' Lect. ix; another in Canon

FOAKES-JACKSON's Hulsean Lectures on 'Christian Difficulties of the Second and Twentieth Centuries' (Arnold, 1903), which charges Marcionite Docetism on the modern Neo-Unitarian school. See also HARNACK's art. in *Encyc. Brit.* Specially important is the recent theory of HERMANN RASCHKE, *Die Werkstatt des Markus-evangelium* (Jena, 1924), which develops the suggestion that the old 'Gospel of Marcion,' denounced by the Fathers as spurious, is the main basis of the Gospel of Mark (cp. 'Jesus and Judas,' Watts, 1927).

The prevailing critical view in the last century had been that our Gospel of *Luke* was the adapted orthodox version of the Gospel of Marcion; and the problem may be usefully studied in the light of the vivacious argumentation of P. C. SENSE, 'A Critical and Historical Enquiry into the Origin of the Third Gospel' (W. & N. 1901), which deals much with Marcion, and that sympathetically. A yet further stage in the inquiry into 'Mark' is the last work of Prof. DREWS, *Das Markus Evangelium* (Jena, 1928), which sets forth the essentially symbolistic structure of the book.

On Montanus see J. de SOYRES' scholarly Hulsean essay (Bell, 1888); and on Manichæism Prof. F. C. BURKITT's Donnellan Lectures of 1924, 'The Religion of the Manichees' (C.U.P.). The *Histoire Critique de Manichée et du Manichéisme* of BEAUSOBRE (1734-9) is still worth consulting; as is the treatise of BAUR, *Das Manichäische Religionssystem* (1831). On this topic innovating views are put forward in 'Pagan Christs,' Pt. II, ch. ii.

§ 15. Of outstanding importance is the mass of various unorganised heresy known as Gnosticism, of which Mosheim gives an outline. On that field may be consulted the *Histoire Critique du Gnosticisme* of M. MATTER (2nd ed. 3 t. 1843-4); or the massive work of F. C. BAUR, *Die christliche Gnosis* (1835); and, on the orthodox side, Dean MANSEL's 'Gnostic Heresies of the First and Second Centuries' (1875); which should be checked by the Rev. C. KING's discursive research, 'The Gnostics and their Remains' (2nd ed. 1887). In this connection may be considered also the theosophical works of the Christian Neoplatonist known as Hermes Trismegistus (tr. by J. D. Chambers; Clark, 1882). The chief Christian documents as to the heresies are the writings of IRENÆUS and HIPPOLYTUS (Ante-Nicene Lib.) and the early Church historians. In connection with these may be studied, in addition to any of the general histories, the essay of BARTHÉLEMY DE SAINT HILAIRE, *De l'École d'Alexandrie* (1845); and the later *Essai sur le gnosticisme égyptien*, by M. AMÉLINEAU, in the *Annales du Musée Guimet*, T. xiv. An interesting docu-

ment is trans. by Dr. G. R. S. MEAD in 'The Pistis Sophia: A Gnostic Gospel' (1896); and others in his 'Fragments of a Faith Forgotten' (1906: both Th.P.S.).

That Gnosticism is really older than Christianity itself may be further gathered from a study of the Jewish **Kabbalah** (Course VII, § 8). That Gnosticism existed in connection with Judaism has been admitted by Bishop LIGHTFOOT in his edition of the Epistle to the Colossians (Mac.), and is now generally recognised. The question had been long before handled by H. GRAETZ in the treatise, *Gnosticismus und Judenthum* (1846). Later investigations on the subject are those of ANZ, *Zur Frage nach dem Ursprung des Gnosticismus* (Leip. 1903). This inquiry leads to a theory of a Gentile or anti-Judaic Christism before Jesus (see above, § 7, and Course VII, § 7).

§ 16. The study of the history of doctrines and sects involves an examination in especial of the proceedings of the Councils of the Church. A standard work on the subject is Bishop HEFELE'S 'History of the Councils of the Church' (E. tr. Clark, 5 v. 1871-96); and there is a useful alphabetical compendium, 'A Manual of Councils of the Holy Catholic Church,' by the Rev. E. H. LANDON (rev. ed. 2 v. repub. Edinb. 1909). Perhaps the most searching and learned study of the main bearings of the subject in a short space is the German work of "Janus" (DÖLLINGER) on 'The Pope and the Councils' (E. tr. 1869; exp. Ger. ed. *Das Papstthum*, by J. FRIEDRICH, 1892), written in the interests of liberal or "old" Catholicism against the modern ultramontane movement. A good historical conspectus is supplied in Mr. J. McCABE'S 'The Popes and their Church: A Candid Account' (Watts, 1918).

§ 17. The scrupulous student will examine the numerous "Apocryphal Gospels," that is, those excluded from the Canon, which are collected and competently translated in vol. xvi of the "Ante-Nicene Lib." (Clark); also in 'The Apocryphal New Testament, being the Gospels, Acts, Epistles, and Apocalypses,' tr. by MONTAGUE RHODES JAMES (Cl. Pr. 1924). There is also a trans. of the 'Coptic Apocryphal Gospels' by F. Robinson (C.U.P.). The 'Apostolic Fathers' specially so styled are tr. in vol. i of the A.-N. Lib. Special attention is due to the old work of E. B. NICHOLSON, 'The Gospel according to the Hebrews' (1879).

Of the pre-Christian Judaic books which connect with Christian beginnings, none is more important than the apocalyptic 'Book of Enoch' (best tr. with introd. by Archdeacon CHARLES; Cl. Pr. 1893); and the latterly discovered 'Book of the Secrets of Enoch' (tr. by W. R. Morfill; ed. by Dr. Charles; Cl. Pr. 1896), otherwise known as 'The Slavonic Enoch,' from being preserved solely

in a Slavonic translation. In the compact manual 'Religious Development between the Old and New Testaments' (H.U.L. 1914) Dr. CHARLES gives a good survey of the whole literature. On Jewish and Christian Eschatology in general, the same excellent scholar has published 'A Critical History of the Doctrine of a Future Life, in Israel, in Judaism, and in Christianity' (Jowett Lect. Black, 1899); with which may be compared the older and more discursive work of W. R. ALGER, 'The Destiny of the Soul: A History of the Doctrine of a Future Life' (10th ed. N.Y. 1878), which covers other religions; and the smaller 'Eschatology of the Gospels' by Prof. E. von DOBSCHÜTZ (H. & S. 1910), which is orthodox. Both may be compared with the Hulsean Essay of E. C. DEWICK (1908), 'Primitive Christian Eschatology' (C.U.P.); and the Rev. W. O. E. OESTERLEY'S 'The Doctrine of the Last Things, Jewish and Christian' (Mur.).

In 'The Apology and Acts of Apollonius and Other Monuments of Early Christianity,' ed. by Dr. F. C. CONYBEARE (Son. 1894), there are eleven "Acts" stories, including the 'Acts of Paul and Thekla,' all trans. from the Armenian, and edited with scholarly introductions.

§ 18. Apart from the problem of the gospel story, there have long subsisted the debates (a) between Unitarians and Trinitarians as to the earliness or lateness of the doctrine of the Trinity; and (b) between Protestants and Catholics as to the ancient adoption of pagan rites and ideas. On the latter point, MIDDLETON'S once famous 'Free Inquiry,' concerning miracles in the early Church, is still instructive, as are the old (English) works, 'Roma Antiqua et Recens' (rep. 1889) and the 'Pagano-Papismus' of J. STOPFORD (1675, rep. 1844); and there have been later and less scholarly polemics. But the German research, *Das Fortleben des Heidentums in der altchristlichen Kirche*, by W. SOLTAU (Berlin, 1906), meets critical tests.

The pagan derivation of the doctrine of the Trinity seems latterly, apart from à priori views on Incarnation, to be almost uncontested on the Anglican side, in view of the evidence from Comparative Hierology. The case is adequately summed up in 'The Origin of Triads and Trinities: A Contribution to the History of Religious Beliefs,' by Dr. JOHN NEWTON (Liverpool, 1909). There is much learning in the old trinitarian work of Dr. CÆSAR MORGAN, 'An Investigation of the Trinity of Plato and of Philo Judæus' (1853). The matter is sociologically investigated in ch. vi of *Des religions comparées au point de vue sociologique*, by RAOUL DE LA GRASSERIE (1890).

On the subject of pagan infiltration in early Christianity there have been some interesting orthodox but scholarly researches

by J. RENDEL HARRIS: 'The Dioscuri in the Christian Legends' (1903: C.U.P.); 'The Cult of the Heavenly Twins' (same); 'Boanerges' (same); and the same scholar has edited the 'Odes and Psalms of Solomon' and the 'Teaching of the Twelve Apostles' (same). One side of Pagan philosophy is dealt with in the work of A. D. Nock, 'Sallustius: Concerning the Gods and the Universe' (C.U.P.).

The works of the Emperor Julian (comp. tr. in French, by E. Talbot, 1863; chief theosophic works in B.L. trans.; writings "Against the Christians" in 'Julian's Arguments,' rep. and ed. by W. NEVINS, 1873) are important in this regard. The monograph 'Julian' of ALICE GARDNER (Put. 1901) is scholarly and fair. NEANDER's old monograph on 'The Emperor Julian and his Generation' (E. tr. 1850) has still some critical value alongside of those of Dr. J. F. A. MÜCKE, *Flavius Claudius Julianus*: II. Abth. *Julian's Leben und Schriften* (1869); H. ADRIEN NAVILLE, *Julien L'Apostat* (1877); and the Rev. G. H. RENDALL's 'The Emperor Julian: Paganism and Christianity' (Huls. Essay, 1879). The brochure of PAUL KRÜGER, *Hellenismus und Judentum in neutestamentlicher Zeitalter* (Leip. 1908), is worth perusal.

§ 19. On the later Fathers, besides W. BRIGHT's 'The Age of the Fathers' (Lmns. 2 v. 1903) there are many monographs, more or less illuminating:—Dr. J. F. BETHUNE-BAKER, 'Nestorius and his Teaching,' and Dr. Fr. Loofs, 'Nestorius and his Place in Christian Doctrine' (E. tr.; both C.U.P.); W. K. L. Clarke, 'St. Basil the Great'; ULLMANN's 'Gregory of Nazianzum,' (E. tr. 1851); Rev. W. R. STEPHENS's 'Life and Times of St. Chrysostom: St. Chrysostom's Picture of his Age' (S.P.C.K.); 'Synesius of Cyrene' (same); the Hulsean Essay of 1886 on Synesius by J. C. NICOLL (1887); and 'Synesius the Hellene' by W. S. CRAWFORD (Riv. 1901). 'St. Ambrose: His Life, Times, and Teachings,' and other vols. of "The Fathers for English Readers" (S.P.C.K.) have interest.

Of a more important order is the comprehensive study of Prof. RENÉ PICHON, *Lactance: Étude sur le mouvement philosophique et religieux sous le règne de Constantin* (Hachette, 1901). Mr. J. McCabe has contributed a monograph on St. Augustine (Duck. 1902); and there is an orthodox one in the S.P.C.K. series. Older studies, of interest, are AMÉDÉE THIERRY's *Saint Jerome: La société chrétienne en Occident* (2e éd. 1875) and *Saint Jean Chrysostome et l'impératrice Eudoxie: La société chrétienne en Orient*.

§ 20. The study of the Christian Church as an organised institution from the 2nd c. onwards is a further stage, reflecting light on the past.

(a) As a beginning, the student would still do well to read the chapters on Christian beginnings in the earlier volumes of **Gibbon's** '**Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire**'—that is, in particular chs. xv, xvi (R.P.A. sep. rep. Watts), xx, xxi, and xxviii. The historical chapters in the latter part of **RENAN's** '**The Apostles**,' '**Paul**' and the later vols. of his series, have considerable value; and on the economic side there is argument and information in the work of **G. SOREL**, *La ruine du monde antique* (1901). The '**Studies in Roman History**' of **Dr. E. G. HARDY** (Son. 1906) are exact and impartial; and the work of **B. AUBÉ**, *Les Chrétiens dans l'empire romain*, has scholarly merit. A standard ecclesiastical work of the last decade is '**A Short History of the Church to A.D. 461**,' by **B. J. KIDD** (3 v. Cl. Pr. 1922).

(b) The two chief works of the late **EDWIN HATCH**, D.D.—the Bampton Lectures for 1880 on '**The Organisation of the Early Christian Churches**' (Riv. 3rd ed. 1888) and the Hibbert Lectures for 1888 (1890) on '**The Influence of Greek Ideas and Usages upon the Christian Church**'—constitute the greatest service rendered by an English Churchman to the elucidation of Church origins. With these may be compared '**The Expansion of Christianity in the first Three Centuries**' by **ADOLF HARNACK** (E. tr. 2 v. W. & N. 1904-5).

(c) A critical view of the comparative moral and intellectual merits of the old and the new religions is given in **J. A. Farrer's** '**Paganism and Christianity**' (1891: R.P.A. rep. Watts); and again in **J. McCabe's** '**The Sources of the Morality of the Gospels**' (Watts, 1914). Of great interest in this connection is **T. WHITTAKER's** '**Apollonius of Tyana and other Essays**' (Son. 1906), one of the other essays being on the important topic of '**Celsus and Origen**.' There is a pro-Christian but scholarly study, '**Stoics and Christians in the Second Century**,' by **L. ALSTON** (Lmns. 1906), which should be checked by the '**Marcus Aurelius**' of **RENAN** (E. tr. 1890). The excellent work of **Prof. H. R. WILLOUGHBY**, on '**Pagan Regeneration**' (Course VI, § 13), should be noted at this point, with other works named in the same Course (§ 12). On the orthodox side see **S. ANGUS**, '**The Mystery Religions and Christianity**' (Mur. 1925).

As to the historic process of the suppression of paganism, see **Prof. V. SCHULTZE's** *Untergang des Griechisch-Römischen Heidenthums* (1887-92); **J. G. W. UHLHORN's** '**Conflict of Christianity with Heathenism**' (E. tr. Low, 1879: also Clark) and the liberal and interesting work of **G. BOISSIER**, *La Fin du Paganisme* (2 v. 2nd ed. 1894), which has literary and scholarly merit. For a comprehensive rationalistic view of the elements of previous Greek thought and religion which entered into the Christian system

the student may turn to *Le Christianisme et ses Origines*, by ERNEST HAVET (4 t. 1872-84); and for orthodox admissions as to other pre-Christian elements involved, to the essay of Prof. GUNKEL, *Zum religionsgeschichtlichen Verständnis des neuen Testaments* (Gött. 1903), and that of Prof. Bousset, mentioned in § 3b. The work of Dean CHEETHAM on 'The Mysteries, Pagan and Christian' (Mac. 1897) recognises some imitation of pagan practice, but offers orthodox explanations; as does the French work of Prof. E. BARNARD ALLO, O.P., *L'Évangile en face du syncrétisme païen* (Blond, 1910).

§ 21. The historic survey by Dr. E. G. SIHLER, 'From Augustus to Augustine' (C.U.P.), is a competent one. W. E. ADDIS has produced a fairly broad-minded manual in his 'Christianity and the Roman Empire' (1893); as has Prof. JAMES ORR in his 'The Early Church: Its History and Literature' (H. & S. 1901); and Dean SPENCE's 'Early Christianity and Paganism' (Cas. 1902) is an accepted orthodox history. On the orthodox side, weight is also attached to Prof. W. M. RAMSAY's lectures on 'The Church in the Roman Empire before 170 A.D.' (7th ed. 1903; H. & S.), and his 'St. Paul the Traveller and Roman Citizen' (3rd ed. 1897, same), which embody much learning.

One of the most searching investigations made in modern times into the various aspects of the early Church is that in the *Études d'histoire religieuse* of P. HOCHART (Paris, 1890), wherein the significance of many terms and institutions is newly considered. The same author's *Études au sujet de la persécution des chrétiens sous Néron* (1885) is also specially deserving of attention.

§ 22. As regards the general development of the Church, MILMAN's 'History of Latin Christianity' (Mur. 9 v.), his most enduring work, retains standard value, but may be checked by other surveys, as, 'The Evolution of Latin Christianity' by Dr. JAMES HERON (Clarke, 1919). Much valuable information is collected in the admirably learned works of H. C. LEA, named in Course IV, §§ 5, 7 and in his 'Superstition and Force,' essays on ordeals and wagers (Philadelphia, 3rd ed. 1877); and 'Studies in Church History,' dealing with the temporal power of the papacy, benefit of clergy, and excommunication (1869). Other monographs of interest are those of L. DESANCTIS on 'Confession' (E. tr. 1878); 'The Patrimony of the Roman Church in the time of Gregory the Great,' by E. SPEARING (C.U.P.); 'Paganism and Christianity in Egypt,' by P. D. SCOTT-MONCRIEFF (C.U.P.); the Rev. H. W. CLARKE's 'History of Tithes' (Son. 1891); Dr. J. R. BEARD's 'Autobiography of Satan' (1872), which gives a vivacious survey of

many phases of ancient and modern Christian superstition; the shorter book of A. RÉVILLE on the same subject, *Histoire du Diable* (tr. under title 'The Devil, his Greatness and Decadence' 1870); and the other works on that theme mentioned in Course V, § 14. The recent 'History of the Devil' by the learned French ex-priest, JOSEPH TURMEL (E. tr. Knopf, 1931), deals specially with the Judæo-Christian development of the doctrine.

The Rev. R. P. BLAKENEY's old volume on 'St. Alphonsus Liguori' (1852) deals with the ethics and practice of Catholic confession; and the learned old work of R. W. MACKAY, 'A Sketch of the Rise and Progress of Christianity' (1854), starting from a rationalistic view of a historical Jesus, traces the fortunes of the Church and its doctrines down to the 15th c. WRIGHT's 'St. Patrick's Purgatory' is 'An essay on the legends of Purgatory, Hell, and Paradise, current during the Middle Ages' (1844). Also of separate interest are Dr. HESSEY's Bampton Lectures for 1860 on 'Sunday' (4th ed. 1880) and HARNACK's 'Monasticism: its ideals and history' (E. tr. W. & N. 1901). (See also Course IV, § 5.) 'The Censorship of the Church of Rome' by Dr. G. H. PUTNAM (Put. 2 v. 1906-7) is a historical study of great interest.

An interesting and exactly detailed account of the special development of modern sect-doctrines within the area of the Orthodox (Greek) Church in Russia is given in the work of "STEPNIAK," 'The Russian Peasantry, their . . . Social Life and Religion' (rep. Rout. 1905).

§ 23. Of formal or dogmatic theology, apart from religious history, the literature is enormous; and it is not here proposed to offer elaborate guidance to its study. Those, however, who wish to refer to a standard modern treatise on systematic Christian doctrine may consult MARTENSEN's 'Christian Dogmatics' (Clark, 1886); or the 'Introduction to Dogmatic Theology on the Basis of the XXXIX Articles of the Church of England,' by E. A. LITTON (2nd ed. with Introd. by Dr. Wace: Stock, 1902). The 'Introduction to the Study of Theology,' by Principal DRUMMOND (Mac. 1884), represents the position of scholarly Unitarianism; and the late Archdeacon FARRAR's 'History of Interpretation' (Mac. 1886) is or was favourably regarded by liberal Churchmen. A general view of modern developments in Germany was given in Dr. FAUT's *Die Christologie seit Schleiermacher* (1907). One of the productions of 'Neo-Christianity' is the essay of Prof. ADOLF HARNACK, *Das Wesen des Christentums*, trans. as 'What is Christianity?' (W. & N. 1901), to which there have been many rejoinders, notably that of LOISY, *L'Évangile et l'Église* (1903). W. A. BUTLER's 'Christian Thought: A

Grammar of Interpretation' (S.P.C.K. 1929) is the recent form preferred for dogmatics.

The literature of Apologetics or "Christian Evidence" becomes so rapidly superannuated, and is, like that of dogmatics, so vast in amount, that it is impossible to offer any general guidance to it. But mention may be made of Bishop HEADLAM's 'The Miracles of the N.T.' (Mur. 1923), which represents the scholarly clerical attitude, and the 'Apologetics' of the late Prof. BRUCE (who in his article on 'Jesus' in the *Encyc. Biblica* reached a Unitarian position), as having won high praise in ecclesiastical quarters. The same may be said of the 'First Primer of Apologetics' of the Rev. ROBERT MACKINTOSH (Stock, 1900); though this writer does not seem to have realised the nature of the opposition he had latterly to meet.

Within the present century the pressures of criticism have given rise in England and elsewhere to the clerical movement of 'Modernism,' as to which see 'Modernity and the Churches,' by Dr. PERCY GARDNER (C.T.L. 1909), 'The Way of Modernism, and Other Essays,' by Prof. J. F. BETHUNE-BAKER (C.U.P. 1927), and J. A. FAULKNER's 'Modernism and the Christian Faith' (A. & U. 1921). 'Documents of Christian Unity (1920-4)' ed. by G. K. A. BELL (O.U.P. 1924) indicates the modern movement towards reunion. Cognate works are the 'Liberal Christianity' of JEAN REVILLE and 'Anglican Liberalism, by Twelve Churchmen' (both C.T.L.). On the Catholic side are to be noted the writings of Father GEORGE TYRRELL, 'A Much-Abused Letter' and 'Medievalism: A Reply to Cardinal Mercier' (Lmns. 1906, 1908); and, for an earlier stage of the Anglican Anti-Catholic reaction, the 'Philomythus: An Antidote against Credulity' of Dr. E. A. ABBOTT (2nd ed. Mac. 1891), which is 'A Discussion of Cardinal Newman's Essay on Ecclesiastical Miracles.' 'The History of Christianity in the Light of Modern Knowledge' (Blackie, 1929) is 'A Collective Work' on "liberal" if sentimental lines.

The 'History of N.T. Criticism' is compendiously presented by F. C. CONYBEARE (Watts, 1910), and more diffusely and rhetorically, on neo-Christian lines, in the 'History of the Higher Criticism of the N.T.' by Prof. H. S. NASH (Mac. N.Y. 1906).

§ 24. In addition to the special treatises of rationalistic research, the following may be named as representative in English:— 'Footsteps of the Past,' by J. M. WHEELER (rep. P.P. 1932); 'The Messianic Idea,' by CHILPERIC EDWARDS (Watts, 1927); 'What are We to Believe?' by C. R. A. (Watts, 1913); *Zwei gekrönte Freidenker* [Frederick and Akbar] by LUDWIG BÜCHNER (1890); 'Shaken Creeds': (1) 'The Virgin Birth Doctrine: A Study of its Origin,' (2) 'The Resurrection Doctrines,' both by

JOCELYN REYS (Watts, 1922-24); 'The New Testament' by F. J. GOULD (Watts, 1914), and the same writer's 'Common-Sense Thoughts on a Life Beyond' (1919); 'Through Agnostic Spectacles' by ALEX KADISON (N.Y. Truth Seeker Co. 1919); 'Christianising the Heathen: First-Hand Evidence concerning Overseas Missions, Reported upon by HYPATIA BRADLAUGH BONNER' (Watts, 1922); and Mrs. Bonner's 'Penalties on Opinion' (1912), 'The Christian Hell' (Watts, 1913; 28 illustr.) and 'Christianity and Conduct' (Watts, 1919); 'The Truth about Jesus of Nazareth,' by PHILIP SIDNEY (1904); '**Christianity and Civilisation,**' by C. T. GORHAM (Watts, 1914); 'The Belief in Personal Immortality' by E. S. P. HAYNES (same, 1913); '**A Generation of Religious Progress,**' by Sir H. H. JOHNSTON, W. ARCHER, and six other authors (1913); 'Religious Toleration in England,' by Prof. H. J. LASKI; the before-mentioned work of PHILIP VIVIAN, 'The Churches and Modern Thought'; J. MCCABE's 'The Decay of the Church of Rome' (Met. 1909); and 'Romanism and Truth' by G. G. COULTON (Faith Pr. 2 v. 1931), which exposes many historical perversions.

§ 25. The ethical element in the general debate is represented on both sides, (a) by the general but silent withdrawal of scholarly and philosophic support from the sacrificial and sacramental concepts which lie at the root of historical Christianity, and the substitution of a social for a sacramental appeal; and (b) by the counterplay of the social ethic against the specifically religious. This has been involved alike in scientific and literary thought. In 'English Literature and Religion, 1800-1900,' by E. MORTIMER CHAPMAN (U.S. and Con. 1910), a literary survey of the century from a partly liberal standpoint, there is no indication of the far-reaching effect of new anthropological science in respect of the dogma of blood-sacrifice and blood-redemption. Academic ethical literature has in general been equally neutral to the evangelical position. The ethic of that is evaded in 'Christianity in the Light of Modern Knowledge,' as is the ethic of prayer.

Yet the declaration of JAMES MARTINEAU at the close of his treatise, 'The Seat of Authority in Religion' (Lmns. 1890), is a solemn indictment and repudiation of the fundamental ethic of the historical and current Christian creed, alike in theory and in practice. There has been no rebuttal from the side of orthodoxy, though 'Lux Mundi,' in which "the decay of Christian Churches" is avowed, assails on logical grounds his Unitarian Theism. The 'Religion and the Commonweal' of Prof. H. M. DIAMOND of Lehigh Univ. (Harp. 1928), giving 'An Analysis of the Social Economy of Religion,' ends on an opportunist note, and excludes the question of truth.

§ 26. The re-translation of the N.T. has been undertaken by a number of writers within the past three generations, chiefly in England (WEIZSÄCKER in Germany) with a view either to closer accuracy of interpretation or to a use of modern instead of Tudor diction. That of Dr. MOFFAT (T. & T. Clark), which arranges the books in a revised chronological order, is the latest. The wilful infidelities of the A.V. and R.V. (as in writing "servant" for "slave," R.V. inserting "bond-servant" in the margin) justify such attempts. SAMUEL SHARPE, the Unitarian scholar, making a new version (1840: 6th ed. 1870, rev.) from Griesbach's text, sought veracity up to his lights; faithfully translated *douloi* "slaves"; and in Jn. i. 3, made the Logos "it" where A.V. and R.V. read "him." But at 1 Cor. vii. 21, where the Greek words ambiguously rendered (R.V.): "but if thou canst become free, *use it rather*" really mean (as the R.V. marg. gloss. hints) "even if thou canst become free, rather remain a slave," Sharpe retains the V. and A.V. equivocation.

The learned Thomas Young, who like Sharpe translated the whole Bible (rep. 1863), did the same, and made little change in the N.T. as compared with his handling of the O.T., in which he gave effect to the cadenced forms of the poetic books.

The later N.T. version of Dr. R. F. WEYMOUTH, rev. by E. HAMPDEN-COOKE (Clarke & Co. 1906), is no better at this point, and, being an attempt to produce an entirely modern English book, is really a denaturalisation of the original. This holds of the French revisions of D. MARTIN (1820) and MONZIE-LASSERRE (1886), which retain Christian perversions while seeking to appeal by a modernised and popularised style, but have no great critical value. The remarkable version by the Rev. W. B. CRICKMER (Stock, 1881), 'The Greek Testament Englished. Annotated,' is an enthusiastic attempt to turn what has been called the "dog-Greek" of the original into a "dog-English" that defies all idiom, thus producing an absolute "literalness" which is unparalleled in literature, but in its way oddly suggestive.

The student who does not habitually read the Greek or the Vulgate may find light in the scholarly French version of LOISY (Nourry, 1922), though the exegete chooses to place Mark before Matthew, giving his reasons, and retains the French-English convention of *serviteurs* for "slaves." He places the Epistles first, though admitting much of their matter to be late, but he is faithful in such a passage as 1 Cor. vii. 21. The chief merit of his version is its recognition of the clause-cadences or *cursus* of the originals—a phenomenon now being generally recognised by the advanced scholars of the Continent. (In 'Christianity in the Light of Modern Knowledge' "rhythms" are once grudgingly

discussed, but are not mentioned in the index.) But the later versions that are being made by the school of Turmel and COUCHOUD (see §§ 7-9) are the most faithful of all.

Some individual English translations of N.T. books, as that of the fourth gospel by F. A. PALEY (Son. 1887), have special merit (e.g. Jn. i. 3); and there are doubtless improvements in some of the many separate annotated editions: a complete scientific translation of the whole N.T., however, does not yet exist. In the churches, what is wanted is not an accurate but an archaically æsthetic rendering, with the stately charm and solemnity of Tudor diction.

§ 27. In "Christology" as in Hierology, the post-war movement of German thought may be taken as revealing the main tendencies of the period. The rhapsodic or "alogical" movement (Course VI, § 23), on the one hand, undertakes to create a Neo-Christianity in terms of emotional states which claim to transcend historical criticism as normally understood; and this movement is by some clerical groups in England, as in Germany, acclaimed as preponderating, or deserving to be so. But in the light of Evolution all competing movements are struggles for survival, and that which in the mental life seeks to impose itself emotionally has to reckon with the self-maintaining thought which bases itself on the method of science.

There goes on, accordingly, alongside of the Neo-Transcendentalist movement, a steady activity of the "religious-historical" school, represented academically (as apart from DREWS), by specialists who, like W. BOUSSET in his *Kyrios Christos* (1913) and JOHANNES WEISS, evaded direct contact with the myth problem by concentrating on that of the "early Christian mind," as did Milman ninety years ago. The posthumous *Das Urchristentum* of J. WEISS (ed. by R. KNOPF, 1917) was a representative result. But with this method connects the "form-criticism," which may be described in English as the scientifically bibliographical, and an outstanding result is the *Jesus* and the *Geschichte der synoptischen Tradition* of BULTMANN (above, § 6), which stand for the continuation of scientific criticism.

COURSE IX

PHILOSOPHY

(THEORIES OF EXISTENCE AND OF KNOWLEDGE)

[Many of the works mentioned under this heading cover the philosophy of conduct as well as that of knowledge; but the former is separately dealt with below, as is Psychology.]

§ 1. By common consent, the best way of making the study of philosophy is through a general historic survey, inasmuch as its problems are always fundamentally the same, as passed on from Religion. The '**History of Ancient Philosophy**' and '**History of Modern Philosophy**' (Watts), by the late A. W. Benn, thus serve as a competent introduction, by a close student of both. A. S. RAPPOPORT's small '**Primer of Philosophy**' (Mur.) yields a good conspectus; and '**Problems of Philosophy: An Introductory Survey**,' by Prof. G. W. CUNNINGHAM of Texas, with pref. by Lord Haldane (Har.) has that value on a larger scale. There is a '**Short History of Philosophy**,' by A. B. D. ALEXANDER (MacI. 3rd ed. 1922); and '**An Outline of Philosophy**' by the Hon. B. Russell (A. & U. 1927). The '**Introduction to Philosophy**' by G. S. FULLERTON (Mac.) is another thoughtful work, with which may be bracketed the '**Introduction**' of Dr. W. JERUSALEM (E. tr. Mac.); that of J. H. RYAN (Mac.); that of E. S. BRIGHTMAN (Cape, 1925); and the '**History of European Philosophy**' by W. T. MARTIN, avowedly '**An Introductory Book**' (Mac.). The Manuals of Dr. A. K. ROGERS, '**A Brief Introduction to Modern Philosophy**,' and '**A Student's History of Modern Philosophy**' (same); and Prof. F. THILLY's '**History of Philosophy**' (Bell) are also judicial works; and G. DE RUGGIERO's '**Modern Philosophy**' (E. tr. A. & U.) has value in its breadth of view. Also there is a '**History of the Problems of Philosophy**' by PAUL JANET and G. SEAILLES (E. tr. Mac. 2 v.). '**The Essentials of Eastern Philosophy**,' again, are set forth by Prof. J. S. SHASTRI (Mac.).

§ 2. On a larger scale, UEBERWEG's '**HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY FROM THALES TO THE PRESENT TIME**' is an exact and competent performance, giving abundant

references; ERDMANN'S 'HISTORY OF PHILOSOPHY' (E. tr. 3 v. A. & U.) is specially valuable for its critical exposition, and the 'History of Philosophy, with especial reference to the Formation and Development of its Problems and Conceptions' by Dr. W. WINDELBAND (E. tr. Mac.) has similar merit. Of great service, though unequal in execution, is the 'Dictionary of Philosophy and Psychology' edited by J. M. BALDWIN (rev. ed. 2 v. Mac.).

§ 3. European Philosophy begins with that of Greece, to which 'A Critical History of Greek Philosophy,' by W. T. STACE (Mac. 1928) is a good introduction. Freshness of interest and treatment still marks B. A. G. FULLER'S 'History of Greek Philosophy' (1923); Dr. JOHN BURNET'S 'Early Greek Philosophy' (Black, 4th ed. 1930) and W. Windelband's 'History of Ancient Philosophy' (E. tr. Low, 1900). The latter gives full bibliographical clues. For the documentary data as to the earliest thinkers one may go either to Fairbanks' 'First Philosophers of Greece' (K.P. 1898), which gives texts with translation, or to the standard *Historia Philosophiae Graecae et Romanae* of RITTER and PRELLER (7th ed. 1888), which gives texts only. F. M. CORNFORD'S 'From Religion to Philosophy: A Study in the Origins of Western Speculation' (Arnold, 1912) has clarifying value. ZELLER'S 'Philosophy of the Greeks' is a standard work which has been translated in the following sections: 'History . . . from the earliest period to the time of Socrates' (Lmns. 2 v.); 'Plato and the Older Academy'; 'Socrates and the Socratic Schools' (3rd ed. 1885); 'History of Eclecticism'; and 'The Stoics, Epicureans, and Sceptics.'

Zeller's method, however, is open to some serious criticism, and this is well supplied for the English reader in A. W. BENN'S 'The Greek Philosophers' (rev. ed. in 1 v. Mur. 1914), which may be read with Mr. BENN'S shorter treatise, 'The Philosophy of Greece considered in relation to the Character and History of the People' (1898). The late Prof. ADAMSON'S posthumous lectures on 'The Development of Greek Philosophy' (2 v. Bld. 1903) will also well repay study; and there is original critical value in the essays of CH. WADDINGTON, *La philosophie ancienne et la critique historique* (1904). A work of high repute is 'The Greek Thinkers,' by TH. GOMPERZ (E. tr. Mur. 1901, etc.). The earlier Greek philosophy is mostly in verse form; and as philosophic poetry it is critically handled in J. A. SYMONDS' 'Studies of the Greek Poets' (3rd ed. Black, 2 v. 1893) and in the *Essai sur la poésie philosophique en Grèce* of G. BRETON (1882). See also the notable *Geschichte des Monismus in Altertum* of Prof. A. DREWS (Heid.

1913), and 'Atheism in Pagan Antiquity' by Prof. A. B. DRACHMANN of Copenhagen (Gyldendal, 1922). Much exact learning is critically condensed in M. CH. RENOUVIER's *Manuel de philosophie ancienne* (2 t. 1844).

§ 4. A whole literature has gathered round the names of the two most distinguished philosophers of Greece, ARISTOTLE and PLATO, whose leading works, with the fragments of the older system-makers, will of course be read by careful students. (E. tr. of Aristotle's chief philosophic works, and of all of Plato's, in B.L. The best trans. of Plato is, however, Jowett's, though there are good separate translations of the chief dialogues.) There is a small manual, 'Outlines of the Philosophy of Aristotle,' by E. WALLACE (C.U.P.); a larger one 'Aristotelianism,' by J. L. STOCKS (Har.); and another, 'Aristotle,' by G. R. G. MURE (Benn, 1932). For Plato see 'The Vitality of Plato,' by A. M. ADAM (C.U.P.), and WALTER PATER's 'Plato and Platonism' (Mac.), which has much literary charm. Both systems are abundantly dealt with in the general treatises above specified, but among special studies may be mentioned: 'The Message of Plato,' by E. J. URWICK (Met. 1920), who assumes "a fairly direct contact between India and Greece," influencing Socrates and Plato—perhaps Pythagorean; G. C. FIELD's 'Plato and his Contemporaries' (Met.); GROTE's 'Plato and the Companions of Socrates' (Mur. 4 v.) and 'Aristotle' (Mur. 1 v.); the 'Aristotle' of G. H. LEWES (1863); the lectures on 'Platonism' of Prof. BURNET (U. of Cal. Pr. 1928); and 'Plato's Doctrine of Ideas,' by Prof. J. A. STEWART (O.U.P. 1909).

[The relations of Socrates to the Athenians, who put him to death, are judicially discussed in the monograph 'Socrates and the Athenians: An Apology,' by HENRY BLECKLY (K.P. 1884), which deserves perusal, and under the title 'The Trial and Death of Socrates,' F. J. CHURCH has trans. the four Platonic dialogues which tell the story (Mac.)]. There is also a chapter on "Socrates" in Sir JOHN MACDONELL's 'Historical Trials' (Watts, Th. Lib. 1931). Of the great group in question, the most humanly interesting is Socrates, and he has been made the subject of special studies, of which two may be mentioned: the *Socrate* of CLODIUS PIAT (1900), an exact and scholarly study; and the noteworthy treatise of Dr. HUBERT RÖCK, *Der Unverfälschte Sokrates, der Atheist und 'Sophist'* (Innsb. 1903). Prof. Dr. GUSTAV KALKA has contributed to a recent German series studies of *Die Vorsokratiker*; *Sokrates und der Sokratische Kreis*; and *Aristoteles* (Münch. 1921-22).

§ 5. To an understanding of the development of Platonic doctrine which took place among cultured pagans in the early

centuries of the Christian era there are no better guides than THOMAS WHITTAKER's scholarly work 'The Neo-Platonists: A Study in the History of Hellenism' (C.U.P. 2nd ed. 1918) and Dean INGE's Gifford Lectures on 'The Philosophy of Plotinus' (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1923; 2 v.). Of the 'Enneads' of PLOTINUS, the chief thinker of the school, there are complete versions in French and German; but in English only a few treatises have been loosely translated. The bulk of these, by Thomas Taylor, are rep. (B.L.). 'The Problem of Evil in Plotinus' is handled by B. A. G. FULLER (C.U.P.). On the philosophy of the Christian Fathers there is a solid treatise by Dr. JOH. HUBER, *Die Philosophie der Kirchenväter* (1859).

The other post-Socratic schools, the Peripatetic, the Stoical, the Epicurean, the Cynic, and the Sceptic, are dealt with in Zeller and in the other general histories. 'Greek Atomists, and Epicurus' is an expert study by C. BAILEY (O.U.P. 1928), who also supplies 'Epicurus: the Extant Remains' (same, 1926). On the Stoics (see Course VIII, §20c) there are variously competent monographs, one of the latest being Dr. E. V. ARNOLD's 'Roman Stoicism' (C.U.P.); another and smaller, 'Stoicism' by R. M. WENLEY of Michigan Univ. (Har.). The small handbook of W. W. CAPES (S.P.C.K.) is interesting but ecclesiastically schemed. Of higher quality is the 'Epicureanism' of Prof. W. WALLACE (S.P.C.K. 1880). The theistic lectures of Dr. E. R. BEVAN on 'Stoics and Sceptics' (Cl. Pr. 1913) come down to Pyrrho, Sextus Empiricus, and Ænesidemu. Of the last named there is an earlier and fuller study by ÉMILE SAISET in *Le Scepticisme: Ænesidème—Pascal—Kant* (1865); and the first vol. of R. RICHTER's *Der Skeptizismus in der Philosophie* (1908) deals with the Greeks.

The later monograph of Prof. GASTON MILHAUD on *Les Philosophes-Géomètres de la Grèce: Platon et ses successeurs* (1900) has a specific interest; as has the masterly study of Prof. J. CHEVALIER, *La Notion du Nécessaire chez Aristote et chez ses pré-décesseurs* (Alcan, 1915).

Roman philosophy being but a derivation and adaptation from Greek—save in part as regards "Roman Stoicism"—has no original thinkers; and is best to be studied in the works of CICERO (trs. in B.L.) and in the great poet of Epicureanism, LUCRETIVS. The Enchiridion of Epictetus is tr. as 'The Discourses and Manual, with the Fragments' by P. E. MATHESON, with intr. and notes (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1917). There is also an 'Epictetus' in B.L.

§ 6. The transition from ancient to modern philosophy by way of the medieval schools or SCHOLASTICISM (ancient philosophy Christianised, or Christianity philosophised) is set forth in the

histories; and Ueberweg's survey may suffice even for some industrious readers. But on the medieval and modern systems, as on the ancient, there are special treatises. Great interest attaches at the outset to the 'Consolations of Philosophy' (E. tr. by H. R. JAMES: Mac.) of BOETHIUS, concerning whom it is still debated whether or not he was a Christian. On his personality and writings there is a good English monograph, 'Boëthius: An Essay,' by H. F. STEWART (Bld. 1891), which in its conclusion serves as an introduction to the scholasticism of the Middle Ages. On the Scholastics there are available 'The Mediæval Mind: A History of the Development of Thought and Emotion in the Middle Ages' by Dr. H. O. TAYLOR (Mac. 2 v.; 4th ed. 1925); and the 'History of Mediæval Philosophy' by Prof. M. DE WULF (E. tr. 2 v. Lmns.); also the study of 'Thomas Aquinas: His Personality and Thought' (E. tr. same). Specially interesting are the 'Illustrations of the History of Medieval Thought' (W. & N.), by R. Lane Poole, a very scholarly and trustworthy work. There are several learned French treatises on the same period, notably F. PICAVET's *Esquisse d'une histoire générale et composée des philosophies médiévales* (1908); M. de WULF's original *Hist. de la philosophie médiévale* (5e éd. 2 v. 1925), and HAURÉAU's standard work, *De la philosophie scolastique* (2 t. rep. 1870).

Of the system of JOHN SCOTUS (Erigena) there is an excellent short exposition in an essay in T. Whittaker's 'Apollonius of Tyana, and other Essays' (Son. 1906, rep. in Pt. II of 'The Metaphysics of Evolution,' W. & N. 1926); another in a little volume of 'Studies in John the Scot,' by Alice Gardner (Cl. Pr. 1900); and another in the larger 'Johannes Scotus Erigena' of H. BETT (C.U.P. 1925), a very competent study; but those who want the fullest examination of that great thinker may turn to CHRISTLIEB's *Leben und Lehre des Johannes Scotus Erigena* (1860) and HUBER's *Johannes Scotus Erigena* (1861). The critical positions of ABAILARD are specially considered in the preface by Victor Cousin to the *Ouvrages inédits d'Abélard* (1836), and in the *Abélard* of M. CHARLES DE RÉMUSAT (1845); and there are monographs on Duns Scotus by C. R. S. HARRIS, 'Duns Scotus' (O.U.P. 2 v. 1927) and in French by H. BERTONI, *Le bienheureux Joannes Duns Scotus, sa vie, sa doctrine* (1917), and B. LANDRY, *Duns Scot* (1922).

§ 7. Between the ancient or Græco-Roman systems and the Christian there stands the modifying force of the Saracen philosophy, on which see, in particular, RENAN's famous *Averroës et l'Averroïsme*; MUNK's *Mélanges de philosophie Juive et Arabe* (1859), and the *Études Orientales* of ADOLPHE

FRANCK (1861). (Outside the European movement, 'The Persian Mystics' may be approached in the 2 vols. of J. H. DAVIS so entitled: Mur. W.E.S.). Between the "Scholastics" again and the "modern" systems there stand a group of more or less innovating thinkers, tending to be pantheistic in their doctrines—namely, CARDAN (1501-75), CAMPANELLA (1568-1639), GIOR-DANO BRUNO (d. 1600), and VANINI (1586-1619). Apart from these, but not wholly alien to them, is the German mystic JACOB BÖHME or BEHMEN.

On all of these writers there are old monographs: 'Jerome Cardan,' by Prof. H. MORLEY (1854, 2 v.); the *Vita e Filosofia di Tomaso Campanella*, by BALDACHINI (1840); and *Th. Morus et Campanella* (1843), by M. DARESTE; (*Œuvres Choiesies* of Campanella in French, 1844; C.'s 'City of the Sun' in 'Ideal Commonwealths,' Rout.); *Vanini, ses écrits, sa vie, et sa mort*, by VICTOR COUSIN (V.'s philosophical works in French, tr. by Rousselot, 1841); 'The Life and Doctrines of Jacob Boehme,' by F. HARTMANN; also B.'s 'Dialogues on the Supersensual Life' (rep. Met. 1902) and 'Confessions,' ed. by W. S. Palmer, with intr. by Evelyn Underhill (same); Bishop MARTENSEN's 'Jacob Boehme: His Life and Teaching'; the able treatise of J. L. MACINTYRE, 'Giordano Bruno' (Mac. 1903); *Jordano Bruno*, by M. BARTHOLMÈS (1847, 2 t.); H. BRUNNHOFER's *Giordano Bruno's Weltanschauung und Verhängniss aus den Quellen dargestellt* (1882); GUSTAV LOUIS's *Giordano Bruno, seine Weltanschauung und Lebensverfassung* (Berlin, 1900), and ALOIS RIEHL's memorial essay (E. tr. Foulis, 1905) 'Giordano Bruno.' Two valuable studies of Bruno will be found in the 'Essays and Notices' of T. WHITTAKER (F.U. 1895: also rep. in 'The Metaphysics of Evolution').

One of the most original thinkers of the Renaissance was NICOLAS of Cusa, otherwise Cusanus (1401-64), who anticipated the Copernican theory and the theory of evolution; and here again T. WHITTAKER's study (rep. in 'Met. of Evol.') is an excellent conspectus. There is a French monograph by E. VANSTEENBERGHE, *Le cardinal Nicolas de Cues: l'action, la pensée* (1920) and a German study by J. RITTER on the *Docta Ignorantia* (Leip. 1931). That treatise has been trans. in French by L. MOULINIER, *De la docte ignorance* (1930); and the entire works of Cusanus are to be produced by Heidelberg Univ. in 14 v. (vol. ii, 1932). There is also a German study by O. Kästner, *Der Begriff der Entwicklung bei Nikolaus von Kues* (1896).

§ 8. Partly pervading all philosophy from the early Greek period onwards is a semi-scientific attempt to conceive the Cosmos in terms of forms or principles of "matter." This theme is

historically handled with great breadth and ability in A. LANGE's 'History of Materialism' (rep. of E. tr. in 1 v. K.P. 1925, with introd. by BERTRAND RUSSELL). The investigation is unfortunately carried on without definitions, which the critics do not supply, and so supports some philosophic mystification. JULES SOURY's *Bréviaire de l'histoire du matérialisme* (1881) comes down only to La Mettrie, but has merit.

[The student will do well to be on his guard against all generalisations on "Materialism" (with or without the tag "crass") which take for granted a formulated system for which no sponsor is ever cited. In this respect the English academic practice has been and is culpable to a surprising extent. Büchner, labelled a "materialist," repudiated as a false dichotomy that term and its converse, long before his opponents did. The normal practice is still to treat as a self-describing doctrine a word-made notion, like the "free" in "free-will" or the void expression "blind chance." The more circumspect modern writers who are content to accept the ambiguous label, as others still do the semi-scholastic terms "Realism" and "Idealism," tend to protract confusion.]

§ 9. As is implied in the title 'The Dawn of Modern Thought: Descartes, Spinoza, Leibniz' by S. H. MELLONE (O.U.P. 1930), "MODERN PHILOSOPHY" is reckoned to begin definitely with DESCARTES, who dealt with his problems to some extent in the spirit of positive science. He is often named with his English predecessor FRANCIS BACON, who, however, is of importance rather as a pioneer of the philosophy or method of science than as a philosopher proper. Their main works are easily accessible (Bacon in Rout. rep. in 1 v.; best complete ed. by Ellis, Heath, and Spedding, 7 v.; Descartes, 'Discourse of Method' and 'Meditations on the First Philosophy' in Ev. Lib., Dent; and 'Philos. Works of Descartes,' E. tr. by E. S. Haldane and G. R. T. Ross, 2 v. C.U.P.), and should be studied at first hand. Both have been made the subject of many treatises. On Bacon the best worth attention are: T. FOWLER's 'Bacon' (Low); Prof. NICHOL's 'Francis Bacon' (Ph. Cl. ser. Bld.); and the introd. by R. L. Ellis to his and Spedding's ed. of Bacon's works (rep. in Rout. 1 v. ed.). The *Philosophie de François Bacon* of CH. ADAM (1890), and the *François Bacon* of Prof. G. L. FONSEGRIVE (1893), are informative. Dr. C. D. BROAD's 'The Philosophy of Francis Bacon' (C.U.P. 1926) is a vivacious commem. address.

An able examination of Descartes's philosophy was given by Prof. W. WALLACE in the *Encyc. Brit.*; and the student may with profit turn to KUNO FISCHER's 'Descartes and his School'—the first vol. of his 'History of Modern Philosophy' (E. tr. F.U.); the standard *Histoire de la philo-*

sophie Cartésienne of FRANCISQUE BOUILLIER (2 t. 1854); or Prof. Mahaffy's 'Descartes' (Ph. Cl.). To the "school" of Descartes may be said to belong his contemporary GASSENDI, who greatly influenced Locke. As to him see Lange, or the work of F. THOMAS, *La philosophie de Gassendi* (1889), or 'The Philosophy of Gassendi' by Prof. G. S. Brett (Mac. 1908).

Contemporary with Descartes, but independent of him and of schools of philosophy in general, is the English philosopher THOMAS HOBBES (1588-1679). Of his works the best known is *Leviathan* (rep. Clay, 1904, etc.). He is specially important as a pioneer in psychology, but, like Locke, influenced the thought of his time in all directions. There is a very good monograph on him (Ph. Cl.) by Prof. Croom Robertson; another by Sir L. STEPHEN (E.M.L.). See also the former writer's 'Philosophical Remains' (W. & N. 1894).

§ 10. After Descartes in the roll of modern philosophers comes the great name of SPINOZA (works tr. by R. W. ELWES, very faithfully, in 2 v. Bell; Fr. tr. with intr. crit. by E. SAISSET, 3 t. 1861). Spinoza has been more or less competently expounded by R. McKEON in 'The Philosophy of Spinoza' (Lmns. 1929); by LEON ROTH in 'Spinoza' (Benn, 1929); by Dr. John Caird in his 'Spinoza' (Ph. Cl.); by Dr. James Martineau in his 'Study of Spinoza' (Mac.); by J. ALLANSON PICTON in his 'Spinoza' (Con. 1907); and above all by Sir FREDERICK POLLOCK in his 'Spinoza, his Life and Philosophy' (Duck. 2nd ed. 1899). The metaphysic of Spinoza is tersely but ably criticised by Prof. Adamson in his posthumous lectures; also in the lecture 'Spinoza and Time' by S. ALEXANDER (A. & U.). Four appreciations by Land, Fischer, Van Vloten, and Renan were ed. in English by Prof. W. Knight under title 'Spinoza: Four Essays' (W. & N. 1882). Worth attention also are the various essays concerning Spinoza in the *Essais de critique et d'histoire de philosophie* of Dr. S. KARPPE (Alcan, 1902).

Alongside of Spinoza, developing from Descartes with a difference, yet with some points in common, is the French priest NICOLAS MALEBRANCHE (*De la recherche de la vérité*, 1674-5; rep. 1842 and later), on whom see a good critical chapter in Adamson's lectures; or the recent 'Study of the Philosophy of Malebranche' by R. W. CHURCH (A. & U. 1931), a performance of critical value. The 'Dialogues on Metaphysics' of Malebranche have been recently translated by Morris Ginsberg (A. & U. 1923). The *Traité des Premières Vérités* of Father BUFFIER (1718) was tr. in 1780 as 'First Truths, and the Origin of our Opinions, Explained,' by an anonymous Briton who accused Reid, Beattie, and Oswald of plagiarising from Buffier—a question later ignored.

§ 11. While the English philosophers, down to Berkeley, tended more or less to separate Philosophy from Theology, a great effort to restore the medieval connection between the two was made by LEIBNITZ—properly LEIBNIZ (1646–1716). Of his philosophic writings, which are chiefly in French (rep. in 2 t. 1842 and later), there have been trans. the ‘New Essays on the Human Understanding’ (Mac. 1896); and the ‘Monadology’ and some of the shorter essays, by Prof. LATTA, under title ‘Leibniz: The Monadology and other Philosophical Writings’ (Cl. Pr. 1898). Complete eds. of the philosophical works by Gerhardt (Berlin, 6 Bde. 1875–87); and by Foucher de Careil (1859–65, 6 t.). He is fully expounded in the larger histories; but the student may refer to the monograph by H. W. CARR, ‘Leibniz’ (Benn, 1929), or that of J. T. MERZ (Ph. Cl.); the careful and thorough study of Prof. LATTA, in the vol. above mentioned; the brilliant analysis and criticism of the Hon. BERTRAND RUSSELL, ‘A Critical Exposition of the Philosophy of Leibniz’ (C.U.P. 1900); or the examination in H. SCHMALENBACH’s *Leibniz* (Mün. 1921); L. CONTURAT’s *La Logique de Leibniz* (1901); the more recent *Leibniz* of Dr. S. BEHN (1921), and *Le Spinozisme* of V. DELBOS (2e éd. 1926). Leibniz’s relation to Spinoza may be gathered from his attempted ‘Refutation,’ first published in the 19th c. (E. tr. 1855); and his relation to Locke from his *Nouveaux essais sur l’entendement humain*. L. Stein’s *Leibniz und Spinoza* (1890) discusses the former problem.

§ 12. After Descartes and Spinoza, the first leading names in philosophy, excepting MALEBRANCHE and LEIBNITZ, are the English LOCKE, BERKELEY, and HUME, as to whom see ‘Locke, Berkeley, Hume,’ by C. R. MORRIS (O.U.P. 1931), or the careful general sketch in Prof. W. R. SORLEY’s ‘History of English Philosophy’ (C.U.P. 1920), which is a judicial record with a very good bibliography. (Locke, chief works, 2 v. in B.L.; ‘Essay concerning Human Understanding’ ed. by Prof. A. C. FRAZER, Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1894; Berkeley, whole works with Life and Letters, 4 v. Cl. Pr.; also B.L.; Hume, in Green and Grose’s comp. ed. Lmns. 4 v.; philos. works in 2 v. ed. Selby-Bigge, Cl. Pr.) It is to be noted that a long current 1-vol. ed. is mutilated, and that in any case Hume’s final opinions on Theism are to be looked for in his posthumous ‘Dialogues on Natural Religion.’ On these authors also there are many treatises, the most serviceable being: ‘Locke’s Theory of Knowledge and its Historical Relations’ by J. GIBSON (C.U.P.); Prof. FOWLER’s ‘Locke’ (E.M.L.); Prof. FRASER’s ‘Locke’ (Ph. Cl.) and vol. I of Works; the same writer’s ‘Berkeley’ (same ser.); HUXLEY’s ‘Hume’ (E.M.L.); and Prof. KNIGHT’s ‘Hume’ (Ph. Cl.). Of the two latter neither can be pronounced an adequate exposition of Hume’s philosophy,

though Huxley's work has critical value. On the whole the most thorough and fair book on Hume is 'Hume's Philosophy of Human Nature' by Prof. J. LAIRD (Met. 1932). The student, however, will do well in Hume's above all cases to go to the original, noting how at times the added Notes vitally modify the argument. The exposition and criticism of Prof. Green and Mr. Grose in their ed. of Hume's works are done from a theistic standpoint. Much help may be had from a use of Sir L. A. Selby-Bigge's ed. of the 'Treatise of Human Nature' (Cl. Pr. 1888), of which the index is a most careful piece of analysis. The 'Treatise' is now included in the Ev. Lib. (Dent).

§ 13. For the minor English and Scottish philosophical writers of the 18th c. the student may consult Sir LESLIE STEPHEN'S 'History of English Thought in the Eighteenth Century' (S.E. 2 v.), which, however, is largely occupied with theological and political literature; and the record of 'The Scottish Philosophy: Hutcheson to Hamilton,' by the Rev. Dr. MCCOSH (Mac. 1875), which is more strictly philosophical. In Britain, the first notable name in philosophy after Hume is REID, whose "common-sense" reply to Hume gained a considerable hearing. His works were edited with learned annotations by HAMILTON; and his philosophy is competently discussed in Prof. SETH'S 'Scottish Philosophy: A Comparison of the Scottish and German Answers to Hume' (Bld. 1885), as well as by Dr. MCCOSH, who gives also an interesting account of Reid's master and predecessor, GEORGE TURNBULL.

§ 14. The French philosophers of the 18th c. include VOLTAIRE (whose *Philosophe Ignorant*—tr. in Eng. with many others of V.'s works, in 18th c.—may suffice to indicate the cautious position of his later period), DIDEROT, D'HOLBACH, HELVÉTIUS, LA METTRIE, CABANIS, and CONDILLAC. The last-named, who alone ranks as a system-maker, is discussed in all the leading histories above cited, also in the *Mémoires pour servir à l'histoire de la philosophie au XVIIIe siècle* of PH. DAMIRON (3 t. 1858-64), which may be consulted for the other writers named; in an able monograph by Prof. F. RHÉTHORÉ, *Condillac; ou, l'empirisme et le rationalisme* (1864); and in the essay of LEO DEWAULE, *Condillac et la psychologie anglaise contemporaine* (Alcan, 1892). Abundant references to DIDEROT'S teaching are given in J. MORLEY'S 'Diderot' (Mac.), where also will be found an account of D'HOLBACH, whose 'System of Nature' is historically notable as the first systematic atheistic treatise that secured wide attention. A tr. of 'Diderot's Early Philosophical Works' is issued by the O.C. (1916); and there is a critical monograph, *Diderot*, by A. COLLIGNON (Alcan, 1911) as well as a chapter on D. in PAUL JANET'S *Les Maîtres de la pensée moderne*

(rep. 1883). Among French studies of Voltaire as thinker may be mentioned *Voltaire Philosophe*, by G. PELLISSIER (1908), and the notable *Voltaire* of EDMÉ CHAMPION (1897); and there is latterly an able *Essai sur la Philosophie de Jean D'Alembert*, by Dr. MAURICE MULLER (Payot, 1926).

§ 15. The next great philosophic epoch is that begun by IMMANUEL KANT, who received his philosophic stimulus from Hume. There is no complete trans. of his works in English; but there are several versions of his 'Critique of Pure Reason,' which is his most famous treatise [best tr. by Max Müller (2 v. Mac.) and by Prof. N. K. SMITH (same)]. There are also available his 'Prolegomena to all Future Systems of Metaphysics,' of which there is an excellent translation by Dr. PAUL CARUS (O.C. 1912), with good annotations; and one in 2nd vol. of Mahaffy and Bernard's 'Kant's Critical Philosophy for English Readers' (Mac.); the 'Critique of Judgment' (tr. by Dr. Bernard: 2nd ed. Mac.); the 'Introduction to Logic,' with the 'Essay on the Mistaken Subtlety of the Four Figures' (1885); and the 'Critique of Practical Reason,' the 'Metaphysic of Ethics,' the 'General Introduction to the Metaphysical Elements of Morality and Ethics,' and Part I of 'Religion within the Bounds of Pure Reason,' all tr. by Dr. T. K. Abbott under the title 'Kant's Theory of Ethics' (Lmns.). Prof. WATSON's selections from Kant, entitled 'The Philosophy of Kant, as contained in Extracts from his own Writings' (Mac.), form a specially useful synopsis. It is as "answering" Hume that Kant is commonly valued by his adherents; but that "Kant has *not* answered Hume" is maintained by the Hegelian Dr. Hutchison Stirling in two articles in *Mind*, 1st ser. vols. ix and x.

The study on 'Kant's Theory of Knowledge' by H. A. PRICHARD (Cl. Pr. 1909) is an illuminating and cogent criticism; and 'The Crowning Phase of the Critical Philosophy: A Study in Kant's Critique of Judgment,' by R. A. C. MACMILLAN (Mac. 1912), is another study of expert interest. Many criticisms of Kant concur in showing him to be a deeply inconsistent though a powerful thinker. H. VAHINGER in his 'Philosophy of *As If*' (E. tr. K.P. 1924) argues forcibly that Kant repeatedly stood on the "As If" position—that of "make-believe"—both as to theism and ethics; further, that C. F. FORBERG in that age strenuously affirmed the principle which Kant had covertly held; but that Kant passed undetected while Forberg received no attention. He might thus rank as the first "Pragmatist."

§ 16. On Kant follow JACOBI, FICHTE, HERBART, SCHELLING, and HEGEL. Of these, there are available English trs. of only some works of FICHTE (Popular Works, tr. by W. Smith, 4th

ed. 2 v. K.P.; 'Science of Rights,' 'Science of Knowledge,' and 'Ethics as Based on the Science of Knowledge,' all tr. by A. E. Kroeger, same pub.); SCHELLING ('Philosophy of Art,' 1844); and HEGEL ('The Logic of Hegel,' tr. from the *Encyklopädie* by Prof. W. Wallace, Cl. Pr. 2 vols. 1892-4; 'Hegel's Science of Logic,' tr. by W. H. Johnston and L. G. Struthers: 2 v. A. & U.); 'Phenomenology of Mind,' tr. by Prof. J. B. BAILLIE: 2nd ed. rev. A. & U.; 'Philosophy of History' in B.L.; 'Philosophy of Mind,' tr. by Prof. Wallace, with five introductory lectures: Cl. Pr. 1894; 'Introduction to Hegel's Philosophy of Fine Art,' tr. by B. Bosanquet: K.P.; 'Philosophy of Fine Art,' tr. by E. P. B. Osmaston: Bell, 1920; 'Philosophy of Right,' tr. by S. H. Dyde: Bell, 1896; 'Summary of the Philosophy of Right,' by T. C. Sandars, in *Oxford Essays*, 1855. Hegel's *Philosophie des Geistes* and *Philosophie der Religion* are tr. in French, and the latter in English (K.P. 3 v. 1895). Though this is a posthumous compilation largely made from lecture notes, it may serve to give a more intelligible idea of Hegel's system than do his other works. Of the many criticisms on Hegel, the most stringent and effective in the last age was the *Hegel und seine Zeit* of F. HAYM (1857).

HERBART seems to have found no English translator, save as regards his pedagogics (as to which see *Course on History of Education*), although his school has flourished in Germany, where BENEKE and others cleared his system of its admitted extravagances. His work is fully surveyed in the German monograph of W. KINKEL, *J. F. Herbart, sein Leben und seine Philosophie* (1903); and there is 'A New Interpretation of Herbart's Psychology through the Philosophy of Leibniz' by JOHN DAVIDSON (Bld. 1906).

§ 17. A great literature has arisen over Kant and the post-Kantian schools. In this the student may usefully begin with the little book of the late Prof. Adamson on 'The Philosophy of Kant' (Bld. 1879), though it was for Adamson a somewhat immature exposition, afterwards receded from by him; or with Dr. JAMES WARD's 'A Study of Kant' (C.U.P.). For further study the copious exposition of Kant by Prof. EDWARD CAIRD, 'The Critical Philosophy of Immanuel Kant' (MacL. 2 v.); the able study of Prof. F. PAULSEN, 'Immanuel Kant: His Life and Doctrine' (E. tr. Nimmo, 1902); Prof. Wallace's 'Kant' in the Ph. Cl. ser.; Prof. CAIRD's 'Hegel' in the same series; Kuno Fischer's 'Critique of Kant' (E. tr. Son.); Dr. J. HUTCHISON STIRLING's 'Secret of Hegel' (O. & B. 2nd ed. 1898), which has more philosophic merit than could be supposed from its preface, and its general insistence on 'revelation'; and Prof. Seth's useful work, 'The

Development from Kant to Hegel (W. & N. 1882). Later English discussions are Prof. A. SETH'S 'Hegelianism and Personality' (2nd ed. Bld. 1893); R. MACKINTOSH'S 'Hegel and Hegelianism' (Clark, 1900); J. M. T. E. MACTAGGART'S 'Studies in the Hegelian Dialectic' (C.U.P. 1896); 'Studies in Hegelian Cosmology' (1901); 'Commentary on Hegel's Logic,' and 'Studies in the Hegelian Dialectic' (same); and J. B. BAILLIE'S 'The Origin and Significance of Hegel's Logic' (Mac. 1901). W. T. STACE'S 'THE PHILOSOPHY OF HEGEL: A SYSTEMATIC EXPOSITION' (Mac. 1924) is one of the later expositions, and for comprehensiveness, faithfulness and lucidity, is the best. As its author justly claims, it saves the non-specialist student the toil of "mastering at least ten or twelve appallingly difficult volumes."

Critical light may also be derived from Prof. WATSON'S 'Kant and his English Critics' (MacL.). SCHELLING is expounded in 'Schelling's Transcendental Idealism' (1882) by Dr. WATSON in the German Philosophical Classics ser. (Chicago, Griggs); and his views are set forth in J. B. STALLO'S 'General Principles of the Philosophy of Nature' (1848); C. FRANTZ'S *Schellings positive Philosophie* (1879) and HARTMANN'S *Schellings philosophisches System*, 1897. An excellent monograph on FICHTE is contributed by Prof. Adamson to the Ph. Cl. ser.; and there is a 'Critical Exposition' of Fichte's 'Science of Knowledge' by C. E. EVERETT in the American Ger. Phil. Cl. ser., which also includes a 'Critical Exposition' by G. S. MORRIS of Hegel's 'Philosophy of the State and of History' (1887).

§ 18. In Britain, after Hume and Reid, the first eminent thinker was Sir WILLIAM HAMILTON, whose 'Lectures on Metaphysics' (2 v. Bld.) are the fullest expression of his philosophy. There is a compendium of his "system," made up before the publication of the Lectures, by O. W. DWIGHT, an American theologian (N.Y. 1853); and an account of it in Prof. VEITCH'S 'Sir William Hamilton: The Man and his Philosophy' (Bld.), and the same biographer's monograph in the Ph. Cl. ser. Prof. MONCK contributed, further, a good monograph on Hamilton to the Eng. Phil. ser. (1881). The main basis of Hamilton's metaphysic was criticised by J. HUTCHISON STIRLING in a short treatise, 'Sir William Hamilton: Being the Philosophy of Perception' (1865). Interest still attaches to the 'Institutes of Metaphysic' of Prof. J. F. FERRIER (1854), on whom there is a monograph by Miss HALDANE (Great Scots ser.) and some capable criticism in J. GROTE'S 'Exploratio Philosophica.'

JOHN STUART MILL has not acquired permanent standing as a philosopher, though his 'Examination of Sir William

Hamilton's Philosophy' (1865; final form in 5th ed.; Lmns.) is an important destructive criticism of that writer. John Mill's philosophic positions are to be gathered from this work and the 'Logic,' and finally from the posthumous 'Three Essays on Religion' (Lmns.). A criticism of his views from a transcendental standpoint is offered by W. L. COURTNEY in 'The Metaphysics of John Stuart Mill' (K.P. 1879); and from a theistic standpoint by Dr. CHARLES DOUGLAS'S 'John Stuart Mill' (Bld. 1895). The latest monograph is that by Prof. J. L. STOCKS of the Victoria University (Benn.).

Beside Hamilton stood Dean H. L. MANSEL, whose very considerable philosophic power was exhibited on the critical side in his Bampton Lectures on 'The Limits of Religious Thought Examined' (4th ed. 1859); his 'Metaphysics, or the Philosophy of Consciousness, Phenomenal and Real' (2nd ed. 1866); and 'The Philosophy of the Conditioned' (1866), examining Hamilton and Mill. The fact that his able dialectic claimed to expunge all philosophic basis for the current theism, which, with Hamilton, he nevertheless defended, and that he thus gave Herbert Spencer *his* philosophic basis for an Agnostic Cosmism, explains the later disregard of Mansel as a thinker. Another thinker of the period, JOHN GROTE (1813-66), younger brother of the historian, has more completely missed recognition for the originality and mental energy of his 'Exploratio Philosophica' (2 v. 1865; rep. 1900, C.U.P.), which at a number of points anticipated more recent thought. The strong infusion of the personal element in his writing seems to have checked acceptance.

§ 19. In France, after the Revolution period, there was reaction in philosophy as in politics, though DESTUTT DE TRACY represented a continuance of earlier impulses. As to him and a whole series of later French thinkers, see *Les Idéologues*, by F. PICAVET (Alcan, 1891). A good survey of the earlier part of the century is to be found in the *Essai sur l'histoire de la philosophie en France au XIX^e Siècle* of PH. DAMIRON (3e édit. 1834; 2 t.); a view of the first half of the century in *La philosophie en France*, by CH. ADAM (1894); a brilliant criticism in *Les philosophes classiques français* of M. TAINÉ (3e édit. 1868); and a full survey down to the 'eighties in the *Histoire de la philosophie en France au XIX^e Siècle* of M. FERRAZ (1880-87, 2 t.). See also *La philosophie française contemporaine* of PAUL JANET (1879); Dr. J. A. GUNN'S 'Modern French Philosophy,' with pref. by Bergson (F.U. 1922); and I. BENRUBI'S 'Contemporary Thought of France' (W. & N. 1926).

The most widely celebrated of modern French philosophers is AUGUSTE COMTE, author of the *Philosophie Positive* (6 t. 1830-42).

This has not been trans., but there is an English summary in 2 v. by Harriet Martineau (1853, rep. 1877; rep. in 3 vols., with an introduction by Frederic Harrison, 1896, B.L.). The supplementary or complementary *Politique Positive* (4 t. 1851-54) was trans. by several of the leading English Positivists (4 v. Lmns.). Comte has been sympathetically expounded in Prof. EDWARD CAIRD'S 'Social Philosophy and Religion of Comte' (2 v. MacL.), as well as by G. H. LEWES in the volume, 'Comte's Philosophy of the Sciences' (B.L.). See Course VI, § 22a, as to the resistance of Littré and Mill, at first adherents, to Comte's "religious" development of his system, and see also Spencer's criticism in vol. iii of his Essays. A fair, if not a definitive, comparison of the systems of Spencer and Comte is provided by E. DE ROBERTY, *Auguste Comte et Herbert Spencer* (1894), and as noted in Course VI, § 22a, there is a brief but very judicial estimate of 'Comte and Mill' by T. WHITTAKER (Con. 1908).

§ 20. Even in Germany, the nation most given to philosophical studies, there was a reaction from—and against—metaphysics after the "palmy" period from Kant to Hegel. The writers of widest reputation in the generation after Hegel were SCHOPENHAUER (1788-1860), who was contemporary with Hegel, and began to publish (with small success) in 1813, and the later HARTMANN. Both rank as Pessimists, but differ much in their methods. The principal works of both are translated in English: SCHOPENHAUER'S 'The World as Will and Idea' (E. tr. K.P. 3 v.); his 'Fourfold Root of the Principle of Sufficient Reason' and 'Will in Nature,' in 1 v. (E. tr. Bell); and many of his shorter writings in the series of volumes translated and edited by W. B. SAUNDERS (Son.); also in a volume edited by E. BELFORT BAX (Bell). HARTMANN'S 'Philosophy of the Unconscious' is tr. by Dr. W. C. COUPLAND (3 v. 1884, K.P.). A good introduction to both philosophers is supplied in Prof. James Sully's 'Pessimism' (K.P.); and there is an excellent short monograph on Schopenhauer by T. WHITTAKER (Con. 1920). See also the exceptionally able 'Life of Schopenhauer' by Prof. WALLACE in the G.W.S., and that by Miss HELEN ZIMMERN, 'Arthur Schopenhauer: His Life and his Philosophy' (Lmns.). One of the best all-round criticisms of his doctrine is *La Philosophie de Schopenhauer* by TH. RIBOT, the psychologist (1874). In the voluminous German literature on S. may be noted *Die Ueberwindung des Pessimismus* of HELMUT FAHSEL (1925).

Much influence was and is exercised in Germany (though not in England, where it was admirably translated by Marian Evans, i.e. "George Eliot," as 'The Essence of Christianity,' in 1854) by LUDWIG FEUERBACH'S *Das Wesen des Christenthums* (1841),

which is a closely reasoned rebuttal of the metaphysics of theism. Feuerbach, who had been a Hegelian, here deeply antagonised the Hegelian influence, as did Strauss later in 'The Old Faith and the New,' and greatly reinforced the movement of scientific thought.

Of the other modern German system-makers the most important was R. H. LOTZE, who, however, has had less European vogue than Schopenhauer and Hartmann, despite his greater conformity to prevailing philosophical sentiment. His 'System of Philosophy' (1874-9) is tr. (4 v. Cl. Pr. 1887-8), as are also his 'Microcosmos' (2 v. Clark), his 'Outlines of Æsthetics,' 'Outlines of Logic,' 'Outlines of the Philosophy of Religion,' 'Outlines of Metaphysics,' 'Outlines of Practical Philosophy,' and 'Outlines of Psychology' (the last four tr. by Prof. Ladd; Ginn; and Lmns.). The 'Outlines of the Philosophy of Religion,' which appears also in a trans. ed. by F. C. Conybeare (Son. 1892), is an attempt at a rehabilitation of the current religion. Yet he figured first as a materialist.

In keeping with Feuerbach and in sharp antagonism to all metaphysical system-making stand the works of BÜCHNER and MOLESCHOTT, of whom the former, inspired by the latter, had a European hearing for his '**Force and Matter**' (1855—often rev. and exp. ed. of E. tr.), followed by many other works, including 'The Idea of God' (1874); and latterly for his posthumous 'Last Words on Materialism' (E. tr. 1901, rep. 1902, Watts). JACOB MOLESCHOTT, like CARL VOGT, is more strictly a physicist, his chief work being *Der Kreislauf des Lebens* (5te Aufl. 1875-87, 2 Bde.).

Of German surveys of modern German and other philosophy there are many. Among the most useful are E. ZELLER's *Gesch. der deutschen Phil. seit Leibniz* (1873); W. VON REICHENAU's *Die monistische Philosophie von Spinoza bis auf unserer Tage* (1881); G. ZART's *Einfluss der englischen Philosophie seit Bacon auf die deutsche Philosophie* (1881); E. PFLEIDERER's *Kantischer Kritizismus und englische Philosophie* (1881); O. PFLEIDERER's 'Development of Theology in Germany since Kant, and its Progress in Great Britain since 1825' (E. tr. Son.); and R. H. LOTZE's *Geschichte der deutschen Philosophie seit Kant* (1892). For a general survey of modern philosophy see the excellent 'History of Modern Philosophy' by RICHARD FALCKENBERG (E. tr. Bell, 1895), or the *Geschichte der neueren Philosophie* of A. STÖCKL (2 Bde. 1883).

§ 21. Of the works of the Italian philosopher ROSMINI (1797-1855), who bulks largest among the idealists of his nation, there have been trans. in English his 'Origin of Ideas' (3 v.); his 'Psychology' (3 v.); and his 'Philosophical System,' with a

sketch of his life, bibliography, introduction, and notes, by THOMAS DAVIDSON (all K.P.). GIOBERTI and MAMIANI, who with Rosmini form "the Italian triumvirate of last century," have not been translated. In the Italy of last century, abstract thought being conditioned as elsewhere, the writers named are seen to derive and diverge from serious Catholicism, growing progressively more detached from it; while the rationalistic movement connects with the influence latterly exerted by the revived study of VICO (1668-1744), the eminent Catholic sociologist of the beginning of the 18th c., who produced no philosophic system as such, but dealt so searchingly with vital philosophic problems that 'The Philosophy of Giambattista Vico' is not a misnomer for BENEDETTO CROCE's study of him (E. tr. by R. G. Collingwood, Latimer, 1913).

The revival of philosophical as of sociological studies in Italy is dealt with in the 'Hist. Sketch of Modern Philosophy in Italy,' by Prof. V. BOTTA, which forms App. II to UEBERWEG's 'History of Philosophy'; also in French works: *La philosophie expérimentale en Italie*, by A. ESPINAS (1889); *La philosophie contemporaine en Italie*, by R. MARIANO (1868); and *Histoire des doctrines philosophiques dans l'Italie contemporaine*, by MARC DEBRIT (1859); and in several Italian works, notably *La filosofia e la cultura Italiana nel moderno evo* (1882), by G. FONTANA; *Sul rinnovamento della filosofia positiva in Italia*, by PIETRO SICILIANI (1871); the *Essai sur l'histoire de la philosophie en Italie au XIX^e Siècle* of LUIGI FERRI (2 t. 1869); and *L'Italia filosofica contemporanea* of R. POMPA (Salerno, 1877-78). Siciliani competently criticises the philosophic incoherences of the Catholic philosophers. Latterly, the Italian movement, which has obvious analogies to that in Northern Europe, is distinguished by the manifold output of BENEDETTO CROCE, to which there is an illuminating introduction in 'The Philosophy of Benedetto Croce' by Dr. H. WILDON CARR (Mac. 1917), with an explanatory bibliography. The whole movement is surveyed by A. CRESPI, 'Contemporary Thought in Italy' (E. tr. W. & N. 1928), and by Prof. G. GENTILE in *Il Pensiero Italiano del Secolo XIX* (1928), without any constructive commitments. For his own subtle philosophy, see his 'The Theory of Mind as Pure Act' (E. tr. with introd. by H. W. CARR [Mac. 1922]).

Philosophic thought being, like scientific, a common ground for Europe as a whole, there is nothing to be gained for philosophic purposes by tracing its fortunes in all the nations. Swiss, Dutch, Belgian, and Scandinavian thinkers group themselves under general doctrinal labels; and there is no outstanding Russian philosophy, though there are eminent living Russian philosophers. But of modern Dutch philosophy there is a German account, *Die holländ-*

ische Philosophie in 19ten Jahrhundert, by G. v. ANTAL (Utrecht, 1886); and there is an *Histoire de la philosophie en Belgique* by M. DE WULF (1910).

§ 22. Of the English philosophical writers of the latter part of the last century, the most famous is HERBERT SPENCER, whose views on the philosophy of knowledge and of existence are to be found in his '**First Principles**' (W. & N.). It should be studied, however, in the light of the full development in other volumes of the author's '**Synthetic Philosophy**,' and particularly in the light of the '**Principles of Psychology**' (same, 2 v. 3rd ed. 1890). The '**Epitome of the Synthetic Philosophy**,' by F. HOWARD COLLINS (same, 2nd ed. 1890), gives great help towards a general grasp of it. Next to Spencer in reputation in his day, and superior to him at points in metaphysical power, is G. H. LEWES, whose studies on '**Problems of Life and Mind**' (4 v. K.P.) constitute his best and maturest work. But Spencer, in '**First Principles**,' raised a philosophic issue of capital importance against the *à priori* thesis that the Universe *must* have a mind. His question whether it must not be something superior to Mind has never been seriously faced by his critics.

Apart from the scientific schools, but not wholly opposed to them at all points, stood the late T. H. GREEN, for a time the most influential modern representative of Transcendentalism in England. He is chiefly to be regarded as a moral philosopher, but his views on metaphysics are to be gathered from his Introduction to the works of Hume (1874), and from his '**Prolegomena to Ethics**' (Cl. Pr.). For criticisms of the work on its philosophic side see the late Prof. SIDGWICK's '**Methods of Ethics**' (6th ed. 1901, Mac.). W. H. FAIRBROTHER has published an approving monograph on '**The Philosophy of T. H. Green**' (Met. 1896). Perhaps the ablest English mind brought to bear by way of original composition on philosophy in the last generation was that of F. H. BRADLEY, whose '**Appearance and Reality**' (Son.; 3rd ed. 1899), and '**Principles of Logic**' (rep. 1922, Milford), and '**Essays on Truth and Reality**' (Cl. Pr. 1914), constitute the bulk of his contribution, the outstanding result being that Appearance and Reality, so often treated as necessarily antagonistic notions, are but subjective aspects of the same knowledge.

While forms of Hegelianism and appeals to go "back to Kant" were current, the most noteworthy attempt at a new "system," in English, was SHADWORTH HODGSON's '**Metaphysics of Experience**' (Lmns. 4 v. 1898), which has not been successful in creating a "school" among students. Something like a system, however, was compassed by the industrious and accomplished

American Prof. LADD; and those who desire to see a rounded body of philosophy on modern lines may find one in his works: 'Introduction to Philosophy: An inquiry after a rational system of scientific principles in their relation to ultimate reality' (F.U. 1891); 'Philosophy of Mind: An essay in the metaphysics of psychology' (1895); 'Philosophy of Knowledge' (1897); 'A Theory of Reality' (1899); 'Philosophy of Conduct' (all Lmns.). Able and instructive criticisms of the later 19th c. developments of philosophy will be found in the 'Essays and Notices' of T. WHITTAKER, and the 'Philosophical Remains' of Prof. CROOM ROBERTSON, already named.

A comparatively new note, though in reversion to an old Catholic procedure, was in this period struck by Mr. A. J. [afterwards Lord] BALFOUR's 'Defence of Philosophic Doubt, being an Essay on the Foundations of Belief' (Mac. 1879), skilfully developing a plea for orthodox religion on a basis of scepticism as to the bases of all belief. It had, however, no great vogue; and after a time it elicited a criticism, 'Pseudo-Philosophy at the end of the Nineteenth Century: I, An Irrational Trio: Kidd—Drummond—Balfour,' by H. M. CECIL (Univ. Pr.). The two first-named writers had a much larger audience of a non-philosophic character; H. DRUMMOND's 'Natural Law in the Spiritual World' (1883) and B. KIDD's 'Social Evolution' (1894) being widely acclaimed as buttressing religion. Drummond's was never academically accepted; and Kidd's, being a process of reasoning to the effect that reason is not to be trusted, was not philosophically more successful. The abler work of Balfour was by him re-developed in his 'Foundations of Belief' (1895: 8th ed. rev. 1901) and in later Gifford Lectures.

Balfour's 'Philosophic Doubt' had been preceded by 'A Discourse on Truth' by RICHARD SHUTE of Christ Church (King, 1877), which, though not cited by Balfour, may have partly inspired his work. Shute's 'Discourse' is an able piece of sceptical dialectic, which only at its close indicates any relation to religion, in the remark that it "denies to Reason her usurped authority of judging on the results of Faith," and that Religion would gain rather than lose through its method. As a thesis, the book commits the usual logical oversight of assuming that "scepticism" is outside the pale of Reason; thus denying that its own reasoning is reasoned. This may or may not have been the "reason" why the book has received little attention, despite its good writing, though the idea that Reason can be discredited by a process of reasoning is still somewhat popular. Shute's work, however, may have helped to suggest the later movement of Pragmatism, though it is not noticed by Vaihinger or by James.

Up to this point, the general movement of the century is broadly covered by the 'History of Modern Philosophy' of Prof. H. HÖFFDING of Copenhagen (Mac. 1900, 2 v.), and in Dr. T. M. FORSYTH's more compendious but illuminating 'English Philosophy: A Study of its Method and General Development' (Black, 1910), and H. W. DRESSER's 'History of Modern Philosophy' (A. & U. 1928).

§ 23. The most extensive "stir" in modern philosophy, since 1900, has come from France. French thought, broadly speaking, had turned away from system-making, like that of other countries; but in compensation there had gone on much acute research on special problems, both of philosophy and psychology—e.g. Prof. V. BROCARD, *De L'Erreur* (2e éd. 1897); LOUIS LIARD, *La science positive et la métaphysique* (1879); F. LE DANTEC, *Les limites du connaissable* (1903); Prof. LEON BRUNSCHVIG, *La modalité du jugement* (1897); E. DE ROBERTY, *La recherche de l'unité* (1893); EMIL BOIRAC, *L'Idée du phénomène* (1894); Prof. G. L. FONSEGRIVE, *Essai sur le libre arbitre* (2e éd. 1896); Prof. E. TROUVEREZ, *Le réalisme métaphysique* (1894). In addition there had been published in twenty years competent critical studies of nearly every important philosopher of the past. L. ARRÉAT's *Dix années de la philosophie* (1901) gives clues to such works. The most distinguished of the philosophers of the later decades had been CHARLES RENOUVIER, his principal metaphysical treatises being *Les dilemmes de la métaphysique pure* (1900) and *Histoire et solution des problèmes métaphysiques* (1901). There is a monograph on him by G. SEAILLES, *La philosophie de Charles Renouvier* (1905). Less noteworthy, but more popular, are the writings of A. FOUILLEE, *Liberté et déterminisme* (2e éd. 1884); *L'Avenir de la métaphysique* (1889); *La psychologie des idées forces* (2 t. 1893).

It was in the new century that attention began to be widely given to the books of HENRI BERGSON, whose first important work had been his doctoral thesis of 1888, *Essai sur les données immédiates de la conscience*, not trans. in Eng. till 1910 as 'Time and Freewill: An Essay on the Immediate Data of Consciousness' (Son.). In the meantime had appeared *Matière et Mémoire: Essai sur la relation du corps à l'esprit* (1896: E. tr. 'Matter and Memory,' Son. 1911). In 1907 appeared the most widely read of its author's works, *L'Évolution créatrice* (Alcan, 1907: E. tr. 'Creative Evolution,' Mac. 1911). The book on 'Laughter' (1900: E. tr. 1912) belongs properly to Æsthetics or Psychology; but the 'Introduction to Metaphysics' (E. tr. Mac. 1912) is a summary of Bergson's conception of the function of philosophy.

The discussion in England, though tardy as to dates, seems to

have been as extensive as in other countries. Sympathetic expositions began to appear in 1911, that of Dr. J. MCKELLAR STEWART, 'A Critical Exposition of Bergson's Philosophy' (Mac.), being the most important; and in 1912 came a vigorous attack by HUGH S. R. ELLIOT, 'Modern Science and the Illusions of Professor Bergson,' with pref. by Sir Ray Lankester (Lmns.). Dr. G. R. DODSON's 'Bergson and the Modern Spirit' (Lindsey Pr. 1914) is sympathetically critical. The French studies of Dr. M. T. L. PENIDO, *La méthode intuitive de Bergson : Essai critique* (1918), and J. SEGOND, *L'Intuition bergsonienne* (1912), are of a stricter order. The title of E. HERMANN's 'Eucken and Bergson : their Significance for Christian Thought' (J. Clarke, 2nd ed. 1912), reveals, as do other treatises, the "pragmatic" character of much of the support.

This is indicated also in the very readable handbook of the late Prof. H. WILDON CARR, 'Henri Bergson : The Philosophy of Change' (P.B. ser. 1911 : rev. ed. 1919). 'Bergson and his Philosophy,' by J. A. GUNN (with an able introd. by Prof. A. MAIR : Met. 1920), pairs in this respect, and supplies a good bibliography of the extensive literature. The Hon. B. RUSSELL's lecture on 'The Philosophy of Bergson' (Mac. 1912) has an appended controversy of Carr and Russell; and the later 'Bergson and Future Philosophy : An Essay on the Scope of Intelligence,' by GEORGE ROSTREVOR (Mac. 1921), criticises the latter.

The eulogists of Bergson appear to be broadly at one in acclaiming him as supplying new motives for, or encouragement to, social progress, without generally noting any such support in his doctrine for "faith" as orthodox readers had been led to look for. On the question of "freewill" Bergson does not appear to have recognised the primordial philosophical problem implicit in the term "free," and rests on a variant of a solution offered by Hodgson. As a "tendency" philosophy, assuming previous oblivion of data taken for granted as common knowledge, it appears to substitute emotional states, called "intuitive," for ratiocination as commonly understood; and the so-called "intuitive method" figures as one of asseveration, eked out by adherents with further asseveration, in verse and prose. Bergson's own rhetorical or rhapsodic gift is, however, of a high order.

[Ostensibly the main "success" of Bergsonism was achieved by the title as well as the substance of 'Creative Evolution.' The concept "creation," as established by the usage of two millenniums, had been used as a weapon wherewith to beat down the concept of "evolution," until it became broadly clear that the former notion was logically, biologically, and cosmologically incogitable. The device of the phrase "evolution is creation"

has been described as "theology changing the labels" in the manner of the medieval academic revolution in which Aristotle, after being long ecclesiastically banned, was adopted and canonised. But the device was not really of Bergson's invention, having been long previously resorted to by non-systematic publicists. What he effected was its "philosophic" establishment, which amounted to the acceptance of Evolution, under certain vestments.]

§ 24. Akin to Bergsonism as an "intuitionism," but divergent from it in its mode of establishing teleology by religious "experience" of subjective "revelation," is the 'Naturalism and Religion' of the German Prof. RUDOLF OTTO (E. tr. C.T.L. 1907). A dialectic ability exemplified in detail knowledge of modern biological science naturally secured for the book an eager welcome on the side of religion; and it is as a champion of an abstract entity or hypostasis, "Religion," that Prof. Otto has won his later influence by his work on 'The Holy' (Course VI, § 23). On the strictly philosophic side, by reducing "Religion" and "Naturalism" alike to pseud-entities, of which the first is holy and the second worldly or "proud," Dr. Otto can hardly be said to seek a ratiocinative audience.

§ 25. Those who recognise that philosophy has always been conditioned by theology, and seek simply to know how the "God-idea" is latterly handled as a separate issue, will find the theistic view vigorously maintained in the late JOHN FISKE's little work, 'The Idea of God as Affected by Modern Knowledge' (Boston, 1891), which, however, employs no new arguments. It has an appended note on the name "God," which is plausibly shown to be a derivative from Wodan = Odin. Of greater philosophic freshness are the arguments in Prof. WILLIAM JAMES's volume of essays, 'The Will to Believe' (Lmns. 1897). More logical than either of these works is the late Dr. FRANCIS E. ABBOT's 'Scientific Theism' (Boston, 1885). The same author, however, in his shorter treatise, 'The Way out of Agnosticism; or, the Philosophy of Free Religion' (1890), arrives merely at Pantheism, and imposes upon that the usual inconsistencies. Prof. FLINT's 'Baird Lectures' on 'Theism' (Bld. 1877) may be taken as ecclesiastically authoritative. A higher philosophic value is to be ascribed to the very temperate 'Burnett Lectures' of Dr. W. L. DAVIDSON, 'Theism as Grounded in Human Nature' (Lmns. 1893); but it presents no new arguments.

One of the most eloquent, and not the least able, of modern defences of theism, is the late Dr. JAMES MARTINEAU's 'Study of Religion' (2 v. 1888). Less rhetorical and more compact is the argument put forward by Prof. ROYCE, of Harvard, in 'The

Conception of God' (1897). To Prof. Royce's argument there are offered by other professors, in the same volume, academic replies, which claim to convict his theorem at once of logical and of ethical inadequacy. More elaborate is the presentment by Prof. A. C. FRASER in 'The Philosophy of Theism'—Giff. Lect. for 1894-96 (Bld. 2nd ed. rev.). Another competent and more compendious survey of the problem, with a view of its historical development, is given in 'Two Lectures on Theism' (Bld. 1897), by Prof. A. Seth (PRINGLE-PATTESON), where the conclusion arrived at is a theism of emotion, merging into explicit pantheism. See also his 'The Idea of God' (O.U.P. 1920) and 'Philosophy of Religion' (same, 1923).

Substantially bound up with the belief in deity is that in human immortality. On this theme there are prelections by Prof. A. S. PRINGLE-PATTESON, 'The Idea of Immortality' (Cl. Pr. 1922); Prof. ROYCE, 'The Conception of Immortality' (Lmns. 1900); Prof. WILLIAM JAMES, 'Human Immortality: Two supposed objections to the doctrine' (Con. 1898); Prof. H. MÜNSTERBERG'S 'The Eternal Life' (Boston, 1905); and 'The Soul of Man: an Investigation of the Facts,' by Dr. PAUL CARUS (O.C. 1909). The case was more largely argued in 'Scientific Fact and Metaphysical Reality' by R. B. ARNOLD (Mac. 1904), in the main a very sincere book, in which the hypostatising of "metaphysics" and "*the* metaphysician" does not preclude a straightforward exposition of the "emotional" view. Mr. ALEX. KADISON'S lecture 'Immortality' (N.Y. 1922) is, on the other hand, expressly agnostic. 'The Belief in Personal Immortality,' by E. S. P. HAYNES (Watts), treats the theme historically.

§ 26. For works antagonising theistic philosophy see Course VI, § 19. Among those critics was ERNST HÆCKEL, whose 'Riddle of the Universe' (E. tr. by J. McCabe, Watts, 1900; rep. 1902: the last German edition gives some necessary corrections as regards Christian origins) made a remarkable popular impression throughout Europe. Apart from Feuerbach, anti-theistic views had been set forth by the pessimists Schopenhauer and Hartmann, but rather as part of their pessimism—and, in the latter case, of a new pantheism—than as a criticism of theistic constructions. Thus it comes about that in Prof. Flint's lectures on 'Anti-Theistic Theories' (Bld. 1877) hardly any recent philosophers are named save these, Feuerbach being ignored. On the other hand, the negation of theism is rather implicit than explicit in recent philosophy, even where that is obviously irreconcilable with theism in any candid construction—e.g. F. H. BRADLEY'S 'Appearance and Reality,' above mentioned; and thinkers who had avowedly abandoned theism, as

Clifford, had not always been careful to clear their position metaphysically. Despite Comte's aspersion of atheists, Comtism is strictly atheistic, as Spinozism has been repeatedly recognised to be, from Jacobi to Martineau; and the position of Spencer in his 'First Principles,' which he distinguishes from atheism, is so distinguishable only by a commonplace misconception of the latter, as set forth by Feuerbach, Bradlaugh, and others. A similar fallacy is fallen into in the otherwise careful work of E. DE ROBERTY, *L'ancienne et la nouvelle philosophie* (1887), p. 284; and again by Frederic Harrison in his 'Creed of a Layman' (Mac. 1907).

§ 27. As regards the total modification of religion on the philosophic side, there is again a whole literature, over and above the discussion of philosophy as such. PFLEIDERER's Gifford Lectures on the 'Philosophy and Development of Religion' (2 v. Bld. 1894) and LICHTENBERG's 'History of German Theology in the Nineteenth Century' (Clark, 1889) give general views. The work of LUDOVIC CARRAU, *La philosophie religieuse en Angleterre depuis Locke jusqu'à nos jours* (1888), is an intelligent survey of the movement of rationalistic thought from the believer's point of view. JEVONS' 'Principles of Science' (Mac. 2nd ed. 1 v.) endeavours to base theism on scientific conclusions.

In this connection may be noted the interesting series of works by the Rev. JOHN OWEN, 'Evenings with the Skeptics' (Lmns. 1881, 2 v.), 'The Skeptics of the Italian Renaissance' (Son. 1893), and 'The Skeptics of the French Renaissance' (same). Of greater present importance, however, is the very competent essay, 'The Adversaries of the Sceptic,' by Dr. ALFRED HODDER (Son. 1901), a more searching process of scepticism than the 'Philosophic Doubt' of A. J. Balfour, though employing question-begging terms.

§ 28. While previous founders of "systems" have in general suffered eclipse as such, and "schools" are less in evidence than in past ages, there is still latterly an abundance of philosophic writing, marked by philosophic temper and quasi-logical form. Classification thus becomes more difficult. A certain grouping is set up by such labels as 'Pragmatism' and 'Humanism,' which, however, are not in theory mutually exclusive; and these in turn are not alien to the philosophic formula which states conclusions in terms of "values," a "pragmatic" procedure approximating to the intuitionism of Bergson. The common tendency would appear to be, as formerly, to reduce the cosmic problem to subjective criteria, analogous to those of normal anthropomorphic theism, which formerly philosophy professed to guard against. No thesis, of course, is to be weighed in terms of popularity; and each student must decide for himself.

"Pragmatism," a term invented by C. S. PEIRCE (who latterly repudiated some of the meanings given to it), implying the sole test, "Does a given belief avail for human life?" was championed by Prof. WILLIAM JAMES after he had claimed that his 'Will to Believe' had been misunderstood. His 'Pragmatism: A New Name for Old Ways of Thinking' (Lmns. 1908) incurred much logical criticism which 'The Meaning of Truth: A Sequel to "Pragmatism"' (1909) hardly professes to rebut, though it specifies the opposition. His vivacious and stimulating thought, however, is to be followed with interest in 'Some Problems of Philosophy: A Beginning of an Introduction to Philosophy' (1911); 'A Pluralistic Universe' (1912); 'Essays in Radical Empiricism' (1912); and the posthumous 'Memories and Studies' (1912: all Lmns.). 'Humanism' is represented by F. C. S. SCHILLER's vol. of 'Philosophical Essays' under that title (1903: 2nd ed. 1912), and 'Studies in Humanism' (1907: both Mac.), as well as in his previous 'Riddles of the Sphinx' (2 v. 1891-4, 1910). The wide discussion on Pragmatism may be exemplified by the 'Old Criticism and New Pragmatism' of Dr. J. M. O'SULLIVAN (Lmns. 1909), a collection of very able essays, noting the affinities of Kantism and Pragmatism, and criticising both; and by 'Pragmatism and the Problem of the Idea,' by J. T. DRISCOLL (Lmns. 1915), which is also critical; and the 'Pragmatism and Idealism' of W. CALDWELL (Black, 1913).

§ 29. Other outstanding modern works in English are:—A. Coates, 'A Sceptical Examination of Contemporary British Philosophy' (Brentano, 1929); 'The Intuitive Basis of Knowledge: An Epistemological Enquiry,' by Prof. N. O. LOSSKY (E. tr. Mac.); 'Knowledge and Truth: An Epistemological Essay,' by LOUIS A. REID (same); 'The Roots of Reality' and 'The Real, the Rational, and the Alogical,' by E. BELFORT BAX (Richards, 1907, 1929); BERTRAND RUSSELL's 'Philosophical Essays' (Lmns.), 'Sceptical Essays' (A. & U. 1928), 'The Analysis of Mind' (A. & U.), and 'Mysticism and Logic' (Met. 1925); also 'Speculum Mentis: or, The Map of Knowledge,' by R. G. COLLINGWOOD (Cl. Pr. 1924); 'The Pathway to Reality,' a vindication of the Hegelian system, by the late Lord HALDANE (Giff. Lect. Mur. 1903); 'The Great Problems,' and 'Know Thyself,' by Prof. B. VARISCO (E. tr. A. & U.); 'The Way of Knowing, or, The Methods of Philosophy,' by Prof. W. P. MONTAGUE of Columbia Univ. (same); 'The Idealist Reaction against Science,' by Prof. ANTONIO ALIOTTA (E. tr. 1914: same); and 'Space, Time, and Deity' (Giff. Lect.), by Prof. S. ALEXANDER (same). The 'Essays in Critical Realism: A Comparative Study of the Problem of Knowledge,' by seven American Professors of

Philosophy or Psychology (Mac. 1900), forms an exceptionally competent presentment of "the" philosophic problem in many facets.

From such a starting-point the inquirer may proceed to examine the ostensibly conflicting positions taken up in such books as 'A Theory of Direct Realism; and the Relation of Realism to Idealism' by Dr. J. E. TURNER (A. & U. 1924); HIRALAL HALDAR's 'Neo-Hegelianism' (Mac. 1927); 'Science and Faith' by H. W. SANFORD (Put. 1932); Dr. S. L. HASAN's 'Realism' (C.U.P. 1928); J. LAIRD's 'A Study in Realism' (same); and the 'Objective Reality' of G. L. ROBERTS (Watts, 1925); with which may be compared the 'Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus' of L. WITTGENSTEIN (Ger. text with E. tr. and introd. by B. Russell: Rout.); 'Realism: A Study in Art and Thought' of ARTHUR McDOWALL (Con. 1918), and 'Materialism Re-stated' by CHAPMAN COHEN (P.P. 1927). Mr. McDowall quotes a distinguished realist as saying of his school, "No two of us agree." But as that is true of all the schools alike, none is advantaged.

[Prof. J. H. MUIRHEAD, the able editor of 2 vols. by many contributors under the title 'Contemporary British Philosophy' (A. & U. 1923-4), avowed the general disharmony in the first vol. of that very interesting collection; but in the second, in reply to a fit comment, undertook to repel the suspicion of final futility attaching to philosophic activity. Avowing an editorial impartiality, he effected the defence by indicating the philosophy he favours. There remains on record, however, the avowal of Fichte that "the kind of philosophy a man chooses depends on the kind of man he is," with the comment, that in this respect philosophies are comparable rather with poetry than with science. The 2 vols. on 'Contemporary American Philosophy,' ed. by G. P. Adams and V. F. Montague (1930), exhibit a very similar state of affairs.]

Applause is usually bestowed most loudly on the latest exponent of a new plea in support of theism, whether or not it is acceptable to ecclesiastics, who in the case of Lord Balfour welcomed a supporter who was viewed askance by academic theists as founding faith on scepticism; but a man of science who formulates a theism has obvious claims. The searcher for a theistic philosophy should accordingly turn to the works of Dr. A. N. WHITEHEAD, 'An Enquiry concerning the Principles of Natural Knowledge' (1919), 'The Concept of Nature' (1920), 'Symbolism: its Meaning and Effect,' 'Process and Reality: An Essay in Cosmology' (all C.U.P.).

The new problem raised by Dr. A. EINSTEIN as to time-space relativity in 'Relativity: the Special and the General Theory'

(E. tr. by R. W. Lawson, Met. 1920) and in 'Sidelights on Relativity: Lectures' (same) is by Dr. Whitehead handled in 'The Principle of Relativity' (C.U.P. 1922). Einstein's promulgation of his very important theory has elicited a large literature, elucidatory and other. For a general view see C. NORDMANN's 'Einstein and the Universe' (E. tr. by J. McCabe, F. U. 1922). The 'Space, Time, Motion' of A. V. VASILIEV, 'An Historical Introduction to the General Theory of Relativity,' has been recognised as being worthy of translation from the Russian (tr. by H. M. Lucas and C. P. Sanger: with intr. by B. Russell, C. & W. 1924). With this may be bracketed Mr. Russell's '**The ABC of Relativity**' (K.P. 1925); 'The World as an Organic Whole,' by N. O. LOSSKY (E. tr. 1928, O.U.P.); and 'The General Principle of Relativity in its Philosophical and Historical Aspect,' by Prof. H. WILDON CARR (Mac. 2nd ed. 1922).

§ 30. A group may finally be made of such works as 'The Analysis of Mind' by B. RUSSELL (A. & U. 1921); 'Reason and Nature' by M. R. COHEN (K.P.); 'Comparative Philosophy' by P. MASSON-OURSSEL, with introd. by Dr. F. G. Crookshank (K.P.); 'Philosophical Studies' by Prof. G. E. MOORE (same); 'Mind and Matter,' by Prof. G. B. STOUT (Vol. I, 1931, C.U.P.); 'The Metaphysics of Nature,' by the late Prof. CARVETH READ (Black, 1908); 'The Metaphysics of Evolution, with Other Essays,' by THOMAS WHITTAKER (W. & N. 1926); and 'Prolegomena to a New Metaphysic' by the same thinker (C.U.P. 1931: a *riposte* to Pragmatism), as representing a body of matured, sober, and competent philosophic thinking, specially worth study by rationalists.

A brilliant American work on 'Builders of Delusion: A Tour amongst Our Best Minds,' by HENSHAW WARD (Mur. 1931)—quite the cleverest of the books which undertake to discredit reason by a process of reasoning, and well worth reading for its illustrative citations—quotes from the late Professor W. G. SUMNER (the sociologist), "the most influential professor who ever taught at Yale," the following private pronouncement to the faculty of that university, on the occasion of a general vacancy in its philosophy chairs:

"Yale has now a chance to take the leadership of all the universities of the world, in abolishing the department of philosophy. Philosophy is an anachronism. It is just as bad, just as untrustworthy of serious regard, as astrology or palmistry. It is a fake. I should like to see Yale now definitely go on record as abolishing the study of philosophy."

The sentiment was not new: Mr. Ward quotes equivalent verdicts, one by Huxley, who could cite Hume to the same

effect; and Prof. W. James has written of "the whole hocus-pocus of *erkenntnisstheorie*." But the senatus of Yale did not accept Sumner's suggestion; and the serious student who would come to his own conclusion will hardly do so without some study of such thought as is embodied in the above-named group of works, which are not examined by Mr. WARD; and further, of the sceptical work of Dr. A. Hodder, which is open to sceptical criticism of its scepticism. In B. RUSSELL's 'Sceptical Essays' there is a paper on 'Philosophy in the Twentieth Century,' which may assist him in forming an opinion. Prof. O. KÜLP's small pre-war book on 'The Philosophy of the Present in Germany' (E. tr. 1913: A. & U.) proposes a "surmounting," by a new metaphysics, of the past philosophies, which he dismisses.

Similarly, Mr. W. T. STACE, the able analyst of 'The Philosophy of Hegel,' has in the preface to his essay on 'The Meaning of Beauty' (1929) made the avowal and prophecy that "For many years the main trend of philosophic thought has been towards the intuitional, the alogical, the irrational. Yet reason is the life-blood of philosophy; and the reaction, the return to sanity, must needs come." While the term "sanity" is obviously question-begging, the prediction may well excite response; and the "new" metaphysic invited by Mr. Whittaker may emerge. Those specialists who now collectively admit that the late F. H. Bradley had given "new life" to English philosophy in his day had not been prepared for 'Appearance and Reality' by the previous philosophies.

If, however, the "new" metaphysic should proceed on the lines of Dr. HODDER ('The Adversaries of the Sceptic') it will find new difficulties ready for it in the denial by Prof. James of the entity of "consciousness" (apparently subsumed by Dr. Hodder), and may thus find itself returning in effect to the final position of Hume, merely renouncing the claim to a knowledge not possessed. In this connection, special note should be taken of the thesis of H. VAHINGER's very able work, above mentioned, 'The Philosophy of *As If*: A System of the Theoretical, Practical, and Religious Fictions of Mankind' (E. tr. K.P. 1924). Vaihinger does not seem to believe that any of the fictions he exposes will, when avowed, tend to cease to function; since he predicts that the uncomprehended pragmatism of "the real" Kant will remain unperceived, and that the form given to Kant's doctrine in the text-books "will probably remain for all eternity." Which does not sound quite serious.

In so far as modern German philosophy may not have been sufficiently indicated above, it may be followed up through Dr. MORITZ BRASCH's *Die Philosophie der Gegenwart* (1888), where

there is finally offered, in agreement with Trendelenburg, the surmise that all philosophy is fated to vary within certain defined forms.

§ 31. The field of Indian philosophy, which lies off the line of the historic development traced above, may be studied partly through the work of Prof. SHASTRI (§ 1); the works named in Course VI, § 9, and further in MAX MÜLLER'S 'Three Lectures on the Vedānta Philosophy' (Lmns. 1894); COLEBROOKE'S 'Miscellaneous Essays' (rep. 1873); Dr. PAUL DEUSSEN'S 'The Philosophy of the Upanishads' (E. tr. of Pt. ii of his *Allgemeine Geschichte der Philosophie*: Clark, 1906); and the same writer's *Die Geheimlehre des Veda* (Leip. 1907). There is further an appendix to Dr. Deussen's 'Elements of Metaphysics' (E. tr. Mac. 1904) dealing with the relation of Vedānta philosophy to Occidental thought. 'Yoga Philosophy: In Relation to Other Systems of Indian Thought,' by Dr. S. N. DASGUPTA (Un. of Calc. 1930), author of 'A History of Indian Philosophy' (C.U.P. 2 v. 1922-31), is an authoritative performance by a recognised expert; and 'Indian Philosophy' by S. RADHAKRISHNAN (A. & U. 2 v.) is a comprehensive survey. See also the smaller works of SRI ĀNANDA ĀCHĀRYA, 'Brahmanism, or Intuition of the Absolute: An Introduction to the Study of Hindu Philosophy' (Mac. 1917), and D. J. STEPHEN, 'Studies in Early Indian Thought' (C.U.P.); 'A Manual of Hindu Pantheism: The Vedantasara,' by G. A. JACOB (1881); and finally the before-mentioned 'Message of Plato' by E. J. URWICK (Met.), who is convinced that Plato thought along ancient Hindu lines, and that for lack of this perception the academic view of the Platonic teaching is "an utterly lifeless view, an insult to the realities by which life lives." He further avows discipleship to Ānanda Āchārya. The work indicates that there is nothing new in a form of philosophy which begins and ends in an emotional state. The vigorous booklet 'Hundredth Century Philosophy' of C. K. WHEELER (Boston, 1906), though marked by much close reasoning to very different purpose, reveals the same temperamental tendency.

§ 32. The number of German histories of philosophy in the post-War period is so great as to indicate that the study is far from discredited in a large area. Thus we have, in alphabetical order:—E. V. ASTER'S short *Gesch. der antiken Philos.* (1920) and *Gesch. d. neuerer Erkenntnistheorie* (Descartes to Hegel: 1921); B. BAUCH'S *Gesch. der Philos.* (5 Bde. 1922-29); another, by various writers, in 7 v. (Leip. 1921-24); another, in separate monographs, by 25 specialists (38 Bde. Münch. 1921-31); P. DEUSSEN'S *Allg. Gesch. der Philos.* (2 large Bde. 1920); W. GENT'S history of the ideas of Space and Time (*Die Philos. d. Raumes u. Zeit*:

2 l. Bde. 1926-30); P. HINNEBEG's *Allg. Gesch. d. Philos.* (2nd ed. Leip. 1923); R. HONIGSWALD's *Philos. d. Alterthums* (Leip. 1924); R. KRÖNER's *Von Kant bis Hegel* (2 Bde. Tüb. 1921-4); W. MOEGS' composite *Geschichte* in divisions (4 Bde. 1931); R. MÜLLER-FREIENFELS' *Die Philos. d. 20. Jahrh.* (1923); K. VERLANDER's *Gesch. der Philos.* (7th ed. 1927: Leip.)—with reprints of older histories, and new works of general or period survey.

In France the activity in the same field is also abundant. Apart from the various *Études* of E. BOUTROUX, there are: a series of 15 vols. of *Études de philosophie médiévale* by 10 specialists, ed. by E. GILSON (1924-28); also E. BREHIER's *Hist. de la philos.* (3 t. to 18th c. 1928-30); R. G. DE BRITO's general history, beginning with *L'Antiquité*, 1931); A. CRESSON's *Courants de la pensée phil. franç.* (2 t. 1927), and *Les Systèmes philos.* (1931); A. WEBER's *Hist. de la philos. européenne* (éd. augmentée, 1925); L'MARITAIN's *Introduction générale à la philosophie* (1930); E. MEYERSON's *Du Cheminement de la pensée* (3 t. 1931); E. GILSON's *L'Esprit de la philos. médiévale* (1931); R. KREMER's *La Théorie de la connaissance chez les néo-réalistes anglais* (Louvain, 1928); E. LEROUX's *Le Pragmatisme américain et anglais* (1923); JEAN WAHL's 'The Pluralistic Philosophies of America and England' (E. tr. by F. Rothwell, N.Y. 1925), and G. GURVITCH's *Les Tendances actuelles de la philosophie allemande*, préf. by L. Brunschvieg (1930).

The total output may be regarded as economically analogous to that in the fields of religion, psychology, sociology, æsthetics, and other branches of mental science, in respect that it is an academic product, furthering university education in particular.

COURSE X

MORAL PHILOSOPHY, OR ETHICS

(THE PHILOSOPHY OF CONDUCT)

[Some of the works mentioned in this Course cover the philosophy of knowledge as well as that of conduct; but the former is separately dealt with above, as is psychology below.]

§ 1. Two objects may be had in view by those who approach moral philosophy—a knowledge of the evolution of “morality,” and a knowledge of the theories or doctrines of right and wrong that have been thus far propounded. The aim of this Course is to point to the means of approaching both. Within the present century there have been produced a number of ‘Introductions,’ and though the old ‘*Outlines of the History of Ethics*’ by Prof. HENRY SIDGWICK (6th ed. with new chapter by Prof. A. G. WIDGERY, 1931) is not to be counted as superseded, there are more exactly informatory handbooks, as the ‘*Short History of Ethics*’ by R. A. P. ROGERS (Mac. 1911); and the ‘*Introduction to Ethics*’ of Prof. F. THILLY of Missouri Univ. (Scrib. 1900). This is not to say that either book is logically flawless, but simply that both make for an ideal of scrupulous reasoning. Prof. J. S. MACKENZIE’s ‘*Manual of Ethics*’ (University Tutorial Press, 2nd ed. 1894), though frequently open to criticism, ably discusses the dialectic problems of ethics as a science of right and wrong.

Other standard treatises are:—Part II of BAIN’s ‘*Mental and Moral Science*’ (Lmns.); ‘*The Science of Ethics*,’ by LESLIE STEPHEN (S.E. 1882); ‘*The Methods of Ethics*,’ by HENRY SIDGWICK (Mac.); the ‘*Prolegomena to Ethics*’ of T. H. GREEN (Cl. Pr. 4th ed. 1899); H. RASHDALL’s ‘*The Theory of Good and Evil*’ (O.U.P. 1924); S. ALEXANDER’s ‘*Moral Order and Progress: An Analysis of Ethical Conceptions*’ (1889); ‘*The Philosophic Basis of Moral Obligation: A Study in Ethics*,’ by J. E. TURNER (Mac.); ‘*The Theory of Abstract Ethics*,’ by T. WHITTAKER (C.U.P. 1916); and the closely reasoned ‘*Principia Ethica*’ of G. E. MOORE (C.U.P. 1903), who has also contributed a handbook ‘*Ethics*’ (H.U.L.), marked by the same merit. Of another order is the manual ‘*Ethics: an Historical Introduction*,’

by STEPHEN WARD (O.U.P. 1924), strangely entitled by the publishers, on the cover, 'A History of Ethics.' That it is not. Its chief attraction is that it is intelligent, incisive, and unacademic, though oracular.

§ 2. A study of a number of these works tends to set up two requirements. "Ethics," or "morals," apparently, means the play of moral judgment throughout mankind; and "moral judgment" connotes human relations, individually perceived as "good" or "bad." These terms are primarily current, apparently, as naming *physical* states, individually felt to be agreeable or the reverse, by common consent. The irreducible personal impulse to attain or preserve or repeat the former is involved equally in the reaction towards or against *actions* or *conduct*, on the part of himself or others, which set up the same judgment of "*socially* agreeable or disagreeable." So far, the ground in discussion is common, provided that "moral" is recognised as implying a kind of relation *sui generis*, that is, a relatively reflective mental process, which sees conduct as implying a *mental proclivity*. Thus the terms "right" and "wrong" (which seem primarily to have signified (1) "straight" and (2) "crooked" or "wrung" = twisted—or, in Scots, *thrawn*) set up a distinct field or plane of judgment, dealing with another kind of contingency than "physical evil," though physical evil is in it recognised as accruing, for others, to the conduct regarded as "wrong."

The preliminary analysis, once made, may save the student from logical confusion; and his natural requirements are to know, first, how mankind came to have such a variety of divergent ethical codes (of sentiment, custom, theology, or law); and secondly, to know how the philosophic or academic discussion on the subject (criticised in its modern form by Mr. Ward) as to what is socially Right, or why we find an action right or wrong, has so commonly become a kind of higher casuistry as to what is *good*, in which the good and the right or just are seen as largely different things or objectives. The student may therefore fitly revert, first, to that study of the evolution of moral ideas indicated in Course I, § 10, and Course IV, §§ 1-6, following the surveys of Westermarck, Hobhouse, Letourneau, and others.

The small book of C. T. Gorham, 'Why we Do Right: A Rational View of Conscience' (Watts), is a nearly perfect primer; and the same writer's 'Ethics of the Great Religions' (1898) and 'Ethics of the Great French Rationalists' (1900) are useful guides. For the larger purposes of ethics the subject-matter is colligated and generalised in such works as 'The Natural History of Evil,' by A. G. Whyte (Watts, 1920); 'The Origin and Growth

of Moral Instinct,' by A. SUTHERLAND (2 v. Lmns. 1898); 'Animal and Human Conduct,' by RITTER and BAILEY (A. & U. 1928); 'A Review of the Systems of Ethics founded on Evolution,' by C. M. WILLIAMS (Mac. 1893); 'The Origin of the Knowledge of Right and Wrong,' by FRANZ BRENTANO (E. tr. Con. 1902); and 'Natural and Social Morals,' by Prof. CARVETH READ (Black, 1909), who candidly explained that he used a pleonastic title to guard against misconception, and that he had chosen to avoid "merely worrying the traditionary abstract ideas in the fashion of a scholastic age."

From such studies there may emerge the broad conclusions (1) that morals, or Ethics, is just the science of human conduct in the total relations in which it becomes a collective problem; (2) that moral feeling or judgment originally roots in the animal proclivities of self-maintenance, appetite, and gregariousness, with (3) correlative growths of sexual and familial reciprocity and sympathy, (4) tribal or social sympathy, (5) acceptance and reverence of fixed custom first held as socially useful against the impulses of deviation or aggression within the given group (as when the extremely strong intuition of the absolute justice or "duty" of blood-revenge is overruled by the purely utilitarian perception of its destructiveness to the social life). The prevailing code, further, is seen to be (6) always very imperfectly realised and (7) very slowly extensible to other groups; though (8) altruistic variation is always tending to modify the clash of egoisms in theory and practice—in "primitive" times as in our own.

But such a conception rather re-orientes than solves the debate as to (1) What is right and wrong, or, Why we so classify cases or forms of conduct; (2) How shall we finally codify our moral principles? Much recent academic discussion has apparently been controlled by the desire to evade or ignore the clash of opinion created by the long-standing promulgation of dogmas or intuitions as to the "divine revelation" of moral laws or codes, and the "divine" installation in "man" of a "conscience" giving clear guidance as to right and wrong—propositions which have been found to conflict with all historical knowledge of the diversity of racial and other codes, and the immense diversity of moral proclivity in individuals. And as the recognition of those diversities underlies the bulk of the ethical philosophy of the past, and much of the non-academic debate of the present, it is fitting to survey the course of ethical philosophy as such.

§ 3. The ethical aspects of Greek philosophy have been treated in the works of Zeller, Grote, Wallace, and others named in Course IX, §§ 3, 4. Many of the moralists of ancient Greece and Rome

deserve special study. The 'Ethics' of Aristotle, of which one of the best editions is illustrated with essays and notes by Sir ALEXANDER GRANT (Lmns.), has profoundly influenced students of conduct for two thousand years, and is still a text-book in colleges. [Cheap ed. of the Nicomachean Ethics in Scott's 1s. 6d. series; also in B.L.; and a very good one by PETERS (K.P.).] PLATO's ethical views are unsystematically set forth in many of his Dialogues. These reveal that, faced by the tempestuous political conditions of Greek life, Plato sought a guide or criterion in the idea of an "archetypal" GOOD. This doctrine is systematically explored and discussed in the latest monograph, 'Plato's Theory of Ethics: The Moral Criterion and the Highest Good,' by R. C. LODGE (K.P.). As to Socrates, see the works named in Course IX, §§ 3, 4, and M. M. DAWSON's 'The Ethics of Socrates' (Put. 1923). Of other ancient moralists there are interesting traces in 'The Lives and Opinions of Eminent Philosophers,' by DIOGENES LAËRTIUS (tr. in B.L.). CICERO's *De Officiis*, 'On Moral Duties,' and *De Finibus*, 'On Moral Ends,' are tr. (B.L.), as are selections from SENECA. Prof. W. L. DAVIDSON's 'The Stoic Creed' (Clark, 1907) is elucidative. Long gave trustworthy trans. of the 'Meditations' of MARCUS AURELIUS and of the 'Enchiridion' of EPICTETUS (B.L.), and both these works of the later Stoics should be appreciated. Of Roman ethics the best general survey is still perhaps that of Prof. C. MARTHA, *Les moralistes sous l'empire romain* (2e éd. 1866).

§ 4. For Oriental ethics the Tao-teh-King of LAO-TSE, the Analects of Confucius, and the Buddhist Dhammapada are among the most important texts (Course VI, § 9). Of the Chinese a good exposition is given by J. L. DE LANESSAN, *La morale des philosophes chinois* (1896). Chinese ethic is markedly secular; and this as well as its practical merit is well brought out in 'The Ethics of Confucius' by M. M. DAWSON (Put. 1915) and in Gen. G. G. ALEXANDER's 'Confucius the Great Teacher' (K.P. 1890). But, though ethical manuals generally ignore the subject, Confucius was followed by a series of powerful ethical thinkers, as well worth study as the Europeans of antiquity. (A survey, with extracts and refs., in ch. iii of Pt. III of 'A Short Hist. of Morals' by the editor. Watts, 1920). As to Buddhism, see Course VI, § 9. 'The Bodhisattva Doctrine in Buddhist Sanskrit Literature,' by Dr. HAR DAYAL (K.P. 1932), is a recent scholarly survey of the development of ethical doctrines within that faith. 'The Imitation of Buddha,' comp. by E. BOWDEN (Met.) is a praiseworthy selection drawn from Buddhist scriptures; but, like most of the kind, it gives only their best teachings. (Ch. iv

of Pt. III of 'Short Hist.' discusses the ethics of Buddhism in its central doctrine.)

M. D. CONWAY's useful 'Sacred Anthology' gives moral extracts from the scriptures of various faiths, as does the compilation edited by Dr. W. C. COUPLAND, 'Thoughts and Aspirations of the Ages' (Son.).

§ 5. A study of the preceding works will sufficiently show that much that is claimed as peculiar to Christian ethics is not so (this by the admission of J. H. Newman). Even its supposed *peculia* of the inculcation of humility, the return of good for injuries, and alienation from "the world" and "the flesh," are all found in Buddhism. Historically, Christian ethic appears largely of an anti-secular, negative, and ascetic character, reflected in the treatises of the pseudo-Dionysius "the Areopagite" and St. Thomas Aquinas, who, however, united Aristotelianism and Christian dogma. A brief survey of the subject is made in SIDGWICK's 'Outlines' above mentioned. See also the works of Lecky, Farrer, Hatch, McCabe, and Willoughby, specified in Courses VIII, § 20b, and IV, §§ 5, 6. There are many writers on Christian ethics, the most valuable being those who treat the subject historically, as STÄUDLIN in his *Geschichte der Sittenlehre Jesu*, and LUTHARDT, whose 'History of Christian Ethics' represents modern orthodoxy, as in a measure do also Prof. DORNER's 'System of Christian Ethics' and Dr. MARTENSEN's 'Christian Ethics: General,' and 'Special' (3 v. Clark). A later work, the *Geschichte der christlichen Ethik*, by THEOBALD ZIEGLER (1892), has disturbed Neo-Christians. The genial 'History of Ethics Within Organized Christianity,' by Prof. T. C. HALL, D.D. (Eng. ed. F.U. 1910), is confessedly partisan, but is well-meaning in its inclusion of *anti-Christian* moralists as well-meaning in turn. For criticism of the Christian theory of morals may be noted *La morale de l'église et la morale naturelle*, by M. L. BOUTTEVILLE (1866); *La morale fouillée dans ses fondements*, by R. SIÈREBOIS (1866); Bentham and Grote's keen 'Analysis of the Influence of Natural Religion on the Temporal Happiness of Mankind,' issued under the name of Philip Beauchamp (rep. 1875); and *La morale*, by YVES GUYOT (1883).

§ 6. It was in the sphere of Christian ethics that there arose the discussion as to so-called "free-will," the Greeks having seen here no clear ethical problem, though a conception of a coercive destiny largely pervaded Greek literature. The doctrine of foreordination, passed on by Judaism to Pauline Christianity, early in the Church's history gave rise to much dispute. On this the reader of German may consult HUBER's *Die Philosophie der*

Kirchenwäter; but the ground is also covered by Ueberweg (Course IX, § 2). From the time of PELAGIUS there was a chronic debate in the Church as to whether men's deeds and their salvation were predetermined or "free," in which both LUTHER and CALVIN (as to whose ethics see vol. ii of LUTHARDT'S 'History' above mentioned) were involved. The revival of Pelagian views by the school of ARMINIUS led to furious strife in Holland, and had something to do with the beginnings of the Civil War in England.

§ 7. At this point the problem passed into the hands of secular philosophy, and the rationalistic as distinct from the theological form of determinism was first effectually set out by HOBBS in his tract 'Of Liberty and Necessity' (1652), and his lengthy controversy with Bramhall (1656). The position reached by Hobbes is with signal ability cleared and restated by **Anthony Collins** in his '**Philosophical Inquiry concerning Human Liberty**' (1717: 3rd ed. corrected 1735; rep. 1890), on which no substantial improvement has been made by later writers as regards the ethical problem.

The determinist position being from the time of Hobbes onward associated with rationalism, the prevailing tendency of religious writers has been to revert to an uncritical assertion of "free-will"; but the theological or predestinarian form of the principle of determinism was restated with extraordinary ability by the Rev. JONATHAN EDWARDS in his 'Inquiry into . . . Freedom of Will' (1754: sep. rep. 1762, 1790; also in 'Works,' 8 v. 1808, and in 2 large v. London, 1840. H. W. CARR'S bibliog. note in his 6d. manual 'The Freewill Problem,' Benn, 1928, is astray). To this day there is much debate on the lines thus laid down, some recent writers, as H. Sidgwick, showing a tendency to profess determinism with avowals of perplexity. The new treatise, 'Freedom of Will,' by Prof. N. O. LOOSKY of Prague (E. tr. W. & N. 1932) is learned and able, but remains theistically dualist. (On the problem of the term, cp. 'Sh. Hist. of Morals,' *per index*.)

§ 8. HOBBS was also the first who in England supplied the starting-point for an independent moral philosophy. He held that all human impulses were, when analysed, self-regarding. This view, conjoined with a political theory of absolute rule and moral regulation, appears in his 'Leviathan.' SPINOZA also sought, though in another quarter, for an independent basis to ethics, and his 'Ethica' (E. tr. in Ev. Lib. Dent; also in B.L. ed. of works) is one of the classics of moral philosophy. See H. H. JOACHIM, 'A Study in the Ethics of Spinoza' (O.U.P. 1901). The French philosopher MALEBRANCHE (Course IX, § 10) published (1684) a 'Treatise of Morality' (E. tr. 1699) which is largely naturalistic, but applies the doctrine of useful influence to the dogma of future

punishments. The views of Hobbes were in England combated by the Cambridge moralists, H. More, R. Cudworth, and R. Cumberland, as to whom see Sir J. Mackintosh's treatise '**On the Progress of Ethical Philosophy**' (4th ed. by Whewell, 1872), and WHEWELL'S '**Lectures on the History of Moral Philosophy**' (rep. 1862).

LOCKE in his '**Essay on the Human Understanding**,' treating morality as the law of God, agrees with Hobbes as to the egoistic basis of rational conduct; while SHAFTESBURY seeks to show a harmony between man's social affections and his self-regarding instincts. The relative nature of morality was forcibly illustrated by BERNARD MANDEVILLE, who, in his suggestive '**Fable of the Bees: or Private Vices Public Benefits**' (1714), undertook to show that human frailties were to the advantage of civil society. The idea is developed in his later works. Mandeville was answered by William Law, Berkeley, Hutcheson, and others (as to whose criticisms see essay on Mandeville in the editor's '**Pioneer Humanists**'). Hutcheson further elaborated something like an ethical system on the basis of Shaftesbury; and both writers are adequately and sympathetically expounded in Prof. FOWLER'S '**Shaftesbury and Hutcheson**' (Eng. Phil. ser., Low, 1882). SHAFTESBURY'S '**Characteristics**' have been edited by the present editor (Richards, 1900) with annot. and an intro. wherein is set forth the view that his ethic is substantially derived from Spinoza. Hutcheson has not been reprinted since the 18th c., but there is a very complete study of his life and philosophy by Dr. W. R. SCOTT, '**Francis Hutcheson: His Life, Teaching, and Position in the History of Philosophy**' (C.U.P. 1900); and he is further dealt with as founder of the Scottish school by Dr. McCOSH in his survey, '**The Scottish Philosophy**' (Mac. 1875).

§ 9. The British ethical literature of this period is remarkably abundant, as may be gathered from the work of Dr. Scott. A good view of its general character is to be had from the compilation of Sir L. SELBY-BIGGE, '**British Moralists**' (2 v. Cl. Pr. 1897), where the student would do well to examine the lucubration of the Rev. JOHN GAY (see § 10), one of the first to realise the egoist *and* sympathetic basis of moral proclivity, even under a theistic formula. (Discussed in '**S. H. of M.**,' pp. 277 sq., 305 sq.)

A specially clear light is thrown on the whole period in the work of Dr. JAMES BONAR (A. & U. 1930) entitled '**Moral Sense**.' The effect of that terse but well-documented survey is to show how, in the movement from Shaftesbury down to Kant, the theorem embodied in the phrase "**moral sense**" revealed itself as an attempt to create a governing force out of a mere generalisation of the phenomena; moral sense being no more an entity

than "political sense" or the modern "traffic sense"—statements which imply correlative defect.

HUME entitled his 'Treatise of Human Nature' (Course IX, § 12) "an attempt to introduce the experimental method of reasoning into moral subjects." The tendency of his work was also to show the relativity of morals, and he pointed out how many of our virtues were due to civilisation, not belonging to man "in his ruder and more natural condition." In addition to the light given by the monographs on Hume mentioned in the previous Course, some may be here drawn from the introd. by Dr. J. H. HYSLOP to the ethical sections of Hume's 'Treatise of Human Nature' (Ginn, 1893), and from the hostile French monograph *David Hume, moraliste et sociologue* by G. LECHARTIER (1900). Hume's friend ADAM SMITH, in his 'Theory of Moral Sentiments' (B.L.) attempted to trace morality to the sentiment of sympathy, as does SCHOPENHAUER in his 'Fourfold Root' (E. tr. B.L.) and 'The Basis of Morality' (E. tr. Son.). Smith's ethic is discussed in HALDANE'S monograph in the G.W. series, as well as in the general surveys of Mackintosh and Sidgwick.

§ 10. In the age of Hobbes, the principle of utilitarianism, as the final rational *test* of codes and intuitions alike, had been coming to the front even under professedly theistic forms, which often gave a malevolent turn to the exposition as distinct from the argument. It had been explicitly put by Cicero and Horace (*De Legibus*, i, 15; 1 *Sat.* iii, 98-124), and implicitly in the gospels ("What shall it *profit* a man . . . ?"), and can be seen in the light of anthropology to underlie in some degree all primitive codes, taboos, and customs, which last in particular could not have survived save on partly utilitarian assumptions. But theology was both theoretically and practically committed to a compromise.

As against the strictly utilitarian conception of morals, which in the hands of Hume becomes recognisably compatible with the intuitionist conception, there arose in England an orthodox species of the former. Its most original theoretic form, perhaps, is that of the treatise by the Rev. JOHN GAY, pref. to the trans. by E. Law of Archbishop King's *De Origine Mali* (1731). Led up to by the 'Treatise of the Laws of Nature' of Bishop CUMBERLAND (orig. Lat. 1672; E. tr. 1727), it was further developed out of the heterodox ethic of Shaftesbury, systematised by Hutcheson; but was substantially adopted by Bishop Butler, whose ethical views are to be found in his Sermons; concerning which see some good remarks in F. H. HAYWARD'S book on 'The Ethical Philosophy of Sidgwick' (Son. 1901). Butler is also discussed in the surveys of Mackintosh and Whewell, before mentioned. There is a monograph on him by the Rev. W. L. COLLINS (Ph. Cl.);

and an excellent article by Prof. ADAMSON in the *Encyc. Brit.*; and Mr. GLADSTONE vigorously championed him in 'Studies Subsidiary to the Works of Bishop Butler' (Cl. Pr. 1896). After Butler, PALEY made the utilitarian principle the basis of his Christian 'Moral Philosophy,' carrying it to the extent of making not only expediency the end, but self-interest the motive of virtue. This, however, he expressly joined to the orthodox doctrine of future rewards and punishments, thus securing a wide acceptance for the rest, and replacing the intuitionist claim, for his audience, by one not likely to secure for utilitarianism a philosophic status, but ostensibly helpful to religion, which was thus reduced to a "materialism" of its own.

The total intuitionist tradition, on the other hand, was carried on by Reid (Course IX, § 13) and by Dugald Stewart, who is sympathetically treated in McCOSH's volume on 'The Scottish Philosophy' (Mac. 1875). Those who wish to follow the fortunes of this way of thought may note its developments in WHEWELL's 'Elements of Morality including Polity' (4th ed. 1864; criticised in vol. ii of J. S. MILL's 'Dissertations and Discussions'), as well as in his Lectures; and in the later 'Prolegomena to Ethics' of T. H. GREEN, and the 'Types of Ethical Theory' of JAMES MARTINEAU, the two most highly esteemed works on the transcendentalist side in modern England. The 'Constructive Ethics' of W. L. COURTNEY (C. & H. 1886) is also worth attention for its criticism of rationalistic positions and its exposition of an "ethic based on God."

§ 11. After utilitarianism had thus been made popular by the current theology, BENTHAM in his 'Deontology' and 'Introduction to the Principles of Morals and Legislation' discarded theology, and founded morality on the observed tendencies of actions, following BECCARIA and HELVÉTIUS in assigning the greatest happiness of the greatest number as the test of conduct. These views were supported by JAMES MILL, in his 'Fragment on Mackintosh' (o. p.), and in his 'Analysis of the Human Mind,' chs. 22 and 23. His son, J. S. MILL, devotes the last book of his 'System of Logic' to the logic of the moral sciences, which he further expounds in his 'Utilitarianism,' an unfortunately inconsistent exposition. G. GROTE, in his 'Fragments on Ethical Subjects' (Mur.), shows the same influence. From these positions was developed a new formulation of rationalistic ethic under the unfortunate title of "Hedonism," over which there raged a verbalist debate; and modern English ethics in consequence largely ran to discussion of why men should find some abstract ground other than utility for their preferences. Yet the utilitarian pleas in general always pointed to utility as the

ultimate test; not a prescribed calculation of normal motives in daily action.

Utilitarianism as expounded by the Bentham-Mill school has undergone much criticism, notably in Prof. JOHN GROTE'S 'Examination of the Utilitarian Philosophy' (posth. 1870), and in the works of Whewell and Martineau. A fairly just 'History of English Utilitarianism' has been produced by Dr. E. ALBEE, of Cornell Univ. (Son. 1902); but this should be checked by Sir LESLIE STEPHEN'S work 'The English Utilitarians' (Duck. 3 v. 1900), of which the first volume deals with Bentham, the second with James Mill, and the third with John Stuart Mill. There is a separate study of 'The Ethics of John Stuart Mill' by CHARLES DOUGLAS (Bld. 1897).

§ 12. In Germany the—or an—intuitionist view of ethics was put forth by KANT in his 'Critique of Practical Reason' and 'Metaphysics of Ethics' (as to which see A. CRESSON, *La morale de Kant* [1897], and the later work of FÉLIX SARTIAUX, *Morale Kantienne et morale humaine*: Hachette, 1917; also the critical and expository works mentioned in the preceding Course; and the searching criticism in Schopenhauer's 'Basis of Morality,' mentioned below). 'Kantian Ethics and the Ethics of Evolution: A Critical Study,' by Dr. J. G. SCHURMAN (W. & N. 1881) admits, and shows, that the 'Critique of Practical Reason' is in vital conflict with the 'Critique of Pure Reason' in its moral philosophy. "Necessity is the outcome of the one; freedom is the burden of the other. And it is impossible to effect a reconciliation between them." Nor does Dr. Schurman, in seeking to find a new footing for Kant's ethic, recognise the philosophic problem obscured by the word "freedom"—as is the determinist doctrine by the term "necessity," both being irrelevant to the concept of Evolution. As Vaihinger shows (Course IX, § 15), Kant's attitude on theistic problems takes the shape of an "As If" procedure. In detail, his prescriptions of Prayer, Oath-taking, and orthodox preaching by clerics who did not hold the Bible creed are vindicated on "pragmatic" grounds; and the fulmination of an absolute duty to speak only the truth, even to a would-be murderer, on the principle of the "categorical imperative," is thus stultified.

From Kant's position there was a partial return towards reasoned naturalism in the doctrine of FICHTE (works named in Course IX, § 16); on which see Dr. Adamson's monograph, also above mentioned. HEGEL'S ethic is to be gathered from his 'Philosophy of Right' (E. tr. Bell, 1896); Schopenhauer's as aforesaid, from his 'Fourfold Root,' but also from his 'The World as Will and Idea' (E. tr. K.P. 3 v. 1883, etc.), and particularly from his essay 'The Basis of Morality,' trans. by A. B.

Bullock (Son. 1903). The last work is specially important; but the student should note (what Schopenhauer and his translator do not) that the ethical thesis of the book is partly on all-fours with that of Smith.

After Schopenhauer, in the last century, the most noted German utterance on ethical matters was that of the "prophetic" Nietzsche. Vaihinger has shown, in his '*Philosophy of As If*,' that in his earlier writings Nietzsche insisted on the value of illusion and delusion in thought and action as "regulative fictions," and did so later even in the period in which he was attacking religious "fictions" as such. In Vaihinger's view, accordingly, he would, but for his mental breakdown, have "justified the utility and necessity of religious fictions." In actual fact, he propounded a gospel of self-affirming Egoism.

§ 13. In England the evolution was strikingly different. Twenty years before the appearance of Darwin's '*Origin of Species*,' W. H. SMITH published a rather adroitly entitled '*Discourse on Ethics of the School of Paley*' (1839) which added to the deductive utilitarianism of Bentham an inductive theory of the social origin and evolution of morals. This created no perceptible school; but the threefold concept of heredity, evolution, and total utilitarianism necessarily took ethical form; BAIN in his '*Emotions and the Will*,' and GEORGE GROTE in his '*Fragments on Ethical Subjects*' (1876), contributing by psychological analysis and regulative ideas. After, if not as a result of, much debate, an evolutionary system of theoretic and practical ethics was framed on one line in Spencer's '*Principles of Ethics*' (W. & N.; 2 v. 1892-3), of which the sections entitled '*The Data of Ethics*' and '*Justice*' (which were separately published) are specially important. As befitted his basis, Spencer in the latter work grasps the practical problem. In substantial sympathy with the evolutionary method is Sir LESLIE STEPHEN's '*Science of Ethics*,' before mentioned, which seeks to bring the ethics of utility as taught by Hume, Bentham, the Mills, and Lewes, into harmony with the principle. Sidgwick's '*Methods*' on one side, and Martineau's '*Types*' on another, represented the modified reactions of the older intuitionism.

More fundamental, perhaps, is the criticism in Prof. W. R. SORLEY's notable book, '*The Ethics of Naturalism*' (Bld. 1885; 2nd ed. 1904). Here it is argued that the growth of "unrestricted" sympathy "cannot have been produced by the operation of natural selection"—an apparently undesigned contribution to a pessimistic forecast. At this stage the traditional theological doctrines of human history have practically

disappeared, without being openly renounced, while evolution is faced without conceiving it as involving inward or moral reactions to changes politically wrought and imposed. [The risks of fallacy in applying the concept of natural selection to the mental life are well indicated in D. G. RITCHIE's 'Studies in Political and Social Ethics,' i (Son. 1902).] At the same time, the contention of Prof. Sorley, that "the gradual evolution of conduct, its *nature* and *end*, can only be *explained* by a *principle* that *transcends experience*," is a transference of the problem from ethics to epistemology, without "explanation" of either the alleged "principle" or the mode of its operation. [For if the thesis be insisted on as ethical, it can yield only the old conclusion that the Evil and the Good are alike foreordained and wrought by an Unknown Power, thus conceived as wholly disparate from the "moral man," though a subsumed analogy has been the basis and content of the theory of "Cosmic Purpose."] If there is to be a moral philosophy at all, then, its "end" would appear to be the establishment of certain positive and negative principles for "other-regarding" conduct, leaving individual proclivity free as before to seek its socially-permitted ends. For the prevailing academic attitude to the problem, the student may presumably rely on 'A Study of Ethical Principles' by Prof. JAMES SETH (18th ed. n.d. Bld.).

§ 14. Some suggestive applications to the new conditions of civilised society are found in FOWLER's 'Progressive Morality' (Mac.); but his 'Principles of Morals' (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1886-87) is useful chiefly for its survey of previous literature. H. Sidgwick's 'Practical Ethics' (1898, A. & U.) is an interesting collection of addresses and essays; and Prof. D. G. RITCHIE's 'Studies in Political and Social Ethics' (same) has independent value. The work of Dr. J. K. INGRAM, 'Practical Morals' (Black, 1904), applies the principles of Comtism to the problem. A special application to the suppression of national antagonism appears in 'The Morality of Nations: A Study in the Evolution of Ethics,' by HUGH TAYLOR (K.P. 1888); and Miss J. H. CLAPPERTON in her 'Scientific Meliorism' (K.P. 1885) throws out suggestions for the evolution of social happiness through moral education. See also Prof. LADD's 'Philosophy of Conduct,' named in Course IX, § 12.

Specially stimulating on the abstract side is F. H. BRADLEY's 'Ethical Studies,' a reaction against the ethical logic of Sidgwick (1877: rep. 1927, Cl. Pr. with added notes). It denies that ethics is concerned with practical questions of conduct at all, but by implication passes some sweeping judgments on questions of conduct. Incidentally, pressing the thesis that Aristotle's "wise

man" is the court of appeal, it argues that "he who thinks he is better than the rest of the world is already on the threshold of immorality"—a position commonly admitted to describe all human beings. The book, like 'Appearance and Reality,' was acutely criticised by Dr. ALFRED HODDER in 'The Adversaries of the Sceptic' (Course IX, § 22). See also, in this connection, 'The Problem of Conduct: A Study in the Phenomenology of Ethics,' by A. E. TAYLOR (Mac. 1901); 'The Psychology of Ethics,' by Prof. DAVID IRONS (Bld. 1903); 'Principia Ethica,' by G. E. MOORE, and, in general, the works specified above, §§ 1, 2.

§ 15. In Europe, the ethical doctrine of COMTE, founded on his Religion of Humanity, is chiefly set forth in his 'Catechism of Positive Philosophy,' tr. by Dr. Congreve. As to the positions taken up in the *Éthik* of Prof. W. WUNDT, the English reader can inform himself through the trans. of the Introduction (A. & U. rep. 1924). B. CARNER's *Grundlegung der Ethik* (Vienna) also gives a natural hedonistic evolutionary basis for morals, as does G. SIMMEL's *Einleitung in die Moral-wissenschaft* (2 Bde. 1892-3), which is determinist. Other works of high repute are Prof. F. PAULSEN's 'System of Ethics' (E. tr. K.P. 1899) and JODL's *Geschichte der Ethik* (2 Bde. 1882-89). Specially important is the 'Ethics' of N. HARTMANN (3 v. A. & U. 1932), tr. by Dr. COIT, who had previously trans. GIZYCKI's 'Elements of Ethics.'

M. J. GUYAU in his *Esquisse d'une morale sans obligation ni sanction* (1885) lays the foundation of morality in acquiring the most intensive and extensive life possible. Perhaps the principal modern French work on moral philosophy is that of CH. RENOUVIER, *La science de la morale* (2 t. 1869); but the essay of A. CRESSON, *La morale et la raison théorique* (1903), is worth attention. One of the freshest and most original works of the kind is G. L. DUPRAT's *La morale: Fondements psycho-sociologiques d'une conduite rationnelle* (1901). The Eng. trans. (C.S.S.) was unfortunately inaccurate. The same author has made an ethico-psychological study of *La mensonge* (1903).

A. BAYOT is producing a new and unique *Histoire de la morale en France* (2 t. pub. 1930-31), the first two vols. dealing with ancient Gaul and the Gallo-Roman period; and L. LÉVY-BRUHL's *La morale et la science des mœurs* (10e éd. 1930) expounds the practical problem from the Positivist side; while D. PARODI sets forth *Le problème moral et la pensée contemporaine* (3e éd. 1930). J. BARUZI's *Le problème moral* (1926) is another testimony to the practical interest now at work.

§ 16. It may be observed in conclusion that a vast amount of the literature of ethics neither gives nor pretends to give light on the larger practical problems of right and wrong; and that for the

reasonings which aim at rectification of current standards the reader will have to turn to the writings of eugenists, political reformers, peace-seekers, and humanitarians. The practical problem, in other words, is passed on to Politics, Economics, and Sociology. Since, then, the philosophies of "As If" and "Pragmatism" (Course IX, § 28) either subordinate or dismiss the socio-ethical imperative of "truth as the test for *all* doctrine," even in the act of offering a truth-ignoring doctrine *as* truth of propaganda for action, the cause of rational ethics will at least be in less danger from propagandas which, however defective in their own truth-testing, recognise the principle.

On the other hand, the "categorical imperative" (*Liberum esse hominem est necesse: vivere non est necesse*) of the Italian moralist JUVALTA (whose thesis is adopted and ably expounded in Mr. WHITTAKER's 'Theory of Abstract Ethics,' § 1), does not appear to be historically verifiable, and as a politico-ethical maxim appears to be addressed to *States* already self-governing, without implying any clear universal code, though ostensibly a political maxim. The concept "free" is undefined alike for individual and for State in the formula "it is necessary for man to be free"; and in the antithetic "to live is not a necessity" there is no guidance save in the state of war.

Finally, in the strenuous work entitled 'The Ethical Aspects of Evolution regarded as the Parallel Growth of Opposite Tendencies,' by W. BENETT (Cl. Pr. 1908), the argument (which displays inacquaintance with those of Hedonism and Utilitarianism) resolves itself into the proposition that the "end" of life is to be treated as unknown, and the only valid ethical motive "transcendental." The only guidance indicated appears to be that of unspecified "religion." The same author's 'Justice and Happiness' (Cl. Pr. 1911), with similar reticence, but with unlimited censure for all pursuit of Happiness, in effect decides for the necessity of future rewards *and punishments* as the due posthumous rectification of tellurian life—a return to old positions.

The issue is thus between a rectified "humanist" ethic and one of theological pessimism as regards all humanism. The admired Brentano concluded his famous lecture at Vienna with a plea for a fuller philosophical training of jurists. In the end he was acutely at strife with moralists of other countries over a World War which started from Vienna. The esteemed English Professor Ritchie, a valued moralist, had in his time a similar experience. It would thus appear as if practical political machinery may have to give a lead to academic ethics in the future as it did in the past.

The recent work of Dr. C. D. BROAD, 'Five Types of Ethical Theory' (K.P. 1930), which passes vivacious criticism on Spinoza,

Butler, Hume, Kant, and Sidgwick—arguing with the latter, but ranking him above Bradley and Green as thinker—avows some lack of ethical enthusiasm. The ‘Moral Experience’ of Mr. HENRY STURT, again (Watts, 1928), which denies that ‘reason’ can adequately guide or prescribe conduct, proceeds on a concept of reason as a separate entity, outside proclivity or feeling, which will not bear psychological analysis. His own prescriptions are really in terms of reason. More satisfactory, therefore, is the progressive attitude taken up in ‘Ethics and some Modern World-Problems’ by W. McDUGALL (Met. 2nd ed. 1924).

COURSE XI

LOGIC

Preamble.—The need for vigilance and exactitude in reasoning is so obvious in the two preceding Courses of Study in particular that Logic = the science (and art) of reasoning, or, more exactly, the science of proof, might be counted a preliminary requisite. But it seems to be the fact that some practice in reasoning and the Analysis of evidence, whether in philosophy, history, or the exact sciences, is the best preparation for the intelligent study of logic. It has been declared by many that a youthful drill in the Formal Logic which has come down to us from the "scholastic" age has no value as a training, being largely a mere formulation of typical sequences of reasoning to which all thinking men assent.

There is reason to believe, nevertheless, that all such disciplines, arranged in good faith, have had some intellectual value. Seeing, however, that the habits of reasoning practised in the centuries in which such manuals were in use permitted many of the thinkers so educated to accept without question doctrines now generally doubted or discredited, it would appear that the old procedure calls for analysis and extension if it is to be either a valid statement of the mental processes by which testable opinions are formed, or a guide towards their formation.

The late Professor CARVETH READ, in his able early essay 'On the Theory of Logic' (1878), acutely following up and checking the work done by Mill, Spencer, and Bain, proposed to present Logic, in broad agreement with them, as "a Science of universal matter-of-fact." In terms of that principle, he relegated "the theory of reasoning" to Psychology; and sought the proper work of Logic, which in the scholastic age was represented only by the reasoning done on "the most general laws of the correlation of phenomena." Recognising that whereas the old logic was mainly deductive, and that the modern advance of Induction had destroyed the old symmetry, he proposed "to restore to Logic the synthetic order of exposition," regarding "classification" as the bulk of its business.

This, being a reconstruction of logic in the most formal fashion,

giving it the semblance of a mathematical calculus, would probably, if academically adopted, have created a demand for some other way of teaching people how to think critically, since the sciences themselves (apart from mathematics) do not in general so proceed, and the humanist sciences still less so. The apparent need is for a kind of discipline which makes it fairly clear how propositions are "proved"; and by what use of that discipline *all* opinions on social and historical causation are to be justified or modified.

§ 1. From any point of view as to the best way of learning to reason soundly, the student can hardly do better than begin with Prof. Minto's '**Logic, Inductive and Deductive**' (U.E.M. 1893). He will there get a clear idea of the manner of origination of Formal Logic among the Greeks, and a good presentation, by an original and accomplished thinker, of its methods as latterly extended. Prof. R. ADAMSON's '**Short History of Logic**,' ed. by Prof. W. R. SORLEY (Bld. 1911), widens the service by a philosophic and critical study of the subject; as does Carveth Read in his brief survey. A student tractable to the formal method may find guidance, further, in such a well-tried manual as the '**Introduction to Logic**' of H. W. B. JOSEPH (Cl. Pr. 1916), or the '**Logic, Deductive and Inductive**,' of CARVETH READ, a later work than his Essay (Richards, 2nd ed. 1901); or Miss L. S. STEBBING's '**A Modern Introduction to Logic**' (Met. 1930).

Those, however, who are not conscious of much help from the formal method may usefully turn to Alfred Sidgwick's little book, '**The Process of Argument**' (Black, 1893), the work of a university teacher who took the view in question. This is in effect a renewal of the protest made in the old work of SAMUEL BAILEY (1851) on '**The Theory of Reasoning**,' which is still worth perusal. From the '**Process of Argument**' the student will probably proceed with increased interest to A. SIDGWICK's '**The Application of Logic**' (Mac.); or to one of the later fruits of modern scientific and philosophical discussion, as E. L. CLARKE's '**The Art of Straight Thinking**' (App. 1929) or F. BARRY's '**The Scientific Habit of Thought, An Informal Discussion of the Science and Character of Dependable Knowledge**' (N.Y. 1928). Alternatively, the '**Induction and Deduction**' of Constance C. W. NADEN (Bickers, 1890), whose originality so impressed Herbert Spencer, will be found a stimulating survey of the succession of historical ideas on the subject, which has critical value independently of her "**Hylō-Idealism**." The old '**Prolegomena Logica: an Inquiry into the Psychological Character of Logical Processes**,' by Dean MANSEL (1851) has also historical interest.

§ 2. Once entered, whether for its own sake or for discipline in all processes of inquiry, the study may be usefully extended by way of JOHN STUART MILL'S 'System of Logic' (Lmns. and other cheap reps.), and the two volumes of Prof. BAIN on 'Deduction' and 'Induction' (Lmns.). The last-named is a valuable repertory of rules and instances of applied logic, and may profitably be read first. Mill's great work has a manifold and enduring value, as being a result of the impulse given by modern science in general to this. "The reform of logic in this country," wrote Mr. Bosanquet, "dates from the work of Stuart Mill, whose genius placed him, in spite of all philosophical shortcomings, on the right side, as against the degenerate representatives of Aristotle." Mill is, however, open to serious criticism at a number of points; and this is offered on different lines by Minto, by Bain in the works mentioned, by Jevons in a series of review articles in 1877-79, by Prof. VEITCH in his 'Institutes of Logic' (Bld. 1885), and by the late F. H. BRADLEY in his 'Principles of Logic' (2nd ed. Cl. Pr. 1922), where it is admitted that notation of the faulty parts of the system leaves it in the main sound.

§ 3. The work of Veitch is worth reading as giving a survey of the history of logic and a wider view of the literature of logical discussion than is offered by those previously mentioned. Fuller at some points on the historical side, and philosophically more weighty, is UEBERWEG'S 'System of Logic and History of Logical Doctrines' (E. tr. Lmns. 1871). Those who desire a still more detailed history of logical developments should turn to PRANTL'S great *Geschichte der Logik im Abendlande* (4 Bde. 1855-70). A very intelligent exposition of the English logicians of the nineteenth century, down to Jevons, was given in LOUIS LIARD'S *Les logiciens anglais contemporains* (1878).

§ 4. The later developments of logical science are to be followed in the massive work of Prof. J. M. BALDWIN, 'Thought and Things: A Study of the Development and Meaning of Thought, or Genetic Logic' (A. & U. 3 v. 1905-11); and the no less massive 'Treatise of Formal Logic' by Prof. J. J. JØRGENSEN of Copenhagen (Milford, 3 v. 1931), which competently deals with the mathematical and other aspects of the science as latterly developed. The nature of the problem may be specially studied in 'The Province of Logic: An Interpretation of certain parts of Cook Wilson's "Statement and Inference"', by RICHARD ROBINSON (Rout. 1931). The important 'Statement and Inference,' ed. by A. S. L. FARQUHARSON, is in 2 v. (Cl. Pr. 1926).

Earlier stages of the attempted reconstruction since Mill are

represented in B. BOSANQUET's 'Logic, or the Morphology of Knowledge' (2 v. O.U.P. 2nd ed. 1911). The works of W. STANLEY JEVONS, who criticised Mill, do not latterly place him in the front rank, but his 'Principles of Science' and 'Pure Logic: and other Minor Works' are reprinted (Mac.). Jevons's works will bring the student into connection with Prof. GEORGE BOOLE, whose application of mathematical methods to logic in his 'Mathematical Analysis of Logic' (Mac.) is held by experts in that branch to mark an epoch in the science. For the developments of Symbolic Logic see the able work of Dr. JOHN VENN under that title (Mac.), also the 'Formal Logic' of J. NEVILLE KEYNES (same). Dr. Venn's larger work, 'The Principles of Empirical or Inductive Logic' (same), is one of the most competent systems of its period.

§ 5. In the works of Jevons will be found some stringent criticism of the logic of Sir William Hamilton, who, however, is of sufficient importance to challenge the attention of all who seek to make an all-round study of the subject. His doctrine is set forth mainly in his 'Lectures on Logic and Metaphysics' (4 v.), but also partly in his 'Discussions on Philosophy and Literature,' etc. (1852). The strictures of Jevons on Hamilton go far to justify doubts as to the special value of formalist methods as a training for the reasoning faculty; and when Jevons in turn is shown to be at many points open to similar criticism, the doubt is deepened. It is noteworthy, however, that F. H. BRADLEY, in his 'Principles of Logic,' avows a greater debt to Jevons than to any other English logician, while convicting him of some very futile reasoning. Mr. Bradley's book may be recommended to the diligent student as fitted to try his reasoning powers, trenching as it does on both metaphysics and psychology. It is apt to be vivid without being lucid, and is unduly convulsive in manner; but its originality is unquestionable. It makes notably little account of the mathematical method. A study, further, of B. BOSANQUET's criticism of the book in his 'Knowledge and Reality' (K.P. 1885) will be found no less educative than the work criticised, and more agreeable in the matter of literary amenity. BOSANQUET's later work, 'The Essentials of Logic' (Mac. 1922), is usefully to be studied, as indicating the survival of the Hegelian philosophy; as is his essay, 'Logic as the Science of Knowledge,' in the vol. of 'Essays in Philos. Crit.,' ed. by Seth and Haldane, with pref. by E. Caird (Lmns. 1883).

§ 6. A vitally important department of logic is that which has come to be labelled with the term "probability." This line of discussion, dating from the 17th c., has a literature of its own—sketched in the preface to DE MORGAN's 'Essay on Probabilities'

(1838), and fully set forth in Dr. TODHUNTER'S standard work, 'A History of the Mathematical Theory of Probabilities from the time of Pascal to that of Laplace' (Mac. 1865). The discussion trenches on mathematics and on actuarial practice; but De Morgan's book is still worth examining on the logical side. The question of probability is handled in a particularly interesting way in Dr. John Venn's treatise, '**The Logic of Chance**' (1866; 2nd ed. greatly enl. 1876), which treats the subject with reference especially to "its logical bearings and its application to moral and social science." Another side of the problem is presented in the late Cardinal NEWMAN'S 'Grammar of Assent,' a critical perusal of which might be a profitable test of the student's power of detecting fallacy. He should, however, read every book alike with an eye to possible error. Even the last-named work of Dr. Venn, deservedly praised by Mill, is not exempt from fallacy; and of his and other statements of the logic of probability there is a stringent criticism in a very able but only privately published paper by Dr. T. B. SPRAGUE, of the Actuarial Society of Edinburgh (1892).

§ 7. The abundant criticism of established logical methods in the past half-century led to systematic reconstructions of the old methods. Notable among these is the 'Logic' of Dr. CHRISTOPH SIGWART (E. tr. Son. 2 v. 1895), "an attempt to reconstruct logic from the point of view of methodology." Most of the later German activity in logic has been influenced by HEGEL, whose 'Logic'—i.e. the "lesser" Logic of the *Encyclopædia* (E. tr. by Prof. Wallace, Cl. Pr.) or the "larger" logic of the *Wissenschaft der Logik*, tr. as 'Hegel's Science of Logic' by W. H. Johnston and L. G. Struthers (A. & U. 1929, 2 v.)—is not to be approached as a logical treatise in the ordinary sense, its subject-matter being nearly commensurate with metaphysics [see J. B. BAILLIE'S 'The Origin and Significance of Hegel's Logic' (Mac.), and 'Hegel's Logic of World and Idea,' by H. S. MACRAN (Cl. Pr. 1929)]. The manner in which systems of logic are built by vigorous thinkers to validate a philosophy otherwise reached is well illustrated in CROCE'S 'Logic as Science of the Pure Concept' (E. tr. by D. Ainslie, Mac. 2nd ed. 1922), as to which see Ch. V of Dr. H. W. CARR'S 'Philosophy of Benedetto Croce' (Course IX, § 21).

Here the reasoning is powerful, though it is in strictness a process of psychology rather than of logic—a perplexity that frequently arises in latter-day logic so called. On the other hand, as in the past, dogmatic traditory beliefs are often nominally validated by professed logicians without any process worthy

of the name of "proof." Thus in 'The Problem of Logic' by Prof. W. R. BOYCE GIBSON (Black, 1914), though the author claims to have scrutinised and rectified much of his reasoning, he concludes his bulky book by propounding dogmas as to free-will, immortality, and God, which are in no way attainable by the methods of logic set forth at great length in the treatise. When such a treatise propounds, as necessities of good life, beliefs which only on that score are ostensibly justified, logic has not only been abandoned but discredited, as a procedure or discipline of no value for the formation of opinions on great issues.

The old problem of "free-will," logically handled by Locke and Collins (Course X, § 7), may supply the student, in the form of JONATHAN EDWARDS' 'Freedom of Will' (Course X, § 7), with an important exercise in serious logic. Dr. Croll so found it. To detect the point at which the close demonstration makes one *saltum mortale* outside of logic, in order to save the theology, might be made the aim of the particular study in that instance.

§ 8. The useful development of logic, further, proceeds not merely by abstract philosophic analysis, but by the application of critical analysis to all the problems of interpretation which arise in the humanist sciences, and not least in the sociological study of history. Economics, for example, suggests a method of inquiry that reveals as either inadequate or irrelevant a multitude of "explanations" of social causation which the non-economic historian offers as sufficient generalisations. Medical science does the same in regard to much history and sociology. It is therefore the business of the student to test for himself, in the light of such special inquiry, all the current social or historical generalisations he may meet with; as he does those of religion and superstition by the lights of science and what commonly pass as "the laws of evidence."

In the economic and political life of his own time he will meet with a number of opinions which proceed upon no economic or historic study, and merely represent the personal interests of groups or classes as seen by themselves in the light of gain-seeking or prejudice or unthinking "patriotism." Logic may thus challenge alike the convictions of past habit and those of innovating doctrine, provided always that the reasoner recognises the vital importance of all the attainable knowledge on the special subject. The possession of knowledge of the "natural" sciences yields no sure equipment for the settlement of the problems of the "humanist" studies; and men trained in the logic of astronomy or medicine may dispose of the latter with heedless incompetence.

On the other hand, 'A New Logic,' by Dr. CHARLES MERCIER (Hei. 1912), which vehemently sets out to overthrow and supersede

the traditional as well as the Hegelian logic, is unexpectedly tiresome and unfruitful, profiting nothing by its author's special knowledge. Obsession by the condemned traditional formulas keeps it more formalist than elucidative.

Collections of recognised "fallacies," accordingly, can never cover the possibilities, since in the terms of the case new fallacy may arise over every new contemporary or retrospective problem. But the habit of vigilance may be fostered by thoughtful use of such able books as BENTHAM'S 'Book of Fallacies,' or A. SIDGWICK'S 'Fallacies' (I.S.S. 1883), or Dr. SHARPER KNOWLSON'S 'Logic for the Million' (Laurie, 1910). It is noteworthy that Carveth Read, who in his early essay dismissed "fallacies" as not matter worthy of study in a work on logic, devoted a chapter of 19 pp. to them in his later 'Logic.'

§ 9. Among important French contributions to logic may be noted the *Traité de Logique* of Prof. E. GOBLOT (Colin, 1918: préf. by E. Boutroux), a work of high competence by the author of *La Vocabulaire philosophique* (same) and an *Essai sur la classification des sciences* (1898). It may be said to cover at once practically and philosophically the whole logical field, exhibiting alike the sociological and the ethical bearings of logic, and studying psychologically the logic of judgment and "the concept." Something of a classic standing has been won by the *Traité de Logique générale et de Logique formelle* of CHARLES RENOUVIER (Colin, 2 t.). Of real educative value are also the works of Prof. G. MILHAUD, *Le rationnel* (1898) and *Essai sur les conditions et les limites de la certitude logique* (2e éd. 1898).

An important but compendious German work is the *Tractatus Logico-Philosophicus* of L. WITTGENSTEIN, of which there is an Eng. tr. with the German text opposite, and an introduction by B. Russell (K.P. 1922).

§ 10. Among recent expert English works on Logic may be noted the C.U.P. books:—'Logic,' by W. E. JOHNSON (3 v.); 'A New Law of Thought and its Logical Bearings,' by Miss E. E. C. JONES: pref. by Prof. STOUT; 'The Principles of Understanding: An Introd. to Logic,' by H. STURT; and 'The Existential Import of Categorical Predication: Studies in Logic,' by A. WOLF; also the 'Principles of Logic' by Dr. H. A. ATKINS (Bell); and 'A Text-Book of Deductive Logic' by Dr. P. K. RAY (Mac.).

COURSE XII

PSYCHOLOGY

§ 1. PSYCHOLOGY is so entirely a construction of modern thought, analysis, and experiment, that it is perhaps best approached through modern books by experts. The student may thus profitably begin with one or other of such competent manuals as those of Prof. **E. B. Titchener** of Cornell: '**A Primer of Psychology**,' '**A Beginner's Psychology**,' '**A Text-Book of Psychology**'; or his larger '**Outline of Psychology**' (all Mac.); leading up to his '**Experimental Psychology: A Manual of Laboratory Practice**' (same, 2 v.). For brevity '**The A.B.C. of Psychology**' by **C. K. Ogden** (Rout.) may be selected: **W. MACDOUGALL'S** '**Outline of Psychology**' (Met. 5th ed.) has fresh interest. The older '**Outlines of Psychology**' and '**Teacher's Handbook of Psychology**' of Prof. **JAMES SULLY**, leading up to his large work, '**The Human Mind: A Text-Book of Psychology**' (all Lmns.), are marked by an attractive lucidity.

Those who desire first a historic approach will find an excellent guide in Prof. **J. M. Baldwin's** '**History of Psychology: A Sketch and an Interpretation**' (Watts, 2 v. 1913). In the last generation, **TH. RIBOT** supplied a good survey of '**Contemporary English Psychology**' up to its date (E. tr. I.S.S. 1873), and one of '**Contemporary German Psychology**' (tr. Scrib. 1886).

§ 2. A survey of the present position of psychological discussion and debate, which may be a starting-point for further study, is supplied by Prof. **ROBERT S. WOODWORTH'S** '**Contemporary Schools of Psychology**' (Met. 1931), which reveals a very large body of differentiations. Psychology is one of the latest of the 'ologies' to be so recognised, the name having had only a vague and general force, with theological connections, until the nineteenth century. In the philosophies of the seventeenth and eighteenth, its problems, concrete and abstract, are approached, often acutely, as part of philosophy. After its status as a separate investigation (first well established by **JAMES MILL'S** '**Analysis of the Phenomena of the Human Mind**', 1828: annot. by Bain, Findlater, Grote, and J. S. Mill; Lmns. 2 v. 1869) had been

decisively vindicated in HERBERT SPENCER's classic 'Principles of Psychology' (2 v. 1855; 3rd ed. rev. 1880) it became one of the busiest fields of modern thought. In our previous editions, the great extent of its cultivation in half a century was remarked upon; and an equal emphasis may be laid on its still wider and more intensive study in the past twenty-five years. For a time the 'Principles of Psychology' of Prof. W. JAMES (2 v. Mac. 1891) was held by some to supersede Spencer; but the solidity of Spencer's foundations appears to survive some of the arbitrary speculation of the other; and since James the movement has been multiplex.

§ 3. The physiological basis laid by Spencer, which in the hands of James at times seemed to lead to hyper-materialism, has necessarily remained a rallying-point; though it had been the fashion to re-affirm without significant purpose the separateness of the processes. Typical outstanding works of the past are the *De l'Intelligence* of TAINÉ (E. tr. 1871); G. H. LEWES's 'Problems of Life and Mind' (4 v. 1874-79); Dr. H. Maudsley's 'Physiology of Mind' (Mac. 1876), 'Body and Will' (1883), 'Responsibility in Mental Disease' (I.S.S.), and 'Natural Causes and Supernatural Seemings' (K.P. 1897). On similar lines German thought contributed LORZÉ's 'Outlines of Psychology' (E. tr. Lmns. 1886) and Prof. W. WUNDT's 'Lectures on Human and Animal Psychology' (E. tr. Son. 1894). BAIN's earlier works, 'The Senses and the Intellect' (4th ed. rev. 1894) and 'The Emotions and the Intellect' (4th ed. 1899: both Lmns.) combined psychic introspection and physiological interpretation; and his '**Mind and Body**' (I.S.S. 3rd ed. 1874) was a clear scientific summary. Prof. C. LLOYD MORGAN's 'Introduction to Comparative Psychology' (C.S.S. 1894) traced the important grounds in animal intelligence, as did his 'Animal Life and Intelligence' (Arnold, 1891) followed by his 'Habit and Instinct' (1896) and Dr. James Weir's 'The Dawn of Reason: or, Mental Traits in the Lower Animals' (Mac. 1899). Prof. MORGAN's later works may be regarded as developments from his book, 'The Springs of Conduct: an Essay in Evolution' (K.P. 1885).

§ 4. Already in the last generation a special literature was growing up round the psychology of the child mind. Prof. SULLY contributed to it 'Studies of Childhood' (Lmns. 1895: abr. as 'Children's Ways' 1897); Prof. W. PREYER 'The Soul of the Child' (E. tr. App. 1893); BERNARD PEREZ, 'The First Three Years of Childhood' (Son. 1885, with pref. by Sully), and his untranslated studies *L'Enfant de trois à sept ans* (1886) and *L'Art et la Poésie chez l'enfant* (1888); and FRANCIS WARNER's 'The Nervous System of the Child: Its Growth in Health and Educa-

tion' (Mac. 1900). Of special importance to the science was Prof. BALDWIN'S 'Mental Development in the Child and the Race' (Mac. 1895).

Other specialties were dealt with in RIBOT'S 'Diseases of Memory' (I.S.S.); his 'Heredity: A Psychological Study of its Laws' (E. tr. 1875, which was completely recast in the 2nd ed. of the original, 1882); his 'Psychology of Attention' (Lmns. 1897); his 'Psychology of the Emotions' (1897), and his important *Essai sur l'imagination créatrice* (1900; 4e éd. 1914). S. A. K. STRAHAN'S 'Suicide and Insanity' (Son. 1893) leads up to a problem normally evaded alike in traditionary psychology, theology, and ethic, but specially important to psychology.

The root problems are variously kept in view in 'The Soul of Man: an Investigation of the Facts of Physiological and Experimental Psychology,' by Dr. PAUL CARUS (O.C. 1891); the encyclopædic work of Dr. B. HOLLANDER, 'In Search of the Soul' (K.P. 2 v. n.d.) and in such works as Mr. Joseph McCabe's 'Evolution of Mind' (rev. ed. Watts, 1921); L. T. HOBHOUSE'S 'Mind in Evolution' (Mac. 1891); E. BOIRAC'S 'Psychology of the Future' (E. tr. K.P. 1920); Dr. J. T. MCCURDY, 'Common Principles in Psychology and Physiology' (C.U.P. 1928); RAOUL ALLIER, 'The Mind of the Savage' (E. tr. Bell, 1929); and the sociological bearing of the whole is set forth with originality and practicality in Prof. BALDWIN'S 'Social and Ethical Interpretations in Mental Development: A Study in Social Psychology' (Mac. 3rd ed. 1902) and 'Development and Evolution' (same, 1892). See also W. MACDOUGALL'S 'Introduction to Social Psychology' (Met. 1931).

On the "transcendental" side of psychology, high status is accorded to Prof. JAMES WARD'S 'Psychological Principles,' and 'Psychology applied to Education' (C.U.P.). On the latter theme there are many treatises and handbooks, as:—'Elements of Educational Psychology,' by Dr. L. A. AVERILL, 'An Introduction to Child Psychology,' by Dr. C. W. WADDLE; 'The Education of Handicapped Children,' by Prof. J. E. W. WALLIN; 'The Education of Mentally Defective Children,' by ALICE DESCOEUDRES; and 'The Herbartian Psychology,' by JOHN ADAMS (all Har.).

§ 5. In the last two decades the study has been more widely cultivated than ever, especially in America, Germany, and France, and has been further expanded in English books, original and translated. The recent vols. of the 'International Library of Philosophy and Psychology' (K.P.) exhibit rather the controversial than the progressive aspects of the science. Mr. H. G. WYATT'S 'Psychology of Intelligence and Will' (1931) develops

into a rehandling of the debate on "freewill" in terms of psychology without resolution of the scientific and philosophic issue. F. PAULHAN's early (1889) work on 'The Laws of Feeling' is found worthy of translation (with pref. by C. K. Ogden, 1931), but does not represent any decision of the critical debate which followed on it. But the energy of the general inquiry is indisputable. 'Psychology: A New System,' by Dr. ARTHUR LYNCH (Swift, 1912, 2 v.), proceeds on wide practical study and has much practical interest.

Alongside of more "standard" works such as Prof. G. B. STOUT's 'Analytic Psychology' (2 v. 5th ed. A. & U.), WARD's 'Psychological Principles,' and Prof. TITCHENER's 'Systematic Psychology: Prolegomena' (1929) and two vols. of 'Lectures' on the 'Elementary' and the 'Experimental Psychology of the Thought Processes' (all Mac.), are arrayed the important work of Prof. MORTON PRINCE on 'The Unconscious: The Fundamentals of Human Personality, Normal and Abnormal' (2nd ed. rev. Mac.); Prof. W. McDUGALL, 'The Group Mind' (C.U.P. 2nd ed.); 'The Science of Human Behaviour' by Dr. M. PARMELEE; 'The Fundamentals of Human Motivation' by Prof. L. T. TROLAND; Prof. G. T. W. PATRICK's 'What is the Mind?'; Dr. R. B. RAUP's 'Complacency: The Foundations of Human Behaviour' (all Mac.); the 'Gestalt Psychology' of Prof. W. KÖPLER (E. tr. Bell); Dr. MARGARET F. WASHBURN's 'The Animal Mind' (Mac.); 'Biological Memory' by Prof. E. RIGNANO (E. tr. 1926); the 'Psychology and Politics' of Dr. W. H. R. RIVERS (pref. by Prof. G. Elliot Smith); 'A Historical Introduction to Modern Psychology,' by Dr. GARDNER MURPHY, with Supp. by Dr. H. KLUVER (2nd ed. 1930); 'The Psychology of the Infant,' by Dr. S. BERNFIELD; Prof. JOHN DEWEY's 'Psychology, Knowledge, Feeling, and Will'; and Dr. A. F. BRONNER's 'The Psychology of Special Abilities and Disabilities' (all K.P.).

The 'Behaviourism' of J. B. WATSON (same, 2nd ed. 1931) and his 'Psychology from the Standpoint of a Behaviourist' (1924) point to one of the themes round which conflict proceeds. The compendious 'Mind and Body' of HANS DRIESCH (E. tr. Met. 1927) is notable as restating the conflict between the misnamed "mechanistic" view and a "transcendental" one. Of variously practical interest are:—'The Measurement of Emotion,' by W. W. SMITH; 'The Meaning of Meaning,' by C. K. OGDEN and I. A. RICHARDS (both K.P.); 'The Measurement of Intelligence,' by LEWIS M. TERMAN (Har.); J. R. ANGELL's 'Psychology: an Introductory Study of the Structure and Function of Human Consciousness' (Con. 4th ed. 1930); H. F. ADAMS's 'The Ways of the Mind: the Study and Use of Psychology' (Scrib. 1925);

'The Psychology of Character,' by RUDOLPH ALLERS (E. tr. with introd. by E. B. Straus: Sheed & W. 1931); 'The Will to Live: an Outline of Evolutionary Psychology,' by J. H. BARDEY (A. & U. 1931); 'The Story of Man's Mind,' by G. HUMPHREY (Rout. 1925); G. B. DIBBLEE's 'Instinct and Intuition: A Study in Mental Duality' (F. & F. 1929); 'Psychology and the Sciences,' by J. S. HALDANE, R. R. MARETT, F. C. S. SCHILLER, and L. P. JACKS, ed. by WILLIAM BROWN (Black, 1924); and the last-named writer's own interesting works, all aiming at "spiritual" implications: 'Psychology and Psychotherapy' (Arnold, 1921), 'Suggestion and Mental Analysis' (F.U. 3rd ed. 1923), 'Mind and Personality: An Essay on Psychology and Philosophy' (1926), and 'Science and Personality' (O.U.P. 1929).

§ 6. Yet other works of scientific importance are H. A. CARR's 'Psychology: A Study of Mental Activity' (Lmns. 1925); C. A. STRONG's 'Essays on the Natural Origin of the Mind' (Mac. 1930); A. W. TILBY's 'The Evolution of Consciousness: A Psychological Study' (F.U. 1922); R. SEMON's 'The Mneme' (E. tr. by Louis Simon, A. & U. 1924) and 'Mnemic Psychology,' with intr. by Vernon Lee (E. tr. by B. Duffy, A. & U. 1923). Such a selection, with a study of the copious 'History of Psychology' by G. S. BRETT (3 v. A. & U.) and H. C. WARREN's 'History of the Association Psychology' (Con. 1921) may be held to give an adequate idea of the general development of the science. But, as is insisted by R. BRIFFAULT in 'Psyche's Lamp' (A. & U. 1921), Psychology is not an "organised science"; that is to say, the study is carried on from a variety of points of view, with little in common save the increasing recognition of "the mind" or "consciousness" as a two-sided plexus. Mr. Briffault will be found a stimulating critic, and will also probably elicit definite opposition at various points. Vehemence in philosophy is not clarifying. At his close he develops his epistemological disparagement of "the individual mind," and his theorem of the permeability of that by *all* knowledge; and concludes with a sociological appeal on that basis. Practically, then, Psychology would seem to be somewhat in the position of Ethics and Logic, in that its application to social ends seems the likeliest line of development of the science itself. But the application is itself matter of social science. Such a work as 'Feeble-Mindedness: Its Causes and Consequences,' by Dr. H. H. GODDARD (Mac.), is a pointer. Prof. JOSEPH JASTROW's 'Fact and Fable in Psychology' (Mac. 1901) was a warning against lines of aberration.

§ 7. Inevitably the study of Psychology has involved the special problem of the brain and its activities, though that no less obviously belongs also to Physiology or Biology. Indeed a

direct application of the theoretic localisation of brain functions to psychological theory was begun by the German anatomists GALL (1758-1828) and SPURZHEIM (1776-1832) before psychological analysis had received much scientific as distinct from philosophical attention. Their thesis became well known under the title of PHRENOLOGY. Any readers desirous of an impartial view of that doctrine (which was early arrested in respect of its scientific development by a strong theological reaction) should study the 'Vindication of Phrenology' by the late Dr. W. MATTIEU WILLIAMS (C. & W. 1894), an accomplished man of science, who first stemmed the dismissal of the subject as a merely ignorant construction. The obvious criticism of Phrenology as making localisations in disregard of the complicated extension of brain activities in any field was made long ago, but has not been fully assimilated by the practitioners in general, nor duly developed synthetically by their opponents. Williams showed that Gall had taken a larger view.

Searching investigation involves special study of the brain, on which see Prof. R. J. A. BERRY'S 'BRAIN AND MIND: The Nervous System of Man' (Mac.) and 'The Brain, from Ape to Man' by Prof. TILNEY of Columbia, with intr. by Prof. H. OSBORN (Lewis, 1928, 2 v.). Dr. DAVID FERRIER'S 'Functions of the Brain' (2nd ed. rev. S.E. 1886) and 'Cerebral Localisation' (1890) were the beginnings of a modern departure in brain physiology which has produced a special literature. The older books of Dr. H. C. BASTIAN, 'The Brain as an Organ of Mind'; Dr. J. LUYS, 'The Brain and its Functions'; and A. BINET, 'The Mind and the Brain' (all I.S.S.) remain worthy of study. The scientific restatement of the case for localisation of function is to be followed in the works of Dr. BERNARD HOLLANDER:—'Revival of Phrenology' (1901); 'Seeing Ourselves in the Light of Modern Psychology' (Watts, For. Ser. 1931); 'Psychology of Misconduct, Vice, and Crime' (A. & U. 1922); 'Brain, Mind, and the External Signs of Intelligence' (same); 'Phrenology, the Old and the New' (1891).

§ 8. HYPNOTISM has been a subject of special research and debate from the day of Mesmer (whence Mesmerism) onward. A recent work by G. DE DUBOR, 'The Mysteries of Hypnosis' (E. tr. Rider, 1922), supplies in compendious form a history of the subject, the phenomena, and the problems involved; as does J. M. BRAMWELL'S 'Hypnotism: its History, Theory, and Practice' (3rd ed. Rider, 1921). Among the practical works are B. Hollander's 'Hypnotism and Suggestion' (Pit. 1910) and H. C. MILLER'S 'Hypnotism and Disease' (F.U. 1912).

§ 9. Much attention has in the last two decades been given to

the manifold psychic aspects covered by the terms 'The Unconscious,' 'The Subconscious,' 'The Co-Conscious,' and 'The Superconscious.' A main impulse on certain lines was given by the 'Psycho-Analysis,' so-called, of Dr. SIGMUND FREUD (see the critical biography, 'Sigmund Freud: His Personality, His Teaching, and His School,' by FRITZ WITTELS: E. tr. by E. & C. Paul, A. & U. 1914, with bibliog.), who had published a number of scientific monographs on other matters before his *Die Traumdeutung* (7th ed. 1922: E. tr. 'The Interpretation of Dreams,' by Dr. A. A. Brill, A. & U. 1913). See also the 'History of the Psychoanalytic Movement,' N.Y. 1916.

Prof. Freud's 'Psychopathy of Everyday Life' (E. tr. F.U. 6th ed. 1920); his 'Totem and Taboo' (E. tr. by Dr. Brill, Rout. 1919); and his *Ueber Psychoanalyse* (Wien, 4th ed. 1919) indicate his scientific method, which is largely handled by his school with special attention to sex "libido." The different aspects may be followed in 'Psycho-Analysis: A Brief Account of the Freudian Theory,' by BARBARA LOW (A. & U. 1920); 'The Psychology of Day-Dreams,' by Dr. J. VARENDONCK, with intr. by Freud (A. & U.); the same writer's 'Evolution of the Conscious Faculties' (same, 1923); 'What is Psycho-Analysis?' by I. H. CORIAT (K.P. 1917); the same writer's 'Abnormal Psychology' (K.P. 1922); 'The Psychology of the Unconscious,' by Dr. C. J. JUNG (E. tr. K.P.); 'Psycho-Analysis,' by R. H. KINGLEY (Met.); and 'The Psycho-Analytic Method,' by Prof. O. PFISTER (K.P. 1917).

'The Subconscious,' by Prof. JOSEPH JASTROW of Wisconsin (Con. 1906), is a careful investigation of an independent kind. Of cognate importance are the works of the late Dr. W. H. R. RIVERS, 'Instinct and the Unconscious' (C.U.P. 1922) and 'Conflict and Dream,' with pref. by G. Elliot Smith (K.P. 1923); the latter being partly pro-Freudian, and in part destructively critical of both Freud and Jung. It achieves no decisive scientific synthesis. 'Our Superconscious Mind,' by Dame EDITH LYTTLETON (P. Allan, 1931), is one of the latest explorations in the field, and serves to illustrate the precariousness of the whole terminology of "sub," "un," "co," and "super." All the works turning on "Psycho-Analysis" appear to ignore the older theorem of dream as an outcome of the fortuitous movement of blood in the brain during sleep.

Non-Freudian or otherwise impartial studies of "the Unconscious" are not lacking. 'Modern Theories of the Unconscious,' by Dr. W. L. NORTHRIDGE, with intr. by Prof. J. Laird (K.P. 1924), is a helpful survey of the field; and Dr. CORIAT's 'Abnormal Psychology' (Rider, 1911) renders similar service. Dr. ALFRED

SCHOFIELD's 'The Unconscious Mind' (H. & S. 3rd ed. 1903) was avowedly a pioneer work; but is as such readable and suggestive. See also JEAN BODIN, *Contre Freud: Critique de toute psychologie de l'inconscient* (Masson, 1926).

In view of the attention so liberally bestowed on dreams, a niche in psychological study may be found for Graphology, or the study of handwriting, on which we have 'Handwriting: a Manual of Graphology,' by ARTHUR STOREY (Rider, 1922), and J. CRÉPIEUX JAMIN's 'Psychology of the Movements of Handwriting,' tr. and ed. by J. Given-Wilson (Rout. 1926).

§ 10. To psychology properly belongs the problem of Laughter, or the constituents of the Comic. It has been many times discussed in philosophical or psychological literature (Hobbes, Locke, Kant, Hegel, Schopenhauer, Lotze, Darwin, Bain, Spencer, Fouillée) as well as in general literature (Coleridge, Hazlitt, Leigh Hunt, Traill, Meredith), and latterly in a number of systematic monographs:—'A Theory of Wit and Humour,' by F. R. FLEET (Rem. 1890); HENRI BERGSON's *Le Rire* (1900: E. tr. 'Laughter'; Mac. 1911); Prof. TH. LIPPS, *Komik und Humor* (1898); L. DUGAS, *La Psychologie du Rire* (1902); and JAMES SULLY's 'Essay on Laughter' (Lmns. 1902). Of these, Sully's work may be recommended as the most alert to the various aspects of the problem. J. C. GREGORY's 'The Nature of Laughter' (K.P. 1924) is an independent development of the problem. The latest work in English, 'A Theory of Laughter, with special relation to Comedy and Tragedy,' by V. K. KRISHNA MENON, B.A. (A. & U. 1931), if not the conclusive synthesis (it ignores Sully), approaches one, and passes many just criticisms, even while incurring some of them. The 'special' connection made with comedy and tragedy does not visibly conduce to synthesis. See also (§ 11) the work of G. Ballet.

§ 11. Even in the last generation the output of psychological monographs by continental experts had been very great. Among them, in addition to those above named, may be noted:—Prof. PAUL REGNAUD, *Précis de logique évolutionniste: L'entendement dans ses rapports avec le langage* (1897); the *Antinomies linguistiques* of Prof. VICTOR HENRY, which Prof. Regnaud antagonised; B. BOURDON, *L'expression des émotions et des tendances dans le langage* (1892); Prof. PIERRE JANET's *L'Automatisme psychologique* (1889); P. A. SOLLIER's *Psychologie de l'idiot et l'imbécile* (1891) and *Le problème de la mémoire* (1900); L. ARRÉAT's *Psychologie du peintre* (1892); TH. PIDERIT's *La mimique et la physiognomie* (Fr. tr. from Ger. 1888); G. BALLEET, *Le langage intérieur et les diverses formes de l'aphasie* (1886); *Le rire, essai sur la signification du comique* (2e éd. 1901) and *Matière et mémoire: essai*

sur les relations du corps à l'esprit (2e éd. 1900); Prof. A. BERTRAND, *La psychologie de l'effort et les doctrines contemporaines*; A. BINET, *La psychologie du raisonnement*—E. tr. 'The Psychology of Reasoning' (K.P. 1899); also 'The Psychic Life of Micro-Organisms' (E. tr. Lmns. 1889); GASTON DANVILLE, *Psychologie de l'amour* (2e éd. 1900); G. TARDE, *Les lois de l'imitation* (2e éd. 1895); G. DUMAS, *Les états intellectuels dans la mélancolie* (1895); DUNAN, *La théorie psychologique de l'espace* (1895); CH. FÉRÉ, *Sensation et mouvement, étude de psychomécanique* (1887); Madame JAELL, *La musique et la psycho-physiologie* (1895); Prof. VICTOR BROCHARD, *De l'erreur* (2e éd. 1897); Prof. C. G. LANGE, *Les émotions, étude psycho-physiologique* (Fr. tr. from Ger. 1895; orig. Leip. 1887); A. MOSSO, *La peur, étude psycho-physiologique* (Fr. tr. from Ital. 2e éd.) and *La fatigue intellectuelle et physique* (Fr. tr. 3e éd.); FR. PAULHAN, *Psychologie de l'invention* (1900); *Les types intellectuels: esprits logiques et esprits faux* (1896); and *Les phénomènes affectifs et les lois de leur apparition* (2e éd. 1901); G. GORY, *L'immanence de la raison dans la connaissance sensible* (1896); G. L. DUPRAT, *L'instabilité mentale*, 1899; and *Les causes sociales de la folie*, 1900.

In the present century the production has been abundant; and the following selection is not comprehensive:—LÉON BRUNSCHVIG, *De la connaissance de Soi* (1931); L. DUGAS, *La mémoire et l'oubli* (1917); and *L'Éducation du caractère* (1912); H. BERNHAIN, *Automatisme* (1917); H. BOIRAC, *La psychologie inconnue* (1912: E. tr. 'Our Hidden Forces,' N.Y. 1916); *La génie littéraire*, by H. RÉMOND and P. VOWENEL (Alcan, 1912; with full bibliog.); the later works of F. PAULHAN, *Psychologie de l'invention* (1901); *La logique de la contradiction* (1911); *Les mensonges du caractère* (1905).

[The 'Contemporary Psychology' of GUIDO VILLA (Son. 1903), though of the last generation, is informative as to the movement of its time as well as of the past development of the science.]

COURSE XIII

ÆSTHETICS

Preamble.—RATHER alongside of than within the field of psychology—though all recent psychologists include it—there has latterly been marked off as a special department of philosophical or scientific inquiry that of ÆSTHETICS (or ÆSTHETIC), the science or philosophy of Beauty (from Gr. *aisthetikos*, pertaining to *aisthesis* or perception or “feeling”). The term is to be taken in a large sense which includes the “felt” beauty of (a) scenes or objects in animate or inanimate nature, (b) works of art so called, and (c) the various effects produced by the fine arts, non-literary *and* literary. Radically connected, the studies at a certain point clearly become independent, as the discrimination of beauty is a special form of perception, of which an otherwise great investigator may be nearly devoid. Neither is Æsthetics commensurate with Criticism, inasmuch as that includes processes of judgment (even in literature) on such grounds as narrative truth and argumentative or moral justice, which are not “æsthetic considerations.” It must, however, have regard to psychological conditions, the subjective, as well as to the objective grounds of an æsthetic judgment.

“Æsthetic” has been by one expert termed “a branch of philosophy.” On that view it should be faced in a philosophic fashion in the modern sense, which connotes the scientific attitude. The subject being one on which a dispassionate curiosity might be expected to play, the open-minded student may be disappointed to find that soon after the department was recognised in modern times it was subjected to presuppositions already current in philosophy and religion.

Thus, when he sets himself to inquire why he receives a special thrill of joy from such various objects as :—(1) a landscape or a cloudscape, (2) a silver birch, (3) an Arab horse, (4) a “beautiful” face or form, (5) a smile, (6) a ship in full sail, bow on, dancing on the waves, (7) a human dance, with or without music, (8) a voice, whether or not in song, (9) any of the forms of music, (10) a rhythm in verse, (11) a statue or a picture, considered not merely as a successful imitation, but as an achievement of “beauty” in shape or “harmonious” colour, (12) a line or “piece” of poetry

or prose, (13) a specially appealing scroll or arabesque, he may spontaneously feel, first, that these are all forms of *Delight*.

Then, secondly, he may feel that the fact of delight being firmly associated with experiences in which (a) the physical predominates over the mental (though all forms of delight are now recognised as involving "body-and-mind"); or (b) as in laughter, the joy has causes apart from beauty; or (c) not only *Schadenfreude*, or joy in causing or seeing trouble, but sheer self-love is the form of gratification (as in gain-getting, success in any competition or conflict, or pleasure from praise), is a decisive reason for preferring the general term Beauty for the reaction to the forms of experienced delight which are to be studied under Æsthetics. For, thirdly, he will recognise that these other forms of delight belong to other orders of bodily and mental gratification. But when this stage of agreement is reached, the student is met, in his natural analytic inquiry, by the imposed presuppositions above mentioned. His study will accordingly be directed to the critical or logical scrutiny or sifting of these, in terms of his "sense of fact" and his perception of philosophic consistency.

§ 1. The presuppositions of the past may be classed as (a) religious or theistic, (b) philosophically "idealistic," and (c) utilitarian. The first may be exemplified in Ruskin's claim that the sense of (or "feeling for") beauty is to be regarded as inserted in the human mind by Deity. This leaves open the questions of when it began and how it grew, as historically traceable. The second may be exemplified, first, in the philosophic plea that "beauty" lies in our "idea," not in an object; to which the answer is that the percept and the concept are conjoined, and that neither can subsist without the other. Another form of quasi-philosophic apriorism arises in Lord Balfour's thesis ('Foundations of Belief') that æsthetic joy depends for permanence on the belief that such joy has been primordially experienced by a Supreme Being in some such forms as the human. This leaves open the question as to whether the antecedent Being has experienced *all* the forms of æsthetic joy—those which we account trivial or "low" as well as the "higher."

The third or utilitarian solution has suffered from the confusions which the term has undergone (see Course X, §§ 9, 10) in its emergence and application in ethics. Obviously, when æsthetic joys are accounted for as based on experiences of utility (as in the implication that a beautiful ship, horse, tree, or flower, etc., has been found specially to serve a "useful" purpose: an idea apparently present in passages of Gibbon, Spencer, and others), the apparent "didactic" implication has to be rejected as a

solution, though there remains a conception of utility in the matter which is of great scientific importance. (The non-recognition that utility is outside the *concept* of Beauty affects the merit of 'The Science of Beauty,' by A. W. HOLMES-FORBES (1881).) But the "didactic" aim is equally implicit in forms of "theosophic" æsthetics.

§ 2. We may at the outset, then, either seek first to know how the "joy in beauty" began and was heightened in the general human evolution, or turn to the history, ancient and modern, of the "philosophical" attempt to understand, by analysis, how the idea of beauty is "constituted" for those who possess it. And as the former inquiry will be found to be in effect one in Physio-psychology, with primary regard to the evolution of cerebral-neural processes, the present course is fitly to be restricted to a study of the history and validity of recorded opinion.

Goethe, as cited in B. BOSANQUET's 'Three Lectures on Æsthetics' (Mac. 1915, rep. 1923, *end*), gave the important scientific pointer that "man has in him a formative nature," seeking the formative act *before* the aim or end of beauty. On this view the rise of the "fine" arts may have been educative and elicitive of all manner of æsthetic appreciation. But equally the special direction of thought to the problem may be held to have developed, if not the artistic faculties, the appreciation or comprehension of their output. A good general lead in such a study is the recent compilation of extracts entitled 'The Philosophies of Beauty from Socrates to Robert Bridges,' by E. F. Carritt (O.U.P. 1931), whose treatise 'The Theory of Beauty' (Met. 4th ed. 1931) may claim to be an expert exposition, while serving as a practical handbook and a guide to the literature. See also VERNON LEE's manual, 'The Beautiful' (C.U.P.) and S. A. McDOWALL's 'Beauty and the Beast: an Essay in Evolutionary Æsthetics' (same); and 'Beauty and Ugliness' by VERNON LEE and V. A. THOMPSON (Lane, 1912).

§ 3. From this outset the student may proceed either to 'The Foundations of Æsthetics,' by C. K. OGDEN, I. A. RICHARDS, and J. WOOD (A. & U. rev. ed. 1922) or, choosing a historical approach, to the 'History of Æsthetic' of BERNARD BOSANQUET (Son. 1892). This was somewhat severely criticised for inadequacy by Mr. Sully in *Mind* at the time of its appearance; but it can very well serve as a guide to the study, giving as it does references to most of the literature. It may be found stimulating at this stage to read the essay of A. J. FINBERG on 'The Pseudo-Science of Æsthetics' (Proc. of Aristot. Soc., 1901) assailing some of the positions of Bain and Spencer.

The shorter work of Prof. KNIGHT, 'The Philosophy of the

Beautiful' (Pt. I: U.E.M. 1891), gives a considerably larger number of book descriptions than does Mr. Bosanquet's, and may therefore be preferred on that score. The second part of Prof. Knight's book (1903) is an independent discussion of the problem of æsthetics, declaring for an "idealistic" or *a priori* solution.

§ 4. Among the "sources" to be studied, the first place should be given to the 'Poetics' of Aristotle [expounded by Lane Cooper of Cornell (Har.); E. tr. in Ev. Lib., and other series; ann. ed. by BUTCHER (Mac.); another by BYWATER, with pref. by G. Murray: O.U.P. 1920], of which, it has been observed, every writer on æsthetics has made some use. As Bosanquet, Knight, and Caritt among them indicate all the important previous writers on æsthetics, it should suffice in this Course to specify those by which the modern science of the subject has been led up to, and those of recent years which seem best worth special study. As distinguished from early didactic writings, such as SIDNEY's 'Apologie for Poetrie,' and other Elizabethan appreciations (such as Bacon's essay, where it is remarked, "there is no excellent beauty that hath not some strangeness in the proportion"), the English literature of exact æsthetics may be said to begin with HOBBS. In his 'Humane Nature' (ch. 7) there is an important suggestion as to the life-helping property of delight, though his discussion of the forms of æsthetic pleasure is so slight (ch. 8) that neither Bosanquet nor Knight mentions him. Apart from the essentially literary criticisms of Dryden and Addison, the next noticeable stage is marked by the 'Characteristics' of Lord SHAFTESBURY (section entitled 'The Moralists,' dating from 1709), and FRANCIS HUTCHESON's 'Inquiry into the Original of our Ideas of Beauty and Virtue' (1725), of which works the latter, based on the former, had a considerable foreign vogue in translations, and an influence on later German discussion. As Hutcheson's title indicates, æsthetics had not yet been cleared of the bias given to it by Plato.

§ 5. A new step was taken in the 'Analysis of Beauty' of the great painter WILLIAM HOGARTH (1753). Lessing and Goethe were alike impressed by it. Still, Hogarth was not an all-round psychologist, though he wrote better than many literary men of his day; and he does not proceed beyond his technical analysis to psychological finalities. BURKE, again, who shortly afterwards (1756) produced his 'Essay on the Sublime and Beautiful,' is interesting but often arbitrary in judgment. Even HUME, in his suggestive essay 'Of the Standard of Taste' (1757), leaves the subject unsettled. Theorists accordingly continued to divide between the notions of an "absolute" beauty, referable to a creative design, and a subjective variation of taste that defied codification. ADAM SMITH, again, in the æsthetic chapter of his

'Theory of Moral Sentiments' (1759), rejected the "custom" or "association" theory of the French Abbé Buffier, and referred the idea of beauty to that of utility, thus missing the specific æsthetic problem save in so far as the *æsthetic* sense of fitness or adaptation is implied. Other British writers of the period (enumerated by Knight) failed to unite disputants, though one Scotch artist, JOHN DONALDSON, in a short essay on 'The Elements of Beauty' (1780), shows a clear perception of the fundamental truth noted by Hobbes, and points towards the necessary recognition of beauty as a relation. Sound suggestions were individually made by a number of other writers—Gerard, Sir Joshua Reynolds, Lord Kames, Shenstone, Tucker, Beattie, and Reid.

§ 6. Meantime, matters had gone similarly in France and Germany. In the "Augustan" period of Louis XIV there had been produced much French criticism of poetry and the arts; and, though this was biassed by convention, it involved some scientific analysis, France thus taking the lead in æsthetic exploration. CROUSAZ, the logician, in his *Traité du Beau* (1712), gave a lead in the right direction by rejecting "absolute" and "archetypal" formulas and recognising beauty as a relation, in which the qualities of the admired object as well as those of the subject could be discriminated. The Abbé Du Bos, whose *Réflexions critiques sur la poésie et la peinture* first appeared in 1719 (5th ed. revised and expanded, 1746), sets out with the important observation—appreciated by Hume and made afresh by Kant, who was followed here by Schiller—that men need occupation to escape the pain of tedium; but though his book gave ideas to Lessing, and remained a European "classic" for over two generations, it formed no body of scientific thought.

PÈRE BUFFIER, who followed in 1724 with a *Traité des vérités premières*, sought to find a solution of beauty as an imaginary mean or average, which logically fails, as did the Aristotelian "mean" of virtues, the choice having been made before the calculation. It would be more plausible to call beauty and ugliness opposed extremes, the average being between. PÈRE ANDRÉ, whose *Essai sur le Beau* appeared in 1741, reverted towards the *a priori* and moralistic conception of beauty; but was edited in 1759 by Formey, who put the principle of relativity with some philosophic breadth. The Abbé BARTEUX, in his *Les beaux-arts réduits à un même principe* (1746), sought unsuccessfully for an objective principle of classification. All that was sound in these writers was assimilated by DIDEROT (article 'Le Beau' in the *Encyclopédie*, critiques on the *Salons*, and essay *Sur la peinture*; MS. 1765; printed 1796), whose literary and intellectual energy make his work the most permanently interesting in French eighteenth-century

æsthetics. In that, as in philosophy, he was at once inductive and comprehensive. Progress in the science has been discontinuous because these attributes have been so.

§ 7. German æsthetics, as distinct from specifically literary theory, began definitely with BAUMGARTEN, who in effect gave the subject its current title by his book entitled *Æsthetica* (1750). It is substantially *à priori* and not memorably original. Much more fruitful was the *Geschichte der Kunst des Alterthums* of WINCKELMANN (1764). The high-water mark of the period in German æsthetics is the *Laokoön* of LESSING (1769), who broadly corresponds to Diderot in critical power. His original contribution to æsthetic theory, however, is not considerable, the outstanding thesis of his essay (that painting and poetry call for different orders of subject-matter) having been put not only by Harris, but by the French Count Caylus, whom he criticised without making the acknowledgment. Beginning under Lessing's influence, Goethe gave much thought to æsthetics (refs. in Bosanquet and Knight), resisting the liminary theories of the time; and SCHILLER, in his 'Æsthetical Letters and Essays' (B.L.), gave a stimulating application to some of the æsthetic ideas of Kant.

§ 8. By the end of the 18th c., æsthetics had practically taken its place in the total field of philosophy, having been handled by Hutcheson, Hume, and Reid in Britain and by Kant in Germany; and Kant's treatment of æsthetics in the *Kritik der Urtheilskraft* ('Critique of Judgment,' E. tr. Mac.) put it definitely on a philosophic level. See the full exposition and criticism of Bosanquet, ch. x. The contemporary and later treatment of it in Britain—as by the Rev. A. ALISON ('Essay on the Nature and Principles of Taste,' 1790 and 1811); UVEDALE PRICE ('Essay on the Picturesque as compared with the Sublime and Beautiful,' 1794); ERASMUS DARWIN ('Zoonomia,' 3rd ed. 1801); PAYNE KNIGHT ('An Analytical Enquiry into the Principles of Taste,' 1805); Sir CHARLES BELL ('Anatomy and Philosophy of Expression as connected with the Fine Arts,' 1806), and DUGALD STEWART (essay 'On the Beautiful,' 1810)—though less comprehensive in metaphysic, is on the whole increasingly systematic. The same degree of progress is to be noted in France, where COUSIN (*Du Vrai, du Beau, et du Bien*, 1854) and JOUFFROY (*Cours d'Esthétique*, pub. 1843) between them constitute the beginning of the modern period. In Germany, Schelling to some extent and Hegel more fully elaborated the abstract philosophy of the subject, while doing much to elucidate æsthetics as such. HEGEL's *Æsthetik* is an extremely bulky work, posthumously produced from lecture notes. Mr. Bosanquet translated the Introduction with notes and a prefatory Essay (K.P. 1886).

§ 9. Since Hegel, æsthetics has become increasingly analytical and psychological; and of the abundant modern literature on the subject the following may be taken as typical productions, worth special attention. Prof. **Bain**, in ch. xiv. of '**The Emotions and the Will**,' applies closely and carefully the experimental method, and fully recognises the variety of elements which are cognised as beauty. DARWIN in '**The Descent of Man**,' and SPENCER in '**The Principles of Psychology**' and '**Essays**,' deal with the conception from the point of view of organic evolution in the race. Prof. SULLY devotes an essay in his '**Sensation and Intuition**' (1874) to '**The Possibility of a Science of Æsthetics**,' a work of scientific eclecticism. GRANT ALLEN'S '**Physiological Æsthetics**' (1877) and '**The Colour Sense**' (1879) are notable investigations on the line of the evolution theory. See also his essays on the evolution of forms of æsthetic feeling in *Mind*, July, 1878; July, 1879; and October, 1900. To the idealist or à priori school, broadly speaking, belong Prof. G. BALDWIN BROWN'S work on '**The Fine Arts**' (U.E.M. 2nd ed. illus. 1902) and the second part of Prof. KNIGHT'S '**Philosophy of the Beautiful**.' There is independent merit, on the other hand, in H. RUTGERS MARSHALL'S '**Pain, Pleasure, and Æsthetics**' (Mac. 1894), and in the same author's shorter and simpler works, '**Æsthetic Principles**' (1895, same) and '**The Beautiful**' (Mac. 1924). Among the many vols. of æsthetic discussion of the last generation may be noted the '**Belcaro**' of VERNON LEE (1883). A handling of the subject which, without being merely literary, or philosophic, or psychological, very ably combines all of these elements, is presented by Prof. GEORGE SANTAYANA, of Harvard, in a volume of his '**Life of Reason**' series sub-titled '**Reason in Art**' (Con. 1905). Prof. IRVING BABBITT'S '**The New Laocoon**' (Con. 1910) is a challenging '**Essay on the Confusion of the Arts**.' '**The Psychology of Men of Genius**,' by Prof. E. KRETSCHMER of Marburg (K.P. 1930), has its special bearing on æsthetics; and '**The Development of the Feeling for Nature in the Middle Ages and Modern Times**,' by C. J. A. BIESE (E. tr. Rout. 1905), is of obvious importance to the realisation of the evolutionary facts.

§ 10. An important work in French is *L'Esthétique* of EUGÈNE VÉRON (1878: E. tr. C. & H. 1879). The Belgian G. H. DE COSTER'S *Éléments de l'esthétique générale* (1880) leans, on the other hand, to the à priori side, as does the later work of J. M. GUYAU, *Les problèmes de l'esthétique contemporaine* (1884). Very difficult, very technical, and very closely wrought is *Les éléments du beau*, by MAURICE GRIVEAU (1892), which claims to be an "analysis and synthesis of æsthetic facts according to the documents of language"—that is, by way of the analysis of epithets.

TAINÉ's earlier lectures on the *Philosophie de l'art* in different countries (all tr. by J. Durand, 'Lectures on Art,' N.Y. 1890) help indirectly to the solution of part of the æsthetic problem by accounting sociologically for the vogue of different forms of art.

§ 11. The modern German literature of æsthetics is extremely voluminous. The Hegelians on this as on other themes divided into hostile schools, one of which is represented by F. T. VISCHER's *Æsthetik, oder Wissenschaft der Schönen* (3 Th. 1846-54), and another by MORITZ CARRIÈRE's still bulkier *Die Kunst im Zusammenhang der Culturentwicklung und die Ideale der Menschheit* (5 Bde. 1863-73), *Materialismus und Æsthetik* (1892), and *Æsthetik* (2 Bde. 2te Aufl. 1873). The two pessimists, Schopenhauer and Hartmann, both deal with æsthetics in their leading works (Course VI); and the latter has produced an *Æsthetik*, in two parts, the first discussing German developments since Kant, the second setting forth systematically the author's own theory, which is a kind of philosophic "impressionism." LOTZE's æsthetic ideas are embodied in his *Geschichte der Æsthetik in Deutschland* (1868). FECHNER's *Vorschule der Æsthetik* (1876) is a brilliant application of the methods of the new physio-psychology. Of general German histories of the subject, SCHASLER's *Kritische Geschichte der Æsthetik* (1872, 2 Bde.); ZIMMERMAN's *Æsthetik, I. historischkritischer Theil* (1858); and HEINRICH VON STEIN's *Die Entstehung der neueren Æsthetik* (1886) are the principal. Schasler also produced an *Æsthetik* of manageable size (2 Bde.) with the sub-title *Grundzüge der Wissenschaft der Schönen und der Kunst*, for a popular science series (1871-2). A new quasi-ethical point of view was taken in E. GROSSE's *Die Anfänge der Kunst* (1894).

§ 12. A student interested in the æsthetics of the separate arts as such may still begin profitably with the discussions on ARISTOTLE's *Poetics*. Horace's 'Art of Poetry' is another classic inquiry worth examining. The famous ancient treatise of LONGINUS on 'The Sublime' is also worth reading as regards poetry (cheap ed. Cas.; tr. by Stebbing, Oxford, 1867; Giles, London, 1870; and later, by H. L. Havell, with introd. by A. Lang; Mac. 1890). In all Renaissance literature, the most important discussion of art is probably LEONARDO DA VINCI's *Trattato della Pittura* (E. tr. 'The Art of Painting,' in B.L.).

LAMB's essay *On the Tragedies of Shakespeare* is one of the masterpieces of English critical literature; and WORDSWORTH's Preface to the 1815 edition of the 'Lyrical Ballads' (see 'Wordsworth's Literary Criticism' by N. Smith, O.U.P. 1905), COLERIDGE's critical chapters on poetry in the *Biographia Literaria*, and elsewhere (coll. in 'Coleridge's Literary Criticism')

by J. W. MACKAIL (O.U.P. 1908), and SHELLEY's Essay on Poetry (see 'Shelley's Literary and Philosophical Criticism' by J. SHAWCROSS, O.U.P. 1909), are all notable documents in æsthetic criticism and analysis. JEFFREY and DE QUINCEY are in turn condensed in the O.U.P. ser. E. S. DALLAS's 'Poetics: An Essay on Poetry' (1852) is nearly forgotten, but has merit, as has his 'The Gay Science' (2 v. 1866), which is an attempt at a science of criticism, considered as a science of æsthetic pleasure. Of later works of reasoned "æsthetic" literary criticism, the greatest are probably the 'Shakespearean Tragedy' of Prof. A. C. BRADLEY (Mac. 2nd ed. 1908), and 'Oxford Lectures on Poetry' (same, 1909). His recent 'Miscellany' (Mac. 1929) extends the service yet further.

The fact that Dr. Bradley, in his vindication of Shelley, makes the intensity of that poet's *aspiration* a decisive element in the æsthetic value of his work, is a reminder that criticism has many snares. Accordingly, the 'Principles of Literary Criticism,' by I. A. RICHARDS (K.P. 3rd ed. 1928), and its sequel, 'Practical Criticism: A Study of Literary Judgment' (same, 1929), are important for the special handling of the problem. The two books named are about the best in their kind; though the former seems at points gratuitously factious, flouting in its natural sense a canon on which the author often relies. Thus his able criticism of Dr. Bradley at times seems to recoil on himself. Rightly, however, does he pronounce, as to TOLSTOY'S 'What is Art?' that "No better example could be found of how *not* to introduce moral preoccupation into the judgment of values."

Other lines of study of poetic art are represented in the older work of Dr. G. L. RAYMOND, 'Poetry as a Representative Art: An Essay in Comparative Æsthetics' (Put. 7th ed. rev. 1899); and other attitudes to art in general are taken up in Prof. DE W. H. PARKER'S 'The Analysis of Art' (Y.U.P. 1927), and the work of Mr. CLIVE BELL, 'Art' (C. & W. 1914), which is assailed in the App. to Prof. DUCASSE'S 'Philosophy of Art' (§ 18).

Poetics in general may be usefully approached under the guidance of R. P. COWL'S expert compilation, 'The Theory of Poetry in England: Its Development in Doctrines and Ideas from the 16th to the 19th Century' (Mac. 1914). As a mere selection from noteworthy critical literature, this is widely informative; and, coming down to Coleridge, Hazlitt, and Poe, is preparative for present-day æsthetic discussion. As in other fields of inquiry, and in æsthetics in general, there are diverging tendencies towards a priori classification and inductive study of data. Thus 'The Romantic Theory of Poetry' by A. E. POWELL [Mrs. E. R. Dodds] (Arnold, 1926) is a good analysis and exposition

of the conception of poetry generally entertained by the "romantics" round Coleridge.

In the very large critical literature on English poetry, æsthetic light is to be found in a number of the essays of J. R. LOWELL, in particular those on Chaucer, Spenser, and Wordsworth. In the present century, some of the most valuable studies are those of Prof. J. W. MACKAIL entitled 'The Springs of Helicon' [Chaucer to Milton] and 'Lectures on Poetry' (1909, 1911: Lmns.); 'A Sheaf of Papers' by Prof. O. ELTON (H. & S. 1922); and 'The Art of Poetry: Seven Lectures,' by Prof. W. P. KER (Cl. Pr. 1923). It is a mark of those ripe critics to be finely selective.

§ 13. Under poetics may be included the science of verse or versification, for a modern exposition of which see T. S. OMOND'S 'English Verse Structure' (Douglas, 1897), 'A Study of Metre' (1903, rep. Moring, 1920), and 'English Metrists' (Tunbridge Wells, 1903), a bibliography. Like Omond, ROBERT BRIDGES had taken an original grasp of the problem in his brochure 'Milton's Prosody' (Cl. Pr. 1894). (Refs. to French and other discussions in App. on "Accent, Quantity and Feet" in 'New Essays towards a Crit. Method,' by J. M. R.: Lane, 1897.) SIDNEY LANIER'S 'The Science of English Verse' (rep. 1901: Scrib.) has similar merits of originality. The older 'Laws of Verse' by Dr. J. J. SYLVESTER (1870) verges towards the mathematical. Broadly speaking, the æsthetic criticism of poetry in the past ran to an extraction of rules from "classic" practice: the more competent modern study of prosody realises that rhythm appeals to free æsthetic satisfaction as experienced in and for itself. Omond and Bridges are vigorously supported in 'English Poesy: an Induction' by Dr. W. WINSLOW HALL (Dent, 1911)—with "transcendental" leanings. Other æsthetic problems are dealt with in 'A Study in English Metrics' by ADELAIDE CRAPSEY (Knopf, N.Y. 1918); 'The Principles of English Versification,' by P. F. BAUM (Milford, 1922); 'An Essay on Metaphor in Poetry,' by J. G. JENNINGS (Blackie, 1915).

A cognate problem is that of the æsthetic values of prose, which has been copiously handled by Prof. G. SAINTSBURY in 'A History of English Prose Rhythm' (Bld. 1912). In this connection the more scientific work of Dr. W. M. PATERSON (Col. U.P. 2nd ed. 1917) will be found critically instructive. See also 'Style' by Prof. Sir WALTER RALEIGH (Arnold, 5th imp. 1904).

§ 14. DRAMA as a technique has been discussed in 'Freitag's Technique of the Drama' (E. tr. Chicago, 1895); 'The Drama in Europe in Theory and Practice' by ELEANOR P. JOURDAIN (Met. 1924); 'A Study of the Drama' by Prof. BRANDER MATTHEWS (Lmns. 1911); and 'Play-Making: A Manual of

Craftsmanship' by WILLIAM ARCHER (C. & H. 1913). A modern debate on the 'principles' of drama was set up by the German dramatist Hebbel, as to which see 'Friedrich Hebbel as a Dramatic Artist,' by Dr. G. B. REES (Bell, 1930).

§ 15. Modern scientific studies of colour and sound have contributed not a little to exact æsthetic study. See for instance the work of M. E. CHEVREUL on 'The Laws of Contrast of Colour' (E. tr. Rout.), the great work of HELMHOLTZ 'On the Sensations of Tone as a physiological basis for the Theory of Music' (E. tr. 2nd ed. with additions, 1885, Lmns.), and his essays 'On the Physiological Causes of Harmony in Music' (in E. tr. of his 'Popular Lectures on Scientific Subjects,' Lmns. 1873), and 'On the Relation of Optics to Painting' (E. tr. of 2nd ser. of lectures, same pub. 1881). Of great importance as regards music are EDMUND GURNEY's massive work, 'The Power of Sound' (1880), and several of the essays in vol. ii of his collection entitled 'Tertium Quid' (K.P. 1887); and in this connection should be noted also the two able and original works of ERNEST NEWMAN on 'Glück' and 'Wagner' (B. Dobell, 1895 and 1899), which contain much searching criticism. The same expert pursues æsthetic problems in 'A Musical Critic's Holiday' (Knopf, N.Y. 1925) and 'The Unconscious Beethoven: An Essay in Musical Psychology' (same, 1927).

Æsthetic analysis is naturally carried on in competent histories of music (Course LXVI); but we note here only such æsthetic reasoning as is carried on in the before-cited works and such others as 'The New Music,' by GEORGE DYSON (2nd ed. 1926); 'The Philosophy of Music,' by Dr. WILLIAM POLE (K.P.); 'The Scope of Music,' by Percy G. BUCK (2nd ed. 1927); 'Musical Criticism,' by M. D. CALVOCORESSI (1923); 'Musical Taste and How to Form It,' by the same writer (1925: all O.U.P.); 'The Limitations of Music: A Study in Æsthetics,' by ERIC BLOM (Mac.); 'Style in Musical Art,' by Sir C. HUBERT A. PARRY (same); 'The Rhythm of Modern Music,' by C. F. ABDY-WILLIAMS (same); 'The Musical Faculty: Its Origins and Processes,' by WILLIAM WALLACE (same); Sir W. H. HADOW's Lecture, 'A Comparison of Poetry and Music' (1925: C.U.P.); Dr. H. J. WATT, 'The Foundations of Music' (same); A. WOOD's manual, 'The Physical Basis of Music' (same); Mr. ABDY-WILLIAMS's essay on 'The Aristoxenian Theory of Musical Rhythm' (same); and Dr. MAX SCHOEN's 'The Beautiful in Music' (Rout.).

Architecture is chiefly studied in the histories of its forms, but 'The Essentials of Composition as Applied to Art' by J. V. VAN PELT (2nd ed. Mac.) and RUSKIN's 'The Poetry of Architecture' belong to æsthetics.

§ 16. As regards painting, sculpture, and decoration, English readers will scarcely require to be referred to the works of Ruskin, whose doctrines in art were criticised by P. G. HAMERTON in 'Thoughts about Art' (1873), and other works. His own artistic views are set forth in 'Imagination in Landscape Painting' (rep. 1896, S.S. & Co.). Ruskin's *magnum opus*, 'Modern Painters' (sev. reps.), has been usefully abridged in 1 vol. by A. J. FINBERG, with good critical judgment (Bell, 1927). The work, remaining pro-Ruskinian, does not face the vitiation of much of Ruskin's criticism by alien ethical and religious motives; but it is at points corrective. Another line of æsthetic propaganda was taken by WILLIAM MORRIS ('Hopes and Fears for Art,' 1881; 'The Decorative Arts,' 1878; 'Lectures on Art'). On Ruskin it may be well to compare W. G. COLLINGWOOD'S 'Ruskin's Art Teaching' (1882) with M. MILSAND'S *L'Esthétique anglaise: Étude sur M. John Ruskin* (1864) and WHISTLER'S 'Gentle Art of Making Enemies' (1890). 'The Ideals of Painting' by J. COMYNS CARR (Mac.) belongs also to this field. Mr. COLLINGWOOD produced an important series of lectures on 'The Philosophy of Ornament' (Allen, 1883), in which connection it may not be uninteresting to go back to EDGAR A. POE'S pioneer essay on 'The Philosophy of Furniture.' The 'Manual of Decorative Composition' of HENRI MAYEUX (E. tr. 1889) has both theoretical and practical value. Messrs. Longmans publish practical works on design and decoration in the precious metals, educational metal-craft, and decorative leather-work; also 'Medieval Craftsmanship and the Modern Amateur' by NEWTON WETHERED. But the æsthetic pleasure from "line" admits of further investigation.

§ 17. The later and higher developments of æsthetic analysis have been carried somewhat further by French specialists than even by German. Prof. PAUL SOURIAU, for instance, opened up new lines of thought in his *Théorie de l'invention* (1881) and his *La suggestion dans l'art* (1893); and the same may be said of *L'art et le réel* by Prof. JEAN PÉRÈS (1898) and the German work of G. HIRTH, tr. in French as *La physiologie de l'art* (orig. *Aufgaben der Kunstphysiologie*, 1891). There is also a French tr. of a work of MARIO PILO, *La psychologie du beau et de l'art* (orig. 1892). Other works named in Course IX, § 16, bear upon æsthetics; and to these may be added J. M. GUYAU'S *L'art au point de vue sociologique* (1889); the *Psychologie de l'art* of HENRI DELACROIX; and the *Esthétique* of P. GUASTALLA.

§ 18. The most prominent general work on Æsthetics in the present century is BENEDETTO CROCE'S 'Æsthetic as Science of Expression and General Linguistic' (E. tr. by D. AINSLIE: Mac. 2nd ed. 1922), as to which see ch. iii of H. W. CARR'S vol.

on Croce (Course IX, § 21). 'The Philosophy of Art,' by Prof. CURT JOHN DUCASSE of Brown Univ. (A. & U. 1929), though discursively critical rather than systematic or synthetic, and consisting mainly of collected articles, is an acute and stimulating survey, indicating the large activity of discussion on this field in the American academic world. The whole problem is competently raised, further, in 'The Meaning of Beauty: A Theory of Æsthetics' by W. T. STACE (R. & T. 1929), though that is more concerned with the philosophy of the concept than the analysis of judgments. Its appended criticism of Croce is stringent; as is that of I. A. RICHARDS in his 'Principles.' 'Beauty,' by HELEN PANKHURST (N. Douglas, 1932), and 'A Study in Æsthetics,' by LOUIS A. REID (A. & U. 1932), deal on different lines of analysis with the grounds of the concept.

On the side of judgment Mr. E. E. KELLETT's brilliant work 'The Whirligig of Taste' (Hogarth Pr. 1929) challenges attention, though its theme is not new. Inasmuch as it subsumes standards (p. 104) while denying that they exist (p. 126), it leaves the concrete problems of æsthetics unreduced to formal solution, but may be none the less educative. The most obvious generalisation thus far yielded by the study is that a manifold "sense" of æsthetic joy has been evolved in the human race, chiefly in its later stages, and that the progressive capacity of delight in colours, forms, sounds, metres or rhythms, and their artistic manipulation, has been aidant to life in general by multiplying its motives and attractions; though insensitivity to most æsthetic joys, and to some in particular, is still common even among the more developed races. Considered as phenomena of subjective satisfaction in "objects," the æsthetic joys are seen to be no more mysterious than those classed as non-æsthetic in the higher or stricter sense of the term, and thus call no more for new philosophic "explanation" than the phenomena of perception and thought in general. The mainly physiological joys are taken for granted, without "explanation": the æsthetic seem relatively "mysterious" only when first logically inquired into, as do all sequences of causation. The obvious variation and discordance in æsthetic judgment compares with that in ethic, leaving a search for critical tests of praise and blame equally reasonable in the two orders. The debate is in both cases educative of judgment. In terms of the evolutionary view of æsthetics, changes of "taste" or "vogue" should be expected, as concomitants of subjective variation in terms of satiety and novelty. See Prof. SAINTSBURY'S 'History of Criticism and Literary Taste in Europe' (3 v. Bld. 4th ed. 1922-23).

COURSE XIV

POLITICS

Preamble.—THE study of Politics may be distinguished from that of Sociology—to which it is ancillary—as dealing specially with the recorded history of political institutions and the struggles for power of classes, parties, and interests in all communities. Both studies must take constant account of history, and both involve theorising on laws of social movement; but politics remains a particular process among the many which constitute social evolution. In other words, politics is a “praxis”; and the “theories” of which it has to take account are the generalised expressions, (a) on the one hand, of the political aspirations or preferences current among classes in respect of their supposed interests, or the total interests of the community as by them seen; and (b) on the other hand, of the doctrine of individual thinkers who propound either ideals to be individually entertained as conducing to social betterment, or schemes of readjustment of law or taxation to that proposed end.

It is here accordingly suggested (1) that, Politics being a vital concern for all political aggregates which seek to manage their collective affairs, the study of it is to be profitably pursued only in the light of a good knowledge of (a) political history and (b) the economic science which should guide all taxation, especially as it conditions trade and industry. And (2) inasmuch as neither form of study is generally cultivated even among the “educated” classes in the more civilised States, that lack of preparation for judgment is itself one of the most important of the political conditions to be taken into account in estimating the fitness of any theory of policy.

§ 1. As in the case of others of the mental or humanist sciences, the student may begin with a survey either of past action or of past thinking. That is to say, he may set out with a study of (a) “primitive” society as it is revealed in the science of Anthropology, in particular by such works as those of Tylor, Avebury, Spencer, Lippert, Briffault, Rivers, Goldenweiser; and (b) the social process seen in General History and that of civilisation (Course I, §§ 5, 6; Course III), or with the books which deal with

the history of Politics in the "civilised" period specially so termed. And for his purposes the latter introduction, on a basis of some knowledge of the former, as set forth in GOLDENWEISER'S 'Early Civilisation' (Har.) will be profitable, provided his objective is the study of what political life really is, preparatory to an evaluation of all doctrines of what it ought to be. Otherwise the unprepared inquirer will be appealed to by schemas, many of which propound ideals cherished on ethical or other grounds of aspiration. Proceeding on no study either of average political capacity or of economic science, such schemas invite to ignorant action.

§ 2. A very intelligent and suggestive introduction to the subject on evolutionary lines may be had from **Edward Jenks's** little book, '**A History of Politics**' (T.P.S. Dent, 1900); after which the older theoretical manual of **Thomas Raleigh**, '**Elementary Politics**' (Frowde, 1886), also very compendious and readable, may usefully be studied. The 'Introduction to Political Science' of Prof. J. W. GARNER (N.Y. 2nd ed. 1927) is an up-to-date exposition in its kind; as is the 'Introduction to World Politics' of H. A. GIBBONS (A. & U.). The short 'Introduction to Modern Political Theory' by C. E. M. JOAD (Cl. Pr. 1924) will be found suggestive in the light of the others; as will Prof. E. BARKER'S 'The Study of Political Science and its relation to Cognate Studies' (C.U.P.)—another handy manual. Perhaps the most vigorously reasoned of recent handbooks is the 'Introduction to Politics' of Prof. H. J. LASKI (A. & U. 1931). It abounds in sound criticism, while incurring some.

§ 3. It is in Greece and Italy that politics proper first becomes for the student a clearly defined process; and to the study of this all histories of these countries that are worthy of the name are helpful. Aristotle's 'Politics' (B.L.; another tr. by Jowett, Cl. Pr. 1905) is a political classic, framed in view of the social problems which faced ancient as they do modern democratic States, and has enduring importance. As to the latterly recovered 'Constitution of Athens,' see Course XX, § 8. MAISCH'S 'Manual of Greek Antiquities' (T.P.S.) is particularly useful as to constitutional bases in Greece. Special monographs, however, have been devoted to the subject; and among these may be noted 'The Greek Commonwealth: Politics and Economics in 5th Cent. Athens,' by A. ZIMMERN (Cl. Pr. 1924); the older *Cité Antique* of Fustel de Coulanges; W. WARDE FOWLER'S 'City State of the Greeks and Romans' (Mac. 1891); and LEONARD WHIBLEY'S 'Greek Oligarchies, their Character and Organisation' (Met. 1896) and 'Political Parties in Athens during the Peloponnesian War' (C.U.P.)—two treatises of exceptional merit. Roman

politics may be studied, apart from the histories and historical manuals, in the works mentioned in Course XXI, §§ 2, 9. As regards the growth of Roman Imperialism, different views will be found set forth in 'Rome the Lawgiver' by Prof. J. DECLAREUIL (K.P. 1927); '**The Growth of Rome**' by P. E. Matheson (Cl. Pr.); 'The Social and Economic History of the Roman Empire' by M. ROSTOVITZ (E. tr. 1922); T. RICE HOLMES's 'Roman Republic' (3 v.) and 'The Architect of the Roman Empire' (1928: all Cl. Pr.); and in the editor's 'Evolution of States' (Watts, 1912). On the doctrinal side Prof. J. L. MYRES's 'The Political Ideals of the Greeks' (Arnold, 1927); Prof. E. BARKER's study of 'The Political Thought of Plato and Aristotle' (Met. 1918); and A. ZIMMERN's 'Solon and Croesus, and Other Greek Essays' (O.U.P. 1928) repay study.

§ 4. Among comprehensive modern treatises on politics may be particularly named 'The Elements of Politics' by Prof. H. SIDGWICK (Mac. 1891) and the noteworthy *Politik; geschichtliche Naturlehre der Monarchie, Aristokratie, und Demokratie*, by WILHELM ROSCHER (1892). There is shrewd conservative criticism in a much slighter work, 'Monarchy and Democracy: Phases of Modern Politics,' by the Duke of Somerset (1880). A systematic view of a very important side of politics is set forth in Prof. BASTABLE's 'Public Finance' (Mac. 3rd ed. rev. 1903). Abstract theories of "the State," again, are set forth in BLUNTISCHLI's treatise on 'The Theory of the State' (E. tr. Cl. Pr.); Prof. B. BOSANQUET's able Hegelian exposition, 'The Philosophical Theory of the State' (Mac. 1899); the American Prof. WOODROW WILSON's 'The State: Elements of Historical and Practical Politics' (rev. ed. with introd. by OSCAR BROWNING, 1899); and the American Prof. THEODORE DE WOLFEY's older work 'Political Science: The State Theoretically and Practically Considered' (S.M. 1877, 2 v.). 'The Science of Politics' by Prof. SHELDON AMOS (I.S.S.) has a standard footing; as have 'Democracy and Liberty' by W. E. H. LECKY (Lmns. 2 v. 1899) and 'Modern Democracies' by Lord BRYCE (Mac. 2 v. 1921). Dr. R. H. MURRAY's 'Studies in the English Social and Political Thinkers of the 19th Century' (Heffer, 2 v. 1929) and 'The Political Consequences of the Reformation' (Benn, 1926) represent fresh thinking. 'Federations and Unions' by R. E. EGERTON (Cl. Pr. 1924), and three works of Prof. H. J. LASKI, 'Studies in the Problem of Sovereignty'; 'Authority in the Modern State' (Y.U.P. 1917, 1919); and 'Liberty in the Modern State' (F. & F.) deal with important modern phases of old problems.

§ 5. The *history* of political theories may be profitably studied

by the help of the 'History of Political Thought' of Prof. R. G. GETTELL of California (A. & U. 1924); the 'Political Theories of the Ancient World,' by the American W. W. Willoughby (Lmns. 1903); the American Prof. W. A. Dunning's excellent '**History of Political Theories : Ancient and Mediæval**' (Mac. vol. i, 1902); vol. ii, 'From Luther to Montesquieu' (same, 1905); and A. J. and R. W. CARLYLE's 'History of Medieval Political Theory in the West' (Bld. 3 v. 1903, etc.). See also the work of O. GIERKE, 'Political Theories of the Middle Ages' (E. tr. with long introd. by MAITLAND; C.U.P. 1900); Father BEDE JARRETT's 'Social Theories of the Middle Ages' (Benn, 1926); and Prof. Sidgwick's treatise, 'The Development of European Polity' (Mac. 1903). The shorter '**Introduction to the History of the Science of Politics**' of Sir F. Pollock (Mac. 1890 and later) comes down to its date, and gives clues to the leading writers since Machiavelli. On the part played in political thought by Spinoza, see R. A. DUFF's 'Spinoza's Political and Ethical Philosophy' (MacL. 1903). One of the most influential writings on politics in the 18th c. was ROUSSEAU's essay on 'The Social Contract'; and H. J. TOZER's introd. to his trans. of that work (S.S.S. 1895) gives a good view of his relations to earlier and contemporary thinkers. Much information on the evolution of political ideas, again, is to be gathered from the famous compilation, 'The Federalist,' by Hamilton, Madison, and Jay, of which a good informative edition is that of PAUL LEICESTER FORD (Holt, 1898). 'English Political Philosophy from Hobbes to Maine' by Prof. WILLIAM GRAHAM (E. Arnold, 1899) usefully covers two centuries, dealing with the intervening teaching of Locke, Burke, Bentham, and J. S. Mill. Professor R. M. MACIVER's 'The Modern State' (Cl. Pr. 1926) may be regarded as a synthesis alike of the theory and the practice of the past; and 'The Common Weal' of H. A. L. FISHER (same, 1924) as a manual of civics.

Prof. F. J. C. HEARNshaw has produced an educative series of 5 vols. of lectures on the 'Social and Political Ideas' of eminent political thinkers from the Mediæval period to the 'Revolutionary Era' (Har.).

§ 6. English literature is remarkably rich in discussions of political principles from the Elizabethan period till the end of the 18th c. The outstanding works down to the period of the French Revolution are:—HOOKER's 'Ecclesiastical Polity' (1593, etc. many eds.); Sir JOHN ELIOT's '*De Jure Maiestatis*'; or, 'Political Treatise of Government' (1628–30; rep. by Grosart, 1882); HOBBS's 'Leviathan' (1651; several reps.); JAMES HARRINGTON's 'Oceana' (1656; rep. 1700); Sir ROBERT FILMER's 'Patriarcha' (written before 1653; pub. 1680); LOCKE's 'Two

Treatises of Civil Government' (1689; rep. with Filmer in cheap ed. Rout.); ALGERNON SIDNEY's 'Discourses upon Civil Government' (1698); HUME's 'Political Essays' (1741; many reps.); PRIESTLEY's 'Essay on the First Principles of Government' (1771); JEREMY BENTHAM's 'Fragment on Government' (1776; 2nd ed. enlarged, 1823); the political sections of ADAM SMITH's 'Wealth of Nations' (1776); Dr. RICHARD PRICE's 'Observations on the Nature of Civil Liberty' (3rd ed. 1776); Dr. JOSIAH TUCKER's 'Treatise Concerning Civil Government' (1781); the various political treatises of BURKE; PAINE's famous 'Rights of Man' (1791); MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT's 'Vindication of the Rights of Woman' (1792); and WILLIAM GODWIN's 'Enquiry Concerning Political Justice' (1793). G. P. GOOCH's 'English Democratic Ideas of the 17th Century' (C.U.P. 2nd ed. with supp. notes by Prof. H. J. Laski) supplies much information otherwise uncollected; and H. F. RUSSELL SMITH's 'Harrington and his *Oceana*' (C.U.P.) is an illuminating 'Study of a 17th-Century Utopia and its influence in America.' Burke is more frequently lauded than weighed, and actually appears to be regarded by some writers as an advocate of electoral reform in his day. Of recent works on him the 'Edmund Burke' of BERTRAM NEWMAN (Bell, 1927) is the most careful and judicial; though Dr. R. H. MURRAY's (O.U.P. 1931) makes fresh research.

Over all of these stand out in practical importance the two chief works of Bentham: 'Principles of Morals and Legislation' (1789) and 'The Theory of Legislation' first constructed in French from Bentham's MSS. by ÉTIENNE DUMONT and re-trans. from that, first by J. NEAL (Boston, 1830), and later by R. HILDRETH, another American (1864; new ed. corr. by C. K. Ogden with intro. and notes, K.P. 1932). The 'Theory' is held to have had a wider influence on political thought than any other single treatise. On WILLIAM COBBETT, a more popular force of the period, there are two monographs: one by E. T. CARLYLE (Con. 1904); one by G. D. H. COLE (Collins, 1924).

§ 7. A virtually new, though not unheralded, development of political thought was set up, primarily by way of reaction against Godwin, in the Rev. THOMAS MALTHUS's epoch-making 'Essay on the Principle of Population' (1st ed. 1798; rep. 1926, with notes by Dr. Bonar, Mac.; author's last rev. ed. 1826; 7th ed. 1872; another with introd. by G. W. Bettany, W.L. 1890). Previous writers had noted some of the facts, but not, as did Malthus, by way of resistance to political Utopianism. The fortunes of Malthus's doctrine may be followed in the excellent monograph of Dr. JAMES BONAR, 'Malthus and his Work' (Mac. rev. ed.), and in the same student's article *Malthus* in Palgrave's Dict. of

Pol. Econ. See also 'Letters of Ricardo to Malthus, 1810-1823' (Cl. Pr. 1887), ed. by Dr. Bonar; and the 'Francis Place' of Prof. GRAHAM WALLAS (rep. 1925, A. & U.), which throws much light on the politics of the period. GODWIN replied to Malthus in a forgotten volume, 'Of Population' (1820), as did WILLIAM HAZLITT in his 'Reply to the Essay on Population' (1807). These represented the "optimistic liberal" resistance. Another anti-Malthusian treatise was produced by THOMAS DOUBLEDAY, 'The True Law of Population' (3rd ed. 1853); and yet another by MICHAEL SADLER (1830), who was crushingly answered by Macaulay (art. rep. in his 'Miscellaneous Writings').

Despite the argumentative support given to Conservatism in its day by "Malthusianism," it found no general support on that side, partly because of the preliminary religious difficulty, partly because Malthus's solution, late marriage, was widely seen to promote sexual licence and prostitution. Its chief support came from the (then deistic) political reformers, who, accepting the solution of Birth Control, which had been spontaneously extended among the French peasantry who had been made owners of their land by the Revolution, formulated a Neo-Malthusianism of which Malthus disapproved, though it made for early marriage. It was thus chiefly through the Secularist movement that the Birth Control movement was effectively carried on; and it was the prosecution of Bradlaugh and Mrs. Besant (1877), for the publication of an old pamphlet which had been freely on sale for a generation, that forced the question on the general British public.

The resulting fall in the birth-rate, which has since been continuous, was obvious in a few years. During the remainder of the century the educative propaganda was chiefly carried on by *The Malthusian*, a monthly journal conducted by the late Dr. C. R. DRYSDALE, whose brother had produced a volume entitled 'Social Science,' expounding the case. Within the present century the doctrine has found many more supporters, in this country and elsewhere. This is to be noted in such books as 'Pre-Malthusian Doctrines of Population,' by Dr. C. E. STANGELAND (1904), and 'Social Democracy and Population,' by Dr. ALVAN A. TENNEY (1907; both King, for Col. U.P.). Of a more popular character was the little volume by MONTAGUE CRACKANTHORPE, K.C., 'Population and Progress' (C. & H. 1907). The state of the discussion among German economists was to be gathered from Prof. DIETZEL's paper, *Die Streit um Malthus Lehre*, in the vol. of *Festgaben* on Prof. A. Wagner's seventieth birthday (Leipzig, 1905). By this time, the indisputable fact that Darwin has found his theoretic starting-point in Malthus had served to establish the "Law of Population" as a scientific

truth, which politics could not ignore. 'The Population Problem' by A. M. CARR-SAUNDERS (Cl. Pr. 1922) is a sober and comprehensive study, with a large bibliography, and its substance is embodied in the same writer's manual 'Population' (same, 1925).

Research and debate are represented on the one hand by the monographs of J. A. FIELD and Prof. N. E. HIMES in the early history of the propaganda, *e.g.* the ed. by the latter (A. & U. 1930) of FRANCIS PLACE'S 'Illustrations and Proofs of the Principle of Population' (1820) with introd., and the larger works of exposition, as, 'Mankind at the Cross-Roads' by Prof. E. M. EAST of Harvard (Scrib. 1924); 'The Problem of Population,' by Harold Cox (Cape, 1922); 'Population,' by HAROLD WRIGHT (Nisbet, 1923); 'The Fall of the Birth-Rate,' by G. U. YULE (C.U.P.); 'The Decline in the Birth-Rate: its Causes and Effects'—the report of the "National Birth-Rate Commission" (C. & H. 1916); 'Birth-Rate and Empire,' by Sir JAMES MARCHANT, Sec. to the Commission (W. & N. 1917)—patriotic and religious; the very different 'Outspoken Essays' of Dean INGE (1st ser. iii and iv—Lmns.); and 'Population and the Social Problem' by J. SWINBURNE (A. & U.). 'Parenthood and Race Culture: An Outline of Eugenics' by Dr. C. W. SALEEBY (Cas. 1909) accepts the "optimistic" thesis of Spencer ('Principles of Biology'), that a "principle of individuation" may compensate the law of total overfertility without recourse to Birth Control. (The view was not originated by Spencer, having been put by Proudhon, Carey, and Greg.) Eugenists in general, however, appear to accept the Control principle. For divergent views see Prof. W. S. SADLER'S 'Race Decadence: an Exam. of the Causes of Racial Degeneracy in the U.S.'; and J. AVLING'S 'The Retreat from Parenthood' (both Rout.). The *Rassenverbesserung* of the Dutch Dr. Rutgers (Ger. tr. 1908) is an expert performance.

§ 8. Up to 1798, in British politics since the Tudor period, the pressures upon the monarchic system of the time being had been, first, for control of the taxing power through Parliament, and, under the constitutional system, for a distribution of the franchise. Only very slowly did the old maldistribution become a serious grievance. [In 'Political Justice,' by J. M. R. (Brit. Period, 1931) there is a summary sketch of the development.] After the French Revolutionary period, that and other claims for "political justice" emerged anew, as is well set forth in Dr. J. BOWLES DALY'S 'The Dawn of Radicalism' (S.S.S.). Bentham's 'Plan of Parliamentary Reform, with an Introduction showing the Necessity of Radical and the Inadequacy of Moderate Reform' (1817) was at once pioneering and prophetic; and MACAULAY'S

essay on JAMES MILL tells of one of the lines of discussion. Cobbett's works indicate another. The Reform Bill of 1832 was the historic outcome. Off the direct line of political development, but of great economic, ethical, and historical interest, is the series of the early English Socialists and land nationalisers, William Ogilvie, Thomas Spence, Charles Hall, William Thompson, Thomas Hodgskin, and J. F. Bray, who, with Godwin and Robert Owen, are the true founders of modern Socialism and "scientific Anarchism." As to them see the work of Prof. A. Menger, 'The Right to the Whole Produce of Labour' (E. tr. Mac. 1899), and Prof. FOXWELL's introduction thereto.

§ 9. In the period immediately after the Reform Act of 1832 the outstanding themes of political debate were the struggle for Free Trade against the Corn Laws, and the short-lived but equally polemical movement of Chartism (claiming "The People's Charter"), which was in practice antagonistic to the other; and alongside of both ran the world-famous Co-operative-Socialist movement of Robert Owen, whose chief writings were 'The New Moral World' (1836), 'Addresses' (1830), 'Outline of the Rational System of Society' (1840), with his debate on 'What is Socialism?' (1841). The teaching and the career of Owen are set forth with care and fullness in 'The Life of Robert Owen,' by FRANK PODMORE (Hut. 2 v. 1906); and subsequently by G. D. H. COLE (Benn, 1925). The nature and history of Chartism are to be studied in three works, 'The Age of the Chartists: A Study of Discontent: 1832-1854,' by J. L. and BARBARA HAMMOND (Lmns. 1931); the partisan 'History of the Chartist Movement' by JULIUS WEST—né Rappoport (Con. 1920); and the original and indispensable 'History of the Chartist Movement, 1837-1854' by R. G. GAMMAGE (rep. 1894), who was in the actual movement (d. 1888). The epoch-making Free Trade movement is to be followed in the speeches and writings of RICHARD COBDEN (Cas.), its greatest mouthpiece, which contain in a non-systematic but clear form the elements of a rational fiscal system. A unifying view of the movement is supplied by MORLEY's 'Life of Cobden' (Mac. 2 v.) and of Cobden's general politics by J. A. HOBSON's 'Richard Cobden, the International Man' (F.U. 1918). The state of popular thought in 1848 may be gathered from 'Politics for the People,' issued in that year in 17 numbers (Parker).

§ 10. A notable school of political thought is that represented by J. S. MILL, 'On Liberty' (R.P.A. rep. Watts), which proceeds on the principles of Baron WILHELM VON HUMBOLDT, whose 'Sphere and Duties of Government' was tr. in English (1854). Mill's political ideas are further to be gathered from his books on

'Representative Government' and 'The Subjection of Women,' his 'Dissertations and Discussions,' his 'Principles of Political Economy,' his 'Autobiography,' and his posthumous papers on Socialism (*Fortnightly Review*, 1879). The last-named show the final set of his thought in a socialistic direction. The *laissez faire* theory is defended *passim* in BUCKLE's 'Introduction to the History of Civilisation in England' (rep. Rout. 1904: Watts, rep. of vol. i); and in HERBERT SPENCER's 'Man *versus* the State' (W. & N.). In Spencer's earlier 'Social Statics' (1851) there is laid down a doctrine of land nationalisation, from which he afterwards swerved, modifying the book in a late reprint (same); and on this and other heads he is criticised by HENRY GEORGE in 'A Perplexed Philosopher' (K.P. 1893). Sir HENRY MAINE's 'Ancient Law' has been characterised in Course I, § 6. His treatise 'On Popular Government,' on the other hand, propounds in modern politics the Conservative principle, with an admitted dignity. HENRY GEORGE's 'Progress and Poverty' (rep. 1931) became the text-book of a school of political reformers who, advocating his "single tax" (taxation of economic rent of land alone), remain opposed to Socialism. The 'Taxation of Land Values and the Single Tax' by Prof. W. SMART (MacL. 1900) is a very able criticism. Prof. E. BARKER's H.U.L. manual, 'Political Thought from Herbert Spencer to the Present Day' is a helpful conspectus of subsequent developments.

§ 11. The political doctrine of Socialism is represented for the last generation primarily by the doctrine and school of the German KARL MARX, the first two parts of whose work on 'Capital' are tr. in Eng. (A. & U. cheap ed. of vol. i; later tr. of vol. ii) and other languages. This is partly elucidated by the 'Socialism; Utopian and Scientific' of Marx's colleague FR. ENGELS (S.S.S.). In this connection should also be read the above-mentioned work of Dr. Anton Menger, wherein is shown the great and ill-acknowledged doctrinal debt of Marx to the earlier English Socialists, in particular to William Thompson, some of whose main doctrines he adopted; also E. C. K. GONNER's work on 'The Social Philosophy of Rodbertus'—Marx's contemporary (Mac. 1899). For expositions and criticisms of the ideas of the Marx school consult: 'Modern Socialism, as set forth by Socialists,' ed. by R. C. K. ENSOR (Harp. 1904); T. KIRKUP's 'History of Socialism' (Black, new ed. 1907) and 'An Inquiry into Socialism' (Lmns. new ed. 1907); 'Collectivist Economics' by J. H. SMITH (K.P. 1925); 'Socialism, its Growth and Outcome,' by WILLIAM MORRIS and E. BELFORT BAX (Son. 1893); the latter writer's 'Religion of Socialism' and 'Ethics of Socialism' (S.S.S.); Sidney Webb's 'Socialism in England' (same);

'Fabian Essays' and 'Tracts' (Fabian Soc.); the late Prof. D. G. RITCHIE's 'Principles of State Interference' and 'Darwinism and Socialism' (S.S.S.); the notable essay 'On the Nature of State Interference,' by HORACE SEAL (W. & N. 1893); 'The Economic Foundations of Society,' by Prof. ACHILLE LORIA (E. tr. S.S.S.); *Essais sur la conception matérialiste de l'histoire*, by Prof. A. LABRIOLA, of Rome (Fr. tr. 2e éd. 1902); EDWARD BELLAMY's 'Looking Backward' and 'Equality' (Hei.); Dr. SCHAEFFLE's 'Quintessence of Socialism' (tr. in S.S.S.); LAURENCE GRONLUND's 'The Co-operative Commonwealth' (same); E. C. K. GONNER's 'The Socialist State' (Scott, 1895); EDWARD CARPENTER's 'England's Ideal' and 'Civilisation: Its Cause and Cure' (S.S.S.); and Prof. WERNER SOMBART's 'Socialism and the Socialist Movement in the 19th c.' (E. tr. with intr. by J. B. Clark; Put. 1898). See also § 13, below.

Students who desire a fuller historical record of socialistic movements than that by Mr. Kirkup, above mentioned, may turn to 'A History of British Socialism' by M. BEER, intr. by Prof. R. H. Tawney (Bell, 2 v. 1919-25), or to the elaborate German work of O. WARSCHAUER, *Geschichte des Socialismus und Kommunismus* (3 Bde. 1892-3); or the later *Geschichte*, by K. KAUTSKY and E. BERNSTEIN (1895, etc.), or 'A History of Socialism' by S. F. MARKHAM, M.P. (Black, 1930). These works proceed chiefly on a study of books and doctrines, with some attention to questions of practicability at given points or periods. In the nature of the case DE RUGGIERO's 'History of European Liberalism' (E. tr. by R. G. COLLINGWOOD, O.U.P. 1927) is more of a record of practical performance.

§ 12. Nowhere was the variety of theoretic doctrine and socio-political experiment greater than in France after the Restoration. Quasi-socialistic phases had arisen in the Revolution period, as to which see M. Beer's 'Social Struggles and Thought' (E. tr. Parsons, 1925)—a scrappy record. Saint-Simonism led to Comtism (Courses VII, § 21a; IX, § 19); the Revolution of 1830 was followed by that of 1848, which made the unsuccessful experiment of National Workshops; the doctrinary schemes or Utopias of CABET and FOURIER ran their course, leaving politics unaffected, as did the various doctrines successively propounded by PROUDHON; all tending to prepare France for the acceptance of the Second Empire. These developments are to be followed in French History (Course XXIV, § 21), and the resultant evolution in such works as R. H. SOLTAU's 'French Political Thought in the 19th c.' (Benn, 1931); E. M. SALT's 'Government and Politics of France' (Har.); 'The French Constitution,' a short manual, by HENRY MORRISON, with pref. by A. DE FLEURIAU (A. & U.);

'Bonapartism,' six lectures by H. A. L. FISHER (2nd ed. 1914); and 'French Parties and Politics' by R. H. SOLTAU (1930: both O.U.P.). An interesting book of the first half of last century, the *Études sur les Réformateurs* of LOUIS REYBAUD, is still worth reading for its intimate study of both French and English idealisers. W. L. SARGENT's 'Social Innovators' (1858) is of like quality.

The politics of the United States may be studied in their history, notably in 'The Oxford History of the U.S.' by S. E. MORISON (O.U.P. 2 v. 1927), or as reduced to form in 'The Rise and Growth of American Politics' by H. K. FORD (Mac. 1898); 'The American Commonwealth' by LORD BRYCE (Mac. 3 v. 1888); C. E. MERRIAM's 'History of American Political Theories' (Mac. 1903); 'Unforeseen Tendencies of Democracy,' by E. L. GODKIN (Con. 1903) and 'The Immigration Problem' by J. W. JENKS and W. J. LAUCK (Funk & W. 1912). For South American politics see 'Liberty and Despotism in Spanish America' by CECIL JANE (O.U.P. 1929). For Italy at the close of the 19th c. see TURIELLO, *Governo e governati in Italia* (2 v. 1890) and *Politica Contemporaneo* (Naples, 1894).

German politics in the 19th c., though not involving any such revolutions as marked the history of France, is a record of much propagandist effort apart from Socialism, which was there an outcome of the revolutionary ferment of 1848. FICHTE's schema of 'The Closed Industrial State,' well analysed in Dr. J. BONAR's 'Philosophy and Political Economy' (A. & U.), is a curious document of philosophical protectionism. The later situations are to be studied in:—A. LAWRENCE LOWELL's 'Governments and Parties in Continental Europe' (Lmns. 2 v. 1896); Prof. P. S. REINSCH's 'World Politics' (Mac. 1900); E. H. SEARS's 'Outline of Political Growth in the Nineteenth Century' (Mac. 1901); Prof. G. KAUFMANN's *Die politische Geschichte Deutschlands im 19ten Jahrhundert* (Breslau, 1900); W. H. DAWSON's 'Prince Bismarck and State Socialism' (S.S.S.) and 'German Socialism and Ferdinand Lassalle' (same, 1891); E. von HARTMANN's *Zwei Jahrzehnte deutscher Politik* (1887); Prof. Anton Menger's *Neue Staatslehre* (Jena, 3te Aufl. 1906); and 'Nietzsche and the Ideals of Modern Germany,' by Prof. H. L. STEWART (Arnold, 1915). German pre-War and post-War politics are to be separately considered in Course XXVII, end.

Swiss politics may be studied in 'The Swiss Democracy: The Study of a Sovereign People' by HENRY DEMAREST LLOYD, ed. by J. A. Hobson (F.U. 1908), and in other works specified in Course XXIX, § 5. The developments of latter-day Russia are best to be followed in the closing section of the Course on its history. STALIN's 'Political Report to the 16th Party Congress

of the Russian Communist Party' (Mod. Books Ltd. 1930) is not informative.

§ 13. For criticisms of Socialism and schemes of social reconstruction on other than socialistic lines the following may be read:—'*Marxism versus Socialism*' by Prof. V. G. SIMKHOVITCH of Columbia (W. & N. n.d.); '*Collectivism*' by Prof. P. L. BEAULIEU (E. tr. Mur. 1908); W. H. MALLOCK, '*A Critical Examination of Socialism*' (Mur. 1908); '*The Labour Theory of Value in Karl Marx*' by H. W. B. JOSEPH (O.U.P. 1923); Prof. W. GRAHAM, '*Socialism, New and Old*' (I.S.S. 5th ed.); A. SHADWELL's '*Typhœus: or the Future of Socialism*' (K.P.) and '*The Breakdown of Socialism*' (Benn, 1926); also his works on '*The Communist Movement*' (Mur. 1925) and '*The Socialist Movement: 1824-1924*' (Ph. A. 1925); '*A Survey of Socialism: Analytical, Historical, and Critical*' by Prof. F. J. C. HEARNshaw (Mac. 1928); '*Karl Marx and Modern Socialism*,' by F. R. SALTER (Mac. 1921). See also Course XVI, § 16.

Consult also:—Prof. WALLAS's '*The Great Society: A Psychological Analysis*' (Mac. 1914); '*The Liberal State*' by THOMAS WHITTAKER (Watts, 2nd ed. 1928); Dr. SCHAEFFLE's '*Impossibility of Social Democracy*' (S.S.S.); JOHN RAE's '*Contemporary Socialism*' (Mac. 1884); E. LAVELEYE's '*Socialism of To-day*' (E. tr. 1884); A. NACQUET's '*Collectivism and Socialism*'; A. R. WALLACE's '*Land Nationalisation*'; HENRY GEORGE's '*The Condition of Labour*'; P. LEROY BEAULIEU's '*The Modern State*' (all S.S.S.); AUBERON HERBERT's '*The Right and Wrong of Compulsion by the State*' (W. & N. 1895) and '*A Politician in Trouble about his Soul*' (1884); and MAX HIRSCH's '*Democracy v. Socialism*' (Mac. 1901). In the same connection may profitably be read Dr. G. von SCHULZE-GAEVERNITZ's '*Social Peace*' (E. tr. same), and J. GRAHAM BROOKS's '*The Social Unrest*' (same, 1904), two dispassionate works throwing much light on labour conditions in England and the United States; also JOHN A. HOBSON's '*Problems of Poverty*' (Met.); and B. SEEBOHM ROWNTREE's '*Poverty: A Study of Town Life*' (Mac. 1901), with which may further be compared C. S. LOCH's '*Charity Organisation*' (S.S.S.) and Mrs. BERNARD BOSANQUET's '*The Standard of Life*' and '*Rich and Poor*' (Mac. 2nd eds. 1896-98).

§ 14. On the political side of the industrial problem in the pre-War period the following are of value: J. A. Hobson's '*The Problem of the Unemployed*' (Met.); Mr. and Mrs. Sidney Webb's '*History of Trade Unionism*' (Lmns. 1902), '*Industrial Democracy*' (same, 2 v. 1902), and '*Problems of Modern Industry*' (same, 1902); Misses B. L. HUTCHINS and A. HARRISON's '*History*

of Factory Legislation' (King, 1903); A. W. JOHNSTON's 'Strikes, Labour Questions, and Other Economic Difficulties' (Bliss, 1895); the essays entitled 'A Policy of Free Exchange,' edited by T. MACKAY (Mur. 1894, dealing with various trade questions); and the same editor's 'Methods of Social Reform' (Mur. 1896).

§ 15. The previous political problems of British history are best to be studied in the fuller political histories of periods; but they are frequently elucidated in monographs on prominent politicians, such as W. D. CHRISTIE's 'Anthony Ashley Cooper, First Earl of Shaftesbury' (Mac. 2 v. 1871); H. Fox Bourne's 'Life of John Locke' (2 v. 1876); R. HARROP's and W. SICHEL's books on Bolingbroke (first 1884; second, 2 v. 1901); G. R. STIRLING TAYLOR's 'Robert Walpole and his Age' (Cape, 1931); and the vols. of the English Statesmen Series (Mac.), the Statesmen Series of Allen & Co.; and the Heroes Series of Putnams, as well as in the various Lives of Fox and Pitt. There are three histories of the Tory Party: 'A History of Toryism: 1783-1881' by T. E. KEBBEL (1886); 'A History of the Tory Party: 1640-1714' by KEITH FEILING (Cl. Pr. 1924) and 'A History of the Tory Party in the 17th and 18th Centuries' by M. WOODS (H. & S. 1924); also 'A Short History of English Liberalism' by W. LYON BLEASE (F.U. 1913). J. A. FARRER's 'The Monarchy in Politics' (F.U. 1917) covers the reigns of the 3rd and 4th Georges, William IV, and Victoria, in an illuminating fashion.

English politics after Waterloo may be followed in HARRIET MARTINEAU's 'History of the Thirty Years' Peace' (4 v. Bell); GRAHAM WALLAS's 'Life of Francis Place' (Lmns.); Dr. J. BOWLES DALY's 'The Dawn of Radicalism' (S.S.S.); C. B. R. KENT's 'The English Radicals' (Lmns. 1899); Prof. J. S. NICHOLSON's 'History of the English Corn Laws' (S.S.S. 1904); the lives of Canning, Peel, and Melbourne; J. A. R. MARRIOTT's 'George Canning and His Times: A Political Study' (Mur. 1907); the works on the Chartist movement (§ 9); Rev. W. N. MOLESWORTH's 'History of England: 1830-1874' (3 vols. rep. 1874; abr. ed. in 1 v. 1878); 'The History of the Radical Party in Parliament,' by WILLIAM HARRIS (1885); THOROLD ROGERS's 'Cobden and Modern Political Opinion' (1873); JUSTIN MCCARTHY's 'History of Our Own Time' (C. & W. 5 vols. 1882-97), or his 'Short History of Our Own Time' (same, 1888); and the 'History of Modern England' by H. PAUL (Mac. 5 v. 1904-6). Prof. SHELDON AMOS's 'Fifty Years of the English Constitution: 1830-1880' (Lmns.) gives a conspectus of the legislative changes in that period; and with Stubbs, Hallam, Sir ERSKINE MAY's 'Constitutional History of England: 1760-1860' (3 v. Lmns. ext. to 1871 in 5th ed. o.p.: new ed. of v. iii '1860-1911,'

by F. HOLLAND), and Dr. A. TODD's 'Parliamentary Government in England' (abr. ed. rev. by S. WALPOLE, 2 v. 1892), makes a fairly complete series; while JOHN RAVEN's 'Parliamentary History of England: 1832-1885' (Stock, 1885) throws many side-lights; as do Lord COURTNEY's treatise, 'The Working Constitution of the U.K.' (Dent, 1901); Sir S. Low's 'The Governance of England' (F.U. 1904); and A. V. DICEY's 'Law and Opinion in England' (Mac. 1905). The evolution of local government may be traced in the work of REDLICH and HIRST (Course XLII, § 4); and the course of party politics in that of Ostrogorski (same), which, however, must be critically read. On local government a valuable contribution is PERCY ASHLEY's 'Local and Central Government: A Comparative Study of England, France, Prussia, and the United States' (Mur. 1907); and the prize essay of J. WATSON GRICE on 'National and Local Finance' (King, 1910) is similarly comprehensive.

The course of political strife in Britain during the second half of the 19th c. can be followed to great advantage in MORLEY's 'Life of Gladstone' (Mac. 3 v. 1903 and later), and the 'Life of the Earl of Beaconsfield' by MONYPENNY and BUCKLE (Mur. rev. ed. in 2 v. 1931). Those who seek a more detailed record of the party politics of the later Victorian period may find it in the late P. W. CLAYDEN's 'England under Lord Beaconsfield' (F.U.); W. M. PIMBLETT's 'English Political History: 1880-1885' (1885); and Clayden's 'England under the Coalition' (i.e. the Unionist: F.U.). Of the shorter lives of Gladstone the most important is G. W. E. RUSSELL's in the 'Queen's Prime Ministers Series' (Low). Gladstone's finance is specially discussed in 'Mr. Gladstone as Chancellor of the Exchequer' (Mur. 1901), by SYDNEY (now Earl) BUXTON, whose larger work on 'Finance and Politics: An Historical Study: 1783-1885' (same, 2 v.) has much merit.

§ 16. Some burning questions, such as that of Irish Home Rule, have disappeared from actual politics, and many other problems of practical politics have been so transformed since the World War that they may be best considered in the Course (LI) on the War and post-War Problems. Before the War, competent monographs on Liberalism and Conservatism had been contributed to the H.U.L. Series by Prof. L. T. HOBBHOUSE and Lord HUGH CECIL, of whom the latter has produced also 'Liberty and Authority' (Arnold, 1910). 'The Meaning of Liberalism,' by the editor (Met. 2nd ed. 1925), deals partly with pre-War and post-War politics. The politics of the British Labour Party at the date of this writing are difficult of statement in view of the new policy of tariffism, and cannot now be gathered with certainty

from either the lives or the writings of the leaders up to 1931. But 'Politics and the Younger Generation,' by A. L. ROWSE (Faber, 1931), is "a restatement of Socialist principles and policy." ANARCHISM, once a burning question, has passed away, but may be studied in the 'Anarchism' of E. V. ZENKER (Met. E. tr. 1898). The older 'Individualism' of WORDSWORTH DONISTHORPE (Mac. 1889) is still a readable work. The case is freshly put by Sir E. BENN in 'The Return to *Laissez-faire*' (Benn, 1928).

§ 17. In view of the post-War establishment of virtually despotic governments in Russia and Italy, and occasionally in other countries (as to which see the later sections in the History Courses dealing with the countries in question), there is an audience for such a work as *Décadence de la Liberté* by DANIEL HALÉVY (Grasset, 1931), in which the criticism specially touches France. What may be described as the anti-democratic or anti-equalitarian attitude on current political philosophy will not be neglected by the thoughtful student. It is vivaciously represented in 'The Meaning of Democracy' by IVOR J. C. BROWN (C.-S. 1920), and more austere in 'Equality and Fraternity,' by Canon D. MACLAINE (A. & U. 1924). On its critical or negative side the latter is a powerful work, to be reckoned with by serious democrats. On the constructive side, however, it appears to be merely authoritarian and theological. A scientific view, recognising the idealistic falsities on both sides, in the temper of L. T. HOBHOUSE's 'Democracy and Reaction' (F.U. 1904) is a desideratum. The 'Economic Problems of Democracy' by A. T. HADLEY (C.U.P.) is worth study.

The Hon B. RUSSELL's 'Roads to Freedom' and 'Principles of Social Reconstruction' (A. & U.) are independent prescriptions; and the 'Social Theory' of G. D. H. Cole (Met. 2nd ed. 1921) is on a similar footing. 'Democracy and the Organisation of Political Parties' by R. MICHELS (E. tr. Jarrold, 1916) is a treatise of some weight. Professor HEARNshaw's 'Democracy at the Crossroads' (Mac. 1919) and 'Democracy and Labour' (same, 1924) are monitory; as is J. A. HOBSON's 'Democracy after the War' (A. & U.); and the 'Learning and Leadership' of ALFRED ZIMMERN (O.U.P. 1928) is 'A Study of the Needs and Possibilities of International Intellectual Coöperation.' GILBERT MURRAY's brochure, 'The Way Forward' (A. & U. Pref. by Viscount Grey) and his lectures, 'The Ordeal of this Generation' (1928: same) and 'The Reform of Parliamentary Government' (P.R. Soc.) have high constructive value; and 'The Paisley Policy' of the late EARL of OXFORD (Cas.) remains as the last authoritative programme of the historic Liberal Party.

§ 18. In British politics at the date of this writing, the vital

issues appear to be the management of the national finance and fisc, and the rectification of the electoral system to the end of reviving and stabilising industry. This throws the centre of conflict on the question of Free Trade *versus* Tariffs, the latter policy having within a generation been adopted as the active principle of the Conservative party; while the divisions and divagations of the Liberal have left it weak for the defence, and that of Labour is divided. On this the scientific guidance is obviously to be looked for in economic theory and experience (Course XV).

In respect of constitutional policy the Liberal or Middle Party is now more or less committed to the scientific reform of Proportional Representation, as to which see the literature of the P.R. Society. The question of the powers of the House of Lords remains in abeyance; but, like that of the Referendum, may be so revived as to compel political decisions. As to Second Chambers, accurate information is to be found in Prof. H. W. V. TEMPERLEY'S 'Senates and Upper Chambers' (C. & H. 1910). Sir J. A. R. MARRIOTT'S 'Second Chambers' (Cl. Pr. 1910), described as "An Inductive Study," is avowedly a foregone defence. The question of the Referendum may be studied in the light of 'The Referendum in America,' by Dr. ELLIS P. OBERHOLTZER (Scrib. 1900), and 'The Referendum in Switzerland,' by SIMON DEPLOIGE (E. tr. Lmns. 1898)

COURSE XV

ECONOMICS

ECONOMICS, otherwise "political economy," may be profitably studied on either or both of two lines: it may be taken as a body of generalised "economic law," setting forth in terms of experience, induction, and deduction, the conditions and sequences of wealth production and distribution in modern industrial communities; or it may be taken as a study of the economic forces and conditions of social and political life in all periods and all orders of civilisation. In this Course both lines of study will be kept in view. But on the scientific side it is treated as an analysis of the reactions of production, exchange, and distribution, not as an aspect of ethics. Discussion as to the "application of ethics to economics" is a confusion of terms. Ethic is applicable to *politics*. Economics is an analysis of normal adjustments in trade and industry, and the objection to the assumed "law of self-interest" is irrelevant.

§ 1. Some acquaintance with the modes of reasoning applicable to the subject is, further, a good preparation for the historic study, and may be begun over one or other of several short and simple handbooks. 'The Science of Wealth' by J. A. HOBSON (H.U.L.) is instructive as a reasoning lead to economic reflection; and the 'Wealth: A Brief Examination of the Causes of Economic Welfare' by Sir EDWARD CANNAN (King, 3rd ed.), has had a world-wide circulation. The '**Outlines of Political Economy**' by Sir S. CHAPMAN (new ed. Lmns. 1925) is alert, fresh, and competent. Other helpful practical treatises are:—'**A First Book of Economics**,' by Norman Crump (Mac.), which has found much favour; the '**Elementary Political Economy**' of Cannan (Cl. Pr. 1903); M. C. BUEK's 'Economics for Beginners' (Rout.); and Dr. J. BONAR's '**Elements of Political Economy**' (Mur.).

Of older books, Prof. M. PROTHERO'S 'Political Economy' (Bell, 1895), though making "no pretensions to originality," is independent in treatment, and gives useful historical surveys. The 'Primer of Political Economy' of S. T. WOOD (Mac. 1901) is a small American work marked by freshness and suggestiveness. The 'Approach to Economics' by H. M. SCOTT, with intr. by

Sir JOSIAH STAMP (Christophers, 1931), may be held to indicate the later mode of presentation. A general introduction to current issues, short and clear, is supplied in H. de B. GIBBINS's primer 'The Economics of Commerce' (Met. 1894).

A reader who, after a study of one or other of these primary books, should seek only to add to his working outfit a knowledge of economic history as such, may usefully proceed to the works of Dr. J. H. CLAPHAM: the inaugural lecture on 'The Study of Economic History,' 'An Economic History of Modern Britain: the Early Railway Age: 1820-1850,' and 'The Economic History of France and Germany, 1815-1914' (all C.U.P.); and to the late Dr. W. CUNNINGHAM's 'Essay on Western Civilisation in its Economic Aspects' (same). A perusal, further, of LUIGI COSSA's 'Introduction to the Study of Political Economy' (E. tr. Mac.), a work of the last generation, will widen the reader's outlook, though it will not establish his scientific basis. It is really a guide to the literature of the subject. But he who seeks a wider grasp of a science seen to be vital to national prosperity and the politics which should control it will go further afield.

§ 2. Certain economic classics, to begin with, remain deserving of study for their breadth of view. J. S. MILL's 'Principles of Political Economy' has not now its old scientific status, but should be perused (in Ashley's ed. Lmns. 1909), as should W. ROSCHER's 'Principles of Political Economy' (E. tr. by J. J. Lalor, with prelim. essay by M. Wolowski, from 13th Ger. ed. 2 v. N.Y. 1878). This is not at all an abstruse, though a very learned work, and has still value as presenting all economic problems in a historic setting. (See Course XIV, § 7, as to the economically important doctrine of Malthus on Population.) At this stage, too, may usefully be read ADAM SMITH's 'Wealth of Nations,' a "classic" of enduring interest, which had better be studied in the old annotated edition of McCULLOCH, or in that of Sir EDWIN CANNAN (Met. 5th ed.). The student may grasp the economic content more easily by resort to the 'Abridgment' of the work by W. P. EMERTON (1881). Those of little leisure who wish to proceed directly to the most practical economic problems should procure and master the 'Elements of Economics of Industry' of Prof. A. Marshall (Mac.), an adaptation of its author's 'Principles of Economics' to the needs of junior students. His 'Industry and Trade: A Study of Industrial Technique and Business Organisation; and of their Influences on the Conditions of Various Classes and Nations,' and his smaller 'Money, Credit, and Commerce' (all Mac.) are notably scrupulous and trustworthy investigations.

§ 3. Those who take an intellectual interest in economics may

still be attracted and stimulated by Professor J. E. CAIRNES'S 'Character and Logical Method of Political Economy' (Mac. 2nd ed. 1875); and it is no bad economy of time to pass from that work to the same author's 'Some Leading Principles of Political Economy Newly Expounded' (Mac. 1874). After such a gymnastic in economic reasoning, one is partly prepared to read critically the great founder of analytic economic reasoning, RICARDO ('Principles of Political Economy' rep. in B.L., and whole works in 1 vol. Mur.); 'Economic Essays,' ed. by Sir E. C. K. Gonner (Bell). 'The Statistical Method in Economics and Political Science,' by Prof. P. SARGANT FLORENCE (Rout.), is a recent treatise on its theme.

Those who lean more to the social and concrete than to the logical side of economics will be well repaid by a reading of Prof. Sidgwick's British Association address on 'The Scope and Method of Economic Science' (Mac. 1885); and Prof. A. Marshall's inaugural lecture of 1885 on 'The Present Position of Economics' (same); and on this interesting line of reading WALTER BAGEHOT's essay on 'The Postulates of English Political Economy' (rep. ed. by Prof. Marshall; same, 1885) will further make clear the general issue as to economic method. A perusal, finally, of J. NEVILLE KEYNES's able treatise on 'The Scope and Method of Political Economy' (same, 1891) will sufficiently exercise the student in that field. Critical value attaches to W. W. CARLILE'S 'Economic Method and Economic Fallacies' (Arnold, 1904). Other notable works, of the last generation, are STANLEY JEVONS'S 'Theory of Political Economy' (Mac.); and GUSTAV SCHMOLLER'S *Grundriss des allgemeinen Volkswirtschaftslehre* (2 He. 6te Aufl. 1901-4), which exhibits the developments of the German historical school.

§ 4. A comprehensive study of economic problems may be set about by way of a perusal of some of the more elaborated systems of the past generation. Of English works of this kind the chief are Prof. Sidgwick's 'Principles of Political Economy' (Mac. 3rd ed. 1901); Prof. A. Marshall's 'Principles of Economics' (vol. i only: 2nd ed. 1898, same); and Prof. J. S. NICHOLSON'S 'Principles of Political Economy' (3 v. Black, 1893-1903); to which may be added the Eng. trans. of the 'Principles of Political Economy' of the Dutch Prof. N. G. PIERSON (E. tr. 2 v. Mac. 1902), a work of exemplary scrutiny and sobriety. All four are competent performances, on the whole "conservative," though in the main abreast of modern criticism. All are more circumspect than J. S. Mill; and after acquaintance with their more guarded reasoning his 'Principles' may be read with profit and stimulation. But the open-minded student will face

the challenge made by the systems of eminent economists of other countries, notably the 'Principles of Economics' of Prof. F. W. TAUSSIG of Harvard (3rd ed. 2 v. 1925, Mac.); E. R. A. SELIGMAN'S 'Principles of Economics' (4th ed. rev. N.Y. 1910); the work of the same title by Prof. H. R. SEAGER of Columbia (Bell); the 'Political Economy' (tr. by Archibald: 4th impr.) and the 'Principles of Political Economy' of Prof. CHARLES GIDE of Paris (E. tr. from 23rd Fr. ed. both Har.), of which there is also a 'Digest' by H. M. DESAI from the tr. of Prof. VEDITZ (same).

§ 5. Among the outstanding works of recent and present-day English economists are those of Prof. A. C. PIGOU, 'The Economics of Welfare' (3rd ed. 1929); 'Industrial Fluctuations' (2nd ed. 1929); 'A Study in Public Finance' (all Mac.); and 'Essays in Applied Economics' (King, 2nd ed.); also the late Prof. W. SMART'S 'Introduction to the Theory of Value on the lines of Menger, Wieser, and Böhm-Bawerk,' and 'The Distribution of Income' (both Mac.); JOHN RAE'S 'Sociological Theory of Capital' ed. by C. W. MIXTER (Mac.), and 'The Mathematical Groundwork of Economics' by Prof. A. L. BOWLEY (Cl. Pr. 1923); 'Economic Principles: an Introductory Study,' by Prof. A. W. FLUX (Met. 1904); 'Official Papers by Alfred Marshall' (Mac. 1926); and the important 'Papers Relating to Political Economy' by Prof. F. Y. EDGEWORTH' (Mac. 3 v. 1925).

§ 6. Of histories of P. E. there are several, notably the 'History of Economic Doctrines, from the Physiocrats to the Present Day,' by Profs. GIDE and CH. RIST of Paris (E. tr. by R. Richards, Har.); the 'History of Political Economy' by Prof. INGRAM (Black, enl. ed. with supp. chapter by Prof. W. A. SCOTT and intr. by Prof. R. T. ELY, 1915), and 'A Review of Economic Theory' by Sir E. CANNAN (King, 1931). Older works are the 'History of Political Economy' of M. BLANQUI (E. tr. from 4th French ed. Bell, 1880); the shorter *Histoire des doctrines économiques* of Prof. A. ESPINAS (*n.d.*); and the German *Geschichte der National-ökonomik* of HUGO EISENHART (2te Aufl. 1891). L. L. PRICE'S 'Short History of P. E. in England' has been expanded in a new ed., which brings the story down to the death of Marshall (Mac. 1931). The earlier works of J. McCULLOCH, 'History of the Literature of Political Economy' (1845), and TRAVERS TWISS, 'View of the Progress of Political Economy since the Sixteenth Century' (1847), are still worth consulting; and McCulloch's introds. to Adam Smith and to his own 'Principles of Political Economy' are marked by much economic learning. Dr. JAMES BONAR'S 'Philosophy and Political Economy in some of their Historical Relations' (A. & U. 4th ed.) is an instructive survey. Prof. EDWIN CANNAN'S 'History of the Theories of Production

and Distribution in English Political Economy from 1776 to 1848' (Mac. 2nd ed. 1903) has special critical value; and there is much interesting matter in 'Researches in the History of Economics,' by Prof. ERNEST NYS (E. tr. Black, 1900). 'A Select Bibliography of Modern Economic Theory: 1870-1929,' by H. E. BATSON, with intr. by Prof. L. ROBBINS (Rout.), is very serviceable.

§ 7. Histories of economic development in ancient and modern States are in turn to be taken into account. There are now available many such surveys, as:—**Max Weber's 'General Economic History'** (A. & U.); 'A History of Commerce' by Prof. CLIVE DAY (Lmns.); 'The Economic Life of the Ancient World' by Prof. J. TOUTAIN (E. tr. K.P.); 'The Economic History of Europe,' by M. M. KNIGHT, H. E. BARNES, and F. FLUGEL (A. & U. 1927); RALPH and GRIFFITH's 'Digest of British Economic History' (Mur.); 'An Introduction to the Industrial History of England,' by Dr. A. P. USHER (Har.); 'An Economic History of England,' by CHARLOTTE M. WATERS (O.U.P. 1925); 'The Economic History of England: 1760-1860,' by ARTHUR REDFORD (Lmns. 1932); and 'Mercantilism and the East Indian Trade,' by J. P. THOMAS (King).

The massive and perspicacious 'Economic History of England,' by E. LIPSON, now in progress (Black, 3 v. 1915-32), is by far the fullest continuous study, and supplies valuable bibliographies. Shorter studies in the British field include:—G. H. PERRIS's 'Industrial History of Modern England . . . during the last 150 Years' (1914: Rout.); 'A History of the English Corn Laws: 1660-1846,' by D. G. BARNES (Rout. 1930); 'Studies in Economic History,' by the late Prof. GEORGE UNWIN, with Memoir by Prof. Tawney (Mac.); 'A History of Emigration from the U.K. to N. America: 1763-1912,' by S. C. JOHNSON (K.P.); and the works of Prof. L. C. A. KNOWLES, 'The Industrial and Commercial Revolutions in Great Britain during the 19th Century' and 'The Economic Development of the British Overseas Empire: 1763-1914' (2 v.: all K.P.).

Yet other special studies are:—Prof. CLIVE DAY's 'History of the Commerce of the U.S.' (Lmns.); 'A History of Economic Progress in the U.S.,' by Dr. W. W. JENNINGS (Har. 1926), and the same author's 'Introduction to American Economic History' (W. & N. 1928); ROMESH DUTT's 'The Economic History of India' (new ed. 2 v. Or. Ser. K.P.); D. M. GOODFELLOW, 'A Modern Economic History of South Africa' (K.P.); 'The Prosperity of Australia: An Economic Analysis,' by F. C. BENHAM (King); 'Modern Economic History: with special reference to Australia,' by D. H. HEATON (Mac.); Dr. VERA ANSTEY, 'The

Economic Development of India,' with Bibliography (Lmns.); Prof. E. L. BOGART's 'An Economic History of the U.S.'; and 'Economic History of the American People' (same); 'The Economic Aspect of the History of the Civilisation of Japan,' by YOSOBURO TAKEKOSHI (3 v. A. & U.); 'Economics in the 20th Century: The History of Internat. Development,' by T. SURANYI UNGER (E. tr. ed. by Prof. Seligman, A. & U.); and the 'Economic Annals of the Nineteenth Century' by Prof. WM. SMART (2 v. 1801-1830, Mac.).

Older works of standard rank are Dr. W. CUNNINGHAM's 'Growth of English Industry and Commerce'—Early and Middle Ages, and Modern Times (3 v. C.U.P.); and Sir W. G. ASHLEY's 'English Economic History'—Middle Ages and End of Middle Ages (2 v. Lmns.); and Sir F. M. EDEN's 'The State of the Poor: A History of the Labouring Classes in England to 1797' (abr. and rev. ed. by A. G. L. ROGERS, Rout.). The valuable compilation of the late Sir CHARLES BOOTH, 'Life and Labour of the People in London' (Mac. 9 v. 1889-1897 and later), is being recast in a 'New Survey of London Life,' supervised by Sir H. LLEWELLYN SMITH (King, 1931, in prog.).

§ 8. Further study will naturally consist in following up special problems in separate discussions. One of the most centrally important is the problem of Money. An expert introduction to the subject is supplied by HARTLEY WITHERS, 'The Meaning of Money' (Mur.), and by the manuals entitled 'Money,' of D. H. ROBERTSON (C.U.P.) and of R. A. LEHFELDT (O.U.P. 1931), author of 'Descriptive Economics' (same). Sir EDWIN CANNAN expertly discusses 'Modern Currency' (King, 1931); as does Sir JOSIAH STAMP in 'Gold and Prices' (same, 1931). J. L. LAUGHLIN's 'The Principles of Money' (Mur.) is a standard treatise. A good historical basis for the study is supplied in 'Money and Monetary Policy in Early Times,' by A. R. BURNS (K.P. 1927). D. A. BARKER's 'The Theory of Money' is another capable manual (C.U.P.).

Other recent works of importance are:—'Currency, Credit, and the Exchanges,' by Dr. W. A. SHAW (Har.); 'Money and Banking,' by Prof. W. A. SCOTT of Wisconsin (Bell); 'State Credit and Banking during the War and After,' by ROBERT BENSON (Mac.); 'International Gold Movements,' by Dr. PAUL EINZIG, and the same author's 'The Bank for International Settlements' (2nd ed. 1930: both Mac.); 'The Financial History of the United States,' by Prof. D. R. DEWEY (Lmns.); Dr. G. VISSERING's 'International Economic and Financial Problems'; 'Money and the Money Market in India,' by Profs. P. A. WADIA and G. N. JOSHI; and P. B. WHALE's 'Joint Stock Banking in

Germany . . . before and after the War' (all Mac.); 'Monetary Policy: Report of a Sub-Com. on Currency and the Gold Standard' (by Dr. CLAPHAM and others: King, 1923); 'The Money Illusion,' by IRVING FISHER, with intr. by Sir Josiah Stamp (A. & U.); and 'The State Theory of Money' by G. F. KNAPP (abr. tr. by H. M. Lucas and J. Bonar, Mac. 1924).

The special problems and perplexities of War and post-War finance are further dealt with in HARTLEY WITHERS'S 'War Time Financial Problems,' 'International Finance,' and 'Our Money and the State' (all Mur.); Dr. PAUL EINZIG'S 'Behind the Scenes of International Finance,' which embodies a criticism of French post-War policy (Mac. 1932); 'The Pound Sterling: A History of English Money,' by A. E. FEAVEARYEAR (O.U.P. 1932); 'The International Gold Problem,' by a group of the Royal Institute of International Affairs (same); and 'The Influence of the Gold Supply on Prices and Profits,' by Sir D. BARBOUR (Mac. 1913); 'Economic Addresses,' by Prof. A. C. PIGOU and D. H. ROBERTSON (King, 1931), and the works of R. G. HAWTREY, 'Currency and Credit,' 'Monetary Reconstruction,' 'Trade and Credit,' and 'The Gold Standard in Theory and Practice' (all Lmns.).

It is probable that the unforeseen phenomena of post-War finance and trade have so far outrun the synthetic grasp of economists in general. The debate in the *Economic Journal* for Sept. 1931, between D. H. ROBERTSON and J. MAYNARD KEYNES (author of 'A Treatise on Money,' 2 v. Mac.), may serve to indicate the dilemmas.

Some of the more prominent works of the last generation in this field will still repay study, as:—'Money,' by STANLEY JEVONS (I.S.S.); W. W. CARLILE'S 'The Evolution of Modern Money' (Mac. 1901); Prof. J. S. NICHOLSON'S 'A Treatise on Money, and Essays on Monetary Questions' (Black, 5th ed. 1901); *Théorie et pratique de la monnaie*, by AUGUSTE BEAURE (1898, 2 t.); *Les origines de la monnaie*, by E. BABELON (1897); W. RIDGEWAY'S 'The Origin of Metallic and Weight Standards' (C.U.P. 1892), and D. KINLEY'S 'Money: a Study of the Theory of the Medium of Exchange' (Met. 1904).

The post-War revival of plans for bimetallism suggests a return to the literature on the subject in the last age, which included ÉMILE DE LAVELEYE, *La monnaie bi-métallique* (1876); the 'Occasional Papers Issued by the Bi-metallic League' (Wertheimer); the anti-bimetallist works of Sir ROBERT GIFFEN, 'The Case against Bi-metallism' (Bell, 5th ed. 1898); H. D. MACLEOD, 'Bi-metallism' (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1894); 'Bimetallism: An . . . Examination of the Arguments For and Against,' by

Major LEONARD DARWIN (Mur. 1897); and A. J. WILSON's essays on 'Reciprocity, Bimetallism, and Land-tenure Reform' (Mac. 1880). Much light is given also by J. L. Laughlin's 'History of Bimetallism in the United States' (1886). See too a monograph on 'Legal Tender: A Study in English and American Monetary History,' by S. P. BRECKINRIDGE (Univ. of Chicago, 1902); and 'Essays on the Monetary History of the United States,' by Prof. C. J. BULLOCK (Mac. 1900). There were also discussions on the subject at the Manchester Chamber of Commerce (1892) and the London Institution (1895).

§ 9. On the important subject of banking, a very competent introduction is supplied in the manual '**Banking**' by Dr. **Walter Leaf** (H.U.L. 1924); and the '**Elements of Banking**' of **H. D. Macleod** (Lmns. 12th ed. 1895) is still a standard work, of which the substance is elaborated in its author's longer treatise entitled '**The Theory and Practice of Banking.**' W. BAGEHOT's '**Lombard Street**' (rep. ed. by H. WITHERS: Mur.) is classically lucid and interesting. See also works named above, § 8. From the large recent literature on the subject may be further selected:—'**Central Banks: A Study of the Constitutions of Banks of Issue,**' by C. H. KIRSCH and W. A. ELKIN, with foreword by M. C. NORMAN (Mac. 3rd ed. 1930); Prof. P. J. DAY's '**Introduction to the Money and Banking System of the United States**' (Mac.). The old '**History, Principles, and Practice of Banking,**' by J. W. GILBART (rev. by E. Sykes, 2 v. Bell), is still counted a classic.

§ 10. The difficult problem of the foreign exchanges is dealt with in most of the larger treatises on economics, but is separately handled in several works, and may still be best approached through **Clare and Crump's** '**A B C of the Foreign Exchanges**' (Mac. 8th ed. 1927); but **GOSCHEN's** '**Theory of the Foreign Exchanges**' (Wilson, 16th ed. 1894) is still a kind of classic. '**Money Changing: an Introduction to Foreign Exchange**' by **HARTLEY WITHERS** (Mur.) is the most recent expert work. See also the books on Money above named, and those of W. A. SHAW, EINZIG, VISSERING, FEAVEAREY (§ 8), and WITHERS's '**International Finance**' (Mur.). The special '**Problems of the Japanese Exchange: 1914-1926**' are handled by **JUNNOSUKE INOUE** (E. tr. Mac. 1932). Marked ability is recognised in the '**Reparations, Trade, and Foreign Exchanges**' of **L. L. B. ANGAS** (King, 1923).

The matter of price, which pervades all economic investigation, is freshly handled by Sir **WALTER T. LAYTON** in '**An Introduction to the Study of Prices, with Special Reference to the History of the 19th C.**' (Mac.); and the small book of **JOHN A. TODD** on '**The Fall of Prices**' (O.U.P. 1931) deals interestingly with the concrete

phenomena of the depression on this side. Then there is 'The Science of Prices: A Handbook of Economics,' by the same author (O.U.P. rev. ed. 1927); and his 'The Mechanism of Exchange' (same, 3rd ed. 1927). Prof. W. R. SCOTT's 'Economic Problems of Peace after War' (C.U.P.) faces the general problem from its outset; and HARTLEY WITHERS's 'Poverty and Waste' (exp. ed. Mur.) has a broad bearing on it. 'The Riddle of Rationalisation,' by L. J. BARLEY (A. & U. 1932), is a recent survey of a pressing practical problem.

Questions of money and price lead back to the fundamental economic problem of Value, which is necessarily faced in all works on "Principles." On the English side the most important contribution to the question is Prof. JEVONS's 'Theory of Political Economy,' and the later developments may be profitably approached through Prof. W. Smart's above-named 'Introduction to the Theory of Value' (Mac.). WIESER's 'Natural Value' is available in Eng. trans. with pref. and analysis by Prof. Smart (Mac. 1893).

§ 11. Value leads to the more concrete question of Capital, and both are handled in BÖHM-BAWERK's 'Positive Theory of Capital' and 'Capital and Interest' (both tr. by Prof. Smart; Mac. 1890, 1891). A volume of papers by the same author on 'Recent Literature on Interest' (trans. same, 1903) constitutes a supplement to the latter work. Another important work on the subject is SOMBART's *Der moderne Kapitalismus* (2 Bde. 1902). In this connection must be noted the theory and polemic of KARL MARX's 'Capital' (Eng. tr. A. & U.) and 'Selected Essays' (E. tr. same), wherein the theory of value is somewhat crudely handled. As to the derivation of Marx's economico-political doctrine see Course XIV, § 8. See also Böhm-Bawerk's 'Karl Marx and the Close of his System' (E. trans. F.U. 1898), with pref. by Dr. J. Bonar. The social side of the question is considered in 'Capitalist Enterprise and Social Progress' by MAURICE DOBB (Rout.); in Dr. R. LIEFMANN's 'International Cartels, Combines, and Trusts' (same); ADOLF WEBER, 'A Defence of Capitalism' (E. tr. A. & U.); 'The Decay of Capitalist Civilisation' by Lord PASSFIELD and BEATRICE WEBB (A. & U.); and in the older work of Dr. W. CUNNINGHAM, 'The Progress of Capitalism in England' (C.U.P.).

In connection with Capital arises the vital practical problem of the laws of its maintenance and increase. Ever since the day of Adam Smith there has been a succession of economists who have opposed his doctrine that parsimony, or the saving of money-credits, is the one means of increasing capital. Of the history of this discussion there is a sketch in the editor's essay,

'The Fallacy of Saving' (S.S.S.). For a comprehension of it see MUMMERY and HOBSON's 'Physiology of Industry' (Mur. 1889) and Hobson's 'Evolution of Modern Capitalism' (C.S.S.); also ROBERT SCOTT MOFFAT's 'The Economy of Consumption' (1878) in connection with the above-named treatises on Money, and with Roscher's discussion in his 'Principles.'

§ 12. Other practical economic problems of obvious importance are those concerning the laws governing Rent and Wages. In addition to the expositions of the former subject by the systematic writers, from Ricardo onwards, may be noted Prof. J. S. NICHOLSON's 'Tenant's Gain not Landlord's Loss' (1883) and HENRY GEORGE's 'Progress and Poverty.' On Wages may be studied the manual 'Wages,' by M. H. DOBB (C.U.P.); J. W. ROWE's 'Wages in Practice and Theory' (Rout.); 'Capital's Duty to the Wage Earner,' by JOHN CALDER (Lmns.); 'The Legal History of Trades Unionism,' by R. Y. HEDGES and A. WINTERBOTTOM (same); 'The Secret of High Wages,' by B. AUSTIN and W. F. LLOYD, with foreword by Sir W. T. LAYTON (A. & U. 1926)—a "dated" work; Mrs. SIDNEY WEBB's pamphlet, 'The Wages of Men and Women: Should they be Equal?' (A. & U.); 'Industrial Psychology and the Production of Wealth,' by H. D. HARRISON (Met. 1923); and among older books, J. A. HOBSON's 'The Industrial System: An Inquiry into Earned and Unearned Income' (Lmns. 1909); and 'Work and Wealth: A Human Valuation' (Mac. 1914); Prof. NICHOLSON's 'The Effect of Machinery on Wages'; and Dr. BRENTANO's 'Hours, Wages, and Production' (both S.S.S.).

On Unemployment may be consulted R. C. DAVISON's 'The Unemployed' (Lmns.); 'Is Unemployment Inevitable: An Analysis and a Forecast,' by a Committee of nine, Sir W. T. LAYTON in chair (Mac. 1925); Sir W. H. BEVERIDGE's expert study, 'Unemployment: A Problem of Industry' (Lmns. 1910); and J. A. HOBSON's 'The Economics of Unemployment' (A. & U. 2nd ed. rev.). See also 'Insurance against Unemployment,' by J. L. COHEN (King, 1923), and 'The British Employment Exchange,' by J. B. SEYMOUR (King).

§ 13. On the question of Free Trade *versus* Protection, so much discussed of late, there is an economic as well as a political literature. The history of the F.T. Struggle in the 19th c. is to be read in 'The Free Trade Movement and its Results,' by G. ARMITAGE-SMITH (Blackie, 2nd ed. 1903) and 'The Free Trade Struggle in England,' by M. M. TRUMBULL (Watts, 1892). The most recent discussion of a systematic kind, as distinguished from pronouncements by bodies of bankers and financiers, is 'Tariffs: the Case Examined,' by a Committee of [nine]

Economists under the Chairmanship of Sir W. BEVERIDGE (Lmns. 1932). This reaffirms the predominant Free Trade doctrine of trained economists in both Europe and the U.S. Other recent works are :—‘The Lure of Safeguarding,’ by A. S. COMYNS CARR and D. R. EVANS (A. & U. 1929); ‘Safeguarding under the Searchlight’ (Brit. Period. *n.d.*); ‘Free Trade To-day,’ by H. L. NATHAN (Gollancz, 1929); *Pax Economica*, par HENRI LAMBERT (Brux. and Paris, 1920); and the subject is dispassionately discussed in CANNAN’S ‘Wealth’ (above § 1), as well as in TAUSSIG’S ‘Principles’. Sir E. Cannan’s Ball Lecture on ‘Balance of Trade Delusions’ (O.U.P. 1931) has a special elucidatory value.

The controversy, it will be remembered, has broken out periodically in Britain during a period of over fifty years. Records and arguments in the editor’s ‘Trade and Tariffs’ (Black, 1908); ‘Free Trade’ (Dent, 1920); ‘The Political Economy of Free Trade’ (King, 1928); ‘Fiscal Fraud and Folly’ (Brit. Period. 1931); ‘The New Tariffism’ (1918: A. & U.). The ground was well gone over by Prof. FAWCETT in his ‘Free Trade and Protection’ (Mac. 1878), and by Lord FARRER in his ‘Free Trade and Fair Trade’ (1882, rep. 1904). Among the more scientific of later treatises are ‘Free Exchange’ by Sir LOUIS MALLET (K.P. 1891); Prof. C. F. BASTABLE’S ‘The Theory of International Trade’ (Mac.); Sir L. G. CHIOZZA MONEY’S ‘Elements of the Fiscal Problem’ (King, 1903); J. A. HOBSON’S ‘International Trade’ (Met. 1904), which criticises the ordinary assumption that such trade involves different economic laws from those of trade between individuals of one nation; A. C. PIGOU’S small book ‘The Riddle of the Tariff’ (1903); Prof. W. SMART’S ‘The Return to Protection’ (Mac. 1904); ‘Retaliatory Duties’ by Prof. H. DIETZEL (E. tr. F.U. 1906); and ‘The New Protectionism’ by J. A. HOBSON (F.U. 1916).

On the protectionist side the chief classic is the German FRIEDRICH LIST, *Das nationale System der politischen Oekonomie* (7th ed. Stuttgart, 1883), E. tr. ‘National System of Political Economy’ (Lmns. 1885). Prof. W. J. ASHLEY’S ‘The Tariff Problem’ (King, 2nd ed. 1904) was the most important English work on the same side in the last generation. Prof. F. W. TAUSSIG’S ‘Tariff History of the United States’; PERCY ASHLEY’S ‘Modern Tariff History: Germany, United States, France’ (Mur. 1904); UGO RABBENO’S ‘The American Commercial Policy’ (Mac. 1895); and E. STANWOOD’S ‘American Tariff Controversies in the Nineteenth Century’ (2 v. Con. 1904), are of special value in this connection. Among American economists Prof. R. E. THOMPSON represented the protectionist view in his ‘Political Economy’ (1882) and his ‘Protection to Home Industry’ (1886);

but Prof. S. N. PATTEN's 'Economic Basis of Protection' (Pippincott, 1890) is perhaps the ablest book on that side. See also his work, 'The Theory of Prosperity' (Mac. 1902).

English works on the tariffist side since 1923 do not appear to be accepted by the politicians of the party, and are non-scientific, as the student may discover from 'The Truth at Last about Free Trade and Protection,' by DOUGLAS GRAHAM, with intr. by Gen. Page-Croft (Hut. *n.d.*). The latest professedly scientific advocacy of Protection, in English, is 'The Theory of Protection and International Trade,' by MIHAIL MANOILESCO (of Roumania : King, 1931), which propounds a complicated "scientific tariff," but shows unacquaintance with Free Trade history and doctrine. (The more prominent publicists who in England have latterly withdrawn from Free Trade have usually offered in explanation only the claim that "times have changed"—which was current in all previous protectionist revivals of the past fifty years.)

On the other hand, the history of 'Protection in the United States' was written nearly a generation ago by A. MAURICE LOW (King, 1904), with a verdict for Protection; while the surveys—'Protection in Canada and Australasia' by C. H. CHOMLEY; 'Protection in Germany' by W. H. DAWSON; and 'Protection in France' by H. O. MEREDITH (all King, 1904), concluded on the side of Free Trade. See also 'The Australian Tariff: an Economic Inquiry,' with Foreword by the Rt. Hon. S. M. Bruce (Mac.).

§ 14. Continued study of economics may be guided by such works as 'Contemporary Economic Thought,' by PAUL T. HOMAN (Harp. 1928); F. VON WIESER's 'Social Economics' (E. tr. A. & U. 1928); 'Changes in the Structure of World Economics since the War,' by Dr. F. SOMARY, with introd. by Prof. T. E. Gregory (King, 1931); 'Economic Problems of Democracy,' by A. T. HADLEY (C.U.P. 1922); and, more particularly, by attention to the articles in the *Economic Journal*, the organ of the Royal Economic Society (Mac.), and in *Economica* (London School of Economics).

The revised issue of PALGRAVE's 'Dictionary of Political Economy,' ed. by H. HIGGS (3 v. Mac.), it should be added, is in many respects an improvement on the earlier.

COURSE XVI

SOCIOLOGY

Preamble.—SOCIOLOGY is the hybrid term coined by AUGUSTE COMTE for the study of socio-political (or “societal”) life as a historic progression; and despite its linguistic incorrectness it has held its ground, the correct “politology” having been ignored. The term has in due course been extended over the field of ANTHROPOLOGY in general; and L. H. MORGAN, the author of ‘Ancient Society,’ has been pronounced “the greatest sociologist of the last century,” though he dealt substantially with “early” forms.

It would have been a cultural convenience if the term Anthropology had been reserved for the study of “prehistoric” or “primitive” life, including the observed life of savagery, and the term Sociology for the study of the period of “civilised States” and their racial environments. It is of the early State-making period that we know least. But, as was noted in Course I, the undisputed fact of the continuity of societal forms from the lowest to the highest has caused the theorising on pre-history to be commonly treated as part of the very different and, “practically” speaking, more instructive study of social causation in the historic States.

The more “practically” important study, which proceeds upon socio-political history proper, being the most difficult of reduction to scientific methods, in respect of the range and complexity of the data, has had less adequate attention; and has indeed been overrun by a variety of “social studies” which one living American sociologist has described as constituting the “desert of deductive sociological literature.” The difficulties facing scientific sociology, indeed, brought about the collapse, in the last century, of the British organisation formed for the promotion of “Social Science,” the centrifugal tendency being predominant. It has accordingly seemed fit to place this Course after those on POLITICS and ECONOMICS, on the view that these sciences, as well as the study of General or Political History (Course III) and General Civilisation (Course IV), are the best groundworks for the study of this.

The complete schema of the study may be succinctly framed

by first joining the dictum of Comte: "Science, whence foresight; foresight, whence action," with the canon of science as put by R  N   WORMS: "Science does not seek to discover how things ought to be: it seeks to discover how they are"; with the addendum that "how they are" must imply "how they have become what they are," and that "what ought to be" is a matter for politics, proceeding on science, alike as to the ends and the means, after politics, proceeding largely without science, has created most of the dilemmas for sociology. On such a grounding the student may hope to elude or control what Prof. Murdock (above cited) has called the "'wishful thinking' and utopianism which characterises so much of sociological literature." The late Prof. D. G. Ritchie wrote of "the contempt for distinctions of time and place, and the unscholarly use of authorities, which too often characterise the sociologist," and make the scientific historian feel that "'Evolution' and 'development' seem only grand names for history treated inaccurately." It is significant that Comte and Spencer, the best-known sociologists of last century, were not close students of history, Spencer having read little in it, while Comte read it deductively.

   1. Though Sociology is thus hardly to be regarded as a "constituted" science, it has been the ground of so much more or less scientific investigation within the past century that its status seems secured. A beginner, then, after some acquaintance with Anthropology and the History of Politics, may turn to any of the following American works (the science having been much more cultivated latterly in America than in England):—'*Outlines of Sociology*,' by Lester F. Ward (Mac. 1898); '*The Elements of Sociology*,' by Prof. F. H. Giddings (same, 1898); or his '*Inductive Sociology*' (same, 1901); or to the following in French: *Les r  gles de la m  thode sociologique*, by Prof.   . DURKHEIM (5e   d. 1910); *Les lois sociologiques*, by Prof. De Greef, of Brussels (1893); and *Notions   l  mentaires de Sociologie*, by GASTON RICHARD (3e   d. 1905). It is to be noted that some recent American works entitled as dealing with "sociology" are merely discussions of some phases of social life and possible reforms. Even the systematic German primer of Prof. ACHELIS, *Sociologie* (1901), is open to objection as identifying the conception and history of Sociology with the conception and history of political ideals or plans.

If he lacks the leisure or desire for a historic approach, the student may now proceed to the larger '*Principles of Sociology*' by the American Prof. F. H. GIDDINGS (Mac. 1898), which is perhaps the most scientific survey of the kind; further, to his '*Studies in the Theory of Human Society*'

(N.Y. 1922); and thereafter to the monumental American treatise of Profs. W. G. SUMNER and A. G. KELLER, 'The Science of Society' (4 v. New Haven, U.S. 1927). The science, however, may be more fully mastered through the history of its development.

§ 2. Properly speaking, Sociology emerges as a notion of social and political causation, as distinguished from a doctrine of ideals or political ethics, though the two are almost always connected in speculation and exposition. The earliest forms of Sociology were really religious concepts; and the next noteworthy stage was the astrological—a primitive pseudo-science in which ethical ideas were still implicated. Later, Aristotle and Plato in the Hellenic world, Polybius in the Roman Empire, Augustine in the decadent Western Empire, Machiavelli and Bodin in the later Renaissance; Bacon, Hobbes, and Locke, in the 17th c., Vico and Montesquieu in the 18th, all stand for sociological as well as for political tentatives. Their significance and relationship may be partly traced through (1) the works of Prof. W. A. DUNNING, A. J. and R. W. CARLYLE, and Sir F. Pollock, named in Course XV, § 5; (2) Prof. FLINT's 'History of the Philosophy of History' (Bld. vol. i, 1893; an expansion of the first part of his earlier vol. 'The Philosophy of History in France and Germany,' same, 1874); (3) DE GREEF's *Le transformisme sociale* (Paris, Alcan, 2e éd. rev. 1901); and (4) A. ESPINAS's *La philosophie sociale au 18e siècle* (1897). Two good chapters are devoted to "The History of Sociology" in Prof. A. W. SMALL's 'General Sociology' (F.U. 1905).

§ 3. The 18th c. abounds in new sociological tentatives of an approximately scientific kind. The Italian VICO, who marks the beginning of a new period, and whose works were re-edited and much discussed in Italy in the last c., may be appreciated with the help of Prof. Flint's 'Vico' (Ph. Cl. Bld.) and the able work of CROCE, 'The Philosophy of Giambattista Vico' (E. tr. by R. G. Collingwood, Latimer, 1913). There is a complete French trans. (1844), ascribed to the Princess Belgiojoso, with an introduction, attributed to Mignet, which, for students' purposes, is preferable to Michelet's abridgment (1827), though that in parts simplifies the complexities of the original. In France, where a notable literary lead had been given by the *Discours sur l'histoire universelle* of BOSSUET (1681), are specially to be noted the contributions of Montesquieu, Rousseau, Turgot, Voltaire, and Condorcet. As to Rousseau see Course XIV, § 5. On Montesquieu, Turgot, and Condorcet see Flint's 'History.' Of Voltaire there is a good appreciation in BUCKLE's 'Introduction to the History of Civilisation in England.' E. FAGUET's *La politique comparée de*

Montesquieu, Rousseau, et Voltaire (1902) is critically suggestive. But it was from Italy that there came the rousing treatise of BECCARIA, *Dei delitti e delle pene* (1764: best E. tr. by J. A. Farrer, 'Crimes and Punishments,' with essay, C. & W. 1880), one of the best sociological performances of its time.

Among less famous writers may be noted the Hungarian Chladni, the Swiss Iselin, and the German Wegelin, as to whom see Flint's earlier 'History'; where also are discussed the better known productions of Lessing, Herder, Kant, Fichte, Schelling, Hegel, and the rest, down to Hermann. In his later 'History' Flint notices the able but little-read French sociologist WALCKENAER, who belongs to the close of the 18th c., with Volney; but, while fully discussing the works of the reactionary French writers of the early part of the 19th c., he has overlooked EUSÈBE SALVERTE, whose *De la civilisation* (1813) is of much more value.

§ 4. A history or survey of British Sociology in the 18th c. has still to be written. After the powerful lead given by MANDEVILLE's 'Fable of the Bees' (exp. ed. 1723) and other works by him, most of the inquiry was done in Scotland, where the stimulus of Voltaire and Montesquieu was particularly fruitful. Apart from Hume's Essays and Smith's 'Wealth of Nations' may be noted Prof. ADAM FERGUSON's 'Essay on the History of Civil Society' (1767); Prof. JOHN MILLAR's 'Origin of the Distinction of Ranks' (1771; 3rd ed. rev. 1781); and Prof. J. DUNBAR's 'Essays on the History of Mankind' (1780). In England the most fruitful sociological work was that done by GIBBON in certain portions of his 'Decline and Fall,' Burke's 'Vindication of Natural Society' being ironically obscurantist. But the trans. of GOGUET's *Origine des lois, des arts, et des sciences* (1758), published at Edinburgh in 1761, gave a real impulse to the study of natural causation, despite its formal orthodoxy. Of the nature of sociology, but aiming at socio-political reform, are the works of the English socialistic writers from Godwin and Charles Hall onwards, referred to in Course XIV, §§ 6, 8.

§ 5. Up to the close of the 18th c., without the use of the name of Sociology, much of the inquiry had been truly sociological, in the sense of seeking the explanation of the rise, growth, and fall of States and civilisations, though no systematic and coherent study had been made, in any case, of the whole of the determining conditions, physical and mental. After the French Restoration, as has been noted in Course IX, § 19, the common impulse was to seek new regulative principles. Thus AUGUSTE COMTE's *Cours de philosophie positive* (6 t. 1830-42), which had begun on the impulse of the theories and schemes of SAINT-SIMON, did aim at a discovery of past causation, though always

with an eye to social reconstruction, but was followed by his 'System of Positive Polity' (E. tr. 4 v. K.P. 1875-79). His views may be more shortly gathered from his minor works (Course IX, § 19); and the first two chapters of his 'Positive Philosophy' (E. tr. by P. Descours and H. G. Jones, Watts, 6d.). The *Politique positive* is less a work of sociology than an arbitrary code of social regulation; and the *Philosophie positive* will be found by many readers more instructive. Its general doctrine was very ably summarised by HARRIET MARTINEAU, to Comte's own avowed satisfaction, in 'The Philosophy of August Comte' (rep. in B.L. with pref. by F. Harrison, 3 v. 1896).

Apart from its study of the socio-political forces in the Christian era, its most notable sociological thesis (really psycho-rational rather than historical) is the "law of the three stages," a variant of the law of three stages sketched previously by Turgot, and the law of *four* stages as set forth by B. CONSTANT in his large treatise *De la religion* (1824, etc.). Comte's theorem is one of a necessary intellectual progression from a theological stage, under stress of criticism, to a metaphysical stage, in which science and philosophy substitute abstractions (as that of "Nature") for the ideas of anthropomorphic and dogmatic religion. He then proceeds to affirm a "positive" stage, now to be constituted, in which only scientifically known fact is allowed to direct inference or explanation. Yet his own sequences of social causation were traced in terms of abstractions, and that of "Humanity" was made to function as "Nature" had done, with a further reduction to the concept of the good elements in Humanity. For a very capable exposition and defence of Comte's total doctrine, see 'The Philosophy of Comte' by Prof. L. LEVY-BRUHL (E. tr. with intr. by F. Harrison, Son. 1903).

§ 6. Valuable concrete ideas were thrown out in the *Traité de la Législation* of the now ignored CHARLES COMTE (1835, 4 t.); but the first powerful and effective new departure in Sociology after the *Philosophie positive* was the 'Introduction to the History of Civilisation in England,' by H. T. BUCKLE (2 v. 1857-61; rep. in 1 v. annot., Rout.; cheap rep. of six prelim. chs. Watts, 1930), who paid to the former a high tribute while avowing divergence from some of its methods and conclusions. Like Comte, he attacked, as non-scientific, non-explanatory historiography in general; and, outgoing Comte, sought in the physical conditions of primitive life and primary civilisation for the causal forces of social evolution—this before Darwin—while proceeding to show how the mental forces were the great determinants.

As a pioneer, though a great light-bearer, he inevitably made mistakes. His opponents, who were many, made in general

nothing else. In due course, his work (left at his early death a fragment of a fragment) should have been rectified and built upon. In actual fact it was for the most part libelled, misrepresented, or ignored. Its one serious schematic flaw lay in positing as a complete induction from history the political principle of *laissez-faire*, when all that had been inductively established was the expediency of Free Trade. And it was not on this lax deduction, derived from Adam Smith, that he was resisted.

A study of the resistance [see 'Buckle and his Critics,' 1895] made to Buckle's procedure, at its best and soundest, will serve to reveal the greatness of the difficulty in establishing a Sociology worthy of the name. He wrote in the spirit of modern Science, seeking in all his survey for a knowledge of the *causation* in the historic sequences—a procedure vital to an inquiry which needed to substitute evidence and inference for the verbalist formulas of the past, in which (a) the natural senility of civilisations or (b) the providential fore-ordination of their course served alternately for explanations. But every induction or generalisation framed by him was misrepresented by critics who were primarily opposed to any notion of a scientific Sociology, dreading the conception. The very title of his book is commonly ignored, being always cited even by Prof. G. P. Murdock not as 'An Introduction to' but 'The History of Civilisation in England.' On the other hand, all lapses from the scientific plane by the innovator were doubly inauspicious.

The broad result was a mass of false assertion on fact, and falsification of statement and argument, which is hardly to be paralleled in the history of any other science. The discredit sought to be cast upon the pioneer will thus be found to be heavily incurred by the great majority of his opponents. Whether as a result of the animus thus rapidly evolved at the outset of the inquiry, or of the bias which underlay it, Sociology is still in some measure inhibited from its proper function, the comprehension of past social causation, and directed to "wishful" propaganda on the possibilities of social betterment by educational or legislative action, whereas a strict study of the results of such effort in the past is the scientific requirement.

§ 7. Apart from Buckle, in his period, is to be noted, in English sociology, J. S. MILL, who in his 'System of Logic' (Bk. vi) devotes some earnest and orderly thought to Social Science, but can hardly be said to reach any definite conclusions. His attempt to give it the form of a systematic study of national character, under the title of 'Ethology,' admittedly came to nothing, being in fact a divagation from scientific method. WALTER BAGEHOT'S 'Physics and Politics' (I.S.S. 1872) is in comparison evolutionary,

but deductive rather than inductive, and embodies the usual misrepresentation of Buckle, contributing little to historical interpretation. At some points it is vitiated by facile acceptance of the crude sociology of MAINE.

The outstanding English sociologist of the later Victorian period was HERBERT SPENCER, whose sociological positions are to be gathered partly from the later chapters of his 'First Principles' (W. & N. 1862) and from his 'Social Statics' (same, modified rep.), and his 'Man *versus* the State' (same), as well as from his 'Principles of Sociology' (same, 3 v. 1876-96: later eds. of vol. i revised and enlarged); but the second and third are in the main works of political criticism; and his stimulating and valuable 'Introduction to the Study of Sociology' (I.S.S. 1873 and later) is rather a discussion of the mental discipline required alike for politics and Sociology, with general socio-political doctrine added, than a survey of the subject-matter or method of Sociology. The long series of folios entitled 'Descriptive Sociology' compiled under his direction, on the other hand, constitutes a valuable treasury of historical and social data, on which a complete sociology should found. His 'Principles,' further, constitute an important analysis of all manner of static social phenomena, beginning with the generalised "man" of primitive life, theorising on the origins of religion in all its forms, then studying "Society" as an abstract form, and proceeding to classify and describe Domestic, Ceremonial, Political, Ecclesiastical, Professional, and Industrial Institutions. The work as a whole is thus an *anatomy* of social forms, not a historic study of the evolution of larger from smaller societies, or even of the conditioning of the rise, progress, decay, or fall of either order.

Alongside of Spencer, the learned and thoughtful German scholar, Dr. A. E. F. SCHÄFFLE, compiled his great *Bau und Leben des sozialen Körpers* (4 Bde. 1875-8; 2te Ausg. 1896) to somewhat similar purpose, though with larger learning and quite independent method; creating, however, no school, and offering, like Spencer, an anatomic or biological abstraction of Society rather than a historical interpretation. P. VON LILIENFELD'S *Gedanken über die Socialwissenschaft der Zukunft* (5 Bde. 1873-81) are still more self-frustrative by sheer bulk. Of more illuminating quality is the able work of Dr. PAUL BARTH, *Die Philosophie der Geschichte als Soziologie* (Th. I only: Leip. 1897). A more truly organic conception than Schäffle's is embodied in the elaborate works of the late CH. RENOUVIER, *Introduction à la philosophie analytique de l'histoire* (1896), and *Philosophie analytique de l'histoire* (4 t. 1896-97), which are well worth the study of the leisured.

§ 8. Meantime, throughout the century, the materials for a sociological conception of history, ancient and modern, had been accumulated by the great historians of Europe, whom Spencer had not been disposed to study. [A conspectus of the results has been attempted by the editor in 'The Evolution of States' (Watts, 1912), which proceeds from Ancient Greece and Rome to the beginnings of English constitutional government in the 18th c.] In particular, Buckle's studies (embodied in his 'Introduction') of 'The French Intellect from the 16th to the 18th C.,' the causation of the French Revolution, 'The Spanish Intellect from the 5th to the 19th C.,' and the socio-intellectual life of Scotland, constitute really sociological histories in their kind, and reveal the perversity of the opinion that he saw in Sociology only the operation of physical causes. Strictly speaking, he unduly ignored such physical causation as the effect of physiological conditions on the political life of Greece, Switzerland, and the Scottish Highlands, where he might have been expected to note them; and his scheme did not embrace the study of "cross-fertilisation of cultures," as in ancient Greece.

§ 9. A reader who, lacking time to go through the works of Spencer, Comte, and Schäffle (indicated in 'Buckle and his Critics'), desires to gain some definite conceptions of Sociology proper, as regards method and results, will do well to turn to one of the following works:—A. FAIRBANKS, 'An Introduction to Sociology' (K.P. 1896); J. H. W. STUCKENBURG, 'Introduction to the Study of Sociology' (H. & S. 1898); A. W. SMALL and G. E. VINCENT, 'Introduction to the Study of Society' (N.Y. 1894). Mr. Fairbanks' book is mainly an analysis of ideas, and as such has merit, though it sets up an unprofitable distinction between the "science" and the "philosophy" of society. Dr. Stuckenburg's work is more practical and more readable, but more commonplace. Remarking that "Sociology needs thinkers, not echoes," the author echoes, at second-hand, Dr. Bastian's bad misrepresentation of the doctrine of Buckle—a misrepresentation which is itself an echo. The work of Messrs. Small and Vincent, as its title suggests, deals rather with the problems of present society than with the explanation of the past in terms of social causation. But Prof. Small's 'General Sociology,' before mentioned, is a capable survey of the general problem, and includes a careful exposition of the doctrine of Ratzenhofer (whose works are named below), as well as of Spencer and Schäffle. The *Esquisse d'une sociologie* of M. E. WAXWEILER (Bruxelles, 1906) is one of many interesting Continental productions.

In this connection it should be remembered that the scientific impulse to Sociology in France had borne practical fruit even

alongside of Comte, and that GUIZOT's histories of civilisation in France (1829-32) and in Europe (1838), despite their pre-scientific deism, had many merits of interpretation; that the *Cité Antique* of FUSTEL DE COULANGES (1870) was a notably new sociological reconstruction: and that his great but unfinished *Histoire des institutions politiques de l'ancienne France* (1875-92) is counted one of the strongest performances in its kind.

§ 10. So diverse are the conceptions of what Sociology means that it must now suffice to indicate specialties in the literature, with no synthetic criticism. Whereas Comte represents the regulative spirit generated in the reaction against the French Revolution, and Spencer on the contrary the British spirit of *laissez-faire* which dates from Adam Smith, later Sociology tends to a more impartial induction from new analyses. As against the "Administrative Nihilism" of Spencer should be read the essay of HUXLEY with that title, and the three remarkable treatises of LESTER WARD, 'Dynamic Sociology' (2 v. N.Y. Appleton, 1883 and later, outlined in 'Buckle and his Critics'); 'The Psychic Factors of Civilisation' (Ginn, 1893), and 'Pure Sociology' (Mac. 1903). Prof. J. S. MACKENZIE's 'Introduction to Social Philosophy' (MacL. 1890) is a discursive treatise of great ability, proceeding on wide literary knowledge; and Dr. A. PULSZKY's 'Theory of Law and Civil Society' (1888) is a scientific study of exceptional merit. The treatise of Prof. JEAN IZOULET, *La cité moderne: Métaphysique de la sociologie* (1895), hardly answers to its title, but is a vivacious plea for a better social spirit. Of more sociological importance is Prof. THORSTEIN VEBLEN's work on 'The Theory of the Leisure Class' (Mac. 1899)—a notably original performance. 'The Basis of Social Relations: A Study in Ethnic Psychology,' by Prof. D. G. BRINTON (Mur. 1902), is a posthumous work on much more conventional lines; and in 'The Level of Social Motion,' by M. A. LANE (N.Y. 1902), the originality runs somewhat to arbitrariness.

Keeping in mind the sociological bearings of a number of anthropological works specified in Course I, we may further note, among later American books, T. N. CARVER's 'Sociology and Social Progress' (Boston, 1905); Mrs. JOHN MARTIN's challenging book, 'Is Mankind Advancing?' (N.Y. 1910); L. L. BERNARD's 'Introduction to Social Psychology' (A. & U.); C. M. CASE's 'Outlines of Introductory Sociology' (N.Y. 1924); F. S. CHAPIN's 'Introduction to the Study of Social Evolution' (rev. ed. N.Y. 1915); F. N. HOUSE, 'The Range of Social Theory' (N.Y. 1929); A. G. KELLER, 'Societal Evolution' (N.Y. 1920); and 'Starting-Points in Social Science' (Boston, 1923); J. P. LICHTENBERGER's 'Development of Social Theory' (N.Y. and A. & U. 1923);

W. McDUGALL's 'Introduction to Social Psychology' (14th ed. Boston, 1921); W. F. OGBURN's 'Social Change with respect to Culture and Original Nature' (N.Y. 1922); F. THOMAS, 'The Environmental Basis of Society' (N.Y. 1925); A. M. TENNENBERG, 'Social Origins and Social Continuities' (N.Y. 1925); C. WISSLER, 'An Introduction to Social Anthropology' (N.Y. 1929). The massive work of SUMNER and KELLER (above, § 1) is a comprehensive treatise, proceeding on the "controlling thought" of the adjustment of men to their environment. 'The Human Habitat' by E. HUNTINGTON (C. & H.) is a compact and independent presentment of the same aspect of "social anthropology."

§ 11. The works above named (§§ 1, 6, 7, 9, 10) constitute the chief contributions to general Sociology in English; but to the 'Principles' of Prof. Giddings there is appended a bibliography which refers to many interesting review articles. Another good bibliography is added by Prof. G. P. MURDOCK to his trans. of LIPPERT's 'Evolution of Culture' (A. & U. 1931). Note should further be taken of several works of applied or interpretative Sociology. Many such are mere systematised expressions of bias; but 'The Nemesis of Nations,' by A. ROMAINE PATERSON (Dent, 1907), an investigation of the effects of slavery on ancient civilisation, is on the true line of social science. The effort to interpret history is made in a very interesting fashion, again, in 'The Law of Civilisation and Decay: An Essay on History,' by BROOKS ADAMS (Mac. 1897); and in a systematically irrationalistic fashion in BENJAMIN KIDD's 'Social Evolution' (Mac. 1893), on which see Course IX, § 22, and the opening paper in the late Prof. D. G. RITCHIE's 'Studies in Political and Social Ethics' (Son. 1902). Mr. Kidd has further developed his ideas in 'The Principles of Western Civilisation' (Mac. 1902). Of more value and importance is the work of L. PONTET, *Causes et origines: Essais suivies d'une étude sur la décadence des peuples* (1902). H. DE TOURVILLE, *Histoire de la formation particulariste: L'Origine des grands peuples actuels* (1905), is rhetorical; but there is merit in E. H. SCHMITT, *Der Idealstaat* (Cultur-probleme series, 1904), though such projections—sampled in 'The Great State,' by a dozen brilliant writers (Harp. 1912)—mostly supply laudable aspirations. L. T. HOBHOUSE's 'Social Development: its Nature and Conditions' (A. & U.) is, however, a serious and arresting study; and the theme of 'The State: its History and Development, Viewed Sociologically,' by FRANZ OPPENHEIMER (A. & U.), is one of sociology proper.

§ 12. Further study will involve an examination of the abundant sociological literature of France (including works in French by Russians), Germany, and Italy. In Germany, next to the work of

Dr. BARTH, above mentioned, which outlines an independent scheme of Sociology, may be ranked the *Grundriss der Sociologie* of Prof. LOUIS GUMLOWICZ (Wien, 1885: E. tr. 'The Outlines of Sociology,' Philadelphia, 1899) and the same writer's *Die sociologische Staatsidee* (translated in French as *Sociologie et politique*, 1881); and *Der Rassenkampf* (1883—discussed in 'Buckle and his Critics'). But specially important are the works of GUSTAV RATZENHOFER, *Wesen und Zweck der Politik* (3 Bde. 1893) and *Die sociologische Erkenntniss* (1898). One of the ablest of modern sociologists was Durkheim, above mentioned, whose most considerable works were his *Division du travail social* (1893), and 'The Elementary Forms of the Religious Life' (E. tr. A. & U. 1915). G. TARDE, in his *Les lois de l'imitation : étude sociologique* (1890), handled an interesting sociological problem, first broached by Bagehot, and further developed his ideas in *La logique sociale* (1895) and *L'opposition universelle* (1897); and in his *Études de psychologie sociale* (1898). His *Logique sociale* is trans. in English as 'Social Laws: An Outline of Sociology,' with pref. by Prof. J. M. Baldwin (Mac. 1899). Another French sociologist of note is E. DE ROBERTY, whose *La sociologie* (1881) is lucid if not specially original.

§ 13. From Belgium come the works of DE GREEF, above mentioned, and an *Introduction à la sociologie* of the same writer (2 t. 1886); also *La sociologie génétique : Essai sur la pensée et la vie sociale préhistoriques* by Prof. F. COSENTINI of Brussels (Paris, 1905); and from Russia the important studies of JACQUES NOVICOW, *Les luttes entre sociétés humaines et leurs phases successives* (1893); *Conscience et volonté sociales* (1897); *La guerre et ses prétendus bienfaits* (1894); and *L'avenir de la race blanche* (1897). A shorter work of Von Lilienfeld is trans. in French under the title *La pathologie sociale* (Bib. Soc. Int. ser.). Other works of importance are *Die Gesetze der sozialen Entwicklung* of TH. HERTZKA (1886); VON BÄRENBACH'S *Die Socialwissenschaften* (1882); F. TÖNNIES' *Gemeinschaft und Gesellschaft* (1887); G. SIMMEL'S *Die Probleme der Geschichtsphilosophie* (Leipzig, 3te Aufl. 1907), a work important to the conception of Sociology, and as such criticised by N. J. SPYKMAN in 'The Social Theory of GEORG SIMMEL' (Chic. 1925); and L. STEIN'S *Die sociale Frage im Lichte der Philosophie* (1897: tr. in French, 1900).

§ 14. An energetic movement was set up in France about 1870 by FRÉDÉRIC LE PLAY (discussed in 'Buckle and his Critics'), whose doctrines have since been put by disciples more persuasively than by the master. They are systematically stated by J. B. M. VIGNES in *La science sociale d'après les principes de Le Play* (2 t. 1897). Le Play was personally a somewhat reactionary Catholic;

but his followers (excepting De Tourville, above mentioned) lean to more scientific views. Other tendencies in French Sociology of the last age may be followed in the survey of ALFRED FOUILLÉE, *La science sociale contemporaine*, 1885. M. Fouillée was himself the author of a series of partially sociological works, notably *La psychologie des idées forces* (2 t. 1893) and *Le mouvement positiviste et la conception sociologique du monde* (1896).

§ 15. In few countries has there been more of sociological activity than in Italy, where the impulsion given two centuries ago has latterly counted for much. (See the bibliographical appendix to SICILIANI'S *Sul Rinnovamento della filosofia positiva in Italia*: Firenze, 1871.) Among later works are: E. MORSELLI, *Elementi di sociologia generale* (Milano, 1898); J. LUZZATO, *Elementi di scienza sociale* (Livorno, 1884); G. REVERDITO, *Sociologia* (Acqui, 1888); S. FRAGAPANE, *Contrattualismo e sociologia contemporanea* (Bologna, 1892); G. BOCCARDO, *La sociologia nella storia* (1881); D. ANZILOTTI, *La filosofia del diritto e la sociologia* (Firenze, 1892). A good view of the development of the study up to the end of the last century is given in the work of HENRI HAUSER, *L'enseignement des Sciences sociales* (1903).

§ 16. What is loosely known as the "materialistic" theory of history, an extension of the method of the sociologists of the 18th c., was explicitly developed by MARX in his 'Capital,' and by his associate F. ENGELS in 'The Condition of the Working Class in England in 1844' (S.S.S. 1892) and 'Socialism, Utopian and Scientific' (same). It has been championed by the Italian Prof. ANTONIO LABRIOLA in his *Essais sur la conception matérialiste de l'histoire* (Fr. tr. 2e éd. 1902); by the Italian Prof. ACHILLE LORIA in 'The Economic Foundations of Society' (E. tr. from Fr. S.S.S. 1899); and yet again by G. SOREL in *La ruine du monde antique: Conception matérialiste de l'histoire* (1901). A notable criticism of the thesis has been contributed by BENEDETTO CROCE in his essay, 'Historical Materialism, and the economics of Karl Marx' (E. tr. by C. M. Meredith: Latimer, 1914); and another by MAURICE WILLIAM, 'The Social Interpretation of History: a Refutation of the Marxian Economic Theory' (A. & U. 1922). This is highly polemical, but powerful. On the whole problem see the lecture by J. JAURÈS on *Idéalisme et matérialisme dans la conception de l'histoire* (1901). The conception in question is really akin to the basal ideas of Buckle, and is only in its Marxian forms open to the criticism that it neglects or denies important factors in social causation. Much more open to scientific demur is the kind of pseudo-biological socialism set forth in such works as 'The Biology of British Politics,' by CHARLES H. HARVEY (S.S.S. 1904).

§ 17. Sociology has taken on, further, the aspect of a quasi-predictive science. In this aspect it is purely speculative, but may be in some degree scientifically gone about. In the past there have been sketches of speculative history, such as the old forecast 'The Reign of George VI.: 1900-1925,' written in 1763 (rep. with pref. by Prof. Oman, Riv. 1899). A much more intellectual performance is the *Uchronie* of CHARLES RENOUVIER (1901), of which an account is given in THOMAS WHITTAKER'S 'Essays and Notices' (F.U. 1895). This is an attempt to rewrite past history "as it might have been," given certain suppositions. (Recently, the matter has been handled in a non-serious literary fashion.) Forecasts of the future have been undertaken by H. G. WELLS in his works 'Mankind in the Making' (6d. rep. C. & H. 1906); 'Anticipations' (same, 6d. rep. 1904); 'A Modern Utopia' (same, 1905); and 'The Future in America' (same, 1906); but it is doubtful whether these are more impressive than his romances 'The Time Machine' and 'When the Sleeper Wakes,' where the prediction is strikingly imaginative. A somewhat arbitrarily pessimistic line of prediction is followed in the late C. H. PEARSON'S 'National Life and Character' (Mac. 1893, and rep.); and yet another in Prof. KARL PEARSON'S lecture 'National Life from the Standpoint of Science' (Black, 1905). On a very different line of forecast are the *Études sur la nature humaine* of Prof. ÉLIE METCHNIKOFF (2e éd. 1903; E. tr. Hei. 1903). See also such works of socialistic fiction as EDWARD BELLAMY'S 'Looking Backward' (many eds.) and 'Equality' (Hei.); WILLIAM MORRIS'S 'News from Nowhere' (Lmns.); and the treatise of the late M. GUYAU on 'The Irreligion of the Future' (E. tr. Hei. 1897).

§ 18. The separate study of criminology, instituted on sociological lines by Beccaria, is latterly represented by such works as 'Genius and the Criminal: A Study in Rebellion,' by H. T. F. RHODES (Mur. 1932), which may be regarded as an independent development of the positions of LOMBROSO; H. ELMER BARNES'S 'The Repression of Crime: Studies in Historical Penology' (A. & U.); *La Criminologie, Étude sur la nature du crime et la théorie de la pénalité* (Fr. tr. recast by author, 1888); H. HAVELOCK ELLIS, 'The Criminal' (S.S.S. rev. ed. 1901); Dr. FRANZ ALEXANDER and H. STAUB, 'The Criminal, the Judge, and the Public: A Psychological Analysis' (E. tr. A. & U.); and 'Boys in Trouble: A Study of Adolescent Crime and its Economics,' by Mrs. Le Mesurier (Mur. 1932). See also Dr. HOLLANDER (Course XII, § 7).

§ 19. Much pseudo-sociology has been written, in historical and ethnological works, on the thesis of "Race Character" (dis-

cussed in 'The Germans,' W. & N. 1917). This conception sometimes takes the rational form of the proposition that a race's collective or political experience affects its general way of thinking; but it always tends to the *à priori* assumption that different stocks have a collective character or disposition, even as an individual has, and that this hereditary character is always the cause and never the effect of a nation's history. As to the latter assumption, which is partly implicit in the ideas as to "Ethology" sketched in the sixth book of Mill's 'System of Logic,' see the works of BABINGTON and HERZ specified in Course I, § 4, and the 'Race Prejudice' of JEAN FINOT (E. tr. Con. 1906). In the works named will be found references to others of a contrary tendency.

A search for the determining influences on average character in different nations at different periods is part of the work of true Sociology, as against the assumption of primordial gifts or proclivities in stocks as such. For the evolutionist, all "races" have been modified and are modifiable, for good or ill, inasmuch as they survive, progress, stagnate, or decay. Obviously, a sociological study of such a problem as that of the acquired qualities of the Jewish people belongs to Sociology, and DÜHRING's *Die Judenfrage* (1881) may be noted as an instance of how it ought *not* to be done.

§ 20. In so far as Sociology concentrates on human prospects as distinct from plans and propagandas, it is not latterly much marked by optimism, though this is at times suddenly imposed on a sober survey, as in 'The Psychology of Social Life,' by Dr. C. PLATT (U.S.A. and A. & U.—*n.d.*), which claims to be "A Materialistic Study with an Idealistic Conclusion," ending on a nugatory religious "slogan." (The same tactic was observed in some English and French books on Progress round 1850.) By some, the expansion of general intellectual capacity, as distinct from participation in 'Our Social Heritage' [on which see Prof. GRAHAM WALLAS's work of that title (A. & U.) and 'The Material Culture and Social Institutions of the Simpler Peoples,' by L. T. HOBHOUSE, G. C. WHEELER, and M. GINSBERG (C. & H. 1915)] is denied. 'The Sociology of City Life' (Lmns. 1932) by MILES CARPENTER, an American expert, is a non-optimistic forecast, having regard to the inevitable multiplication of costly administrative staffs to deal with the problems of city-life conditions. See also Prof. W. S. SADLER's 'Race Decadence: an Exam. of the Causes of Race Degeneracy in the U.S.' (Rout.).

§ 21. At this point, finally, may be contrasted the two works: 'The Idea of Progress: an Inquiry into its Origin and Growth,' by the late Professor J. B. BURY (Mac. 1920), and 'The Origin

and Nature of Man: an Inquiry into Fundamentals,' by G. SPILLER (W. & N. 1931). The former is an excellent survey of the literature and the content of its theme, tracing the concept to modern rationalism, from Fontenelle to Spencer. (To the criticism of the latter should be added a mention of the fact that in his 'Sociology,' Spencer did not define Progress so optimistically as in his early essay on the topic, and was not optimistic at the end in his political outlook.) The work of Mr. Spiller, on the other hand, is a large and well-documented anthropological survey, ending on the inference of FISKE ('Outlines of Cosmic Philosophy,' 1874), that there *must* be unending social betterment, albeit with much expenditure of intellectual effort to that end. As against the "must," regard may be had to Bury's Epilogue on "the illusion of finality," with which may be compared Spencer's thesis of "equilibrium" in 'First Principles.' The problem is handled in 'Social Purpose: a Contribution to a Philosophy of Civic Society,' by Profs. H. J. W. HETHERINGTON and J. H. MUIRHEAD (A. & U. 1918).

COURSE XVII

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

I.—SUMER-AKKAD, BABYLONIA, AND ASSYRIA

§ 1. OF the historic reconstructions of modern times, that of the buried civilisation of Babylonia and Assyria is the most remarkable. It is latterly ascertained to be a sequel to a far older civilisation, imposed by a non-Semitic or "Iranian" race which dominated Semitic Akkadians and non-Semitic populations. The history of Sumer-Akkad is ably condensed by C. Leonard Woolley in 'The Sumerians' (Cl. Pr. 1928). Mr. Woolley's personal excavation work at Ur is to be studied in his 'Dead Towns and Living Men' (O.U.P. 1920). See also Dr. H. R. HALL's 'A Season's Work at Ur' (Met. 1920).

The earlier 'History of Sumer Akkad' by Prof. L. W. KING (C. & W. 1910) and his 'History of Babylon' (1915) remain of standard importance. In the 'Cambridge Ancient History,' of which vol. i deals with Egypt and Babylonia to 1580 B.C., and vol. iii covers 'The Assyrian Empire,' the entire history is competently presented. There is also a separate 'History of Assyria' by A. T. E. OLMSTEAD (N.Y. 1923). For the general reader, the manuals on 'Ancient Babylon' and 'Ancient Assyria' by C. H. W. JOHNS (C.U.P.) are good introductions; and 'Mesopotamia: the Babylonian and Assyrian Civilisation,' by Prof. L. DELAPORTE of Paris (E. tr. K.P.), is an able survey.

Previously, the evolution of the whole had been freshly elucidated by the Civil Code of the Babylonian King Hammurabi (Course VI, § 5), who flourished about 2300 B.C., and whose code is but an adaptation of an older Sumerian one. 'The Witness of Assyria' by Chilperie Edwards (R.P.A. Watts) cleared the ground of the apologetics which still affected Dr. FRITZ HOMMEL's manual, 'The Civilisation of the East' (Dent, 1900). The 'Early History of Assyria to 1000 B.C.,' by SIDNEY SMITH (C. & W. 1928), proceeds on the unfinished plan of Prof. King.

§ 2. Of the older books, several retain their value for Babylon and Assyria. The student may still profitably use the manual of Prof. MORRIS JASTROW, 'The Religion of

Babylon and Assyria' (Ginn). Of necessity it deals mainly with the religious material, but the religion and the political history are closely bound together; and Dr. JASTROW has further produced 'The Civilisation of Babylonia and Assyria' (Philad. 1913). There are, also, several careful histories of the last generation in English, in particular the 'Outlines of the History of Early Babylonia' of R. W. ROGERS (1895), and the same author's fuller 'History of Babylonia and Assyria' (2 v. Luzac; 2nd ed. 1901); also HUGO RADAU's 'Early Babylonian History' (O.U.P. 1900); W. ST. CHAD BOSCAWEN's 'The First of the Empires' (Harp. 1904); and a short 'Babylonian History' by Sir E. A. W. BUDGE (S.P.C.K.)—all the work of special students. There are also the interesting volumes of Madame RAGOZIN, 'Media, Babylonia, and Persia' (1889) and 'Assyria' (1891), both in the S.N.S. Sir G. MASPERO, further, had competently dealt with the subject-matter in his *Histoire ancienne des peuples de l'Orient*; and there are available to English readers in this connection S.P.C.K. trs. of two works by him: 'The Struggle of the Nations: Egypt, Syria, and Assyria' (1896: last ed. 1925) and 'The Passing of the Empires: 850-330 B.C.' (1900 and later). The reader of French may consult with profit his *Lectures historiques: Égypte, Assyrie* (3e édit. 1898).

In the extensive German literature of Assyriology may be noted FRIEDRICH DELITZSCH's *Geschichte Babylonien und Assyrien* (1891)—a revision of the work of F. MÜRDTER—and HUGO WINCKLER's work of the same title (1892. E. tr. by J. A. Craig, N.Y. 1907). HOMMEL's *Geschichte* (in Oncken's ser.) is, as already noted, more biased towards traditional views; but his essay on *Der babylonische Ursprung der ägyptischen Kultur* (1892) has interest. The special student will find in the bibliographies of the Camb. Anc. Hist. references to a multitude of special articles by the experts of several countries.

§ 3. The interesting story of the excavations is told in many works, the earlier summarised in W. S. W. VAUX's 'Nineveh and Persepolis' (2nd ed. 1830) and LAYARD's 'Nineveh and its Remains' and 'Nineveh and Babylon' (rep. and abr. 1867) and H. RASSAM's 'Asshur and the Land of Nimrod' (N.Y. 1897). For further references see the full bibliography appended to the work of Prof. Jastrow, above mentioned. Later excavations and researches are indicated in the works specified in § 1. 'Babylonian Problems,' by Col. W. H. LANE, with intr. by Prof. S. LANGDON (Mur. 1923), has much topographical interest, and settles some points decisively. Dr. H. R. HALL's 'The Ancient History of the Near East, from the Earliest Times to the Battle

of Salamis' (Met. 7th ed. 1927, with plates and maps), is the work of an expert, and covers a long perspective.

THE HITTITES

The large area marked by remains of what is recognised to be "Hittite" civilisation is not to be regarded as the habitat of one people so named. As it appears to be the opinion of modern scholars that "the Hittites" were not a Semitic race, and it is still uncertain to what "family" they belonged, the recent literature of their history may be separately indicated in juxtaposition with that of the Mesopotamian civilisations with which they are commonly associated. The history so far as recovered, distinguishing between the ethnic and the "cultural" purport of the term, has been most competently written in ch. xi of vol. ii, and chs. vi and vii in vol. iii, of 'The Cambridge Ancient History' (C.U.P. 1924) by Dr. D. G. HOGARTH, whose learning and circumspection entitle this to be regarded so far as the standard English summary. As to ethnology, he recognises a stock of "Hatti" and a "Hattic empire." His bibliographies indicate all the important literature up to this date. Prof. Sayce had previously published 'The Hittites: The Story of a Forgotten Empire' (R.T.S. 1903); and Dr. W. WRIGHT, earlier, a more elaborate work, 'The Empire of the Hittites' (Nisbet, 2nd ed. 1886); while Col. C. R. CONDER dealt with the problem in 'The Hittites and their Language' (Bld. 1898).

COURSE XVIII

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

II.—EGYPT: ANCIENT AND MODERN

§ 1. THE recent advances of Egyptology have to a great extent superannuated the histories more than fifty years old, and the first and second vols. of the *Camb. Anc. Hist.* should be turned to for a comprehensive record to about 1000 B.C. The 'Egypt and Western Asia in the Light of Recent Discoveries,' by L. W. KING and H. R. HALL (S.P.C.K. 1910: 100 illustr.), competently sets forth the general revision of the history; and JAMES BAIKIE'S 'A Century of Excavations in the Land of the Pharaohs' (R.T.S. 1924) indicates the part played by the actual unearthing of all manner of remains. It is on the basis of the modern discoveries that the French Egyptologist, Prof. A. MORET (see Course VI, § 4), has produced his important work on 'The Nile and Egyptian Civilisation' (E. tr. K.P. 1927; with foreword by HENRI BERR), the most original attempt at reconstructive interpretation in this field.

For lack of a native historic literature, ancient Egyptian history is much less written of in manuals than Greek and Roman, though succinctly presented in several of the books named in Course III, as H. WEBSTER'S 'History of Mankind,' and 'History of the Ancient World' (Har.). The 6d. manual of 'Ancient Egypt' by A. WEIGALL (Benn, 1928) is a concise record, based on its author's 'History of the Pharaohs' (But. 2 v. thus far). On the other hand, scholarly surveys of high value have been produced in the past generation. Thus the 'History of Egypt to the Persian Conquest,' by J. H. BREASTED (H. & S. 1906; rev. ed. 1923), at once earned, and has kept, a standard rank which is confirmed by his Chapters in the C.A.H.; and 'How Things were Done in Ancient Egypt,' by S. K. Glanville (Bell, 1931), is an instructive socio-historical record, given in a series of lectures, which may form an introduction to the larger chronological and detailed histories. The 'Outlines of Ancient Egyptian History' by Auguste Mariette (Mur. 1892) is still reprinted (tr. and ed. by Mary Brodrick).

§ 2. Books of last century, by competent specialists, are to be read with caution in the matter of Egyptian chronology. Among such works are:—the ‘Manners and Customs of the Ancient Egyptians,’ by Sir GARDINER WILKINSON (Mur. last ed. in 3 vols. 1878, by Dr. Birch), and the abridged edition in 2 v., ‘A Popular Account of the Ancient Egyptians’ (1874). The expert work of Sir G. MASPERO, ‘Life in Ancient Egypt and Assyria’ (E. tr. C. & H. 1902), gives a vivid picture of life in the age of Rameses II, the period of which the monuments are most abundant. A first-hand account of the modern work of excavation, which yields so many memorials, is given in Sir W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE’S ‘Ten Years’ Digging in Egypt’ (R.T.S. 1923).

§ 3. Of elaborate histories, founded on modern research, the student has in English the copious work of the accomplished Egyptologist, Sir E. A. WALLIS BUDGE, ‘A History of Egypt to the Death of Cleopatra VII’ (8 v. K.P. 1899–1902), a valuable research with many illustrations; and ‘The History of Egypt’ (Met. 6 v.), of which Sir W. FLINDERS PETRIE is editor and part writer. In the 5th ed. of his first volume Petrie puts off for later separate treatment the prehistoric civilisation of Egypt, on which subject some of his earlier theories are controverted by Budge in *his* first volume. Both deal with the later discoveries, in which Petrie has taken part. His own section of the ‘History’ has original value. The later vols. of the history are distributed thus: vol. iv, ‘The Egypt of the Ptolemies,’ by Dr. E. R. Bevan; vol. v, ‘Roman Egypt,’ by J. G. MILNE; vol. vi, ‘Egypt in the Middle Ages,’ by STANLEY LANE-POOLE. A competent French history of Egypt from the period of Alexander’s conquest to that of Roman rule has been produced by M. BOUCHÉ-LECLERQ, *Histoire des Lagides* (3 t. 1903–7).

§ 4. Scholarly and comprehensive, too, though less recent, is the *Geschichte des alten Aegyptens* of Prof. EDUARD MEYER (1887 and later), first published in the *Allgemeine Geschichte in Einzeldarstellungen*, edited by W. ONCKEN. It is copiously illustrated with reproductions from the monuments, many of them in colour, and brings Egyptian history down to the Roman period; and, with the companion work of Prof. J. DUEMICHEN, *Geographie des alten Aegyptens: Schrift und Sprache seiner Bewohner*, which forms an introduction, constitutes a monument of German scholarship. Meyer’s *Geschichte des Alterthums*, Bd. I, covering the same ground, reached a 4th ed. in 1921. The *Geschichte Aegyptens von Psammetich I bis auf Alexander den Grossen* of Dr. A. WIEDEMANN (1880) is valuable for its critical handling of the sources of Egyptian

history, and its discussion of their value—a matter which calls for studious attention. The same author's *Aegyptische Geschichte* of 1884 is less authoritative.

§ 5. Materials for the history of Egypt in the Christian period have been compiled by M. AMÉLINEAU, under the title *Monuments pour servir à l'histoire de l'Égypte chrétienne au iv^e et v^e siècles*, being tome 17 of the *Annales du Musée Guimet*; and the new period is covered in vol. iv of Petrie's History, by S. LANE-POOLE. There is also a work on 'Christian Egypt, Past, Present, and Future,' by MONTAGUE FOWLER (Church Newspaper Co. 2nd ed. 1902); and the theme is specially treated by GIBBON and BOISSIER, and in the leading ecclesiastical histories—as those of MOSHEIM, GIESELER, NEANDER, BAUR and others named in Course VIII, §§ 12, 13, 15, 20.

§ 6. The mediæval and modern history of Egypt—that is, from the Mohammedan conquest onwards—is bound up with the history of the Saracens and of the Turks—which see. For the conquest see ALFRED JOSHUA BUTLER's 'The Arab Conquest of Egypt and the Last Thirty Years of the Roman Dominion' (Cl. Pr. 1902). The later period is dealt with in S. LANE-POOLE's 'History of Egypt in the Middle Ages' (1894)—vol. 6 of Petrie's History (§ 3); and in 'The Story of Cairo' by the same writer (Dent, 1902). 'Bonaparte in Egypt, and the Egyptians of To-day' by HAJI A. BROWNE (F.U. 1907) is a good account of the episode specified. On the rise of Modern Egypt we have 'The Beginnings of the Egyptian Question, and the Rise of Mehemet Ali,' with preface by A. J. Toynbee (Rout.). The latest Life of General Gordon, 'Gordon and the Soudan,' by Dr. B. M. ALLEN (Mac. 1931), elucidates a good deal of the history of his period of prominence; and the Hon. SIDNEY PEEL's 'Binding of the Nile and the New Soudan' (1905) sets out the beginnings of a new problem.

§ 7. On modern Egypt and its affairs may be consulted: A. A. PATON's 'History of the Egyptian Revolution' (1870); W. B. JERROLD's 'Egypt under Ismail Pacha' (1879); E. DE LÉON's 'Egypt under the Khedives' (Low, 1882); J. C. Mac-Coan's 'Egypt under Ismail' (C. & H. 1889); N. W. Senior's 'Conversations, etc., in Egypt' (Low, 2 v. 1882); 'The Egyptian Campaigns, 1882 and 1885' by CHARLES ROYLE (H. & B.); 'The New Egypt' by FRANCIS ADAMS (F.U. 1893); Lord MILNER's 'England in Egypt' (last ed. 1904); Sir AUCKLAND COLVIN's 'Making of Modern Egypt' (S.S. & Co. 1906)—a work of imperialistic bias; E. DICEY's 'Story of the Khedivate' (Riv. 1902); A. B. DE GUERVILLE's 'New Egypt' (Hei. 1906)—a book of social description and gossip; A. SILVA WHITE's 'The Expansion of

Egypt under the Anglo-Egyptian Condominium' (Met. 1899); H. F. WOOD's 'Egypt under the British' (C. & H. 1896); and the 'Secret History of the English Occupation of Egypt,' by WILFRID SCAWEN BLUNT (F.U. 1907). Lady DUFF GORDON's deeply interesting 'Letters from Egypt' (rev. ed. 1902) are still full of instruction.

Baedeker's 'Handbook of Egypt' and Sir WALLIS BUDGE's 'Cook's Handbook for Egypt and the Soudan' give much information; but E. W. LANE's 'Modern Egyptians' (5th ed. 1871, 2 v. Mur.; 1-v. ed. Ward) is the classic work on modern Egyptian life of the period before Europeanisation became systematic. F. BARHAM ZINCKE's 'Egypt of the Pharaohs and the Khedive' (1871 and later) is a meritorious study of the sociological possibilities of the race and country. Those making a retrospective study of the subject should consult such French works as *L'Égypte contemporaine et Arabi Pacha*, by N. SCOTIDIS (1888); *L'Égypte et ses provinces perdues*, by Col. CHAILLÉ-LONG BEY (1892); and *Choses Politiques en Égypte: 1893-1895*, by OCTAVE BORELLI; *L'Égypte nouvelle au point de vue économique et financier* of EDMOND THÉRY (1907); the *Situation économique et sociale du Fellah Égyptien*, by Dr. J. F. NAHAS (1901); the *Situation internationale de l'Égypte et du Soudan* of J. COCHERIS (1903); *La Transformation de l'Égypte*, by ALBERT MÉTIN (1903); and *La Question de l'Égypte*, by M. DE FREYCINET (1905). Questions of future policy were broached in 'The Emancipation of Europe,' by Z. (Hei. 1905).

§ 8. In the decade before the war there was much discussion on the problems arising from the British Protectorate under Lord CROMER, who as British Consul-General really ruled the country. His own account and vindication are given in his 'Modern Egypt' (Mac. 2 v. 1908), and in his endorsement and introduction to 'Egypt in Transition' by (Sir) SIDNEY LOW (Mac. 1914), a temperate statement of the case for England. In the same year with Cromer's book appeared (N.Y.) the hostile American work 'Egypt and its Betrayal,' by Dr. E. E. FARMAN, who had been U.S. Consul-General at Cairo; and the imperialistic 'Egypt and the English' of DOUGLAS SLADEN (H. & B. 1908: 40 good illustrns.). A variety of other works were critical in less degree than Farman's, though '*L'Achat des Actions de Suez*,' by CH. LÉSAGE (1906), was headed *L'Invasion anglaise en Égypte*.

The 'Letters from an Egyptian to an English Politician upon the Affairs of Egypt' (Rout. 1908) discuss competently the situation before Cromer's resignation, the Egyptian author paying high tribute to his financial administration. More pungent criticism was passed in some English books, as 'The Riddle of

Egypt' by (Mrs.) M. TRAVERS SYMONS (F. Palmer, 1913); and 'The New Spirit in Egypt' by H. HAMILTON FYFE (Bld. 1911). The 'Egypt of the Egyptians' of W. L. BALLS (Pit. 1915) is a liberal and competent picture of the social and political conditions. *La situation économique et financière de l'Égypte: Le Soudan Égyptien*, by Prof. PIERRE ARMINJON (Paris, 1911) is marked at once by expert knowledge and complete sanity of judgment.

§ 9. A new political situation was created at the very outset of the World War by the arbitrary deposition of the Khedive, Abbas II, at the hands of Lord Kitchener, to whom the British Government had given plenary powers of military and quasi-military action. This was described at the time as a course compelled by the Khedive's "adherence to the enemy," and the markedly hostile 'Abbas II' of LORD CROMER (Mac. 1915) sufficed for public opinion. What actually happened was not made known to the world till the publication in 1929 of 'The Dethronement of the Khedive' by the late A. H. BEAMAN (A. & U.). There had been no "adherence to the enemy"; and the deposed Khedive had later been offered a large sum on condition that he should abdicate—an admission that he was not "an enemy." His recent assent to the kingship of his second successor, King Fuad, was preceded by his small vol. 'A Few Words on the Anglo-Egyptian Settlement' (A. & U. 1929). Upon the adjustment with King Fuad, the ex-Khedive was for the first time since his deposition allowed to enter England. Early in 1932, an action brought by him against the London publishers of the work of the late Sir V. CHIROL on 'The Egyptian Problem' (Mac. 1920), in which he had been described as having "deserted his country," was settled by their apology and withdrawal.

§ 10. The commercial and financial conditions in latter-day Egypt are set forth annually in the papers issued by H.M. Stat. Office; and some political matters are discussed in others. The 'Egypt' of G. YOUNG in Benn's Modern World Series (1927) surveys the situation in general. See also the lecture of Sir W. HAYTER on 'Recent Constitutional Developments in Egypt' (C.U.P. 1924).

COURSE XIX

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

III.—PHœNICIA AND OTHER SEMITIC STATES

§ 1. A GOOD concise account of the history of Phœnicia is contributed by Prof. EDUARD MEYER to the *Encyclopædia Biblica*; and the subject is fully treated in sections of vols. ii and iii of the *Camb. Anc. Hist.* The sources, indeed, are very scanty, the only continuous ancient records being the fragments of Philo Byblius, the extracts from the Tyrian annals preserved in Josephus, and those of Timæus in Justin; together with the great *Corpus Inscriptionum Semiticarum* of RENAN (1864-74: rep. 1881). The various data, however, sufficed to fill a considerable 'History of Phœnicia' by Canon RAWLINSON (Lmns. 1889), which abounds in sociological interest, though of course not abreast of the latest investigations. The same writer did a more popular and less complete 'Phœnicia' for the S.N.S., which, with the 'Carthage and the Carthaginians' of R. Bosworth Smith (Lmns.), constitutes a fairly adequate short survey of the classically known history of Carthage for the general reader. There is a good summary sketch also in Prof. SAYCE's 'Ancient Empires of the East' (Mac.); and later results of archæological research were indicated in Miss MABEL MOORE's 'Carthage of the Phœnicians: in the light of modern excavations' (Hei. 1905). The 'Excavations at Carthage, 1925,' by F. W. KELSEY (Mac.), indicate the recent prosecution of research.

§ 2. The 'Phœnicia' of JOHN KENRICK (1855), though written before the modern discoveries of Phœnician remains, is still worth consulting for its careful classical scholarship. The great 17th c. work of BOCHART, *Chanaan*, remains indispensable to special students; but the once famous work of MOVERS, *Die Phönizier* (2 v. in 3, 1841-50), is now condemned by all the specialists. Later works of good repute in German are the *Geschichte der Karthager* of O. MELTZER (3 Bde. 1879-1913) and the *Geschichte der Phönizier* of R. PEITSCHMANN in ONCKEN's *Allgemeine Geschichte in Einzeldarstellungen* (1889).

More recently have appeared V. BÉRARD's *Les Phéniciens et l'Odyssée* and *Les Phéniciens* by C. AUTRAN (1920).

Phœnician history is covered more or less adequately in several of the general histories of antiquity specified in Course III, notably in the works of Duncker, Meyer, and Maspero; and there is a good survey in the third volume of GROTE's 'History of Greece.'

§ 3. Much interesting historical matter is to be drawn from the work of MM. PERROT and CHAPIEZ, 'Ancient Art in Phœnicia' (E. tr. 2 vols. C. & H.).

§ 4. The Phœnicians belonged to the race-group classed as Semites, and were ethnically connected with the Assyrian race as well as with the Hebrews and other Canaanites. For the history of the former, guidance will be found in Course XVII, and that of the Hebrews, which is chiefly studied in connection with their religion, is covered by Course VII. Of the minor Semitic peoples (we exclude the Arabs for separate treatment) little is known, but what can be traced has been industriously discussed. The early history of the race is mainly to be considered in connection with the languages; and on this line NÖLDEKE's article 'Semitic Languages' in the *Encyclopædia Britannica* is the best modern guide in English.

§ 5. A number of interesting and scholarly essays on Semitic subjects were published by M. J. HALÉVY under the title *Mélanges de critique et d'histoire relatifs aux peuples sémitiques* (1883). In German there are several treatises by specialists, the most notable being FLOIGEL's *Geschichte des semitischen Alterthums* (1882) and F. HOMMEL's series, entitled *Die semitischen Völker und Sprachen* (1881, etc.), which includes studies on *Die vorsemitischen Kulturen in Aegypten und Babylonien* (1883) and *Die Semiten und ihre Bedeutung für die Kulturgeschichte* (1881). The latter includes a noteworthy map showing the distribution of the Semitic peoples at different periods, and their final almost complete disappearance as separate nations. Other monographs worth noting are A. T. CLAY's 'The Empire of the Amorites' (New Haven, U.S. 1919); W. B. FLEMING's 'History of Tyre' (N.Y. 1915); F. M. T. Böhl's *Kanaanäer und Hebräer* (1911); and NÖLDEKE's *Ueber die Amalekiter und einige andere Nachbarvölker der Israeliten* (1864). There is also an English monograph on 'The Philistines, their History and Civilization,' by Prof. R. A. S. MACALISTER of Dublin (Schweich Lectures, 1911: O.U.P. 1914), in which the learning is overruled by Biblical orthodoxy.

§ 6. The history of the Jews is so bound up with that of their religion, that it is chiefly to be studied, as aforesaid, under the heading of Course VII. It may, however, be followed as history proper in some of the modern World Histories which

reject the traditional attitude ; and in the chapters by Dr. S. A. Cook on Judah and Israel in vols. ii and iii of the *Camb. Anc. Hist.* On the modern position of the Jews as a race there are many volumes in different languages. From these may be singled out, as a comparatively scientific study, *Les Sémites et le Sémitisme aux points de vue ethnologique, religieux, et politique*, by E. GELLION-DANGLAR (1882). The 'Palestine' of Dr. S. H. RAPPOPORT (A. & U. 1931) is the first book to treat the history of that country as a whole ; and A. M. HYAMSON, author of a good 'History of the Jews in England' (Met. 1928), in his 'Palestine, Old and New' (Met. 1928) supplies much detail, with 28 illustrns. and maps. For the post-War period may further be consulted W. B. WORSFOLD's 'Palestine of the Mandate' (F.U. 1925, with 30 illustrns.).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

IV.—GREECE: ANCIENT AND MODERN

THE case of Greece is the first in which we possess for the study of political life a mass of ancient written history, strictly so called. It is in the literature of Greece that the comprehensive writing of political history begins. Those who desire to get any vivid idea of Greek history will naturally take up the ancient writers themselves; but it is doubtful whether these can be read to the best advantage before a study of modern writers, whose works will give, to begin with, a general survey of the known movement of Greek history, in the light of which the ancients can be best comprehended. As the discovery of ancient remains goes on, the whole question of Greek origins is more and more completely reopened.

§ 1. The emergence of the Greeks in the ancient world may be realised in the historic setting from the earlier chapters of vol. ii of the *Camb. Anc. Hist.* (C.U.P.) or from 'The Early Age of Greece' by the late Sir W. RIDGEWAY (C.U.P. 2 v. 1932 : vol. ii ed. by A. S. F. Gow and D. S. Robertson). 'Minoans, Philistines, and Greeks,' by A. R. BURN (Rout. 1930), is a helpful work of synthesis, connecting the races named in the period 1400 to 900 B.C.; H. R. HALL's 'The Ancient History of the Near East' (Met. 5th ed. 1920) has similar value; and 'The Formation of the Greek People' by Prof. A. JARDÉ (E. tr. K.P.) is an expert study of the ground. H. R. HALL's 'The Oldest Civilisation of Greece' (Nutt 1901) deals with the Mycenæans. See also his 'Civilisation of Greece in the Bronze Age' (Met.) and 'The Ægean Civilisation' by Prof. G. GLOTZ (E. tr. K.P.). The theme is naturally considered in the later general histories of Greece, named below; and in the earlier works of K. O. Müller, Grote, Thirlwall, and others. The recent treatise on 'The Mycenæan Origin of Greek Mythology' by Professor M. P. NILSSON of Calif. Univ. (C.U.P. 1932) has historical significance; and J. L. MYRES's 'Who were the Greeks?' (U. of Cal. 1927) is a good general inquiry.

Of critical importance for the study of Cretan antiquities is 'A Clue to the Cretan Scripts' by F. MELIAN STAWELL (Bell, 1931). A fascinating presentment of the Cretan remains had been previously supplied in 'The Discoveries in Crete,' by Prof. RONALD M. BURROWS (Mur. 1907).

The various branches of the Greek stock have been separately studied by special researchers, whose works are indicated in the C.A.H. bibliographies. One notably interesting monograph is that of Prof. W. RHYS ROBERTS on 'The Ancient Bœotians: their Character and Culture' (C.U.P. 1895).

§ 2. An excellent compendious 'History of Greece to the Death of Alexander the Great,' abreast of all the scholarship of the time, was supplied by the late Prof. J. B. BURY (Mac. 2nd ed. 1924). Another scholarly history of standard status is the older 'History of Greece' by Dr. EVELYN ABBOTT (Lmns. 3 v. 3rd impr. 1911). This work was "intended for readers who are acquainted with the outlines of the subject, and have some knowledge of the Greek language"; but the latter detail need not repel the ordinary reader. The work is that of a competent scholar, and is of no unwieldy bulk. Outlines are supplied in the same author's 'Skeleton Outline of Greek History: Chronologically arranged' (same); and C. A. Fyffe's primer 'Greece' (Mac.) is a very judicious general sketch. The 'Greeks and Barbarians' of J. A. K. THOMSON (A. & U.) is a notable monograph.

A good 'History of Greece' in short compass is that of C. W. C. Oman (Riv.). Were it not for the production of such works as those of Dr. Abbott and Prof. Bury, which include later archæological results, a high recommendation would be due to that of the Rev. Sir G. W. Cox, first published as 'A History of Greece' (Lmns. 2 v. 1874), covering the ground to the close of the Peloponnesian War, with the promise of a third volume, which never separately appeared. The same work, with a new section bringing it down to the death of Alexander, and a sketch of later Greek history, was republished as 'A General History of Greece' (same, 2nd ed. 1877 in 1 v. with other curtailments). It is written with much energy, and exhibits no little critical power.

§ 3. The scholarly 'History of Greece' produced by Bishop THIRLWALL (1830, etc.; 8 v.; 2nd ed. 1848-52, 8 v., little altered, but with more notes), still holds a high place in the opinion of scholarly critics, and would have been the standard English history but for the appearance soon after it of the great work of Grote. Another work of the first half of the last century which reflects very high credit on English scholarship is the great *Fasti Hellenici* of HENRY FYNES CLINTON (3 v. 4to), of which Prof. Mahaffy testified that it gives "the materials

for the fullest possible history, with all its offshoots . . . arranged and tabulated with a patience and care to which I know no parallel." The *Epitome* (Oxford, 1851) is also useful in its degree. With this should be classed as giving important later discoveries the 'Manual of Greek Historical Inscriptions' of E. L. HICKS and G. F. HILL (Cl. Pr. rev. ed. 1901). By general consent the most important work yet produced on Greek history is still the great 'History of Greece,' by GEORGE GROTE (current ed. Mur. 10 v.). Of this an abridgment in 1 vol., with fresh notes and appendices, has been produced by two Oxford scholars, Messrs. Mitchell and Caspari (Rout.). This is convenient in many regards; but the student should note that in gainsaying the "prejudices" of Grote the editors did but substitute current prejudices of academic Oxford at their date. Grote's treatment of the legendary period is still well worth study, in the full text.

§ 4. Of copious and able histories of Greece by foreign writers there are many. That of Prof. ERNST CURTIUS (E. tr. by Prof. Ward, 5 v. 1868-73), though bulky, is "designed for popular use," and has great if not classic merit, though too early to profit by the discoveries of Schliemann and his successors. The section on Greece in MAX DUNCKER's 'History of Antiquity' (E. tr. 1886, 2 v.) has sociological merit, but is in some measure superseded by the Greek sections of the later *Geschichte des Alterthums* of EDUARD MEYER (5 Bde. 1884-1902 and later)—not trans. The rewritten 'History of Greece' of Prof. DURUY, published in an *édition de luxe* in E. tr. (K.P. 1892, 4 v. in 8: only 250 copies printed), with its maps and hundreds of engravings, constitutes a rich repertory of Greek archæology as well as a vivacious and scholarly history. Prof. Mahaffy contributed a good Critical Introduction, discussing previous historians, which is reprinted in his 'Problems of Greek History' (Mac. 1892), a set of treatises well worth perusal. The *Geschichte der Griechen im Altertum* of Prof. G. F. HERTZBERG (in the *Allgemeine Weltgeschichte* of Flathe and coll., 1885, etc.) is another valuable work, copiously illustrated. It is a reissue, with some alterations and more numerous illustrations, of the Greek volume of his *Geschichte Hellas und Rom*, in the *Allgemeine Geschichte in Einzeldarstellungen*, edited by Oncken. This is made available to English readers in vols. iii-v of the 'History of all Nations' ed. by J. H. Wright (Course III, § 3).

§ 5. Among the later German histories of Greece the *Griechische Geschichte vom ihrem Ursprunge bis zum Untergange der Selbständigkeit des griechischen Volkes* of ADOLF HOLM (3 Bde. 1886-91, E. tr. Mac. 4 v. 1894-98) is at once complete

and compendious, presenting the results of critical study in the text with a condensed apparatus of references in appendices to the chapters, and useful alike to scholars and ordinary readers. Specially authoritative is the work of Prof. GEORG BUSOLT, *Griechische Geschichte bis zur Schlacht bei Chaironeia* (3 Bde. 1892-1903), an eminently able and learned work, of which the second ed. of vols. i and ii (1892) deals freshly with archaeological issues. It is specially valuable for its abundant citation of authorities. Close upon it came the esteemed *Griechische Geschichte* of JULIUS BELOCH (3 Bde. 1893-1904).

Of special utility in one respect is the 'Histoire des Grecs' of Dr. Louis MENARD (1886, 2 t. Delagrave), which contains, besides maps, a number of reproductions from the monuments, coins, etc., and thus gives the student at a very moderate cost archaeological aids which are otherwise only to be found in separate treatises or in the costly illustrated histories. It has also considerable merit as a history.

§ 6. Most histories of Greece end with either the beginning of the Macedonian rule or the Roman conquest. But 'Hellenistic Athens,' by Prof. W. S. FERGUSON (Mac. 1911), helpfully bridges the division; and 'The Hellenistic Age,' a collection of essays by BURY and others (C.U.P. 1923), is widely interesting. The history of the people under Rome has been made the subject of special works, of which Prof. MAHAFFY's 'The Greek World under Roman Sway' (Mac. 1890), recast as 'The Silver Age of the Greek World' (F.U. 1906), will be most readily turned to by English readers. It is a valuable study, but may best be regarded as a volume of culture-history in his series dealing with Greek life, after-mentioned. The strict history of Greece under the Romans has been written by the German scholar G. F. HERTZBERG, in *Die Geschichte Griechenlands unter der Herrschaft der Römer* (3 Bde. 1866-75), trans. into French (3 t. 1886-90), but not into English. The history of Greece under the Romans is, as Prof. Mahaffy remarked, "a mere fraction of the history of later Hellenism," but Hertzberg's work is considerably more laborious than Mahaffy's. B. NIESE produced an elaborate *Geschichte der griechischen und makedonischen Staaten* (3 Th. 1893-1903—in the *Handbücher der alten Geschichte*). The *Geschichte des Hellenismus* of J. G. DROYSEN (2te Aufl. 1877-78; 6 Bde.) is an authoritative history of the period of Alexander the Great and his successors. Like so many other important German works, it has been trans. into French (3 t. 1883-85), but not into English. Later recovered archaeological material, however, is embodied in the *Geschichte des hellenistischen Zeitalters* (Bd. i, *Die Grundlegung des Hellenismus*, 1901) of Dr. JULIUS KAERST.

Scholarly competence characterises, too, 'The House of Seleucus,' by E. R. BEVAN (Arnold, 1902).

§ 7. There are some convenient surveys in short compass of sections of Greek history in the 'Epochs of Ancient History' series (Lmns.) of the last generation. Sir G. W. COX's 'Athenian Empire' and 'The Greeks and the Persians,' A. M. CURTEIS's 'Rise of the Macedonian Empire,' and G. SANKEY's 'Spartan and Theban Supremacies,' are all readable and competent summaries. Among good later monographs on a larger scale are G. B. GRUNDY's on 'The Great Persian War' (Cl. Pr. 1901) and F. H. MARSHALL's on 'The Second Athenian Confederacy' (C.U.P. 1905). L. WHIBLEY's 'Political Parties in the Peloponnesian War' is very helpful (same); and his Hare Prize Essay, 'Greek Oligarchies: Their Character and Organisation' (Met. 1896), is entitled to the highest praise for its learning, insight, and judgment. Light is given, too, by the essay of J. W. HEADLAM on 'Election by Lot at Athens' (C.U.P. 1891).

An able though somewhat cursory survey of the fortunes of the Macedonian Empire was made by Prof. MAHAFFY under the title 'Alexander's Empire' (S.N.S.). Of Alexander there are fuller studies by B. J. WHEELER, 'Alexander the Great' (Heroes ser. Put. 1900), and by T. A. DODGE, 'Great Captains: Alexander' (Boston, 1890). The most scholarly of English books on that period, however, is the 'Philip and Alexander of Macedonia' of D. G. HOGARTH (Mur. 1897). Prof. Mahaffy, further, produced a comprehensive history of 'The Empire of the Ptolemies' (Mac. 1895).

Learned German monographs on Greek periods and episodes are very numerous. Among the later and most important may be noted the *Aristoteles und Athen* (Berlin, 1893) of Prof. von WILAMOWITZ-MOELLENDORFF; A. SCHAEFFER's *Demosthenes und seine Zeit* (Leipzig, 2te Aufl. 1885); and EDUARD MEYER's *Forschungen zur alten Geschichte* (Halle, 2 Bde. 1892-99).

§ 8. The main written sources for ancient Greek history are the works of HERODOTUS, THUCYDIDES, ARISTOTLE, XENOPHON, POLYBIUS, PLUTARCH, PAUSANIAS, and ARRIAN. All are available in English trans. Herodotus, Thucydides, Xenophon, and Plutarch's 'Lives' are to be had in more or less good versions in the B.L., as well as in older editions; and they may be intelligently approached through Prof. BURY's Harvard Lecture on 'The Ancient Greek Historians' (Mac. 1909). Herodotus, who should be read by all interested in ancient history, has been trans. with copious notes and illustrations in the 4-v. ed. of the Rawlinsons and Gardner (Mur. 1875); but his treatment of Eastern affairs should be studied in the later light of Prof. SAYCE's 'Ancient

Empires of the East' (1884), first printed as commentary with his edition of the first three books (Mac.). Sayce's preface, dwelling on the untrustworthiness of Herodotus, especially as regards Egypt and the East, should be set against the reiterated praise of Herodotus as beside Thucydides by Mahaffy. Thucydides is to be critically studied through the 'Thucydides Myth-historicus' of Prof. F. M. CORNFORD (Arnold, 1907), and 'Thucydides and the History of his Age' by Dr. G. B. GRUNDY (Mur. 1911). The best English tr. of Herodotus is perhaps that of G. C. Macaulay (Mac. 2 v. 1890), but Cary's (B.L.) is good. Of Thucydides the best trans. is that of Prof. Jowett (Cl. Pr. 2 v.); but the version of Hobbes (rev. Oxford, 1830) is strong and impressive. Polybius, of whose highly important history only the version of Hampton was formerly available in English, has been rendered very competently by E. S. Shuckburgh (Mac. 1889, 2 v.), as Xenophon has been by H. G. Dakyns (Mac. 1890-1901: 4 v.). Mr. CAPES's 'History of the Achaian League from Polybius' (Mac. 1888) is separately useful.

The best rendering of Plutarch's 'Lives' is that of George Long (B.L. 4 v.). Clough's scholarly revision of the 18th-c. trans. (Low) can be had in 5-vol. and 1-vol. editions. ARRIAN'S 'Anabasis of Alexander' has been very carefully trans. by E. J. Chinnock (H. & S. 1884), with useful annotations. He does not, however, add the *Indica*, which may be found in the old trans. by Rooke (rev. ed. in 1 v. 1812); and in the work of J. W. McCrindle, 'The Invasion of India as Described by Arrian' (Con. 1896). PAUSANIAS' 'Description of Greece' (Course V, § 11) is in the B.L. As to ARISTOTLE'S 'Politics' see Course XIV, § 3. There is a good trans. with notes by E. Walford in the B.L. The rediscovered fragment on the 'Constitution of Athens,' attributed to Aristotle, has been trans. by T. J. Dymes (S. S. & Co. 1891) and competently edited by J. E. Sandys (Mac. 1893). As to its authenticity, see MAHAFFY'S 'Problems in Greek History,' pp. 128-9, and WARDE FOWLER'S 'City State' (mentioned below).

§ 9. One of the German cyclopædias of Greek antiquities of the last c., Prof. G. F. SCHOMANN'S *Griechische Alterthümer*, was rep. (1871-73: 2 Bde.); and vol. i was tr. in English, 'The Antiquities of Greece: the State' (Riv. 1880), but not vol. ii. The larger portion appeared in French (2 t. 1884-85). It is of value as a study of political institutions. B. Bosanquet's trans. of the same author's essay, 'Athenian Constitutional History' (1878), is worth reading for its criticism of Grote. The encyclopædic *Handbuch der Klassischen Altertumswissenschaft*, produced in the last generation, is the most comprehensive collection of its

kind. A French monograph of recognised value is *Les institutions sociales et le droit civil à Sparte* by CLAUDIO JANNET (2e éd. 1880), a complete view of what is known of the Spartan constitution; and the results of modern research into Greek institutions were competently presented in *Les institutions de la Grèce antique* of Prof. ROBIOU (1882, and later). There is a trans., further, of GUSTAV GILBERT'S 'Constitutional Antiquities of Sparta and Athens' (Son. 1895). In this connection should be noted 'The Parthenon Frieze, and other Essays' by the late THOMAS DAVIDSON (K.P. 1882), a collection of papers marked by much learning and originality. E. A. GARDNER'S 'Ancient Athens' (illustr. Mac. 1903 and later) gives many elucidations of archaeological research. Among older German monographs, that on 'The Public Economy of Athens,' by A. БОЕСКЕ (Eng. trans. by Sir G. C. Lewis, 1828; better version by A. Lamb, Boston, 1857), has been re-edited in Germany (1885).

§ 10. The culture-history of ancient Greece is of course largely treated of in the longer histories above mentioned. No decisive history of Greek civilisation has yet been written, doubtless because the necessary sociological capacity is so seldom combined with the necessary special knowledge; but a notable effort in that direction is the massive and original work of JAKOB BURCKHARDT, *Griechische Culturgeschichte*, posthumously published (3 Bde. 1898-1900). Prof. L. ROBIN'S 'Greek Thought and the Origins of the Scientific Spirit' (E. tr. K.P.) is a notable production of recent years. Thirlwall, Grote, Curtius, Duruy, and Duncker, however, all throw light on the problem; and Prof. MAHAFFY has dealt both brightly and learnedly, if unscientifically, with some of its phases in his series of volumes:—'Social Life in Ancient Greece,' 'Greek Life and Thought from the Age of Alexander to the Roman Conquest' (1887), 'The Greek World under Roman Sway' (1890: all Mac.); the last recast as 'The Silver Age of the Greek World' (F.U. 1906); and 'Problems in Greek History' (Mac. 1892). His little history primer of 'Greek Antiquities' (Mac.) puts a great deal of information in small space. A study of Greek social origins, the essay on 'The Structure of Greek Tribal Society' by H. E. SEEBOHM (Mac. 1895), has the advantages of modern scientific initiative; and the 'Handbook of Greek Constitutional History' by Dr. A. H. J. GREENIDGE (Cl. Pr. 1896) is worth keeping at hand.

The special problem of the Greek City State, handled by FUSTEL DE COULANGES and W. WARDE FOWLER (Course III, § 6), is newly treated in Prof. G. GLOTZ'S 'The Greek City and its Institutions' (K.P.). Prof. A. J. Grant's 'Greece in the Age of Pericles' (Mur. 1893: U.E.M.) is a work of great value. The

volume of essays by various writers, entitled 'Hellenica,' edited by Dr. Abbott (Riv. 1880), has interest in this connection. 'Life in Ancient Athens: The Social and Public Life of a Classical Athenian from Day to Day,' by Prof. T. G. TUCKER (Mac.), is a fresh and scholarly performance, suggested by the older Guhl and Koner's 'Life of the Greeks and Romans,' which is accessible in trans. (C. & W.), and constitutes a repertory of exact information on ancient life; though it lacks the material accumulated by modern research since Schliemann. Special studies of the growth of Greek law (in which Grote saw a basis or motive for the development of drama) have been made by R. J. BONNER of Chicago, 'Lawyers and Litigants in Ancient Athens,' and Prof. G. M. CALHOUN of Calif. Univ., 'The Growth of Criminal Law in Ancient Athens' (both C.U.P. 1927).

§ 11. The *magnum opus* of the late Prof. J. B. BURY (who best edited Gibbon, the first to handle the theme with power) was the history of the Eastern, commonly called the Byzantine Empire, first in his brilliant 'History of the Later Roman Empire from Arcadius to Irene, A.D. 375-800' (Mac. 2 v. 1889); and in the later extension 'from the death of Theodosius I to the death of Justinian' (Mac. 2 v. 1923)—the most exact history of that field yet produced. There is, however, a good studious research for one important period, 'The Age of Justinian and Theodora,' by W. G. HOLMES (Bell, 2 v. 2nd ed. rev. 1912). Greek history under the Byzantine Empire, and down to modern times, had been previously, and in many respects ably, written by the late GEORGE FINLAY in his 'History of Greece from its Conquest by the Romans to the Present Time' (rev. enlarged and partly re-written ed., by H. F. Tozer, Cl. Pr. 7 v.).

The fall of the Empire is competently studied in 'The Destruction of the Greek Empire and the Capture of Constantinople by the Turks,' by EDWIN PEARS (Lmns. 1885). A convenient History of Byzantium in small compass is that of Prof. Oman (S.N.S.); and for the medieval period there is FREDERIC HARRISON'S Rede Lecture, 'Byzantine History in the Early Middle Ages' (Mac. 1900). The *Byzance: Grandeur et Décadence* of Prof. CHARLES DIEHL (1919) is the work of the chief French expert of his day in this field; and his *Figures Byzantines* (2 ser. 1906-18) further embody a mass of historic matter.

Of foreign histories the most important are Prof. HERTZBERG'S *Geschichte Griechenlands seit dem Absterben des antiken Lebens bis zur Gegenwart* (4 Bde. 1876-9); the same scholar's *Geschichte der Byzantiner und des Osmanischen Reiches bis gegen Ende*

des sechszehnten Jahrhunderts in ONCKEN's illustrated *Allgemeine Geschichte* (Berlin, 1883); the posthumous *Byzantinische Geschichten* of A. F. GFRÖRER, expanded and edited by Prof. J. B. WEISS (1872-4; 2 Bde.); and the valuable *Geschichte der Stadt Athen im Mittelalter* of FERDINAND GREGOROVIVS (1889, 2 Bde.). In Prof. MAHAFFY'S 'Rambles and Studies in Greece' (4th ed. 1892) will be found a chapter on medieval Greece, as well as much interesting matter on ancient and modern Greek conditions. Monographs on the earlier emperors who ruled from Constantinople are specified in the next Course.

§ 12. The general history of modern excavation of Greek remains is only briefly to be indicated here. Since Dr. SCHLIE-MANN published his 'Ilios: Researches on the Site of Troy,' 'Mycenae,' 'Tiryns,' and 'Troja: latest researches' (E. trs. 1880, 1878, 1886, 1884), there has been almost continuous activity, resulting in handsome and costly publications, such as the 'Antiquities of Ionia' published by the Dilettanti Society (5 Parts: Mac.); the important series produced by Sir ARTHUR EVANS, 'The Palace of Minos' (Mac. 3 v.); the Publications of the Hellenic Society, including the 'Excavations at Megalopolis: 1890-91,' by E. A. GARDNER and others; the 'Excavations at Phylakopi in Melos' by D. G. HOGARTH and others; and 'The Sanctuary of Artemis Orthia at Sparta,' ed. by R. M. DAWKINS (all Mac.).

The extensive bibliography of the subject is best to be followed in the vols. of the Cambridge Ancient History. For the general reader, 'Athens and its Monuments,' by C. H. WELLER (Mac.); 'The Acropolis of Athens' by Prof. M. L. D'OUGE (Mac. 1908); the 'Historical Greek Coins' of G. F. HILL of the British Museum (Con. 1906); and the works of Miss JANE HARRISON (Course V), will supply stimulus.

§ 13. Strictly modern Greek history may be taken as opening with the War of Independence; and is covered by 'Modern Greece: A Chronicle and a Survey: 1800-1931' by JOHN MAVROGORDATO (Mac. 1931), which is a competent and compendious record. The earlier 'Greece in the Nineteenth Century' by LEWIS SERGEANT (F.U. 1897, with map and 24 illustrns.) has likewise merit. EDMOND ABOUT's earlier book, *La Grèce contemporaine* (E. tr. about 1856), is bright and interesting, but not very just. Later and more sympathetic expositions are those of Prof. Jebb, in his 'Modern Greece: Two Lectures' (Mac. 1880); of LEWIS SERGEANT in his 'New Greece' (Cas.); and of M. LÉON HUGONNET, in his *La Grèce nouvelle: L'Hellénisme, son évolution et son avenir* (Paris, 1884). 'A History of

the Greek People : 1821-1921 ' by Dr. W. MILLER (Met. 1922 : with intr. by G. P. Gooch) is a good conspectus of the modern history. Greece's share in the World War is noted in Course L.

§ 14. The 'Handbook of Cyprus,' by Sir R. STORRS and B. J. O'BRIEN (Christopher, 1931) is a good guide. Of special value is the '*Excerpta Cypria* : Materials for a History of Cyprus' (C.U.P. 1908) by C. D. COBHAM, C.M.G., consisting of over 80 extracts from ancient and modern writers, which, with the author's Bibliography of Cyprus (Nicosia, 4th ed. 1900) and his edition of the old 'Travels in the Island of Cyprus' (1760-67) by G. MARITI (2nd ed. C.U.P. 1909) supplies a solid ground for study.

Cyprus has been made the subject of a good deal of special attention. Among the most interesting books dealing with it are the *Monuments antiques de Chypre* of G. COLONNA CECCALDI (Paris, 1882); the *Chronique de l'île de Chypre au moyen-âge* (1902) of ALEXANDRE BÉRARD; the work of the same title by F. BUSTRON (1886); and FRANZ VON LÖHER'S *Cyperm* (1878)—adapted, with much new matter, by Mrs. A. BATSON JOYNER in 'Cyprus, Historical and Descriptive' (1878). There is also a 'History of the Orthodox Church of Cyprus,' by the Rev. JOHN HACKETT (Met. 1901); and an account of 'Cyprus under British Rule,' by G. CHACALLI (Nicosia, 1902).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

V.—ROME (ANCIENT)

§ 1. THE rise and fall of the ancient Roman State, though involved in the total history of Italy, constitutes a specific history, of which the scope extends far beyond the Italian peninsula, and is for many reasons to be studied as a separate whole, considered as growing out of the prehistoric life of the Italic peoples, and ending with the downfall of the Western Empire in the fifth century. Every reader sets out with some ideas on the subject; but those who wish, on a slight basis, to extend and systematise their knowledge may begin with the little primer of the late Bishop **Creighton**, '**Rome**' (Mac.), and should keep by them some such bird's-eye view as the '**Skeleton Outline of Roman History**,' chronologically arranged, of P. E. **MATHESON** (Riv.). After perusal of such a short survey of Roman beginnings as the '**Early Rome**' of Prof. **Ihne** (Lmns.), a good if not very animated survey, the reader may profitably turn to the '**Outlines of Roman History**' of Prof. **Pelham** (Per. 1893). This may be taken as a highly competent condensed account of the results of modern investigation. Another good compendium is the old '**History of the Romans**' of **R. F. Horton** (Riv. 1885). This covers the ground from the legendary period to the establishment of the empire by Augustus, and is accompanied by several good maps.

§ 2. The short general histories of Merivale and Liddell have their merits; but Pelham's is the more interesting in virtue of its broad sociological treatment. A somewhat fuller study of the pre-Imperial period is made in the lucid, exact, and attractive '**History of Rome to the Battle of Actium**,' by E. S. **SHUCKBURGH** (Mac. 1894). For a long time previously English scholarship had been divided over the theories of Niebuhr, operating on tradition, which led to no agreed result; and the method of Mommsen supplied what was regarded as a sounder standpoint. A fresh interest was, however, given to the problem of "the beginnings" by the essays of **ETTORE PAÏS** on '**Ancient Legends of Roman History**' (E. tr. Son. 1906); and '**Primitive Italy**,

and the Beginnings of Roman Imperialism,' by Prof. LEON HOMO of Lyons (E. tr. K.P.), may be taken as a sound working basis. Of the ultimate empire a good general picture is given in 'The Roman World,' by Prof. V. CHAPET (E. tr. K.P.); and vol. vii of the Camb. Anc. Hist., which covers 'The Hellenistic Monarchies,' reaches 'The Rise of Rome' (C.U.P.).

On the whole, MOMMSEN'S 'History of Rome' (E. tr. by Dickson; rev. ed. 5 v. Mac.—rep. in Ev. Lib.), which does not include 'The Provinces of the Roman Empire' (rev. ed. by Prof. Haverfield, 2 v. Mac.), is nearly as much open as Niebuhr's to the charge of arbitrariness in the matter of narrative, and rather more so in the matter of sociological criticism. His attitude may be generalised by the terms "Caesarism" and "Bismarckism." It is, however, one of the most considerable historical works of modern times, and must be reckoned with by those who desire to study Roman history thoroughly. The *Építome* in 1 v., designed for the use of schools, has necessarily more of the demerits than of the merits of the original. Mommsen may profitably be checked by the writings of Prof. WILHELM IHNE, whose 'History of Rome' (Eng. ed. by the author, 1871-82, 5 v.) is a learned, trustworthy, and judicial narrative, and supplies a considerable amount of real explanation of the course of Roman history, though not in a scientific spirit. There is original value also in the German 'History of the Romans' of G. F. HERTZBERG (tr. in vols. 3-5 of the 'History of all Nations': Course III, § 3). Perhaps the best general history of Rome in English is the trans. of the great French work of DURUY under the editorship of Prof. Mahaffy (6 v. 4to, 1883-86), which is a splendid repertory of archæological and other illustrations, as well as an excellent literary performance, more animated than Ihne's, and more just than Mommsen's. Like Ihne's, and unlike Mommsen's, it gives copious references.

There is, however, scholarly and critical value in 'The Roman Republic,' by W. E. HEITLAND (C.U.P. 3 v. 1909) and in his 'Short History of the Roman People,' 'The Roman Fate,' 'Iterum,' and 'Last Words on the Roman Municipalities' (same). An important history was begun but left unfinished by the late Dr. A. H. J. GREENIDGE, under the title 'A History of Rome: During the Later Republic and the Early Principate' (Met. vol. i. 1904). The vol. actually produced is of great value for its period.

§ 3. The state of the long-debated problem as to the settlement in Etruria of the "Etruscan" stock is still to be pronounced (as in vol. ii of the C.A.H. p. 11) uncertain. Up-to-date books are:—M. A. JOHNSTONE, 'Etruria, Past and Present' (Met.

1930) and D. RANDALL-MACIVER, 'The Etruscans' (O.U.P. 1927).

The difficult problems as to the origins of the Etruscan language and race were discussed in the comprehensive German work of CORSSEN, *Die Sprache der Etrusker* (1874-5). This again was followed by the works of DEECKE, *Corssen und die Sprache der Etrusker* (1875) and *Etruscische Forschungen* (1876). The early work of K. O. MÜLLER (1828), entitled *Die Etrusker*, was found deserving of re-issue (Stuttgart, 1877); as was the standard work of GEORGE DENNIS, 'The Cities and Cemeteries of Etruria' (Mur. 2 v.). The general problem was dealt with by Dr. ISAAC TAYLOR in his 'Etruscan Researches' (1874); but as to his views compare the strictures in the 'Etruscan Bologna' of Sir RICHARD BURTON (1876), which contains some interesting archæological details, as does the old 'Tour of the Sepulchres of Etruria,' by Mrs. HAMILTON GRAY (2nd ed. 1841), which has some noteworthy coloured illustrations. The general reader, however, will find Etruscan matters, and other questions of Italian race-origins, sufficiently dealt with in the leading histories of Rome. For the fullest ethnological inquiries, apart from Corssen and Deecke, see the works specified in § 1 of the next Course.

§ 4. Works dealing with portions of Roman history are abundant. In addition to the above-mentioned manual of Prof. Ihne on 'Early Rome,' Longmans' 'Epochs' series includes other able and reliable period surveys—viz. 'Rome and Carthage,' by R. Bosworth Smith; 'The Gracchi, Marius, and Sulla,' by A. H. Beesly; 'The Roman Triumvirates,' by Dean Merivale; and 'The Early Roman Empire' and 'The Roman Empire of the Second Century' (otherwise 'The Age of Trajan and the Antonines'), by the Rev. W. W. Capes. MICHELET's 'History of the Roman Republic' (E. tr. B.L.) is more brilliant than weighty, but is well calculated to rouse an interest in Roman history. The English trans. is unsatisfactory. One of the most interesting works in English on a period of Roman history is 'The Fall of the Roman Republic,' by Dean Merivale (Lmns.), which is specially worth study as showing the social causes of the decline. The same period is treated with great industry, fullness, and minuteness, though with little attractiveness, in 'The Decline and Fall of the Roman Republic,' by GEORGE LONG (Bell, 1864-74, 5 v.). There is an exact and scholarly work on 'Roman Africa: An Outline of the History of the Roman Occupation of North Africa,' by ALEX. GRAHAM (Lmns. 1902), and an expert monograph by A. AUDOLLENT, *Carthage romaine* (Athens, 1901).

§ 5. Every student of later Roman history must turn to the

great work of GIBBON, the 'History of the Decline and Fall of the Roman Empire,' which, after a century of study and criticism, remains an acknowledged monument of scholarship and judgment. No history yet written can compare with it for breadth of range, and few for sagacity of interpretation. Of the older editions the best annotated is that in the B.L.; the standard edition is now that of Prof. Bury (Met. 7 v.). The ablest modern work on the same theme is Prof. G. FERRERO'S 'The Greatness and Decline of Rome' (E. tr. by Zimmern and Chaytor: Hei. 5 v. 1907-9). This indeed needs revision as to its economics, but must be ranked as the most powerful treatment of the subject since Gibbon. It gives references, up to its date, to the chief works of exact and of speculative scholarship.

For the Imperial period the largest English history is Dean MERIVALE'S 'History of the Romans under the Empire' (Lmns. 8 v.), which, save for its diffuseness, has all the literary merit of his shorter work, but less sociological value. There are two leading German histories of the Imperial period, the *Geschichte des römischen Kaiserreichs* of Prof. G. F. HERTZBERG, in the great *Allgemeine Geschichte*, edited by Oncken (1880, with many illustrns.), which comes down to the close of the Western Empire, and the *Geschichte der römischen Kaiserzeit* of HERMANN SCHILLER (2 Bde. 1883), of which the second volume comes down to the accession of Diocletian. The latter is specially important to students in respect of its copious references. The admirable 'History of the Later Roman Empire' of Prof. BURY (Course XX, § 11) mainly deals with what is commonly known as Byzantine history, but on that side deals with the Empire more fully and exactly than Gibbon could.

§ 6. Among the multitude of monographs on figures in Roman history, works on the reigns of particular emperors have perhaps the greatest general interest. Of these there are many, chiefly in French and German. FROUDE'S 'Cæsar: A Sketch' (Lmns.) is well known for its brilliance, its Carlylese standpoint, and its frequent inaccuracy. The work compiled by or for the late Emperor Napoleon is better in some respects; and the continuation of that by Colonel STOFFEL, *Histoire de César: Guerre Civile* (1887; 2 t. 4to), is a careful military study. In *Les gestes de Dieu Auguste d'après l'inscription du Temple d'Ancyre* (Vienne, 1889) A. ALLMER gives solid documentary matter. Mr. Shuckburgh has done an 'Augustus' (F.U. 1903); and there is a study on 'Tiberius the Tyrant' by J. C. TARVER (Con. 1902). Augustus has been elaborately treated in the *Augustus und seine Zeit* of V. GARDTHAUSEN (2 Bde. 1891-1904). Of Tiberius also

there is a good but somewhat heavy German study by ADOLF STAHR, *Tiberius: Leben, Regierung, Charakter* (rep. 1885).

In English there is the excellent short sketch of Prof. E. S. Beesly in his '*Catiline, Clodius, and Tiberius*' (C. & H. 1878), three unpretending but original essays well worth reading. More elaborate are '*The Life and Principate of the Emperor Nero*,' by B. W. HENDERSON (Met. 1905); his '*Five Roman Emperors: Vespasian, Titus, Domitian, Nerva, Trajan: A.D. 69-117*' (C.U.P.); the *Essai sur le règne de Trajan* of M. C. DE LA BERGE (1877); and the able work of FERDINAND GREGOROVIVUS on *Der Kaiser Hadrian und seine Zeit* (E. tr. Mac. 1898). RENAN's *Marc-Aurèle* (E. tr. K.P.) is a study mainly of the religious conditions of the period, but is none the less interesting. On the same emperor there are several English studies, one of the freshest being C. C. DOVE's '*Marcus Aurelius Antoninus: His Life and Times*' (Watts, 1930). Two works have been devoted to Septimius Severus, the *Essai sur la vie de Septime Sévère* of A. DE CEULENEER (1884) and the *Geschichte des Kaisers L. Septimius Severus* of C. FUCHS (1884); and there is a '*Life of Alexander Severus*' by R. V. N. HOPKINS (C.U.P.). Other modern monographs are the *Héliogabale raconté par les historiens grecs et latins* of G. DUVIQUET (1903); and the *Essai sur le règne de l'empereur Aurélien* of L. HOMO (Athens, 1904). The older work of PREUSS on *Kaiser Diokletian und seine Zeit* (1869) has admitted merit.

Among the later emperors, Julian (see Course VIII, § 18) has had most biographers. There is an excellent monograph on him by ALICE GARDNER in the Heroes ser. (Put.). The latest monograph on 'Justinian' by G. P. BAKER (Grayson, 1932) cannot be said to supersede the work of HOLMES on 'The Age of Justinian and Theodora' (Course XX, § 11). For the important period of Justinian, Lord Mahon's old '*Life of Belisarius*' (2nd ed. 1848) is still a good authority. Of Theodosius there is a modern German study, *Der Kaiser Theodosius der Grosse*, by A. GÜLDENPENNING (Halle, 1878); and Dr. HODGKIN's account of 'Theodoric the Goth' (Heroes ser.) is a good introduction to the study of the subversion of the old empire by the northern invaders.

§ 7. On the details of Roman administration there are many modern treatises. One of the best in English is W. T. ARNOLD's '*The Roman System of Provincial Administration*' (Mac.), which will supply abundant clues to the student. The later '*History of Roman Political Institutions*,' by F. F. ABBOTT (Boston, 1901), supplies a need of English readers. Some scholarly treatises on matters of Roman political history have been published by the French School at Athens—viz. *Les transformations de l'Italie sous*

les Empereurs, by C. JULLIAN (1884); *Les origines du Sénat romain*, by G. BLOCH (1883); and *Le Sénat romain depuis Dioclétien*, by C. LECRIVAIN. Of great value and importance is the copious work of P. WILLEMS, *Le Sénat de la République* (1885, 3 t.). Another useful research is that of M. P. GUTRAUD, *Les assemblées provinciales dans l'Empire* (1887).

§ 8. For Roman legal antiquities in general see the Dictionaries of Greek and Roman Antiquities, mentioned in Course V, § 1. The outstanding authority is the great *Handbuch der römischen Alterthümer* of MARQUARDT and MOMMSEN (3te Aufl. 1887, etc.), which is trans. in French, but not in English. But the 'Roman Political Institutions, from City to State' of Prof. LEON HOMO (E. tr. K.P.) will serve the needs of most readers. RAMSAY's old '**Manual of Roman Antiquities**' is a repertory of great learning, and, as revised by LANCIANI (15th ed. Griffin, 1894), is a trustworthy compendium. Of French manuals there are several, notably the *Manuel des institutions romaines* of A. BOUCHÉ-LECLERCQ (1886) and *Les institutions de l'ancienne Rome*, by Profs. ROBIOU and DELAUNAY (Paris, 1884-88, 3 t.). Two good German manuals are the *Römische Privataltertümer* of M. ZÖLLER (1887) and the *Römische Alterthümer* of LUDWIG LANGE (1876-79; 3te Aufl. 2 Bde.), a work of great learning. F. BERNHÖFT's *Staat und Recht der römischen Königszeit* (1882) is a monograph of importance, as is the *Recherches sur le colonat romain* of FUSTEL DE COULANGES (1885). A valuable constitutional history of Rome down to the Empire was compiled from the *Römische Alterthümer* of Ludwig Lange by MM. BERTHELOT and DIDIER, under the title *Histoire intérieure de Rome, jusqu' à la bataille d'Actium* (1885-88, 2 t.). There is perhaps no better means of studying the growth and dissolution of the Republic from the point of view of political science.

§ 9. The life of ancient Rome may further be studied in works dealing with social as apart from political history. Thus the 'Agricola' of W. E. HEITLAND (C.U.P.) deals with agricultural life in Ancient Rome and in Greece. The manual on 'Roman Public Life,' by A. H. J. GREENIDGE (Mac. 1901) is well worth consulting, and that of G. BOISSIER, *Cicéron et ses amis* (3e éd. 1875), is an accomplished monograph; as is the old 'Life of the Greeks and Romans' by GUHL and KONER (Course XX, § 10). The smaller work of A. J. CHURCH, 'Roman Life in the Days of Cicero' (1884), is interesting. Of similar scope are the works of M. PELISSON, *Les Romains au temps de Pline le Jeune* (1882), and of J. JUNG, *Leben und Sitten der Römer in der Kaiserzeit* (1883-84, 2 Bde.). The discussion which turns round the

personality of Cicero (on which see the old 'Account of the Life and Letters of C.' by ABEKEN: E. tr. ed. by Merivale, 1854; the monograph of J. L. STRACHAN-DAVIDSON in the Heroes ser., and Prof. Beesly's essay on 'Catiline,' in vol. above cited) is further dealt with in the work of E. P. DUBOIS-GUCHAN, *Rome et Cicéron* (1880). The Orations and Letters of Cicero (Orations tr. in B.L.; old trans. of Letters, rep. 1840) throw many lights on events. The broad studies of Prof. A. GRENIER of Strasburg, 'The Roman Spirit in Religion, Thought, and Art'; 'Rome the Law-Giver' by Prof. J. DECLAREUIL of Toulouse; and 'Ancient Rome at Work: an Economic History from the Origins to the Empire,' by PAUL LOUIS (all E. trs. K.P.) supply together a competent sociographical survey.

§ 10. The ancient writers on Roman history may be best read in the light of modern critical research. Taken as they stand, they would frequently mislead, were it only in so far as they deal with matter already ancient for them, in regard to which they had no exact documentary knowledge, and were at the mercy of tradition. But the ancient historians must always be read by those who want to realise aright the spirit of antiquity; and the manual of D. C. MUNRO, 'A Source Book of Roman History' (Heath, 1904), is a good guide; while the 'Sources for Roman History' of A. H. J. GREENIDGE and A. M. CLAY (Cl. Pr. 1903) and the *Grundriss der alten Geschichte und Quellenkunde* of W. STREHL (1901, 2 Bde.) give critical views. For republican Roman history, LIVY (E. tr. B.L.) is the pre-eminent authority, so far as he goes. The shortcomings and incredibilities of his work will be found discussed by the leading modern historians; and in a vivid form in the monograph of H. Taine, *Essai sur Tite Live*.

TACITUS is best translated by Church and Brodribb (Mac.). On the obscure and neglected question of the genuineness of the 'Annals' and the 'Histories' of Tacitus, careful students should consult the works of M. HOCHART, *De l'authenticité des Annales et des Histoires de Tacite* (1890) and *Nouvelles considérations au sujet des Annales et des Histoires de Tacite* (1894). For the lives of the Cæsars down to Domitian, SUETONIUS (E. tr. in B.L.) is a prime authority. A recent expensive illustr. ed. (Chicago, 1931: tr. by H. M. BIRD; illus. by F. C. Pape) is scholarly and intelligent. SALLUST, CÆSAR, FLORUS, VELLEIUS PATERCULUS, CORNELIUS NEPOS, JUSTIN, and EUTROPIUS are all trans. (B.L.), but there are no current English versions of DIO CASSIUS and DIONYSIUS of Halicarnassus, of whom the latter supplies much legendary and mythological matter. Nor is there a trans. of the 'Augustan' Histories, by six writers, covering the lives of the emperors in whole or in part from Hadrian to Carinus. For certain portions

of Roman history resort must be had to POLYBIUS (tr. by Shuckburgh, Mac.) and PLUTARCH ('Lives' tr. by Long in B.L. 4 v.). Other prime authorities, in particular the ever-accumulating mass of recovered inscriptions, of which there is a great edition by Mommsen, can readily be traced by students from the leading modern works.

§ 11. Such special study involves close and fresh analysis of the ancient compilations which have come down to us, with an eye to their sources; and this has been gone about by several scholarly writers. Among these are the essay of D. R. STUART (1904) on 'The Attitude of Dion Cassius towards Epigraphic Sources'; J. C. VOLLGRAFF, 'Greek Writers of Roman History' (in English, Leiden, 1880); M. SCHMITZ, *Quellenkunde der römischen Geschichte* (Gutersloh, 1881); F. BECKURTS, *Zur Quellenkritik des Tacitus, Sueton, und Cassius Dio* (Braunschweig, 1880); and A. BAUMGARTEN, *Ueber die Quellen des Cassius Dio* (1880). For Roman chronology CLINTON'S *Fasti Romani* is still a high authority; but the *Römische Chronologie* of N. MATZAT (1883) gives some later results.

§ 12. The archæological literature relating to Roman Italy is too large to be covered in any but a special manual (see Course I, § 9, for the general Text-Book of Dr. Macalister: C.U.P.). But the general reader is well catered for in such attractively illustrated and scholarly volumes as 'The Roman Capitol in Ancient and Modern Times' by E. RODOCANACHI (E. tr. from Fr. 1906, Hei.), with good bibliography; the 'Rome and Pompeii' of GASTON BOISSIER (E. tr. F.U. 1896); the admirable 'Pompeii' of Dr. W. M. MACKENZIE in Black's series with illustrns. in colour (1910); and the 'Buried Herculaneum' of ETHEL R. BARKER (Black, 1908). The old B.L. manuals of H. M. WESTROPP and T. H. DYER, 'Handbook of Archæology' and 'Pompeii,' were careful repertories for their time, and are still informative.

§ 13. As connecting the histories of Ancient Rome and later Italy, we have the lectures of Prof. BURY on 'The Invasions of Europe by the Barbarians' (Mac. 1928); 'Italy and her Invaders' by Dr. T. HODGKIN (Cl. Pr. 8 v. 2nd ed. 1892-99); and the recent monograph 'Alaric the Goth,' by MARCEL BRION (But. 1932).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

VI.—ITALY

§ 1. PRE-ROMAN Italy is taken into account in a number of the modern histories of Rome, and may be further studied in the 'Italy before the Romans' of D. RANDALL-MACIVER, and the same scholar's 'Greek Cities in Italy and Sicily' (both Cl. Pr.); or in the works of PAIS and HOMO named in the last Course (§ 2), and those on the Etruscans (§ 3); or further in 'The Stone and Bronze Ages in Italy and Sicily,' by T. E. PEET (Cl. Pr.).

The history of Italy, like that of Germany, is for the most part rather the story of a country and people than of a nation; and strictly includes that of ancient Rome. It is so treated in the old work of SPALDING on 'Italy and the Italian Islands' (mentioned in Course III, § 7), which is not yet superseded in its totality. One may accordingly begin a view of the history of Italy as a geographical whole with the interesting survey of H. J. ROSE, 'Primitive Culture in Italy' (Met. 1926); or, taking the "History of Rome" as a thing by itself, with H. D. SIDGWICK'S 'Short History of Italy: 476-1900' (Har. 1906). Another concise account is the 'Italy' of the Rev. W. HUNT (Mac.). A good general history of Italy in English, long a desideratum, has been competently supplied in Mrs. G. M. TREVELYAN'S 'History of the Italian People' (Put. 1920). The famous *Histoire des républiques italiennes au moyen âge* (16 t. 6e éd. 1840) by SISMONDI has not been trans., and W. BOULTING'S condensation in 1 v. (Rout. 1906) is inadequate. But Mrs. H. M. VERNON'S 'Italy from 1494 to 1790' is a trustworthy guide (C.U.P.); and the 'Italy: Mediæval and Modern' by four scholars (O.U.P. 1917) is very competent and helpful.

§ 2. The standard Italian *Storia degli Italiani* of CESARE CANTU (1874-77, 15 t.) has not been translated; neither have the eleven quarto volumes of the *Storia politica d'Italia*, edited by Prof. VILLARI (1875-81). In German the old *Geschichte von Italien* of H. LEO (1826, 5 Bde.) has original merit. The 'Sancta Respublica Romana' of R. H. WRIGHTSON (Frowde,

2nd ed. 1891) is 'A Handbook of the History of Rome and Italy' from 395 to 888 in a conveniently terse form. A mine of historical lore, drawn on by all the historians, is represented by the works of MURATORI, *Antiquitates Italicae Medii Aevi* (6 vols. 1738-42, fol.) and *Dissertazioni sopra le Antichità Italiane* (5 vols. Milano, 1836-37). A useful handbook is the 'Genealogical and Chronological Tables illustrative of Italian history,' by A. GRAHAM (1880).

§ 3. Histories of States and periods are numerous; and Italy is peculiarly rich in local chronicles. Of these a good general idea is given in Ugo Balzani's 'Italy' (S.P.C.K. 1883). 'The Early History of the House of Savoy: 1000-1233,' by C. W. PREVITÉ-ORTON (C.U.P.), makes scholarly use of such material. Much attention has been given to the famous Hohenstaufen emperor, Frederick II (1194-1250), whose seat was Sicily; and we have in English the two picturesquely entitled works, 'The Infidel Emperor and his Struggles against the Popes: A Chronicle of the Thirteenth Century,' by P. WIEGLER (Rout. 1930), and 'Stupor Mundi: The Life and Times of Frederick II,' etc., by LIONEL ALLSHORN (Secker, 1912). A good recent monograph is the 'Arnold of Brescia' of G. W. GREENAWAY (C.U.P. 1932).

Of Florence, the most interesting of the Renaissance republics, there is a good sketch by Miss Duffy, 'The Story of the Tuscan Republic' (S.N.S.). 'The Lombard Communes: A History of the Republics of North Italy,' by Prof. W. F. BUTLER (F.U. 1906), is particularly to be commended; and the 'Florence: her History and Art,' of F. A. HYETT (Met. 1903), supersedes the old histories by NAPIER and T. A. TROLLOPE. Even Prof. VILLARI's 'First Two Centuries of Florentine History' (E. tr. F.U. 2 v. 1894-1901) is rather material for history than a definitive work. Superior to most in weight and scope is the copious *Histoire de Florence* of F. T. PERRENS (9 t. 1877-90), which is still recognised in Italy as a standard history; and the same author has written in 1 vol. an account of *La civilisation florentine du 13e au 16e siècle* (1892), marked by intimate mastery. The portion of the larger work covering the history of Florence under the Medicis (1434-92) was trans. by Hannah Lynch (Met. 1892).

The old work of ROSCÖE on 'Lorenzo de' Medici' is superseded by that of ALFRED VON REUMONT (E. tr. 1876, 2 v.). Those desiring to make a thorough study from the sources may turn to OTTO HARTWIG's *Quellen und Forschungen zur ältesten Geschichte der Stadt Florenz* (2 Bde. 1875-80), a work of great learning. On Genoa there is a separate work by J. T. BENT, 'Genoa: How the Republic Rose and Fell' (1887). Specially attractive is the finely illustrated book by R. W. CARDEN, 'The City of Genoa'

(Met. 1908); and 'Siena: the Story of a Medieval Commune' by F. SCHEVILL (C. & H. 1909) has the same scholarly and artistic merits. Both supply excellent bibliographies.

For Venice there are available the primer on '**The Venetian Republic**,' by H. R. F. BROWN (T.P.S. 1902); the same writer's 'Venice: An Historical Sketch of the Republic' (Per. 1893); the monumental 'History of Venice' by POMPEO MOLMENTI, tr. by Mr. Brown (Mur. 6 v. 1906-8); and the revised 'History of the Venetian Republic' of W. C. HAZLITT (2 v. 1900, Black). There is much interesting matter, too, in Mr. Brown's 'Venetian Studies' (1887); in the same writer's 'Studies in Venetian History' (2 v. Mur. 1907); and in C. YRIARTE's 'Venice: Its History, Art, and Life' (E. tr. 1880, Bell). Much of the history of Italy, again, is well embodied in the voluminous work of GREGOROVIVUS on 'The City of Rome in the Middle Ages' (E. tr. Bell, 2nd ed. 1900-2: 9 v.); and the German work on the same theme by VON REUMONT (Course III, § 7). It is still worth while, on sociological grounds, to consult PIGNOTTI's once-esteemed 'History of Tuscany' (E. tr. 1823, 4 v.); but the *Geschichte Toscanas* of Von Reumont (2 Bde. Gotha, 1876-77) is an original research.

Sicily is dealt with on a small scale in Prof. FREEMAN's 'Sicily' (S.N.S.), and elaborately in his uncompleted 'History of Sicily from the Earliest Times' (4 v. with Supp. by A. Evans, Cl. Pr. 1891-4). A good general *Storia di Sicilia* has been produced in Italian by Prof. ETTORE PAIS. For the medieval history of the "Two Sicilies" resort should be had to VON RAUMER's *Geschichte des Hohenstaufen* (3te Aufl. 6 Bde. 1857-8), or to C. DE CHERRIER's *Histoire de la lutte des papes et des empereurs de la maison de Suabe* (4 t. 1841-51).

§ 4. What is most interesting in Italian history, the intellectual, political and artistic life of the Renaissance, has been pretty fully discussed. To the general history of the period has been devoted the first vol. of the Camb. Mod. Hist., which touches on all aspects. The valuable work of the German scholar JAKOB BURCKHARDT, 'The Civilisation of the Renaissance in Italy,' is available in a trans. by S. G. C. Middlemore from the German ed. annot. by Dr. Ludwig Geiger (A. & U.: last ed. with 243 illustrns. Har. 1929); and J. ADDINGTON SYMONDS has covered the same period independently in his series, 'The Renaissance in Italy,' in 7 v.: 1. The Age of the Despots; 2. The Revival of Learning; 3. The Fine Arts; 4-5. Italian Literature; 6-7. The Catholic Reaction (Mur.). A '**Short History of the Italian Renaissance**,' condensed from Symonds's work by Lieut.-Col. A. PEARSON (S.E. 1893), will

be found useful. The 'Italy after the Renaissance: Decadence and Display in the 17th C.' of L. COLLISON-MORLEY (K.P.) is the work of a close student of Italian history. In addition may be noted the compendious French works of Prof. GEBHART, *Les origines de la Renaissance en Italie* (1879); *De l'Italie: Essais de critique et d'histoire* (1876); and *L'Italie mystique* (1890); the *Italie et Renaissance* of JULES ZELLER (2 t. 1883); and the German Prof. GEIGER's *Renaissance und Humanismus in Italien und Deutschland* (in Oncken's ser. 1882).

§ 5. So much of Italian history centres round the Papacy that in order to grasp the whole it is necessary to study the history of that. For the leading works on the subject see end of this Course and Course VIII, § 16, and the voluminous 'History of the Popes to the close of the Middle Ages' by L. VON PASTOR (E. tr. K.P. 1911-31, last vol. No. 22). Vol. i of the Camb. Med. Hist. deals with the Christian Roman Empire; v covers 'The Contest of Empire and Papacy,' and vi, 'Victory of the Papacy.' See also Dr. R. L. POOLE's 'Lectures on the History of the Papal Chancery' (C.U.P.). There are further many monographs on important Popes, as, e.g. 'Hildebrand and his Times,' by the Rev. W. R. W. STEPHENS (Lmns. 'Epochs'); Prof. VOIGT's old German 'History of Pope Gregory VII and his Age,' tr. in French by Abbé Jager (2e éd. 1842); M. E. LANGERON's *Grégoire VII et les origines de la doctrine ultramontaine* (1874); A. F. GFRÖRER's *Papst Gregorius VII und seine Zeitalter* (7 Bde. 1859-64); A. F. VILLEMMAIN's 'Life of Gregory VII, with a Sketch of the History of the Papacy to the Eleventh Century' (E. tr. 2 vols. 1874); Baron J. A. VON HÜBNER's 'Life and Times of Pope Sixtus V' (E. tr. 2 v. Lmns. 1872); and T. A. TROLLOPE's 'Life of Pius IX' (2 v. 1887). In Italian may be noted F. BERTOLINI's *Roma e il Papato nel secolo XIV* (1892).

The special fate of the Protestant movement in Italy in the 16th c. is still to be gathered best from MCCRIE's old work, 'The Reformation in Italy,' rev. 1856. The Rev. J. STOUGHTON's 'Footprints of Italian Reformers' is ancillary.

§ 6. Over one salient and sinister figure of the Italian Renaissance, Cesare Borgia (1476-1507), there has been much modern discussion. The *Cesare Borgia, Duca di Romagna*, of E. ALVISI (1878), was the first strictly scholarly research. In English, apart from a good article by Dr. R. GARNETT (*Enc. Brit.*) and an able and learned prize essay by C. GRANT ROBERTSON (1891), there had been almost no monograph till three appeared within one year:—the 'Cæsar Borgia: A Study of the Renaissance,' by J. LESLIE GARNIER (F.U. 1912); 'The Life of Cesare Borgia . . . A History and Some Criticisms,' by RAFAEL SABATINI

(S.P. 1912: rev. ed. 1931); and 'Cesare Borgia, A Biography,' by W. H. WOODWARD (C. & H. 1913). All have merits; but the second and the third stand out, the former by its vivid force; the latter by its scholarly care and sobriety. All are illustrated, and proceed upon the latest research up to their date.

§ 7. The interesting records of Corsica have been separately compiled in English by L. H. CAIRD in 'The History of Corsica' (F.U. 1899), which gives clues to a number of authorities, Italian and other. Among these the most important are G. CAMBIAGI, *Istoria del Regno di Corsica* (4 t. 1770-72), and the *Corsica* of F. VON GREGOROVIVS (2nd ed. 2 Bde. 1869; E. trs. earlier), of which the first section is a historic sketch. Of the work of Gregorovius there are three English translations; one by A. Muir (1857), one by R. Martineau (1856), and one by E. J. Morris (Phila. 1855). See also Spalding (§ 1).

The 'Majorca' of H. C. SHELLEY (Met. 1926) and Sir CLEMENT MARKHAM's 'The Story of Majorca and Minorca' (Mur. 1908) open up another field of interest in outlying Italy. On 'Sardinia' there is an old work in 3 v. by J. W. W. TYNDALE (1849) and a recent monograph by DOUGLAS GOLDRING (Har. 1930).

§ 8. Much historical research has been made, further, in the literature which centres round the lives and works of Petrarch, Dante, Savonarola, and Machiavelli. In this field may be named the following works, original or translated, in English: ARTHUR JOHN BUTLER, 'Dante, his Time and his Work' (Innes, 1895); JOHN A. SYMONDS, 'An Introduction to the Study of Dante' (4th ed. 1899); OSCAR BROWNING, 'Dante, his Life and Writings' (Son. 1891); PAGET J. TOYNBEE, 'Dante Studies and Researches' (Met. 1902) and 'Dante Alighieri' (same); Mrs. OLIPHANT, 'The Makers of Florence' (3rd ed. 1881; Mac.), and 'The Makers of Venice' (same, 1887); VILLARI, 'Life and Times of Girolamo Savonarola' (E. tr. 2 v. 1889, F.U.), and 'Life and Times of Niccolò Machiavelli' (same, 2 v. 1892); H. LUCAS, 'Savonarola' (Sands, 1899). There is much scholarly study of social as of literary life in 'The King of Court Poets: A Study of the Life and Times of Ariosto' by E. G. GARDNER (Con. 1906); but on Petrarch the best studies are in French and Italian: A. MÉZIÈRES, *Pétrarque* (1868); G. FINZI, *Petrarca* (Firenze, 1900); and there are some important French studies on Dante, in particular those of C. C. FAURIEL, *Dante et les origines de la langue et de la littérature italiennes* (2 t. 1854); OZANAM, *Dante et la philosophie catholique au 13e siècle* (6e édit. 1872); and GEBHART, *Vie de Dante* (1882). The numerous Italian lives of Dante, of course, deal also with historic matter—e.g. the *Vita di Dante* of CESARE BALBO; and G. FENAROLI's *La vita e i tempi di Dante Alighieri* (Torino, 1882).

§ 9. Of histories of Italian periods there are a number, in various languages. One of the most exact is L. M. HARTMANN'S *Geschichte Italiens im Mittelalter* (4 Bde. 1897-1911). In English are available the two compact and readable studies of OSCAR BROWNING, 'Guelphs and Ghibellines' (1893) and 'The Age of the Condottieri' (1895: both Met.); and E. ARMSTRONG'S 'Lorenzo de' Medici and Florence in the Fifteenth Century' (Heroes ser. 1896). A history of 'Italy in Disunion: 1494-1790,' by Mrs. H. M. VERNON, was completed by K. D. EWART (C.U.P. 1909). J. W. BARLOW'S 'Short History of the Normans in Southern Europe' (K.P. 1886) and M. O. DELARC'S *Les Normands en Italie* (1883) are good modern accounts of an interesting episode. For the Bourbon period there is the old 'History of the Kingdom of Naples: 1734-1825' of P. COLLETTA (E. tr. 2 v. 1858); there is also an *Histoire de la réunion de la Savoie à la France en 1792*, by E. L. BORREL (Moutiers, 1901); and the Napoleonic conquest is fully set forth in 'The Napoleonic Empire in Southern Italy and the Rise of Secret Societies,' by R. M. JOHNSTON (Mac. 2 v. 1904), who has also produced a history of 'Roman Theocracy and Republic, 1846-49' (Mac. 1901).

§ 10. On the interesting problems of Italian ethnography there are modern studies in foreign languages: A. TROLLE'S *Das italienische Volksstum und seine Abhängigkeit* (1885); Baron von CZOERNIG'S *Die alten Völker Oberitaliens* (Wien, 1885); Signor G. CARUSELLI'S *Sulle origine dei popoli italici* (Palermo, 1897); and M. C. LANARRE'S *Étude sur les peuples anciennes de l'Italie* (1899); and in English the works of HOMO (Course XXI, § 2), RANDALL-MACIVER, and PEET (above, § 1); the chapters in C.A.H.; and the tr. of G. SERGI'S 'The Mediterranean Race' (C.S.S. 1901). Older foreign sociological works of value are the bulky treatise of O. MONTELIUS, *La civilisation primitive en Italie depuis l'introduction des métaux* (Stockholm, 1895, etc. 4to); E. GÖTHEIN'S *Die Culturentwicklung Süditaliens* (Breslau, 1886); C. PAULI'S *Altitalische Studien* (5 Bde. 1883-87); and *Altitalische Forschungen* (1885, etc.); T. BURLET'S *La Savoie avant le christianisme* (1901); and E. L. BORREL'S *Les Centrons pendant les temps préhistoriques et l'époque gallo-romaine* (1905).

§ 11. Among Italian studies on the social evolution of Italian life may be noted the series: *La vita italiana nel trecento* (Milano, 1892); . . . *nel cinquecento* (3 t. Milano, 1886); . . . *nel seicento* (3 t. 1895); . . . *nel settecento* (2 t. Milano, 1896); and . . . *nel ottocento* (Milano, 1905). On the economic side special interest attaches to the German PÖHLMANN'S *Die Wirthschafts-Politik der Florentiner Renaissance und das Princip der Verkehrsfreiheit* (1878).

§ 12. On modern Italian history there is an abundance of

information in English. P. Orsi's '*Modern Italy*' (S.N.S. 1900) gives a good general view; as do P. K. O'CLERY's '*The Making of Italy*' (K.P. 1892); the Countess MARTINENGO-CESARESCO's '*The Liberation of Italy*' (2nd ed. 1902, S.S. & Co.); J. W. PROBYN's '*Italy from the fall of Napoleon to 1890*' (Cas. 1891); and Miss E. W. LATIMER's '*Italy in the Nineteenth Century*' (Chicago, 1897). In some respects '*The Union of Italy, 1815-95*,' by W. J. STILLMAN (C.U.P. 1898), is the best account of the period it deals with; but W. R. THAYER's '*Dawn of Italian Independence: Italy from 1814 to 1849*' (Boston, 2 v. 1893), and the later and more complete '*History of Italian Unity, 1814 to 1817*,' of BOLTON KING (2 v. 1899), give more detailed narratives.

There is signal literary and historical merit in the record of '*Garibaldi's Defence of the Roman Republic*,' by G. M. TREVELYAN (Lmns. 1907); '*Garibaldi and the Thousand: May, 1860*,' and '*Garibaldi and the Making of Italy, June-November, 1860*' (all three in cheap reps. Nelson, 1920). Important for the liberation period are also the '*Garibaldi*' of ELPA MELENA (E. tr. K.P. 1887); Madame VENTURI's memoir of '*Mazzini*' 2nd ed. 1885; A. J. WHYTE's recent and excellent '*Cavour: 1810-61*' (O.U.P. 2 v. 1925-30); C. DE MEZADE's '*Life of Count Cavour*' (E. tr. 1877); E. DICEY's '*Cavour*' (Mac. 1861); D. ZANICHELLI's '*Cavour*' (Firenze, 1905); G. S. GODKIN's '*Life of Victor Emmanuel*' (2 v. 1879); G. MASSARI's '*La vita ed il regno di Vittorio Emanuele*' (Milano, 1901); and the '*History of Piedmont*,' by A. GALLENGA (*i.e.* Luigi Mariotti) (3 v. 1855). Much light is also obtainable from such biographical works as O. R. AGRESTI's '*Giovanni Costa: His Life and Times*' (E. tr. 1904); L. CHIALA's '*Giacomo Dina*' (3 v. Torino, 1896-1903); and MARIO's '*F. Crispi e le sue memorie*' (Milano, 1902).

§ 13. From the many works on modern Italian life may be singled out: BENEDETTO CROCE's brilliant '*History of Italy: 1871-1915*' (E. tr. by C. M. ADY, Cl. Pr. 1929); BOLTON KING and TH. OKEY, '*Italy To-day*' (Nisbet, 1901); A. GALLENGA, '*Italy Present and Future*' (2 v. 1887); RENÉ BAZIN, '*The Italians of To-day*' (E. tr. 1896); G. B. CUNIGLIO, '*L'Italia liberale in fin di secolo*' (Torino, 1896); P. D. FISCHER, '*Italien und die Italiener am Schlusse des 19ten Jahrhunderts*' (Berlin, 1899); and ÉMILE DE LAVELEYE, '*L'Italie actuelle*' (1880). Signor GIOVANNI GIOLITTI's '*Memoirs of my Life*' (E. tr. C. & D. 1923) covers the political history down to the Fascist period.

§ 14. On post-War and "Fascist" Italy there is already a considerable literature. The compendious account of '*Fascism in Italy*' by Bolton King (W. & N. 1931) is the work of one deeply versed in things Italian. '*Making the Fascist State*' by H. W.

SCHNEIDER (O.U.P. 1929) is a mainly impartial and comprehensive survey, though "tendential"; while 'What is Fascism and Why?' ed. by TOMASO SILANI (Benn, 1931), is pro-Fascist. Of similar cast are 'The "Red" Dragon and the Black Shirts: How Italy found her Soul,' by Sir PERCIVAL PHILLIPS (Carm. House, *n.d.*) and 'The Fascist Movement in Italian Life,' by Dott. PIETRO GORGOLINI (E. tr. by M. D. Petre, F.U. 1923).

More judicial are the record 'From Socialism to Fascism,' by Signor I. BONOMI (E. tr. by J. Murray: Hop. 1924) and the 'Fascism' of G. PREZZELINI (Met.). Special critical and historical values attach to Prof. GAETANO SALVEMINI'S 'The Fascist Dictatorship in Italy'; vol. i, 'Origins and Practices' (with intr. by Ramsay Muir: Cape, 1928); and to 'Ten Years of Tyranny in Italy' by PIETRO NENNI (A. & U. 1932). On the other side there is *Le Régime Fasciste Italien*, by Fr. LUIGI FERRARI (Paris, 1928), who has also recorded 'The War on the Italian Front' (C.-S. 1932). 'Italy's International Economic Position,' by C. E. McGUIRE (A. & U. 1927), is practically informative.

THE PAPACY AND THE CRUSADES

As the Papacy greatly affected the whole historical development of Europe, and the Crusades greatly influenced, in their period and in the sequel, the historical evolution of Europe and the East, it will be fitting to treat them as studies apart, extending beyond the history of Italy.

1. In § 5, above, the Italian side of Papal history is indicated in a list of works. The beginnings of the Papacy may be studied through Gibbon and the histories of Christianity, beginning with MOSHEIM. Dr. A. D. Crake's 'History of the Church under the Roman Empire' (Lmns. 1879) covers pretty fully the first five centuries. Among the various larger histories of the same period may be here noted that of Bishop WORDSWORTH (same, 4 v. 4th ed. 1889). In the series on 'Periods of Modern History' ed. by A. HASSALL (Mac.), the Papacy is seen in action in each of the first four vols., 'The Empire and the Papacy' being the theme of vol. ii, by Prof. TOUT, as also of vols. v and vi of the C. Med. Hist. F. ROCQUAIN'S *La Papauté au Moyen Age* (1881) is good for its period; as is A. D. GREENWOOD'S 'Empire and Papacy in the Middle Age' (Son. 3rd ed. 1902). The work of M. LACHATRE, *Histoire des Papes, Rois, Empereurs* (3 t. 1883), covers pretty much the same ground. A general outline record of the Papacy may be got by reading in succession the 'Lives of the Popes to 1471,' by B. SACCHI DE PLATINA, best known by the latter name (Griffith, 1888, 2 v.); UGO BALZANI'S 'Popes and Hohenstaufen'

(S.P.C.K. 1889); Dr. G. VOIGT's *Enea Silvio de Piccolomini als Papst Pius der Zweite, und sein Zeitalter* (3 Bde. 1856-63); C. LOCKE's 'Age of the Great Western Schism' (Eras ser.); Bishop CREIGHTON's 'History of the Papacy from the Great Schism to the Sack of Rome' (otherwise: "during the period of the Reformation, 1378-1527") (Lmns. cheap ed. 6 v.); RANKE's 'History of the Popes during the last Four Centuries' (E. tr. rev. on lat. Ger. ed. 3 v. B.L.); and the 'History of the Papacy in the Nineteenth Century,' by the Danish Bishop NIELSEN (E. tr. 2 v. Mur. 1906) and the work on the same topic by Prof. BURY (Mac.) There is also the copious general Catholic 'History of the Popes,' by Dr. LUDWIG PASTOR (E. tr. 1891, etc.: K.P. 20 v.).

2. The Crusades have a literature of their own. The small textbook of Prof. Ernest Barker, 'The Crusades' (Cl. Pr. 1923), is a good introduction; and from the Moslem standpoint 'The Flame of Islam: The Crusades,' by HAROLD B. LAMB (Benn, 1931), is a brilliant performance. Sir G. W. Cox's little book, 'The Crusades' (Lmns.) is a good summary; and Von Sybel's 'History and Literature of the Crusades' (1s. rep. Rout.) gives a very competent critical survey of the literature up to its date. MICHAUD's old 'History of the Crusades' (E. tr. Rout. 3 v.) is improved upon by later research; but his *Bibliothèque des Croisades* (1829, 4 t.) presents a mass of the documentary matter, giving as it does the French, Italian, English, German, Greek, Turkish, Armenian, and Arabic chronicles, all in French. Perhaps the most compendious account of the Crusades is that contributed by CHARLES SEIGNOBOS to the *Histoire Générale* of LAVISSE and RAMBAUD, t. II. The three documents given in 'The Three Chronicles of the Crusades' (B.L.) may usefully be read, though the translation is commonplace. KUGLER's *Geschichte der Kreuzzüge* (Oncken's ser.) is a good modern treatise; and the older work of F. WILKEN, of the same title, is, like Michaud's, a storehouse of detail.

Of Catholic missions the history is largely bound up with that of the Jesuits, on whom there are many treatises, among which may be noted: W. C. CARTWRIGHT, 'The Jesuits' (Mur. 1876); S. ROSE, 'Ignatius Loyola and the Early Jesuits' (B. & O. 1891); G. B. NICOLINI, 'History of the Jesuits' (Ball); Comte DE SAINT-PRIEST, 'History of the Fall of the Jesuits' (E. tr. 1845). T. GRIESINGER's 'The Jesuits' (E. tr. 2 v. Allen, 1883) is rather an indictment than a history. J. McCabe's 'A Candid History of the Jesuits' (Nash, 1913) is preferable.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

VII.—SPAIN AND PORTUGAL

§ 1. It is not now profitable to study any of the older English histories of Spain and Portugal, as regards the periods of formation of those States. There is a good '**Short History of Spain**' by **H. D. Sidgwick** (Har.); besides '**A History of Spain**,' founded on that of **RAFAEL ALTAMIRA**, by the American Professor **C. E. CHAPMAN** (Mac. N.Y.); and **W. H. KOEBLE**'s '**Portugal: Its Land and People**' (Son. 1909) is informative, and very fully illustrated. The '**History of Iberian Civilisation**' of **J. P. DE OLIVEIRA MARTINS**, with pref. by **S. de Madariaga** (E. tr. O.U.P. 1930), is a very competent survey for the whole Peninsula.

On Spain there is available also the excellent sociological history of **Martin A. S. Hume**, '**The Spanish People: Their Origin, Growth, and Influence**' (Hei. 1901). For Portugal a good brief English guide is **H. Morse Stephens**'s '**Portugal**' (S.N.S.); but **W. A. SALISBURY**'s '**Portugal and its People: A History**' has also merit as a compendious account (Nelson, 1893). For the general history of Spain, **BUCKLE**'s section in his '**Introduction to the History of Civilisation in England**' is in many respects illuminating; but is to be read under correction. See the notes in Routledge's edition, 1903. It is best founded as to the eighteenth century. In Spanish there is a modern *Historia de la civilización española*, by **R. ALTAMIRA Y CREVEA** (Barcelona, 1904); also a short work by **J. FERNANDEZ AMADOR** on *Los Orígenes de la nacionalidad española y su cultura* (Madrid, 1903).

§ 2. For an exact and documented history the student should turn to the '**History of Spain**,' by the late **U. R. Burke** (ed. by **M. A. S. Hume**, 2 v. 1900, Lmns.). This supersedes earlier works in English for the same period. It comes down, however, only to the advent of **Charles V**, for whose reign the old work of **W. ROBERTSON**, with additional chapters by **PRESCOTT** (Rout.), may serve the general reader. But a much more complete history, based on modern research, has been produced by **E. ARMSTRONG**, '**The Emperor Charles V**' (2 v. Mac. 1902). The Autobiography

of Charles V is available in trans. by L. F. Simpson (Lmns. 1862). Prescott in turn has left a 'History of the Reign of Philip II' (1-vol. ed. by Kirk, Rout. 1894), but that too is unfinished. The works, however, of Mr. Hume, 'Philip II' (Mac. 1896); 'Spain under Philip II and Philip III, 1546-1610' (C.U.P. 1903); and 'Spain: Its Greatness and Decay: 1479-1788' (same, 1898), with the excellent introduction thereto by E. Armstrong, will sufficiently inform the general reader on the periods they cover. To the special student 'The Rise of the Spanish Empire in the Old World and in the New,' by Prof. R. B. MERRIMAN (3 v. Mac. N.Y. 1919-26) offers an authoritative and comprehensive history.

§ 3. For the history of the Moors in Spain the English reader should first turn to the excellent short history of Stanley Lane-Poole, 'The Moors in Spain' (S.N.S. 1897). The once-famous work of CONDÉ, 'History of the Dominion of the Arabs in Spain' (tr. in B.L. 3 v.), is superseded by that of R. P. DOZY, 'Spanish Islam: A History of the Moslems in Spain' (E. tr. of the orig. *Histoire*, with intr. by F. G. STOKES (C. & W. 1913)). There is merit in the comprehensive 'History of the Moorish Empire in Europe,' by S. P. SCOTT (Lipp. 3 v. 1904), which, though somewhat formally written, is scholarly and trustworthy, and is to be followed in preference to Prescott and Irving on Moorish matters. On the Moorish side are available the trans. of AHMAD'S Arabic 'History of the Mohammedan Dynasties in Spain,' by Pascual de Gayangos (Or. Tr. Fund, 1840-43); the French trans. by E. Fagnan of IBN 'ADARI, al-Marra-Kushi, *Histoire de l'Afrique et de l'Espagne* (Alger, 2 t. 1903-4); and in Spanish the *Decadencia y desaparición de los Almoravides en España* of F. CODERA y ZAIDIN (Zaragoza, 1899); the same writer's *Estudios críticos de historia árabe española* (same, 1903); and the *Historia de Murcia musulmana* of M. G. REMIRO (same, 1905). For the later historic period, up to the expulsion of the Moriscos under Philip III, CIR COURT'S *Histoire des Arabes en Espagne* (3 v. 1846) is a good authority; but on the expulsion itself Buckle gives additional details from a rare work of the period. The history of the episode, however, is fully written by H. C. LEA in 'The Moriscos of Spain: Their Conversion and Expulsion' (Philad. 1901).

§ 4. On the Basques, see 'A Book of the Basques' by RODNEY GALLUP (Mac. 1930); *L'Origine des Basques*, by l'Abbé J. ESPAGNOLLE (Pau, 1900), and the older work of FRANCISQUE MICHEL (1857), *Le Pays Basque, sa population, sa langue, etc.* The survey of G. JOLPHE GALLIARD, *Le Paysan Basque à travers les âges* (1905) is an interesting general record.

§ 5. The most notable works in English dealing with later

periods of Spanish history are those of Sir A. HELPS, 'The Spanish Conquest of Mexico' (4 v. ed. rev. by Oppenheim: Lane, 1900-4); PRESCOTT'S 'History of the Reign of Ferdinand and Isabella the Catholic' (1 v. ed. rev. by Kirk: Rout.); his 'History of Philip II,' above mentioned; and his more famous 'History of the Conquest of Mexico' and 'History of the Conquest of Peru' (both in 1 v. eds. rev. by Kirk: same). F. D. SWIFT'S 'Life and Times of James I, King of Aragon' (Cl. Pr. 1894), an expanded prize essay, is a laudable research; and H. E. WATTS'S 'Spain: From the Moorish Conquest to the Fall of Granada' (S.N.S.) is a good companion volume to Mr. Lane-Poole's on the Moors. 'Isabella of Spain,' by W. T. WALSH (Sheed & W. 1931), is the latest study of its theme. Of the part played by Spain and Portugal in European affairs in the Renaissance period a good idea may be gathered from vol. i of the C.M.H. For the episode of the Armada we have FROUDE'S 'The Spanish Story of the Armada' (Lmns. 1892), and Mr. HUME'S 'The Year after the Armada' (F.U. 1896). One of the most scholarly of English researches in Spanish history is that of E. ARMSTRONG, 'Elizabeth Farnese, "the Termagant of Spain"'—i.e. the consort of Philip V (Lmns. 1892). The old work of Archdeacon COXE, however, 'Memoirs of the Kings of Spain of the House of Bourbon' (5 v. 1780-88), is still important. There is also historical value still in Earl STANHOPE'S (Lord Mahon's) 'History of the Wars of Succession in Spain,' criticised by Macaulay (Mur.), and in 'Spain under Charles the Second'—extracted by Lord Mahon from the correspondence of an ancestor (Mur. 2nd ed. 1844).

§ 6. For the modern period, in addition to the general European histories noticed in Course III, there is a very good short history by Mr. HUME, 'Modern Spain: 1788-1898' (S.N.S.); and a fuller one by H. BUTLER CLARKE, 'Modern Spain: 1815-1898' (C.U.P. 1906). Of the period after the fall of Napoleon there is an elaborate record in 'The Wars of Succession of Portugal and Spain' of W. BOLLHAERT (2 v. 1870), which also presents a *résumé* of the political history of the two countries. Captain SAYER'S 'History of Gibraltar' (last ed. 1885) is a good account of the remarkable fortunes of that fortress; and Mrs. F. M. ELLIOTT'S 'Old Court Life in Spain' (2 v. C. & H. 1893) has a fair amount of interest. The French work of G. DESDEVICES DU DEZERT, *L'Espagne de l'ancien régime* (3 t. 1897-1904), is a learned analysis of the institutions and social life of the 18th c.

§ 7. In the way of special sociological survey of Spanish history there is little in English beyond Mr. Hume's 'Spanish People' and Buckle's chapter, above mentioned; but Mr. Burke's history

has some good sociological chapters, and Mr. Hume's 'Spain: 1479-1788,' with Mr. Armstrong's introduction, has also much sociological interest. As to the abortive Protestant movement of the Luther period see McCrie's 'The Reformation in Spain' (rev. ed. 1856); the Rev. J. STOUGHTON's 'The Spanish Reformers' (1883); and H. C. LEA's learned 'Chapters from the Religious History of Spain' (Philad. 1890), now followed by his monumental 'History of the Inquisition of Spain' (Mac. 4 vols. 1906-7). The French work of SEMPÈRE, *Histoire des Cortès d'Espagne* (1815), is a survey made in a time of political revival. There is much interesting matter in ALFRED ZIMMERMAN's *Die Kolonialpolitik Portugals und Spaniens* (1896) in his series on *Die europäische Kolonien*.

§ 8. To the Spanish writers on Spanish history and social evolution there are sufficient references in Mr. Hume's bibliography to his 'Spanish People,' in Burke's 'History of Spain,' and, for the later period, in Buckle. The most important Spanish histories are LAFUENTE's *Historia general de España* (26 v. 1850-62) and MARIANA's *Historia general de España* (9 v. 1783-96, and later eds.). There are also two French histories of good standing, ROMÉY's *Histoire d'Espagne* (10 t. 1839-50) and ROSSEUW SAINT HILAIRE's *Histoire d'Espagne* (2e éd., 14 t. 1844-79); also three German histories, LEMBKE and SCHÄFER's old *Geschichte von Spanien* (1831-44); HEINRICH BAUMGARTEN's *Geschichte Spaniens zur Zeit der französischen Revolution* (1861), completed by his *Geschichte Spaniens*, covering the period to 1858; and G. DIERCK'S *Geschichte Spaniens*.

For Portugal the standard modern native history is the *Historia de Portugal* of OLIVEIRA MARTINS (several eds. 2 v. Lisbon); and among modern scholarly researches in Portuguese may be noted the *Nacionalidade de Portugal* of J. M. PEREIRA DE SILVA (Paris, 1884) and the *Evoluções da civilização em Portugal* (Paris, 1893). The elaborate German history of H. SCHÄFER, *Geschichte von Portugal* (5 Bde. 1836-54, in the Heeren-Ukert Series), was trans. in French, but not in English.

§ 9. On the period of Portuguese rule in India references are given in Course XXXIX (History of India), § 5. For a good modern view of Portuguese life see OSWALD CRAWFURD's 'Portugal Old and New' (2nd ed. 1882). 'Eight Centuries of Portuguese Monarchy: A Political Study,' by V. DE BRAGANÇA CUNHA (Swift, 1911), is a very readable study by a critical republican, coming down to the fall of the monarchy, with a good bibliography. The period of Pombal (1699-1782), often described as one of wise government, is here otherwise presented from an economic standpoint. Life in Portugal in the last generation

was presented in two English books: 'A Philosopher in Portugal,' by E. E. STREET (F.U. 1903), and 'Sunshine and Sentiment in Portugal,' by G. WATSON (Arnold, 1904); and there are 'Chapters on Portuguese Life' in L. Higgin's 'Spanish Life in Town and Country' (Newnes, 1902).

§ 10. 'A Century of Spain and Portugal: 1788-1898' by Lieut.-Col. G. F. WHITE (Met. 1909) is an exceptionally full and careful record, based on the study of Spanish, Portuguese, French, and German authors, with a bibliography of 14 pp. which will meet the fullest needs of any student of its period. The Spain of a century ago was well described by HENRY INGLIS in his 'Spain in 1830.' On Spain and the last generation there is an illustrated vol. by J. ZIMMERMAN, 'Spain and her People' (F.U. 1906); and there are several interesting books on Spanish cities—e.g. S. DICK's 'The Heart of Spain: An Artist's Impressions of Toledo' (1906); C. G. HARTLEY's 'Moorish Cities in Spain' (1906); CHARLES RUDY's 'Cathedrals of Northern Spain' (1906); A. F. CALVERT's 'Moorish Remains in Spain' (Lane, 1906, 4to); and RICHARD FORD's 'Gatherings from Spain' (1s. rep. Rout.), which, like his Guide Book (Mur.), is still illuminating.

'Spain' by S. DE MADARIAGA (Benn, 1930) sheds light on the dictatorial government before the Revolution; and the lecture on 'Spain since 1815' by the Marqués DE LEMA (C.U.P. 1921) is a competent short survey.

§ 11. The causation and significance of the Spanish Revolution of 1931 are set forth in J. McCabe's 'Spain in Revolt: 1814-1931' (Lane, 1931). The history of the same period is also newly written in 'Spain's Uncertain Crown,' by ROBERT SENCOURT (Benn, 1931), and, for the last generation, in 'Twenty-Nine Years: The Reign of Alfonso XIII of Spain,' by Mrs. STUART ERSKINE, with pref. by Lord Londonderry (Hut. 1931); and in 'Don Alfonso XIII: A Study of Monarchy' by the Princess PILAR of Bavaria and Major D. CHAPMAN-HESTON (Mur. 1931). That the scenes of wild violence in the wrecking of churches at and after the Revolution were results of *anti-clerical* popular feeling is to be more clearly realised from the old phenomena of the Reformation, clerical extortion having been the main pretext in both ages.

COURSE XXIV

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

VIII.—FRANCE

§ 1. THE value of small manuals of history is not as making history clear, but as furnishing a skeleton or framework of dates and development which, being fully apprehended, serves to unify further knowledge. In this way it may be useful to begin French history with such a manual as A. HASSALL's 'History of France' in the T.P.S. (1903), or Murray's 'Introductory History of France.' Further study should follow recent surveys; and the 'Student's History of France,' by A. H. Jervis, revised and in great part rewritten by A. HASSALL, with a chapter on ancient Gaul by F. HAVERFIELD (Mur.), may be recommended as fully abreast of the latest research. Of equal value is the comprehensive volume by HASSALL, entitled 'The French People' (G.P.S. Hei. 1901).

The 'Short History of France' by H. D. SEDGWICK (Har.) is a good recent manual; 'The Civilisation of France' by A. R. CURTIS (E. tr. A. & U. 1932) a sound conspectus; and the 'France: Medieval and Modern' of Mr. HASSALL (O.U.P. 1918) is his ripest work in that field. Of the longer histories of France in English that of Dean KITCHIN (Cl. Pr. 3 v.) is still a standard book; but the later 'History of France from the Death of Louis XI' by J. S. C. BRIDGE, not yet completed (Cl. Pr. 4 v. 1921-29), is the most comprehensive.

§ 2. In French, or in translations of French works, the student will of course find the fullest surveys. The 'France: a Study in Nationality' of ANDRÉ SIEGFRIED (Y.U.P. and O.U.P. 1930) is a stimulating presentment of its case. On a large scale, there is available an Eng. trans. (7 v. 4to, 1872-81) of the popular 'History of France' by GUIZOT, a work of much interest. Of this, again, there was an abridgment by G. MASSON (1879), who further compiled from the original an interesting volume of 'Episodes from French History' (1880). The shorter work of VICTOR DURUY, *Histoire de France* (2 t. many reps.), is a model in its kind, which gave the lead to popular historiography in England

by its regard for the developments of the life of the people no less than by its abundant illustrations. Of recent short histories in French the most successful appears to be the *Histoire de France* of JACQUES BAINVILLE (Fayard, 1924), which is written with much vivacity and charm.

Of the older standard French histories there are three which cover the whole national history down to their date: SISMONDI'S *Histoire des Français* (1821-44, 31 t.); B. L. H. MARTIN'S *Histoire de France* (4e éd. 17 t. 1878); and MICHELET'S *Histoire de France* (several eds.: illust. ed. 19 t.). All have great and lasting merit, but of Michelet's it is not too much to say that it is a work of genius, and unquestionably the most brilliantly attractive of the three, entering as it does into the inner life of the French people in every period. (Martin's and Michelet's histories are both obtainable in separate volumes or sections, dealing with periods.) The *Histoire des Français* of TH. LAVALLÉE, as revised and continued by MM. Lock and Dreyfous (7 t. 1886-91), retains esteem.

All previous histories of France, however, are so far eclipsed in point of scholarly exactitude and comprehensiveness by the great work of collaboration under the editorship of E. LAVISSE and A. RIMBAUD. This unequalled *Histoire de France*, begun in 1900 (Hachette), devotes 10 vols. to the history of France up to the Revolution (1900-11); whereafter 10 more vols. (1920-22), beginning with the Revolution (2 t.), cover the 19th c.

§ 3. For expressly sociological views of French history there is available in English, Guizot's 'History of Civilisation in France from the Fall of the Roman Empire' (B.L. 3 v.), which had much influence in its age as promoting intelligent sociological interpretation. Readers of French will do well, however, to study further the excellent *Histoire de la civilisation française* of ALFRED RAMBAUD (2 t.), of which the first volume covers the period from the beginning to the Fronde, and the second that from the Fronde to the Revolution. His further work, *Histoire de la civilisation contemporaine en France* (6e éd. réf. 1901), with his short *Histoire de la Révolution, 1788-1799* (1883), completes the survey, and the whole constitutes the most instructive record of the organic history of the French people that exists in the same bulk. His *Petite histoire de la civilisation française*, for the use of schools, is not unworthy the perusal of un leisured adults; and its 426 illustrations give an aid that is absent from the larger work. Those who do not demur to a more desultory and discursive survey of the ground may further find abundance both of instruction and entertainment in the curiously learned old *Histoire des*

français des divers états of A. A. MONTEIL (4e éd. 5 t. 1853), which by a variety of literary devices—as dialogues and letters—gives vivid views of French life during the five centuries to the eighteenth.

§ 4. There are a number of English works dealing with particular periods, reigns, and statesmen, as:—T. R. E. HOLMES, 'Cæsar's Conquest of Gaul' (Mac. 1899); Dr. T. Hodgkin's 'Charles the Great' (Mac. 1897); R. T. SMITH, 'The Church in Roman Gaul' (S.P.C.K. 1882); L. Sargeant's 'The Franks, from their Origin to Establishment of the Kingdom of France' (S.N.S. 1898); A. Tilley's 'Medieval France' (C.U.P.); G. Masson's 'Medieval France, from Hugues Capet to the beginning of the 16th c.' (S.N.S.); the same scholar's compilation on the 'Early Chroniclers of France' (S.P.C.K. 1879); W. H. HUTTON's 'Philip Augustus' (Mac. 1896); W. H. D. ADAMS's 'The Maid of Orleans' (Hut. 1889); Mrs. OLIPHANT's 'Jeanne d'Arc' (Heroes ser. Put. 1896); T. D. MURRAY's 'Jeanne d'Arc, Maid of Orleans' (Hei. 1902), a compilation from the original documents; and the trans. of L. PETIT DE JULLEVILLE's 'Joan of Arc' (Duck. 1901).

On the permanently interesting topic of Jeanne d'Arc (or Darc) attention may most profitably be given to the latest in English, 'The Trial of Jeanne d'Arc,' with intr. by P. BARRETT (Rout. 1931), which gives a full trans. of the documents of the trial, with an intelligent commentary. Of the scores of French works on this heroine may be mentioned:—*La Vie de Jeanne D'Arc*, by ANATOLE FRANCE (Levy, 2 t. 1923; E. tr. by Winifred Stephens—Mrs. G. Whale: Lane, 1909); the *Jeanne D'Arc* of G. HANOTAUX (1911: also pop. rep.); H. H. WALLON's *Jeanne d'Arc*, 1883, and *Procès de condamnation de Jeanne d'Arc* (1895); P. H. DUNAND, *Histoire de Jeanne d'Arc* (3 t. Toulouse, 1898-99), and *Étude historique sur les voix et visions de Jeanne d'Arc* (2 t. 1903); L. G. M. CHAMPION, *Jeanne d'Arc écuyère* (1901), and M. FÉLIX RABBE's *Jeanne d'Arc en Angleterre* (1891). See also the study under the last title in the late Prof. DARMESTETER's *Nouvelles études anglaises* (1896).

§ 5. The special relations of France with the Papacy in the Renaissance are dealt with by J. F. ANDRÉ, *Histoire de la Papauté à Avignon* (Avignon, 1887), and by N. VALOIS, *La France et le Schisme d'Occident* (2 t. 1896). The 'Church and State in France, 1300-1907' of the Rev. A. GALTON (Arnold, 1907) is a temperate and competent conspectus.

§ 6. For the period of the English domination and of recovery after Jeanne d'Arc, which is best covered by the latest scholarship in the great *Histoire* ed. by M. LAVISSE, t. IV; there are also:—F. MICHEL, *Histoire du commerce et de la navigation à*

Bordeaux sous la domination anglaise (2 t. Bordeaux, 1867-70); and G. DU FRESNE DE BEAUCOURT, *Histoire de Charles VII* (4 t. 1881, etc.). The reign of Louis XI has an entire brilliant volume in Michelet; and there are several monographs, of which that of URBAIN LEGEAY, *Histoire de Louis XI* (2 t. 1874), is the fullest. Of great value are the contemporary *Mémoires* of PHILIPPE DE COMINES, and M. DE BARANTE's *Histoire des ducs de Bourgogne* (8e éd. 8 t. 1858). For the next reign there are the *Histoire de Charles VIII* of C. DE CHERRIER (2 t. 1868); and E. MUNTZ's *La renaissance en Italie et France à l'époque de Charles VIII* (1885).

The reign of Louis XII is copiously treated by A. R. DE MAULDE LA CLAVIÈRE, *Histoire de Louis XII* (6 t. 1889-93); and the widening stream of records thenceforth yields an abundance of separate histories, as *La rivalité de François I et Charles V*, by F. A. MIGNET (2 t. 2e éd. 1876); the *Histoire de Henri II* of N. E. DE LA BARRE DUPARCQ (1887); *La Ligue et les Papes*, by H. DE L'ÉPINOIS (1886); and *La Réforme et la politique française jusqu'à la paix de Westphalie*, by Vicomte DE MEAUX (2 t. 1889). On the spirit of Catholic persecution may be specially noted the work of J. LOISELEUR, *Le Saint-Barthélemy* (1882; see also Michelet), and the monograph of H. AMPHOUX, *Michel de l'Hôpital et la liberté du conscience au 16e siècle* (1900).

§ 7. The reconstruction of France, beginning with the expulsion of the English and the end of the Hundred Years' War, can be studied in English in Dean Kitchin's history. For the period of recovery there is 'The Life and Times of Bertrand du Guesclin,' by D. F. JAMISON (2 v. 1864). For the reign of Louis XI there are the luminous monograph of P. F. WILLERT, 'The Reign of Lewis XI' (Riv. 1876); J. F. KIRK's 'Life of Charles the Bold' (3 v. 1863-68); and 'The Age of Louis XI, as described by Contemporaries,' ed. by F. W. B. SMART (Black, 1900). In the light of these works should be read the historical 'Memoirs' of PHILIP DE COMINES (E. tr. 2 v. B.L.), who belongs to that period. Thereafter there is available the excellent history of Prof. A. J. GRANT, 'The French Monarchy: 1483-1789' (2 v. C.U.P.). The period of Francis I, again, is pleasantly presented in Mdle. COIGNET's 'Francis the First and his Times' (E. tr. 1888); and in Miss PARDOE's 'Francis the First' (3 v. 1902).

§ 8. Of Huguenot history there is a very full survey in English: 'History of the Rise of the Huguenots,' by Prof. H. M. BAIRD, of N.Y. (H. & S. 2 v. 1880), and 'The Huguenots and Henry of Navarre' (same, 2 v. 1886). See also Sir H. A. LAYARD's 'The Massacre of St. Bartholomew and the Revocation of the Edict of Nantes' (priv. printed, 1888), which gives important evidence from the State

Papers of Venice. FELICE's 'History of the Protestants of France' (several Eng. tr. 1851-53) has merit, but is one-sided, and is not fully trustworthy. (The 7th ed. of the original [1880] is continued by F. BONIFAS.) Interesting monographs dealing with the same period are Sir WALTER BESANT's 'Gaspard de Coligny' (C. & W. 1894); A. W. WHITEHEAD's fuller treatise of the same title (Met. 1904); the scholarly and valuable essay of C. T. ATKINSON, 'Michel de l'Hôpital' (Lmns. 1900); and the essay of A. E. SHAW, 'Michel de l'Hôpital and his Policy' (Frowde, 1905). A fully detailed record of the religious wars of the period is given in RANKE's 'Civil Wars and Monarchy in France in the Sixteenth and Seventeenth Centuries' (E. tr. 2 v. 1852); and an able summary in E. ARMSTRONG's 'The French Wars of Religion: Their Political Aspects' (Per. 1892). The same subject occupies vol. iii of the C.M.H. The History of the Catholic League has been compressed with historical impartiality in a moderate volume by MAURICE WILKINSON (Glasgow, Jackson, 1929), 'A History of the League, or Sainte Union.' Miss E. SICHEL's 'Catherine de' Medici and the French Reformation' (Con. 1905) is a work of competent scholarship. Miss Pardoe's 'Life of Marie de Medicis' supplies biographical matter (rep. 3 v. 1902); as does H. C. MACDOWALL's 'Henry of Guise and Other Portraits' (Mac. 1898); and there are two bulky but sketchy works by MARTHA W. FREER, 'Henry III, King of France' (3 v. 1859), and 'History of the Reign of Henry IV' (1860, 2 v.), besides the works of Lady JACKSON, 'Henry III, the last of the Valois' (2 v. 1887) and 'Henry IV' (2 v. 1890). The 'Memoirs of Henry IV,' by the Duc de SULLY, are also available in trans. (B.L. 4 v.). The whole period is covered in vol. iii of the C.M.H.

Much light on this and the succeeding period is to be had from the following monographs:—H. F. WILLERT's 'Henry of Navarre and the Huguenots' (Heroes ser. 1893); R. LODGE's 'Richelieu' (Mac. 1896); GUSTAVE MASSON's 'Richelieu' (S.P.C.K. 1884); J. B. PERKINS's 'Richelieu and the Growth of the French Power' (Heroes ser. 1900), and 'France under Mazarin, with a review of the Administration of Richelieu' (Put. 2 v. 1886); and A. HASSALL's 'Mazarin' (Mac.).

§ 9. In French, for the period of Henri IV and Louis XIII, there are:—PIERRE DE VAISSIERE's *Henri IV*—the best recent monograph; A. POIRSON, *Histoire du règne de Henri IV* (4 t. 2e éd. 1862-67); C. DE LACOMBE, *Henri IV et sa politique* (3e éd. 1877); G. HANOTAUX, *Tableau de la France en 1614* (1898); F. T. PERRENS, *L'Église et l'État sous le règne de Henri III et la régence de Marie de Médicis* (2 t. 1872); B. ZELLER's *Henri IV et Marie de Médicis* (1877); and the latter historian's series of

researches on the reign of Louis XIII (4 t. 1872-99); also the old *Histoire de France sous Louis XIII* of A. BAZIN (4 t. 1838). *La France en 1614*, by G. HANOTAUX (Nelson rep. 1913), is vivid.

§ 10. On Richelieu alone there is quite a literature, in which may be noted:—L. DUSSIEUX, *Le Cardinal de Richelieu* (1886); G. Hanotaux, *Histoire du Cardinal de Richelieu* (1893-1903, 2 t.)—a performance sharply criticised in its day in France; Vicomte G. D'AVENEL, *Richelieu et la monarchie absolue* (4 t. 1884-90); JULES CAILLET, *L'Administration en France sous le ministère du Cardinal de Richelieu* (2 t. 2e éd. 1860). For the whole period of Louis XIV, VOLTAIRE's *Siècle de Louis XIV* is still illuminating; and there are many modern monographs, as the *Étude biographique sur Colbert* of L. DUSSIEUX; the *Mazarin et Colbert* of G. J. DE COSNAC; P. A. CHERVEL's *Histoire de France sous le ministère de Mazarin* (3 t. 1882); C. DE MOÛY's *Louis XIV et le Saint Siège* (2 t. 1893), and the work of C. GERIN with the same title (2 t. 1894). The famous *Mémoires* of SAINT SIMON throw a bright light on the personalities of the latter part of the reign.

§ 11. The age of Louis XIV is fully dealt with by Dean KITCHIN; still more fully in tom. vii of the LAVISSE *Histoire de France* and in vol. v of the Cambridge Modern History; and ably in the *Louis XIV* of LOUIS BERTRAND (Fayard); but there are available in English also a trans. of MARTIN's section on 'The Age of Louis XIV and the Decline of the Monarchy' (4 v. Boston, 1864-66); VOLTAIRE's famous 'Age of Louis XIV' (tr. in 18th c.); and two abridgments of the famous 'Memoirs' of the Duc de SAINT SIMON (E. tr. 4 v. Hei. 1899; another ed. 4 v. 1902, also A. & U.); Miss Pardoe's anecdotal 'Louis XIV and the Court of France' (rep. 3 v. Bagsters, 1902); J. COTTER MORISON's short monograph 'Madame de Maintenon' (1885); and IMBERT DE SAINT-AMAND's 'Court of Louis XIV' (E. tr. Hut. 1894). A series of illustrated vols. on notable women of the period has been compiled by H. N. WILLIAMS (Harp.); and M. CHARLES BASTIDE has made a charming study of 'The Anglo-French Entente in the 17th Century' (Lane, 1914).

For the next period there are J. B. PERKINS's 'France under the Regency' (Mac. 1892), and 'France under Louis XV' (same, 2 v. 1897)—works somewhat commonplace in style, but based on wide and recent research; and a trans. of 'The King's Secret,' by the Duc de BROGLIE (2 v. 1879). The work of Prof. Grant, above mentioned, here gives a valuable conspectus; and much light on the period is to be had from the monograph of R. RANKIN, 'The Marquis d'Argenson' (Lmns. 1901). The 'Journals and Memoirs of the Marquis D'Argenson, 1694-1757' are trans. (2 v. Hei. 1902). For the politico-financial evolution there are THIERS's

'The Mississippi Bubble: A Memoir of John Law' (E. tr. ed. by F. S. Fiske, N.Y. 1859), and various essays on Turgot, among them one in the 'Miscellanies' of Lord MORLEY, vol. ii; the 'Life and Writings of Turgot,' by W. W. STEPHENS (Lmns. 1895); the careful research of R. P. SHEPHERD, 'Turgot and the Six Edicts' (Col. Coll. N.Y. 1903); and LÉON SAY'S 'Turgot' (E. tr. F.U. 1888). On the period before the Revolution one of the most enlightening works is ARTHUR YOUNG'S 'Travels in France in 1787-89' (B.L. 2 v.). But the reign of Louis XVI is broadly discussed in nearly all histories of the French Revolution.

§ 12. In histories of periods French literature abounds perhaps more than any other; and in the last generation the fresh output of this kind was great. A series of over sixty small vols. at 50 c. each, edited by B. Zeller (1880, etc.), under the general title *L'Histoire de France racontée par les contemporains*, covers nearly the whole ground from Roman Gaul down to the Reformation. As each volume is complete in itself, and gives extracts from contemporary writers, with illustrations, the whole is attractive and instructive.

Among the many French studies of special periods the following may be specified: A. PIZARD, *Les origines de la nation française* (1884); G. DE MORTILLET, *La formation de la nation française* (1897); E. BOX and L. BONNEMERE, 'Histoire des Gaulois' (1882; more trustworthy than the earlier work of AMÉDÉE THIERRY, which is, however, worth study); E. CARETTE, *Les assemblées provinciales de la Gaule romaine* (1895); L. FAVÉ, *L'Empire des Francs* (1889); AMÉDÉE THIERRY, *Récits de l'histoire romaine au Ve siècle* (Catholic standpoint); and AUGUSTIN THIERRY, *Récits des temps mérovingiens* (2 t. 1840); M. PROU, *La Gaule mérovingienne* (1897); FUSTEL DE COULANGES, *Histoire des institutions de l'ancienne France* (3 t. 1877, etc.); GUIZOT'S *Essais sur l'histoire de France* (9e éd. 1857); J. FLACH, *Les origines de l'ancienne France: Hugues Capet à Louis le Gros* (1886); A. LUCHAIRE, *Histoire des institutions sous les premiers Capétiens, 987-1180* (2 t. 1883), and *Des communes françaises à l'époque des Capétiens* (1890); H. A. WALLON, *Saint Louis* (1887); C. V. LANGLOIS, 'Saint Louis' (1886) and *Philippe le Hardi* (1887); BOUTARIC, *La France sous Philippe le Bel* (1861); JULES JOLLY, *Philippe le Bel* (1869); F. AUBERT, *Le Parlement de Paris, 1314-1422* (1886); H. HERVIEU, *Recherches sur les premiers États Généraux* (1879); G. PICOT, *Histoire des États-Généraux* (4 t. 1872); *Histoire de la Jacquerie* (1894); *Jeanne d'Arc à Domrémy* (1886); and *Les Français en Russe et les Russes en France* by Prof. PINGAUD (1886).

§ 13. The Regency is treated of by A. HOUSAYE, *La Régence*

(1890), and Prof. L. WISSENER, *Le Régent, l'Abbé Dubois, et les Anglais, d'après les sources britanniques* (3 t. 1891-99); and the reign of Louis XV by A. JOBEZ, *La France sous Louis XV*; by H. CARRÉ, *La France sous Louis XV* (1891); and in the Duc DE BROGLIE's *Le secret du roi* (2 t. 1878) and *Frédéric II et Louis XV* (2 t. 1885). Nearly all histories of the next reign are connected with the Revolution, for the literature of which see § 17. Here may be noticed, however, several French monographs on Turgot (above, § 11): P. FONCIN, *Essai sur le ministère de Turgot* (1877); A. BATBIE, *Turgot: Philosophe, économiste et administrateur* (1861); A. NEYMARCK, *Turgot et ses doctrines* (2 t. 1885). *Les Assemblées provinciales sous Louis XVI*, by LEONCE DE LAVERGNE (1864), has a special interest.

§ 14. On the period of French activity in India see the works specified in Course XXXIX; to which may be added the following in French: G. HAURIGOT, *Les établissements français dans l'Inde* (1887); A. CASTONNET DES FOSSES, *L'Inde française avant Dupleix* (1887); A. CLARIN DE LA RIVE, *Dupleix* (1888); T. HAMONT, *La fin d'un empire français: Lally Tollendal* (1887), and *Un essai d'empire français dans l'Inde* (1881); H. WEBER, *La Compagnie Française des Indes, 1604-1875* (1904); P. CULTON, *Dupleix: ses plans politiques; sa disgrâce* (1901); J. SOLTAS, *Une escadre française aux Indes en 1600; Histoire de la Compagnie Royale des Indes Orientales, 1664-1719* (1905). In English see also S. C. HILL's 'Three Frenchmen in Bengal' (Lmns. 1903).

§ 15. The history of the French power in North America has been freshly studied and recorded in 'The Rise and Fall of New France,' by Prof. G. M. WRONG (Mac. 1929). The course of events in Canada is to be gathered from a number of the English works specified in Course XLV, especially those of Parkman; also from the following: J. FISKE, 'New France and New England' (Mac. 1902); A. G. BRADLEY, 'The Fight with France for North America' (Con. 1902); JUSTIN WINSOR, 'The Struggle in America between England and France, 1697-1763' (Low, 1895); N. E. DIONNE, *La Nouvelle France, 1540-1603* (Quebec, 1891); R. DE GOURMON, *Les français au Canada* (1888); E. GUÉNIN, *Histoire de la colonisation: La Nouvelle France* (1898); E. A. DIX, 'Champlain, the Founder of New France' (N.Y. 1903); J. E. MYRAND, *Frontenac et ses amis* (Q. 1902); T. CHAPPAIS, *Jean Talon, intendant de la Nouvelle France, 1665-1672* (Q. 1904); C. CANIVET, *Les colonies perdues* (Paris, 1884).

French action during the American War of Independence is set forth by E. M. STONE, 'Our French Allies in the Revolution' (U.S.A. 1884); T. BALCH, 'The French in America during the War of Independence' (Philad. 1895); and H. DONIOL, *Histoire*

de la participation de la France à l'établissement des États-Unis (5 t. 1886-99).

§ 16. Of sociological or social surveys of periods there has also been a great production. Of notable interest are the *Histoire de la population française* of LUCIEN SCHÖNE (1893: pref. by Levasseur), and EUGENE POIRÉ'S *L'Emigration française aux Colonies* (1897). J. B. M. A. CHALLAMEL, whose 'History of Fashion in France' was trans. in English (1882), has produced several other interesting books, among which may be noted *La France et les français à travers les siècles* (2 t. 1882-83) and *La France à vol d'oiseau au moyen âge* (1887); and M. VICTOR DU BLED has published *La société française du XVIe au XXe siècle* (1900). In the way of exact social-historical research may be noted the short essay of M. L. BONNEMÈRE, *Les jeux publics et le théâtre chez les Gaulois* (1888); the work of M. C. DE LA PÂQUERIE, *La vie féodale en France du IXe siècle à la fin du XVe* (1900); that of A. FRANKLIN, *La vie privée d'autrefois* (1887), which deals with the arts and industries of Paris from the 12th to the 18th c.; that of L. GARREAU, *L'état social de la France au temps des Croisades* (1899); and that of S. LUCE, *La France pendant la guerre de cent ans* (1890).

From the work of Monteil, of which the chief drawback is its formlessness, M. C. LOUANDRE has compiled an *Histoire de l'industrie française et des gens des métiers* (2 t. 1872) and an *Histoire agricole de la France . . . depuis l'époque gauloise jusqu'à nos jours* (1880); and there is an *Histoire des classes rurales en France*, by H. DONIOL (2e éd. 1865); also a study on *L'économie sociale de la France sous Henri IV*, by G. FAGNIEZ (1899). M. Louandre gives high praise to the *Études sur la condition de la classe agricole en Normandie au moyen âge* of L. DELISLE (1851); and there is an *Histoire des classes agricoles en France*, by F. H. DARESTE DE LA CHAVANNE (2e éd. 1858). Among works on city life may be noted the *Histoire de Paris* (1852) of TH. LAVALLÉE, the author of the *Histoire des Français* above mentioned; and among political studies *Les origines de la révolution française au commencement du 16e siècle* of M. DE MAULDE LA CLAVIÈRE (1889), and the two works of F. J. PERRENS, *L'Église et l'état en France sous le règne de Henri IV* (2 t. 1872-73) and *La démocratie en France au moyen âge* (2e éd. 1875). The work of F. MORIN, *Origines de la démocratie: La France au moyen âge* (3e éd. 1865), deserves special attention for its criticism of previously established views.

Yet further studies of the social life of periods are: M. A. C. GIDEL'S *Les Français du XVIIe siècle* (1893); T. F. CRANE'S *La Société française au XVIIe siècle* (New York, 1897); the *En France, XVIIIe et XIXe siècles* of A. J. F. MÉZIÈRES (1883);

the works of Baron A. DE CALONNE, *La vie municipale au XVe siècle dans le Nord de France* (1880), and M. R. MINON, *La vie dans le Nord de la France au XVIIIe siècle* (1898); the elder Comte DE TOCQUEVILLE'S *Histoire philosophique du règne de Louis XV* (2 t. 1847); and C. AUBERTIN'S *L'esprit public au XVIIIe siècle* (1873). Old French court life has found American and English historians: see the 'Old Court Life in France' of Miss F. ELLIOTT (rep. Put. 2 v. 1893); Lady C. C. JACKSON'S 'Court of France in the Sixteenth Century' (2 v. 1886); and 'The French Court and Society in the Reign of Louis XVI and the First Empire' (2 v. 1881).

Special value attaches to the series of works by ALBERT BABEAU (1883-85): *Le village sous l'ancien régime*; *La ville sous l'ancien régime* (2 t.); *La vie rurale dans l'ancienne France*; *La vie militaire sous l'ancien régime* (2 t.); *Les artisans et les domestiques d'autrefois*; *Les bourgeois d'autrefois* (all Perrin).

§ 17. The French Revolution has a whole literature of its own, even in English, the later books being the more elucidatory. 'A Short History of the French Revolution: 1789-1795,' by E. D. BRADBY (Cl. Pr. 1926), is a good compendium, well abreast of French research; as is 'The French Revolution: A Short History' by R. M. JOHNSTON (Mac.). Other helpful surveys are Sir C. E. Mallet's 'The French Revolution' (Mur. U.E.M.); the manual of the same title by Prof. J. E. SYMES (Met. 1892); and that by Mrs. S. R. GARDINER (Lmns.). With any of these may be read P. A. BROWN'S 'The French Revolution in English History' (with intr. by Prof. Gilbert Murray: A. & U. 1923). The old short histories by MIGNET and MICHELET are trans. in B.L.; and a restricted study may be usefully approached by way of the 'Lectures on the French Revolution' of the late Lord ACTON (ed. by J. N. Figgis and R. V. Lawrence; Mac.). Those who desire to approach the subject through the brilliant book of CARLYLE should read that work in the completely annotated edition of C. R. L. FLETCHER (Met. 3 v. 1902), such annotation being very necessary for accurate knowledge. [Compare 'The Flight to Varennes' of OSCAR BROWNING (Son. 1892).] The 'Select Documents illustrative of the French Revolution,' ed. by L. G. W. LEGG (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1905), throw light.

For an exact and comprehensive view of the subject in the light of recent research the student should turn to the very full survey, by various hands, in the 8th vol. of the C.M.H. 'The Causes of the War of 1792' by J. H. CLAPHAM (C.U.P. 1899) is a good research. A number of English monographs of varying merit, on leading men of the French Revolution, were published, in the last generation, as:—E. BELFORT BAX, 'Jean-Paul Marat'

(1901); H. BELLOC, 'Danton' and 'Robespierre' (Nisbet, 1899, 1901); and the 'Life of Danton' by A. H. BEESLY (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1899). (On Robespierre recourse should be had to recent French research, represented in the later histories.) On Mirabeau there are monographs by P. F. WILLERT (Mac.) and H. DE JOUVENEL (E. tr. Har.). The *Procès des Dantonistes* of Dr. ROBINET (1879) remains important. There is a translation, too, of the 'Diary and Correspondence of Count Fersen' (Hei. 1902); and of the work of A. DUNOYER on Fouquier-Tinville (E. tr. 'The Public Prosecutor of the Terror,' Jenkins, 1914). The interesting Lives of Madame Roland are historically elucidatory through some of her corr.; and the searching 'Madame Roland' of IDA M. TARBELL (1896) has a good bibliography. The latest Life is by MADELEINE CLEMENCEAU-JACQUEMAIRE (Lmns. 1930). M. MADELIN deals acutely with Mme. Roland in his *Les Hommes de la Révolution* (1928).

The older French histories of the Revolution by THIERS (E. tr. last ed. 5 v. 1895) and LAMARTINE ('History of the Girondins,' 6 v.) have merits, as has that of VON SYBEL (E. tr. 4 v. 1867-69); and the works of A. DE TOCQUEVILLE, *L'ancien régime* (E. tr. entit. 'On the State of Society in France before the Revolution of 1789'; Mur. 3rd ed. 1888) and *Coup d'œil sur le règne de Louis XVI* (1850), are still well worth reading, as is that of JOSEPH DROZ, *Histoire du règne de Louis XVI pendant les années où l'on pouvait prévenir ou diriger la révolution française* (3 t. 1839-42, and later: 1-vol. ed. 1839); but those who aim at an accurate knowledge should turn to the histories produced in the past fifty years. There is a good short survey by M. DE BROU, *La France sous l'ancien régime* (1887); and another by DONIOL, *La révolution française et la féodalité* (2e éd. 1883).

The four leading modern authorities, representing broadly two political points of view, are MM. TAINÉ, SOREL, AULARD, and JAURÈS. LOUIS BLANC's history, written from a Socialistic standpoint, has somewhat missed its mark (12 t. 1847-62; rep. in 2 t. 4to illust. 1883). Taine's brilliant series of studies—*Les origines de la France contemporaine*, 6 tom.: 1. *L'ancien régime*; 2-4. *La révolution*: (1) *L'anarchie*, (2) *La conquête Jacobine*, (3) *Le gouvernement révolutionnaire*; 5-6. *Le régime moderne*—trans. in Eng. by J. Durand (Low, 6 v. 1876-94)—represent an important investigation and critical effort, though also the mood of an individualist who sought to combat the menace of Socialism. M. Sorel dealt in a more sober and a more just spirit with the subject in *L'Europe et la révolution française*: t. i, *Les mœurs politiques et les traditions* (1885); t. ii, *La chute de la royauté* (1887); t. iii, *La guerre aux rois* (1891); t. iv, *Les limites naturelles*

(1892)—all works of learning and judgment, as is his *Bonaparte et Hoche en 1797* (1895).

But the most thorough of all the students of the Revolution, so far, was F. V. A. Aulard, whose *Histoire politique de la révolution française* (1901) is, on the political side, a decisive work; and whose monograph, *Le culte de la Raison et le culte de l'Être suprême* (Alcan, 1892), is one of the completest studies of its kind in the literature of the Revolution. His final monograph, *Le Christianisme et la révolution française* (Rieder, 1925), is worthy of his reputation. His series of *Études et leçons sur la révolution française* (4 t. 1893-1904) is a repertory of much learning, to which, however, additions were constantly being made in the periodical *La révolution française*, which M. Aulard edited. The section in four massive vols. which covers the Revolution in the *Histoire Socialiste: 1789-1900*, edited by the late JEAN JAURÈS, has received praise from French experts for its original grasp and exposition of the subject. [12 t. in all, with *Table analytique*; i-iv, and xi-xii in part, by Jaurès: the rest by collaborators.]

The main merit of Taine's work, exhibited in his treatment of the Revolution in itself, was its strict exposition of the grim facts, in defiance of the convention of "respecting" the entire episode. It cannot be said that this convention has yet been dismissed in *La Révolution* by Dr. LOUIS MADELIN, though that is a work of scholarly sobriety, well entitled to be *couronné*—as it was by the Académie (Hachette, 1913); but it has not affected the sane and lucid narrative of M. BAINVILLE (§ 2), or the very popular work of PIERRE GAXOTTE, *La Révolution française* (Fayard, 1926). The older work of the député G. C. D'ORNANO, *La république de Napoléon* (1894), carries the history of French republicanism down to its date.

An unceasing activity in re-examination of the past has yielded a multitude of later special studies of aspects of the Revolution. Thus M. G. LENÔTRE, proceeding on his independent researches, has produced *Le Tribunal révolutionnaire, 1793-1795*; *La Guillotine pendant la Révolution*; *Paris révolutionnaire*; *Les Massacres de Septembre 1792*; *La Captivité et la Mort de Marie Antoinette*; *Le drame de Varennes*; *Les Noyades de Nantes*, and a dozen other expert studies, which find a public seldom equalled for any historic writer in England. The older *Étude sur Fouché et sur le communisme dans la pratique en 1793*, of the Comte DE MARTEL (1873), like his smaller *Études sur Louvois et sur Dubois*, proceeds on a close study of documents.

§ 18. An important side of the Revolution is dealt with in W. M. SLOANE'S 'The French Revolution and Religious Reform' (H. & S. 1902), and in 'The Gallican Church and the Revolution' by the

Rev. W. H. JERVIS (K.P. 1882); also in E. DE PRESSENSÉ'S *L'église et la révolution française* (1889); in E. BIRÉ'S *Le clergé de France pendant la révolution* (Lyon, 1901); and in M. Aulard's *La révolution française et les congrégations* (1903). On the clerical side have been published *L'école sous la révolution française*, by VICTOR PIERRE, and *L'instruction primaire en France avant la révolution*, by L'Abbé ALLAIN (both 1881).

Among the multitude of monographs may be noted also the *Histoire de Troyes pendant la révolution*, by ALBERT BABEAU, and the same writer's *Paris en 1789*; *La prise de la Bastille*, by GUSTAVE BORD (1882); and the bulky work of H. DE BEAUCHONE on poor Louis XVII, which has gone through some 20 editions (2 t.). On the nobility who "emigrated" to fight the Revolution there are a number of works, notably E. DAUDET'S *Histoire de l'émigration pendant la révolution* (last ed. 2 t. 1904-5) and H. FORNERON'S *Histoire des émigrés pendant la révolution* (2 t. 1884). E. Daudet has also produced an *Histoire des conspirations royalistes du Midi sous la révolution, 1790-93*. The special history of the Directorate is handled by F. ROCQUAIN in *L'état de France au 18ième Brumaire*. Further, there have been produced a number of local histories of the Revolution, by A. DENIS, P. MARÉCHAL, J. PARTHIST, E. L. BORREL, and others.

§ 19. On the Napoleonic period there is almost as extensive a literature as on the Revolution. For those who want more than the general surveys, there is the voluminous but vivacious (and too often erroneous) work of THIERS, 'History of the Consulate and the Empire' (E. tr. last ed. C. & W. 12 v. 1893-94). To 'Napoleon' the 9th vol. of the C.M.H. is entirely devoted. Less bulky studies are:—THIBEAUDEAU'S 'Bonaparte and the Consulate' (E. tr. ed. by Dr. G. K. Fortescue: Met. 1908); 'Napoleon and England: 1803-1813: A Study from Unprinted Documents' by P. COQUELLE (E. tr. with intr. by Dr. J. H. ROSE: Bell, 1904); 'England and Napoleon in 1803,' equally based on unpub. documents, ed. by OSCAR BROWNING (Lmns. 1887); 'A Narrative of the Events which have taken place in France' (in 1815)—a series of contemporary letters by HELEN M. WILLIAMS (Cleveland, 1895); H. BUTTERFIELD, 'The Peace Treaties of Napoleon: 1806-1808' (C.U.P.); C. C. FAURIEL'S 'Last Days of the Consulate' (E. tr. 1885, Low), and the valuable work of F. CORRÉARD, *La France sous le consulat* (1899); and the 2 t. of the *Histoire Socialiste* covering the period. Of the Duc DE PASQUIER'S Memoirs, which deal with this time, three vols. were trans. under the title 'A History of My Time' (F.U. 1893-94; orig. 6 t. 1893-95). An important step in Napoleon's reign is fully set forth in *Les origines du concordat*, by

L. SÉCHÉ (2 t. 1894). Captain A. T. MAHAN's 'Influence of Sea Power upon the French Revolution and Empire' (2 v. Low, 1893) is highly esteemed by militarists; and the brilliant work of HENRI HOUSSAYE, '1815,' is trans.: '1815: Waterloo' (Black, 1900). See also his '1814'; and '1804-1805: *L'Épopée du Sacre*' by G. D'ESPARBÈS (H. FLEISCHMANN) with pref. by Houssaye.

Of Napoleon there are many lives in English as well as in French. These include:—'The Man Napoleon' by W. H. HUDSON (Har. 1915); A. HASSALL's 'Life of Napoleon' (Met.); A. GRIFFITHS' 'Life of Napoleon' (1902); R. M. JOHNSTON's 'Napoleon' (Mac. 1904); and the standard 'Life of Napoleon I' by Dr. J. H. ROSE (Bell, 6th ed. rev. 1915), who has also issued a vol. of 'Napoleonic Studies' (same, 1904), and 'The Personality of Napoleon' (same). His books give the best and latest light on the subject. Sir J. R. Seeley's 'Short History of Napoleon' (S. S. & Co. 1886) is a notable indictment. Other monographs are T. P. O'CONNOR's 'Napoleon' (C. & H. 1896); S. BARING GOULD's 'Life of Napoleon Bonaparte' (Met. 1897, 4to), and W. M. SLOANE's bulky 'Life of Napoleon' (N.Y. 1896, 4 v.). Baron MÉNEVAL's 'Memoirs to serve for the History of Napoleon' are trans. (3 v. 1894, Hut.).

On the military side E. L. S. Horsburgh's 'Waterloo' (Met. 1895) has great merit and exactitude; and Lord Wolseley's 'The Decline and Fall of Napoleon' (1895) is a competent and interesting performance. Lord ROSEBURY's 'Napoleon: the Last Phase' (1900) is a vivid sketch. 'The Story of Napoleon's Death-Mask' by G. L. DE ST. M. WATSON (Lane, 1915) should be read for its exposure of the historic falsehood of the generally current portrait. The popular and laudatory 'Napoleon' of T. E. WATSON (Mac. N.Y. 1910) may be turned to for a eulogistic view. On the other hand, 'The Real Martyr of St. Helena,' by T. DUNDAS PILLANS (Melrose, 1913), is an interesting vindication of Sir Hudson Lowe, previously vilified by the pro-Napoleonic school; while 'Napoleon the Gaoler,' by E. FRASER (Met. 1914), does not aggrandise the Emperor.

Other additions to the Napoleon literature are:—'Napoleon in Captivity' by JULIAN PARK (A. & U. 1928); 'The Growth of Napoleon: A Study in Environment,' by NORWOOD YOUNG (Mur. 1910); 'The First Napoleon: Some Unpublished Documents,' edited by the EARL OF KERRY (Mur. 1925); 'The Life of Napoleon Bonaparte: A History,' by Prof. W. M. SLOANE (Times Bk. Cl. 1912); 'The Tragedy of St. Helena,' by Sir WALTER RUNCIMAN (F.U. 1911).

Typical French lives and studies are:—Comte ALBERT VANDAL's *Napoléon Intime* (1813) and *L'Avènement de Bonaparte* (2 t. 1902:

both rep. in Nelson's coll.); LANFREY's hostile *Histoire de Napoléon* (E. tr. 4 v. 1871-79); JULES BARNI's *Napoléon Ier* (1870), a stringent polemic against the laudatory account given by Thiers; and T. JUNG's *Bonaparte et son temps* (3 t. 1880-81), no less destructive than the others. In 1898 appeared *Napoléon I^{er}: essai psychologique et historique* by ALBERT MEYNIER; and there is a compendious *Histoire de Napoléon* by D. LACROIX (1902). A 'Bibliography of Napoleon' has been compiled by F. KIRCHEISEN (Berlin, 1902) and published in England (Low, 1902). To that list, many volumes have been added within the past generation. Latterly there appears to be much more anti-Napoleonic sentiment in France than in England (as to which an eminent French expert declared, a generation ago, that her outstanding heroes at that time were Jeanne D'Arc and Napoleon). *Les Origines de la Légende Napoléonienne*, by PHILIPPE GOUNARD (1906), attempts a diagnosis. The work of M. GASTON-ROUTIER, *Le Napoléon de mes Rêves* (1911), brings at least good literary quality to the side of the defence. *Sur la Légende de Napoléon*, by JULES DESCHAMPS (Champion, 1931), is one of the latest treatises.

The short life of Napoleon's son, "the King of Rome," is best collected in 'The Duke of Reichstadt (Napoleon II)' by E. DE WERTHEIMER (Eng. ed. Lane, 1906).

§ 20. Even the not very interesting Restoration period (1814-30) has a considerable literature. Sir J. R. HALL's 'The Bourbon Restoration' (A. Rivers, 1909) is an adequate book. Recently there has been a notable, if partisan, vindication in *La Restauration* by the Marquis DE ROUX (Fayard, 1931); and the work of Dr. F. B. ARTZ of Harvard, 'France under the Bourbon Restoration' (Milford, 1931), is sympathetic to the point of enthusiasm in its account of the literary revival. Vol. X of the C.M.H., 'The Restoration,' is a more sober record, by several hands. E. Daudet's *Histoire de la restauration* (1882) gives a compendious monarchist record; there is another work of the same title by F. H. DARESTE DE LA CHAVANNE (2 t. 1879); and P. THUREAU-DANGIN has dealt with the political life in *Le parti libéral sous la restauration* (1876) and *Royalistes et républicains* (1874). Those who wish a more minute knowledge of personalities on the political side may peruse the Memoirs of Talleyrand-Perigord (E. tr. 5 v. 1891-92). There is in English also an old 'Narrative of the French Revolution in 1830' (Paris, 1830). For the history of the reign of Louis-Philippe, which followed, there is a sufficiency of French narrative—e.g. the compendious *Histoire de Louis-Philippe* of E. ZEVORT (1885); the *Histoire de la monarchie de Juillet* of C. BARTHELEMY; and the copious *Histoire de la monarchie de Juillet* of P. THUREAU-DANGIN (4 t. 1884-87). Sir J. R. HALL's 'England

and the Orléans Monarchy' (S.E. 1912) is at once a lucid view of the French history of the period and a good account of the European relations. The Restoration period up to 1848 is dealt with also in the Jaurès *Histoire Socialiste*.

§ 21. Then comes the republican Revolution of 1848, variously described in the *Histoire de la révolution de 1848* of "Daniel Stern" (1881); in the separate section of the Jaurès *Histoire Socialiste*; and in LAMARTINE'S *Histoire de la révolution de 1848*. Of the Second Republic, thus established, there are detailed histories: P. DE LA GORCE, *Histoire de la deuxième république* (2 t. 1887); V. PIERRE, *Histoire de la deuxième république* (2 t. 1873-78); E. SPULLER, *Histoire parlementaire de la deuxième république* (1891). On this sociologically interesting episode may be noted further the monograph of E. PICATTIER, *Les ateliers nationaux en 1848* (1899), and the old *Histoire des ateliers nationaux* of ÉMILE THOMAS (1848).

§ 22. The Third Empire began with the *coup d'état* of 1851, narrated in V. SCHOELCHER'S *Les crimes du deux Décembre* and *Le gouvernement du deux Décembre*, both published in London in 1853; also in the more famous 'History of a Crime' of VICTOR HUGO (E. tr. 1886, 1888). There is also an Eng. trans. of the work of C. E. DE MAUPAS, 'The Story of the Coup d'Etat'—"freely" done, with notes, by A. D. VANDAM (2 v. 1884). On the life and reign of Napoleon III there are in English:—'Louis Napoleon and the Genesis of the Second Empire,' by F. H. CHEETHAM (Lane, 1909); 'Napoleon III' by E. B. D'AUVERGNE (Nash & G. 1929)—an impartial study, not wholly unfavourable; P. GUEDALLA'S 'The Second Empire' (H. & S. 1922: cheap rep. 1929); and 'The Life of Napoleon the Third,' by ARCHIBALD FORBES (C. & W. 1898). In French may be noted *Le deuxième empire*, by C. BARTHÉLÉMY (1889); the *Histoire de Napoléon III* of J. M. VILLEFRANCHE (2 t. 1897); and G. WEIL'S *Histoire du parti républicain de 1814 à 1870* (1900).

§ 23. Of the Paris Commune of 1871 there is a short account in English by E. BELFORT BAX, 'History of the Paris Commune' (1895); and there is a trans. of the longer 'History of the Commune of 1871' of LISSAGARAY (F.U. 1902). 'The Paris Commune: an Episode in the History of the Socialist Movement,' by Prof. E. S. MASON (Mac.), is a careful history. The *Histoire de la commune de Paris*, by P. VÉSINIER, who had been Secretary of the Commune and editor of its *Journal Officiel*, was published in London (C. & H. 1871). Later works are: G. DA COSTA, *La commune vécue* (3 t. 1903-5); C. BLEIBTREU, *Die Commune* (1905); and G. LEFRANÇAIS, *Souvenirs d'un révolutionnaire* (Brux. 1903). There is an old general *Histoire de Communisme*,

by ALFRED SUDRE (1849, several rep.; addns. made in Ger. tr. 1882), which claims to be a "historic refutation of Socialist Utopias." See also the sections of the *Histoire Socialiste* dealing with the war and the Commune.

§ 24. There were already a number of histories of the Third Republic before 1900. That of E. GOUBERTIN was trans.: 'The Evolution of France under the Third Republic' (N.Y. 1897); also that of G. Hanotaux, 'Contemporary France' (E. tr. Con. 2 v. 1903-5); and in English there are OSCAR BROWNING'S 'Modern France: 1814-1879' (Lmns. 1890), and Miss E. W. LATIMER'S 'France in the Nineteenth Century' (Hut. 1906). Among the untrans. works are GIRARD'S *Histoire de la troisième république* (1885), which gives 748 pages to the record of fifteen years, and the later *Histoire de la troisième république* of E. ZEVORT (1896).

French relations with the rest of the world were set forth in the competent *Histoire contemporaine de l'Europe et de la France, 1789-1889*, of F. CORRÉARD (1892), and in the careful *Abrégé de l'histoire contemporaine* of A. LACROIX (1886). See also the great work of Ch. SEIGNOBOS, *Histoire politique de l'Europe contemporaine, 1814-1896* (1897), which has been trans. (Hei. 2 v. 1901), and the *Histoire de France depuis la révolution de Juillet* of A. RASTOUL (2 pt. 1891-92). The episode of General Boulanger, dealt with in that work, has a French literature of its own. The later developments down to the War are dealt with in the comprehensive 'History of Modern France, 1815-1913,' by E. BOURGEOIS (C.U.P.).

§ 25. Of English books on modern French life the number is great. A good deal of praise was given to the work of J. E. C. BODLEY, entitled 'France' (Mac. rev. ed. in 1 v. 1899); but that of Miss BETHAM-EDWARDS, 'France of To-day' (2 v. 1892-94, Percival), was in some respects preferable. The work of the accomplished Italian scholar A. DE GUBERNATIS, *La France* (1891), gives yet another point of view. Two other good studies are P. G. HAMERTON'S 'French and English' (Mac. 1889) and W. C. BROWNELL'S 'French Traits' (Scrib. 1889)—the former being specially instructive. 'The Real France,' by LAURENCE JERROLD (Lane, 1911), is an intimate account of the later pre-war developments to its date, by one who lived through them. The famous Dreyfus case is narrated in 'Dreyfus' by WALTER STEINTHAL (E. tr. A. & U. 1931).

§ 26. A good short sketch of French ecclesiastical history in the 19th c. is given by CH. GUIEYSSE, *L'Église au 19e Siècle* (1904), dealing with *cléricaux, gouvernants, révolutionnaires*.

On the course of religious politics further light is thrown by G. RAUX'S *La république et le concordat de 1801* (1805): the Duc

de Broglie's *Le concordat* (1893); E. SÉVESTRE'S *L'histoire, le texte et la destinée du concordat de 1801* (1905); Baron MANDAT-GRANCEY'S *Le clergé français et le concordat* (1905); Cardinal F. D. MATHIEU'S *Le concordat de 1801* (1903); and EDMÉ CHAMPION'S *La séparation de l'Église et de l'État* (1903).

§ 27. A large amount of modern French energy has gone to quasi-colonising, or *ingérence* in the affairs of Asiatic, African, and other communities. The history of this is written in such works as *La France puissance coloniale*, by H. LORIN (1905); H. CONRAD, *La France et ses colonies* (1902); *La France à Madagascar (1815-1895)*, by LOUIS BRUNET (2e éd. 1895); L. VIGNON, *L'exploitation de notre empire colonial* (1900); *L'expansion de la France* (1891); *La France en Algérie* (1893); JULES HERMANN, *Colonisation de l'Île Bourbon* (1900); P. MASSON, *Histoire des établissements français dans l'Afrique barbaresque* (1903); A. BONTIN, *Anciennes relations de la France avec la Barbarie, 1575-1830* (1902); A. CUNNINGHAM, 'The French in Tonkin and South China' (Hong Kong, 1902); H. CHENEAU, *Du protectorat français au Tonkin* (1904). The position in Tunis is discussed by R. BLANCHARD, *La Tunisie au début du XX^{me} siècle* (1904) and by H. PENSA, *L'Avenir de la Tunisie* (1903).

§ 28. The share of France in the World War is dealt with in Course LI. Her post-war politics may at this stage be best gathered from the memoirs of MM. CLEMENCEAU and POINCARÉ. The 'Memoirs' of the latter are trans. by Sir G. ARTHUR (Hei. 4 v. 1926-30); and there are trs. of Clemenceau's 'In the Evening of my Thoughts' (Con. 2 v. 1929), and 'Grandeur and Misery of Victory,' which treats of the negotiations at Versailles (Har. 1930). See also J. J. A. MORDACQ, *Ministère Clemenceau* (4 t. 1930-31). Concerning Clemenceau and his action, *L'Esprit de Clemenceau* by LÉON TREICH (in the Gallimard *Collection d'Anas*, 1925) may be read alongside of *Jaurès et Caillaux: Notes et Souvenirs*, by CH. PAIX-SÉAILLES (pref. by H. Barbusse: Figuière, n.d.). Other side-lights are thrown by such booklets (undated) as *Maintenant*, by G. BEAUVISAGE, sénateur; *Sur la Route Sociale*, by ANDRÉ LEBEY, député (2 t.) and *Aujourd'hui . . . Demain*, by ISIDORE TOURNAN, député (all Figuière); and the *Tableau des Partis de France* of ANDRÉ SIEGFRIED (1931). See also the works by SOLTAU, SALT, and MORRISON, named in Course XIV, § 12.

COURSE XXV

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

IX.—THE NETHERLANDS (HOLLAND)

§ 1. FOR the period which it covers (1433 to 1917) the C.H.S. 'History of Holland' by Dr. GEORGE EDMUNDSON (C.U.P. 1922) is the best compendious history of the Netherlands in English. THOROLD ROGERS's 'Holland' is not the best in the S.N.S., and does not wholly supersede the older work of T. COLLEY GRATTAN, 'The Netherlands.' The larger work of T. DAVIES, 'The History of Holland' (3 v. 1841), is studious and trustworthy, but not very readable; so that the English reader can best study Dutch history as a whole in the slightly abridged trans. of P. BLOK's 'History of the People of the Netherlands' (Put. 5 v. 1898, etc.)—the best modern Dutch history from a sociological point of view (orig. *Geschiedenis van het nederlandsche Volk*, Groningen, 5 v. 1892–1902; also trans. in German in Heeren and Ukert's Series, *Geschichte der Niederlande*, 1902, etc.). A. YOUNG's 'Short History of Belgium and Holland' (F.U. 1915) is a popular narrative, largely dealing with Holland.

§ 2. For a fuller narrative the reader of Dutch will turn to Blok's *Geschiedenis* in the original; and there are available the German trans. of the older work of N. G. VAN KAMPEN, *Geschichte der Niederlande*, in the Heeren–Ukert series (2 Bde. 1831–33), and the later *Geschichte der Niederlande* of WENZELBURGER (2 Bde. 1879–86, same ser.), which is considerably fuller for some periods. In these works the history of what is now Holland is bound up with that of Flanders, now Belgium, "the Netherlands" including both; so that the *Histoire de Flandre* of LETTENHOVE (6 t. 1847–50, several eds.) and the *Flandrische Staats- und Rechtsgeschichte bis zum Jahr 1304* of WARNKOENIG (3 Bde. 1835–42, tr. in French as *Histoire de Flandre jusqu' à l'année 1305*, 2 t. 1835–36) are for their period on all fours with the German works above mentioned. From the standard modern Dutch histories may be selected the *Geschiedenis van het Nederland* of J. A. VIJNNE and *De Geschiedenis van Nederland* of J. VAN LENNEP.

§ 3. The history of the Low Countries first becomes dramati-

cally and internationally interesting in the period of the Van Artevelde; and for this the English reader has Prof. W. J. ASHLEY's 'James and Philip van Artevelde,' the Lothian Prize Essay for 1882 (Mac. 1883), which is based, albeit critically, on the *Jacques d'Artevelde* of LETTENHOVE (1863) and VANDERKINDERE's *Le siècle des Artevelde* (1879); also J. HUTTON's 'James and Philip van Arteveld' (Mur. 1882). There is a good monograph by RUTH PUTNAM, 'A Mediæval Princess: A Record of Jacqueline, Countess of Holland' (Put. 1904); also one by her on 'William the Silent' (1895); and yet another on 'Charles the Bold' (same, 1908). For a great part of Flemish and Dutch history BARANTE's *Histoire des Ducs de Bourgogne* (4e éd. 1838-40, 10 t.) has importance; and there is a very copious research by Lettenhove on the rise of Protestantism in the Low Countries, *Les Huguenots et les Gueux* (6 t. 1883-85). In vol. i of the Cambridge Modern History the period 1477-1515 is well handled by Prof. A. W. WARD.

For the great period of the Dutch struggle for independence the English reader will of course turn to MOTLEY's 'Rise of the Dutch Republic' (1856, several reps.), and for the next generation to the same writer's 'History of the United Netherlands' (Mur. 4 v. 1861-68) and 'Life and Death of John of Oldenbarnevelt' (Mur. 2 v. 1874). The series of studies by TH. JUSTE: *La fondation de la république des Provinces-Unies: Guillaume le Taciturne* (1873), *Les Pays-Bas au 16e siècle* (1862); *Les Pays-Bas sous Charles Quint* (1855), and *Les Pays-Bas sous Philippe II* (2 t. 1884-88) form an attractive period-survey.

The next great figure in Dutch history, John de Witt, is the subject of a copious French monograph by A. LEFÈVRE PONTALIS, *Vingt années de république parlementaire au 17e siècle: Jean de Witt, Grand Pensionnaire de Hollande* (2 t. 1884), which has been trans. into English under the title 'The Life of John de Witt' (2 v. Lmns. 1885). There is also an English work by J. GEDDES, 'History of the Administration of John de Witt,' not completed (K.P. vol. i. 1879); and a Dutch research by P. SIMONS, *Johan de Witt en zijn Tijd* (2 v. 1832-35; Ger. tr. 2 Bde. 1835-36). L. P. GACHARD has 3 vols. of *Études concernant l'histoire des Pays Bas* (Brux. 1890).

§ 4. The period of decline from the zenith is specially presented in 'The Fall of the Dutch Republic,' by H. W. VAN LOON (Con. 1913); but is, of course, studied in the general histories. G. EDMUNDSON's lecture on 'Anglo-Dutch Rivalry through the first half of the 17th Century' (Cl. Pr. 1911) surveys the period of pre-Restoration hostility. The sequel is considered by Rogers.

§ 5. The social and industrial evolution of the Low Countries is to some extent to be gathered from the following:—A. WAUTERS, *Les libertés communales* (Brux. 1878); J. R. McCULLOCH, 'Essay on the Rise, Progress, and Decline of Commerce in Holland' in his 'Essays and Treatises' (2nd ed. 1859); W. TORRENS McCULLAGH, 'Industrial History of the Free Nations,' vol. ii (1846); Sir W. Temple, 'Observations upon the United Provinces,' 1672 (rep. in Works, 1814, vol. i); and the so-called 'Memoirs of John Witt,' otherwise 'The True Interest of Holland,' or 'Political Maxims of the State of Holland'—really written for the most part by De Witt's friend, Delacourt, and trans. under the title 'The True Interest and Political Maxims of the Republic of Holland' in 1702—several reps. thereafter. ADAM SMITH'S 'Wealth of Nations' contains much interesting matter on Dutch trade and finance—notably the excursus on the Bank of Amsterdam. (A sociological sketch of the entire development of Holland has been attempted by the editor in his 'Evolution of States'; and her later commercial history is noted in 'Trade and Tariffs.' On the florescence of Dutch scholarship, printing, and publishing in the great period see refs. in the former work.)

§ 6. There are many modern works in English on the life of Holland, among which the following are notable:—MARJORIE BOWEN'S 'Holland' (Har.); EDMONDO DE AMICIS, 'Holland' (E. tr. 2 v. Rem. 1883); D. S. MELDRUM, 'Holland and the Hollanders' (Bld. 1899); G. C. DAVIES, 'On Dutch Waterways' (Jarrold, 1887, 4to); P. M. HOUGH, 'Dutch Life in Town and Country' (Newnes, 1901); and E. V. LUCAS, 'A Wanderer in Holland' (Met. 1905)—the last a book of great literary charm. 'The Fascination of Holland' by L. EDNA WALKER (Black, 1912) is another attractive handbook, with excellent photographs.

§ 7. Dutch colonial life and policy has been the subject of some special studies; notably 'The Policy and Administration of the Dutch in Java,' by CLIVE DAY (Mac. 1904).

COURSE XXVI

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

X.—BELGIUM

§ 1. THE English reader has now good up-to-date surveys in the 'Belgium' of R. C. K. ENSOR (H.U.L. 1915) and the 'Belgium' of H. VANDER LINDEN (E. tr. 1920: O.U.P.), in addition to the 'History of Belgium: Pt. I: Cæsar to Waterloo; Pt. II, 1815-65,' by D. C. BOULGER (1902-9). As has been remarked in the last Course, the earlier history of Belgium is included in that of the 'Netherlands,' and may be followed in the works of Grattan, Ashley, Blok, Barante, Van Kampen, Wenzelburger, and Vanderkindere, and in the histories of Flanders by Lettenhove and Warnkoenig, there mentioned. The history, however, has also been written from the modern Belgian point of view, notably by P. J. WOUTERS, *Précis de l'histoire de la Belgique* (1883); H. PRIENNE, *Histoire de la Belgique* (Brux. 1900); H. G. MOKE, *Histoire de la Belgique* (Brux. 1881) and *Abrégé* (1883); H. VERCAMER, *Histoire des Belges* (1882); V. NURGUET, *Histoire des Belges* (Brux. 1896); and TH. JUSTE, *Histoire de la Belgique* (Brux. rep. 1895, 3 t.).

A sketch in English is provided by C. SMYTHE, 'The Story of Belgium' (Hut. 1900); and there is a notable history in Flemish by HENDRIK CONSCIENCE, *Geschiedenis van België* (Brux. 2 pt. 1881). For fuller study sufficient guidance may be had from H. PRIENNE's *Bibliographie de l'histoire de Belgique* (1893). A good view of the mediæval period is given by the *Introduction à l'histoire des institutions de la Belgique au moyen âge* of L. VANDERKINDERE (Brux. 1890) and the same writer's *La formation territoriale des principautés belges au moyen âge* (2 t. 1902); and there is an *Histoire des États Généraux des Pays Bas, 1463-1790*, by TH. JUSTE (2 t. 1864). On mediæval industrial life, too, there is a very scholarly and thorough research by G. DES MAREZ, *L'organisation du travail à Bruxelles au XIV^e siècle* (1904). The old *Manuel de l'histoire de Belgique*, by J. DAVID (1847), is still a useful guide.

§ 2. Modern Belgian history is to be followed, in English, in

the Cambridge Modern History, vols. viii-xii; and, for general views, in histories of Modern Europe, as those of J. E. MORRIS (C.U.P.), F. SCHEVILL and D. M. KETELBEY (Har.). Dr. A. S. RAPPOPORT has written the history of the last reign in 'Leopold II: 1835-1909' (Greening, 1910). See also *La Belgique et le Congo*, by ÉMILE VANDERVELDE (1911). In French there are the works of L. DELPLACE, *La Belgique et la révolution française* (1895); E. CRUYPLANTS, *La Belgique sous la domination française, 1792-1815* (1901); S. BALLAU, *Soixantedix ans d'histoire de Belgique 1815-85* (1890); Juste's works on *La révolution brabançonne, 1789*, and *La république Belge, 1790* (1884); the same author's *Le soulèvement de la Hollande en 1813* (1870), *Les fondateurs de la monarchie Belge* (1871); *Napoleon III et la Belgique* (1870); 'Memoirs of Leopold I' (E. tr. 1868); and *La révolution belge de 1830* (2 t. 1872); the anonymous *Cinquante ans de liberté* (4 t. 1881-82); and in Dutch, J. VAN LIMBURG'S *De Revolutie van 1830* (Antwerp, 1900).

§ 3. Modern Belgian life is sympathetically presented in 'Belgium and the Belgian People' (anon. S.M. 1915); 'Belgium of the Belgians' by D. C. BOULGER (Pit. 1911); 'Belgians at Home' by C. HOLLAND (Met. 1911); *La Belgique moderne* by H. CHARRIAUT (1910); 'Belgium and the Belgians,' by CYRIL SCUDAMORE (Bld. 1901), and in Mr. BOULGER'S earlier 'Belgian Life in Town and Country' (Newnes, 1904).

Belgium's share in the World War is dealt with in Course LI. 'The German Terror in Belgium' by ARNOLD J. TOYNBEE (H. & S. 1917) is a condensed account of the German occupation. See also *Belgique sous la griffe allemande* (Anon. 1915).

COURSE XXVII

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XI.—GERMANY

§ 1. THE pre-Christian age of German evolution, which has a similar interest for all the peoples of the so-called Teutonic stock, is studied (as traceable through primitive literature and archæology) in several works in English, notably F. B. GUMMERE'S 'Germanic Origins: A Study in Primitive Culture' (Scrib. 1892); and the trans. of J. VON PFLUGK-HARTTUNG'S German work on 'The Great Migrations' in the 'History of All Nations,' vols. 6, 7 (Course III, § 3). The *Germania* of Tacitus (E. tr. Cl. Pr.) should be studied in this connection.

The inclusion under "Germany" of what was long Austria, in virtue of the scope of the mediæval "Empire," makes its history hard to bring within moderate compass. A competent primer, however, is supplied for the English general reader by James Sime's 'Germany' (Mac.), and on a slightly larger scale in Bayard Taylor's 'History of Germany from the earliest times' (App.). Of longer complete histories in English the latest is that of HERMANN PINNOW (E. tr. A. & U. 1932). That of E. F. HENDERSON, entitled 'A Short History of Germany' (2 v. 1902, Mac.), is a rather diffusely but agreeably written work on popular lines, proceeding, however, on good German authorities. The German works cited for each chapter collectively make up a comprehensive library on the subject. A good compact survey is supplied in the 'Germany' of A. W. HOLLAND (Black, 1914), author also of 'Germany to the Present Day' (Black, 1913). For a good general knowledge of German history, however, the student will still do well to read MENZEL'S once standard History (tr. in B.L. 3 v.), which contains a great mass of interesting detail. There is also trans. in English a somewhat cumbrous 'Popular History of Germany from the earliest period to the present day' (1877, 4 v.), by W. ZIMMERMANN, which has 600 illustrations.

§ 2. On a larger scale than Pinnow and Henderson is the 'Germany' of Sir A. W. WARD in the C.H.S. (3 v.), which deals with the 19th c. only; vol. i with the period to 1851-52; ii,

1852-71; iii, 1871-1900. On this scale, German history can be profitably studied in sections by readers of English, who may begin with Bryce's '**Holy Roman Empire**' (Mac. 9th ed. 1905); '**Germany in the Early Middle Ages**,' by Bishop STUBBS, ed. by A. Hassall (Lmns. 1908); the fifth chapter of HALLAM's '**Middle Ages**'; H. W. C. DAVIS's '**Charlemagne**'; and the other works on the Mediæval Empire named in Courses III, § 7, and XXII, § 5; also the trans. of the scholarly '**Frederick II: 1194-1200**' of ERNST KANTOROWICZ (Cape, 1931). E. F. HENDERSON's '**History of Germany in the Middle Ages**' (Bell, 1894) is a competent performance; and the '**Select Historical Documents of the Middle Ages**,' tr. and edited by him (B.L.), is an important adjunct to all historical study for its period. There is a good account of '**Germany and the Empire**' in the Renaissance period by Prof. TOUT in vol. i of the C.M.H.

§ 3. As the effective religious and political movement called the Reformation practically proceeded from Germany, it is best to be viewed as a whole from that standpoint. In English, the student may usefully set out with such a hand-book as F. Seebohm's '**Era of the Protestant Revolution**' (Lmns.); or LUDWIG HÆUSSER's '**Period of the Reformation**' (E. tr. 1884), which was edited and completed by W. Oncken, proceeding to '**The Counter-Reformation**' by Sir A. W. WARD (Lmns.); or A. H. Johnson's '**Europe in the 16th Century**' (Riv. 1897). E. M. TANNER's '**The Renaissance and the Reformation**' (O.U.P. 1908) is also to be recommended.

A fuller study may proceed upon the chapters on the Reformation in vols. i and ii of the C.M.H., which collectively are very informative; or on L. VON RANKE's '**History of the Reformation in Germany**' (and Switzerland), in Mrs. Austin's trans. (rep. in 1 vol. ed. by R. A. Johnson: Rout. 1905, which supplies a working bibliography); and the *Geschichte der auswärtigen Politik und Diplomatie im Reformations Zeitalter* of KARL FISCHER (1874). The older works of HAGENBACH (E. tr. 2 v. 1878-79) and D'AUBIGNÉ (old tr. sev. reps.) are to be read with caution in the light of the C.M.H. surveys, which are much more impartial. The most scientific history, however, is that of F. VON BEZOLD, *Geschichte der deutschen Reformation*, in Oncken's series (1890). For a Catholic view may be consulted the copious '**History of the German people at [since in orig.] the close of the Middle Ages**,' by JOHANNES JANSSEN (E. tr. K.P. 10 v. 1896-1906). Janssen was systematically criticised in a treatise *Wider J. Janssen und seine Geschichte des deutschen Volkes* (Frankfurt, 1883), to which

and other attacks he replied in *An meine Kritiker* and *Ein zweites Wort an meine Kritiker* (Freiburg, 1883).

Previous books on Luther are outclassed in comprehensiveness by 'Luther and the Reformation in the Light of Modern Research,' by the late Dr. HEINRICH BOEHMER (E. tr. by E. S. G. POTTER, Bell, 1931); but the 'Luther and the Reformation' of Prof. JAMES MACKINNON (Lmns. 4 v. 1925-30) is a learned and laborious investigation, entitled to study; and the older monographs of MICHELET (E. tr. 1846), AUDIN (*Hist. de la Vie, des ouvrages et des doctrines de Martin Luther*, 3e éd. abr. 1842), and Prof. JULIUS KÖSTLIN (E. tr. Lmns. 1883, several reps.) will be found variously suggestive and instructive, Köstlin's being the most exact. R. H. MURRAY's 'The Political Consequences of the Reformation' (Benn, 1926) should be studied for the general results.

§ 4. On the Thirty Years' War there are two good short treatises in English, one by Prof. A. W. WARD, 'The Thirty Years' War' (Mac. 1896), and one by Prof. Gardiner, 'The Thirty Years' War' (Lmns.)—the latter being on the whole preferable. The longer work of Prof. ANTON GINDLEY, 'History of the Thirty Years' War' (2 v. 1886), is the fullest separate English record to its date, but is to be checked by the later research embodied in vol. iv of the C.M.H. H. G. R. READE's 'Sidelights on the Thirty Years' War' (3 v. K.P. 1924) is the latest English study of the subject. For sociographical views of that period the English reader should turn to the trans. of GUSTAV FREYTAG's 'Pictures of German Life in the 15th, 16th, 17th, 18th, and 19th Centuries' (4 v. 1862-63).

§ 5. For the period from the Thirty Years' War to that of the French Revolution the fullest biographical account in English is supplied by CARLYLE's copious 'History of Frederick the Great' (C. & H.), latterly supplemented at one point by 'Frederick the Great on Kingcraft,' from the orig. MS. ed. by Sir J. W. WHITTALL (Lmns. 1901). There is good matter, however, in RANKE's 'Memoirs of the House of Brandenburg and the History of Prussia during the 17th and 18th Centuries' (E. tr. 3 v. 1849). 'The Evolution of Prussia' by Sir J. MARRIOTT and Sir C. G. ROBERTSON (Cl. Pr. 1915) is an authoritative general survey; and 'The Evolution of Modern Germany' by W. H. DAWSON (F.U. 1908) carries the study into the industrial development. LONGMAN's 'Seven Years' War' (Lmns.) is a very good condensed narrative. The complications of the Revolution and Napoleonic periods can be well followed in the sixth and seventh volumes of the 'Periods of European History' series—'The Balance of Power,' by HASSALL, and 'Revolutionary Europe,' by MORSE STEPHENS; and the fifth vol. of the same series, 'The

Ascendancy of France,' by H. O. WAKEMAN, bears much on German history in the period of Louis XIV.

§ 6. For German history in the Napoleonic and following periods Sir J. R. SEELEY's 'Life and Times of Stein' (3 v. 1878); POULTENEY BIGELOW's 'History of the German Struggle for Liberty' (Harp. 3 v. 1896-1903); and H. A. L. FISHER's 'Studies in Napoleonic Statesmanship: Germany' (Cl. Pr. 1903), are the most important studies in English; but the various works on "Modern Europe" mentioned in Course III may be consulted for the middle quarters of the 19th c. In French there is an interesting work by G. SERVIÈRES, *L'Allemagne française sous Napoléon Ier* (1904).

§ 7. The German Revolution of 1848-49 is dealt with in 'Germany during the Insurrection of 1848' (1854, o.p.); and in C. W. DAHLINGER's 'The German Revolution of 1849: An account of the final struggle in Baden' (Put. 1903). The process of modern German unification is dealt with in a number of works in English, one of the most compendious accounts being G. KRAUSE's 'Growth of German Unity' (Nutt, 1892). See also Col. G. B. MALLESON's 'Refounding of the German Empire, 1848-1871' (S.S. & Co. 1892). Much more detailed is VON SYBEL's 'The Founding of the German Empire by William I' (E. tr. 3 v. N.Y. 1890-91). In this connection may be read J. W. HEADLAM's 'Bismarck and the Founding of the German Empire' (Heroes ser. 1899).

§ 8. S. BARING GOULD's 'Germany Past and Present' (K.P. 1880) gives a readable view of later German life; but W. H. DAWSON's 'Germany and the Germans' (2 v. 1894) is fuller and more intimate. Mrs. AUSTIN's 'Germany from 1760 to 1814' (1854) conveys a great deal of social information, drawn from many sources. Prof. J. P. MAHAFFY's 'Sketches from a Tour through Germany' (Mac. 1889), and two American works, 'Germany seen without Spectacles' (1883) and E. L. PARRY's 'Life Among the Germans' (1887), give vivacious views of German life in the Bismarck period; as do several French works: H. N. DIDON, *Les Allemands* (E. tr. 1884); T. CAHEN, *Chez les Allemands*, 1887; H. CONTI, *L'Allemagne intime*, 1887; and A. C. GRAD, *Le peuple allemand*, 1888.

§ 9. The outstanding or typical works on German history in the period from 1870 to the end of the century are the 'History of Germany in the 19th Century' by H. VON TREITSCHKE (E. tr. 7 v. with intr. by W. H. DAWSON, A. & U.) and the more comprehensive and more scientific *Deutsche Geschichte* of CARL LAMPRECHT (12 Bde. in 16: 1894-1909), followed by his *Deutsche Gesch. der jüngsten Vergangenheit und Gegenwart* (2 Bde. 1912-13).

It is difficult to choose among the shorter German histories which remain untranslated. Bayard Taylor pronounced DITTMAR'S (3 Bde. 1891-93) the fullest, VON ROCHAU'S the most impartial, and DAVID MÜLLER'S the most readable. Later came the *Deutsche Geschichte* of E. HEYCK (1905, etc.), which seeks to set forth the "*Volk-, Staat-, Kultur-, und geistiges Leben*"; the *Geschichte des deutschen Volkes* of E. DULLER (1891, 2 Bde.); and the works of the same title by T. LINDNER (1894, 2 Bde.), S. WIDMANN (1894), and others. Patriotic pride is a normal note in nearly all, and readers who want to check that point of view may find instruction in the unfinished French *Histoire d'Allemagne* of JULES ZELLER (7 t. 1872-91, coming down to the Diet of Worms), which, however, is not exactly a model of judicial historiography.

§ 10. Among the very numerous German works on special periods may be named the following, many of which are recommended by E. F. HENDERSON:—Dr. F. DAHN'S great *Urgeschichte der germanischen und romanischen Völker*, in Oncken's series (4 Bde. 1881-89); C. RUEBEL, *Die Franken, ihr Eroberungs- und Siedlungssystem im deutschen Volkslande* (Bielefeld, 1904); L. SCHMIDT, *Geschichte der deutschen Stämme bis zum Ausgange der Völkerwanderung* (1904, etc.); *Geschichte der Wandalen* (1901); H. C. L. VON SYBEL, *Die Entstehung des deutschen Königthums* (1881); and J. SCHNEIDER'S *Die alten Heer- und Handelswege der Germanen* (Düsseldorf, 1882). In French there are several books worth consulting on German antiquities, notably V. GANTIER'S *La langue, les noms, et le droit des anciens Germains* (Berlin, 1901), and A. LEFÈVRE'S *Germains et Slaves: origines et croyances* (Paris, 1903).

Others of importance are:—G. KAUFMANN'S *Deutsche Geschichte bis auf Karl den Grossen* (2 Bde. Leipzig, 1880-81); ENGELBERT MÜHLBACHER'S *Deutsche Geschichte unter den Karolingern* (1896); MAXIMILIANUS MANITIUS, *Deutsche Geschichte, 911-1125* (same Bibliothek, 1889); GIESEBRECHT, *Geschichte der deutschen Kaiserzeit* (4th Aufl. 6 Bde. 1874-95); PRUTZ, *Kaiser Friedrich I* (3 Bde. 1871-74); THEODOR LINDNER'S *Deutsche Geschichte unter den Hapsburgern und Luxemburgern, 1273-1437* (2 Bde. 1890-93) and *Die deutsche Hanse* (1899); ULMAN, *Kaiser Maximilian I* (2 Bde. 1884-91); HERMANN BAUMGARTEN'S *Geschichte Karls V* (3 Bde. 1885-92); W. ZIMMERMANN, *Geschichte des Bauernkrieges* (2 Bde. 1841-56); L. KELLER, *Geschichte der Wiedertäufer und ihres Reichs zu Münster* (Münster, 1880); G. DROYSSEN'S *Geschichte der Gegenreformation* (in Oncken's ser. 1893); M. RITTER, *Deutsche Geschichte, 1555-1648* (1889), and *Geschichte der deutschen Union, 1598-1612* (2 Bde. 1867-73).

For the Thirty Years' War and later periods there are:—*Deutschlands Trübste Zeit*, by F. C. BIEDERMANN (Deut. Nat.-Bibliothek); Dr. GEORG WINTER'S *Geschichte des Dreissigjährigen Kriegs* (in Oncken's ser. 1893); C. L. VON WOLTMANN'S old *Geschichte des westphälischen Friedens* (1808-9; an addition to Schiller's 'Thirty Years' War'); ERDMANNSDÖRFER, *Deutsche Geschichte, 1648-1740* (Oncken's ser. 1892, etc.); W. PIERSON, *Preussische Geschichte* (1865); PRUTZ, *Preussische Geschichte* (4 Bde. 1900-2); A. D. SCHÄFER, *Geschichte des Siebenjährigen Krieges* (2 Bde. 1867-74); BIEDERMANN, *Deutschlands Zustände in 18ten Jahrhundert* (2 Bde. in 3, 1854-67), *1840-1870: Dreissig Jahre deutscher Geschichte* (2 Bde. 1881), and *1815-40: 25 Jahre deutscher Geschichte* (2 Bde. 1890); E. REIMANN, *Neuere Geschichte des preussischen Staats* (Heeren-Ukert ser. 1882); L. HÄUSSER, *Deutsche Geschichte, 1786-1815* (4 Bde. 2te Aufl. 1859-60); H. BLUM, *Die deutsche Revolution, 1848-49* (Florenz, 1897); W. MAURENBRECHER, *Die Grundung des deutschen Reiches, 1859-1871* (Leipzig, 1903); H. FRIEDJUNG, *Der Kampf um die Vorherrschaft in Deutschland* (2 Bde. 1897-98); C. JUNCK, *Der deutsch-französische Krieg, 1870 und 1871* (2 Bde. 1876).

§ 11. In the abundant literature of German *Culturgeschichte*, or sociological history, the following works are noteworthy:—G. L. VON MAURER, *Geschichte der Markverfassung in Deutschland* (1856); *Geschichte der Dorfverfassung* (2 Bde. 1865-66); *Geschichte der Stadtverfassung* (4 Bde. 1862-63) [on the first of which should be noted the criticisms of Fustel de Coulanges in his essay on 'The Origin of Property in Land' (E. tr. S.S.S. 2nd ed. 1892)]; G. STEINHAUSEN, *Geschichte der deutschen Kultur* (1904); G. GRUPP, *Die Kultur der alten Kelten und Germanen* (1905); M. STERN, *Geschichten von deutschen Städten* (N.Y. 1902); F. VON LÖHER, *Kulturgeschichte der Deutschen im Mittelalter* (3 Bde. 1891-94); AUGUSTE SACH, *Deutsches Leben in der Vergangenheit* (2 Bde. 1890-91); PRUTZ, *Kulturgeschichte der Kreuzzüge* (1883); ALBERT RICHTER, *Bilder aus der deutschen Kulturgeschichte* (2 Th. 1881-83); P. WIGAND, *Das Femgericht Westphalens* (1825); TH. LINDNER, *Die Veme* (1888) and *Der angebliche Ursprung der Vehmgerichte aus der Inquisition* (a pamphlet, Paderborn, 1890); ALF. ZIMMERMANN, *Geschichte des preussisch-deutschen Handelspolitik* (1892). Biedermann's work on the 18th c. (§ 10) deals largely with the literary life.

To these may be added the sociological research of RAOUL CHÉLARD, *La civilisation française dans le développement de l'Allemagne* (1900); and the *Mémoires historiques* of MIGNET (3e éd. 1845).

Those desirous of making a thorough study of any one period

should consult F. C. DAHLMANN'S (ed. Waitz) *Quellenkunde der deutschen Geschichte*, of which the 1907 edition is much enlarged; or E. BLUME'S *Quellensätze zur Geschichte unseres Volkes* (4 Bde. 1883-1904).

§ 12. For the social, political, and industrial life of Germany in the pre-War period may be consulted:—'Modern Germany: Her Polit. and Econ. Problems,' etc., by J. ELLIS BARKER (2nd and enl. ed. S.E. 1907); 'Germany in the 19th Century: Five Lectures,' by J. H. ROSE and others, with intr. by Lord Haldane (Manch. U.P. 2nd ed. 1912); 'An Australian in Germany,' by A. D. McLAREN (Con. 1911); and 'The Soul of Germany: A Twelve Years' Study of the People from Within,' by Dr. T. F. A. SMITH (Hut. 1915). Germany's part in the World War is dealt with in Course LI.

§ 13. 'The Birth of the German Republic,' by Dr. ARTHUR ROSSENBERG (C.U.P.), covers the political development from Bismarck to the Revolution of 1918. 'The Constitution of the German Republic' by Dr. H. OPPENHEIMER (Stevens, 1923) analyses the new Constitution in detail. 'Republican Germany: A Political and Economic Study,' by H. QUIGLEY and R. T. CLARK (Met. 1928), sets forth the general internal situation at its date; and the recent work of Dr. EUGEN DIESEL, 'Germany and the Germans' (E. tr. Mac. 1931), appears to be a well-written and instructive presentment, found illuminating by English readers.

COURSE XXVIII

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XII.—AUSTRIA-HUNGARY

§ 1. To a certain extent the history of Austria is bound up in that of "Germany"; but its later political separateness involved a separate historical treatment. The English reader has a compendious manual in Dr. Birkbeck Hill's trans. of Prof. **Louis Leger's** French '**History of Austria-Hungary**' (Riv. 1889); or in the shorter '**Austria**,' by **S. Whitman** (S.N.S. 1899); and for a fuller record it is still worth while to study Archdeacon **Coxe's** '**History of the House of Austria from Rhodolph of Hapsburg to the death of Leopold II**' (3 v. B.L.), to which in the Bohn ed. has been added a vol. continuing the narrative to and through the revolution of 1848. The comprehensive '**Francis Joseph, Emperor of Austria and King of Hungary**,' by **D. Bagger** (Put. 1928, with many illustrns.), covers a long and fateful period. For Hungary there are available Count **Paul Teleki's** '**The Evolution of Hungary and its Place in European History**' (Mac.); and Prof. **Vambery's** '**Hungary**' (S.N.S.).

See also the works on general European history mentioned in Course III, and Prof. **Hearnshaw's** '**Main Currents of European History, 1815-1915**' (Mac.). '**The Magyars in the Ninth Century**,' by **C. A. Macartney**, is a good monograph on the obscure beginnings of the Magyar people (C.U.P. 1931). The latest special research in English in the Austrian field is '**Metternich and the British Government from 1809 to 1913**' by **C. S. B. Buckland** (Mac. 1932).

§ 2. For more extensive researches the student must turn to works in German. Of the shorter histories of Austria the following rank high: **F. X. Krones von Marchland**, *Grundriss der oesterreichischer Geschichte* (926 pp. Wien, 1882) and *Handbuch der Geschichte Oesterreichs* (4 Bde. 1876); **Wertheimer**, *Geschichte Oesterreichs und Ungarns* (2 Bde. Leip. 1884-90), which comes down to the beginning of the 19th c.; **Alfons Huber**, *Geschichte Oesterreichs* (5 Bde. 1885-96, coming to beginning of 17th c.);

F. M. MAYER, *Geschichte der oesterreich-ungarischen Monarchie* (320 pp. Wien, 1884)—a good and compact survey. But the student who cares above all for the sociographical side of history will do well to turn at once to Mayer's *Geschichte Oesterreichs mit besonderer Rücksicht auf das Culturleben* (Wien, 1900-1, 2 Bde. 2te Aufl.)—a work of great merit.

§ 3. Of English surveys of periods there are several mentioned in the previous Course which deal with Austria. For the later periods the English reader has Dr. J. F. BRIGHT's 'Maria Theresa' and 'Joseph II' (Mac. 1897); and Dr. E. VEHSE's 'Memoirs of the Court and Aristocracy of Austria' (E. tr. 2 v. 1896). There is much good documentary matter also in the DUC DE BROGLIE's 'Frederick the Great and Maria Theresa' (E. tr. 2 v. Low, 1883), and a good general view of the earlier phases of the Eastern Question in A. SOREL's *La question d'Orient au 18e siècle*. On Maria Theresa there is also a later work by Count HENNEQUIN DE VILLERMONT, *Marie-Thérèse* (Paris, 2 t. 1895). For later periods the English reader has, besides the period-surveys before mentioned, the Rt. Hon Sir E. SATOW's lecture, 'An Austrian Diplomat in the Fifties' (C.U.P.), and E. W. LATIMER's 'Italy in the Nineteenth Century and the Making of Austria-Hungary and Germany' (Chicago, 1897). Of later conditions of Hungarian life a fairly interesting account was given in 'The Magyars,' by ARTHUR J. PATTERSON (2 v. 1869, S.E.).

§ 4. In German, apart from the relevant period-surveys noted in the previous Course, the following are of value: A. CZERMY, *Der erste Bauernaufstand in Oberösterreich* (Linz, 1882); G. E. FRIESS, *Der Aufstand der Bauern in Niederösterreich am Schlusse des 16ten Jahrhunderts* (Wien, 1897); F. STREVE, *Der oberösterreichische Bauernaufstand des Jahres 1626* (2 Bde. München, 1891); J. LOSERTH, *Die Reformation und Gegenreformation in den innerösterreichischen Ländern* (Stuttgart, 1898); ARNETH, *Geschichte Maria Theresia's* (10 Bde. Wien, 1863-79) and *Joseph II und Leopold von Toscana, ihr Briefwechsel* (1872); BEER, *Joseph II, Leopold, und Kaunitz, ihr Briefwechsel* (Wien, 1873); M. BERMAN, *Maria Theresia und Kaiser Joseph II* (Wien, 1881); F. X. KRONES von Marchland, *Zur Geschichte Oesterreichs, 1792-1816* (Gotha, 1886); M. BERMAN, *Oesterreich-Ungarn im 19ten Jahrhundert* (Wien, 1883); E. V. ZENKER, *Der wiener Revolution, 1848* (Wien, 1897); M. BACH, *Geschichte der wiener Revolution im Jahre 1848* (Wien, 1898); D. RAUTER, *Geschichte Oesterreichs, 1848-1890* (Wien, 1891); and G. KOLMER, *Parlament und Verfassung in Oesterreich* (3 Bde. Wien, 1902-5).

§ 5. The history of the Hungarians is written in German by

I. A. FESSLER, *Geschichte der Ungarn* (10 Bde. 1815-25), and more compendiously by P. HUNFALVY, *Die Ungarn oder Magyaren* (Wien, 1881, etc.). There are several monographs on other races in Hungary: T. S. VILEVSKY, *Die Serben im südlichen Ungarn*, (in series *Die Völker Oesterreich-Ungarns*, 1884); J. STARÉ, *Die Kroaten im Königreiche Kroatien und Slavonien* (same ser. 1882); J. SLAVICI, *Die Rumänen in Ungarn und Sichenburgen* (same ser. 1881). See also, for the early history of the Slav peoples in general, SCHAFARIK's *Slavische Alterthümer* (Prague, 1862).

§ 6. The share of Austria in the World War, and the Austrian sequel, are dealt with in Course LI. For the political and social events, see A. F. PRIBRAM's 'Austrian Foreign Policy, 1908-18' (with intr. by G. P. Gooch: A. & U.); 'The Collapse of the Austro-Hungarian Empire' by E. VON GLAISE-HORSTENAU (E. tr. by I. Morrow, Dent, 1930); and C. A. MACARTNEY's 'The Social Revolution in Austria' (C.U.P.).

One of the States reconstituted by the War is Bohemia [now the main portion of the new Czecho-Slovakia], as to the pre-War history of which the English reader has C. E. MAURICE's 'Bohemia' (S.N.S. 1896), and the work of Count F. LUETZOW, 'Bohemia: An Historical Sketch' (C. & H. 1896); also four good chapters in Count V. KRASINSKI's old 'Sketch of the Religious History of the Slavonic Nations' (2nd ed. 1851). There is a more recent French research, *Fin de l'indépendance bohême*, by E. DENIS (2 pts. Paris, 1890). Special research may be guided by Count Luetzow's Ilchester 'Lectures on the Historians of Bohemia' (Cl. Pr. 1905). Of the remarkable revival of Bohemian life and language in the pre-War period a vivid account is given in W. S. MONROE's 'Bohemia and the Czechs: the People, the Institutions, and the Geography of the Kingdom, together with accounts of Moravia and Silesia' (Bell, 1910). On the history since the War see 'Slovakia—Then and Now,' by a number of Slovak authors, ed. with introd. survey by R. W. SETON-WATSON (A. & U. 1931).

§ 7. The aspect of disintegrated Austria is sketched in J. D. NEWTH's 'Austria' (Black, 1931, with many illustrns.); and for the social conditions may be consulted the 'Report on the Financial and Commercial Situation' (H.M. Stat. Off. 1926) and the same for 1927. 'Austria of To-day,' by VICTOR W. GERMAINS (Mac. 1932), deals instructively with the process of events from 1918 to 1930. 'An Outlaw's Diary,' vol. i, 'Revolution' (Foreword by the Duke of Northumberland); vol. ii, 'The Commune,' by CÉCILE TORMAY (Ph.A. both 1923: many portraits), gives a vivid picture of the events in Hungary in 1918-19.

COURSE XXIX

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XIII.—SWITZERLAND

§ 1. ENGLISH students of Swiss history are well provided for in the 'History of Switzerland, 1499-1914' of the late Prof. W. OECHSLI (E. tr. by E. & C. Paul, C.U.P. 1922), a work of authoritative character; in W. MARTIN'S 'History of Switzerland: the formation of a Confederation of States' (Pref. by Lord Hewart: Richards, 1932); and in Mr. Salisbury's trans. of the '**Short History of Switzerland**' by Prof. Daendliker (Son. 1899). The short history by L. HUG and R. STEAD (S.N.S.) is also bright and readable. F. GRENFELL BAKER'S 'The Model Republic: A History of the Rise and Progress of the Swiss People' (1895) has some merit; as has W. D. MCCrackan's 'Rise of the Swiss Republic' (1892), though the author thought fit to insert his portrait as a frontispiece.

The history of the period of origins has been substantially reconstructed in the latter half of the 19th c.: witness RILLIET'S *Les origines de la confédération suisse* (1868). There is a good short study on 'Switzerland at the Beginning of the Sixteenth Century' by J. M. VINCENT (Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies, ser. 22, No. 5).

§ 2. For a full record of Swiss history the reader must turn to native works. Of those in German the best are Daendliker's *Geschichte des Schweiz* (3 Bde. 1892-95) and DIERAUER'S *Geschichte der schweizerischen Eidgenossenschaft* (1887), of which the latter stops before the Reformation period. These supersede the older *Geschichte schweizerischen Eidgenossenschaft* of JOHANNES VON MÜLLER. In French there are: A. DAGUET, *Histoire de la confédération suisse* (7e éd. 2 t. 1880), and B. VAN MUYDEN, *Histoire de la nation suisse* (Lausanne, 1896, etc.). The *Quellenbuch zur Schweizergeschichte* of W. OECHSLI (Zürich, 2te Aufl. 1901, etc.) is helpful at all points.

§ 3. Among studies of periods and episodes may be noted the following: É. ROTT, *Henri IV; les Suisses; et la haute Italie* (Paris, 1882); A. GOBAT, *La république de Berne et la France pendant les guerres de religion* (Paris, 1891); E. COMBE, *Les*

refugiés de la Révocation en Suisse (Lausanne, 1885); E. DE BUDÉ's *Les Bonapartes en Suisse, 1797-1815* (Genève, 1905); B. van Muyden, *La Suisse sous la Pacte de 1815* (Lausanne, 1890); P. SEIPPEL, *La Suisse au 19e siècle* (1899, etc.); A. GAVARD, *Histoire de la Suisse au 19e siècle* (Genève, 1899); and W. Oechsli, *Geschichte der Schweiz im neunzehnten Jahrhundert* (Leipzig, 1903).

§ 4. The Reformation period may be specially studied through such works as S. M. JACKSON's 'Zwingli, the Reformer of German Switzerland' (Put. 1901); S. SIMPSON's 'Ulrich Zwingli' (H. & S. 1903); and the section on 'The Helvetic Reformation,' by J. P. WHITNEY, in the C.M.H. vol. ii.

§ 5. Of a critical period of modern Swiss history there is an interesting account in GROTE's 'Seven Letters concerning the Politics of Switzerland' (1847, rep. 1876, Mur.); and as to the formal development and working of the Swiss Constitution, the English reader has a good guide in the work of Sir F. O. ADAMS and C. D. CUNNINGHAM on 'The Swiss Confederation' (1880; tr. into French and added to by M. Loumyer, 1890). W. A. DAWSON's 'Social Switzerland' (C. & H. 1897) further throws a clear light on the conditions of industrial life in the Republic in the last generation; and *La Suisse intime*, by H. GUTJAHR (Paris, 1904), deals interestingly with social aspects. In the editor's 'Evolution of States' there is a short sociological account of the historic evolution.

For post-War social history there is some material in 'Switzerland: Economic and Financial Conditions,' 1927 and 1929 (H.M. Stat. Off.).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XIV.—THE SCANDINAVIAN STATES

§ 1. THOUGH some Norwegians and others have objected to the word, in a number of English and other works the histories of Denmark, Norway, Iceland, and Sweden are conveniently grouped together under 'Scandinavia.' This is done in **R. Nisbet Bain's** '**Scandinavia: A Political History of Denmark, Norway, and Sweden: 1513-1900**' (C.H.S. 1905). The most informative of the older English works on the subject is still the '**Scandinavia, Ancient and Modern**,' of **A. CRICHTON** and **N. WHEATON** (2 v. 2nd ed. 1838); and the briefer and more recent work of **E. C. Otte**, going over the same ground, is entitled '**Scandinavian History**' (Mac. 1874). If that lucid and sensible record had been written with more literary power, it would have sufficed for most English readers. The earlier work of Prof. **P. C. SINDING**, '**History of Scandinavia from the earliest times to the present day**' (1866), is meagre, annalistic, and uninteresting, but trustworthy so far as it goes.

§ 2. For the ancient period, Danes and Norsemen are included in such books as **T. D. KENDRICK's** '**History of the Vikings**' (Met. 1930), the latest treatment of that theme; and the earlier works: **H. WHEATON's** '**History of the Northmen**' (1831), which comes down to the Norman Conquest of England; **PAUL DU CHAILLU's** '**The Viking Age**' (2 v. Mur. 1889); **C. KEARY's** '**The Vikings of Christendom**' (F.U. 1890). **J. F. VICARY's** '**Saga Time**' (1887) is a popular account of early Icelandic history. '**Evil's Saga**,' a rendering into English from the Icelandic (C.U.P. 1930) by **E. R. EDDISON**, has elucidatory notes, and an essay on some of the principles of translation involved. Prof. **KNUT GJERST** has further produced a '**History of Iceland**' (A. & U.) and a '**History of the Norwegian People**' (2 v. Mac.).

Denmark, Norway, and Sweden, again, are involved in the narrative of '**The Relations between Ancient Russia and Scandinavia**,' by **V. THOMSEN** (E. tr. 1877); and Norse history is involved in **A. THORGEISSON's** work, '**The Book of the Settlement of**

Iceland' (tr. by T. ELLWOOD; 1898), and M. A. GEFFROY'S *L'Islande avant le Christianisme, d'après les Gragas et les Sagas*, 825-981 (Paris, 1897).

§ 3. Danish historiography begins with SAXO GRAMMATICUS, of whose Latin history the first nine books have been trans. by Prof. Oliver Elton for the Folklore Society (1894); but the student must turn to later research to be able to judge of its historical value. There are two good histories of Denmark, one in Danish by C. F. ALLEN, trans. in French (*Histoire du Danemark*, 2 t. Copenhagen, 1878), the other in German, *Geschichte von Dänemark*, by F. C. DAHLMANN (Gotha, 3 Bde. 1840-43). H. WEITEMEYER'S German work, 'Denmark, its History, Topography, Literature,' etc., has been trans. in English (Hei. 1891). MARY HILL'S 'Margaret of Denmark' (F.U. 1898) deals with the reign of the great queen who for a period united Denmark and Norway (1371-1412). For a much later period we have the 'Memoirs of the Sovereigns of Denmark, 1766-1818,' of J. BROWN (last ed. 2 vols. 1895, Nichols); CHARLES A. GOSCH'S 'Denmark and Germany since 1815' (1862); and A. GALLENGA'S 'The Invasion of Denmark'—i.e. by Germany in 1864 (1864, 2 v.).

§ 4. For Norway there are first the 'Sagas: The Saga of King Olaf Tryggwason,' trans. by J. Sephton (Nutt, vol. i, 1895); and the 'Heims-Kringla Saga,' tr. first by S. Laing (4 v. last ed. rev. 1889), and thereafter by W. Morris and E. Magnússon (3 v. 1893, etc.). On St. Olaf there is a German version, following SNORRI STURLUSON, *Das Leben König Olafs des heiligen*, by Dr. F. KHULL (1895). For the rest, Norwegian history is to be followed in its connection with that of Denmark and Sweden.

As regards modern Norwegian life there is a considerable English literature. Among the best books on the subject are still LAING'S old 'Journal of a Residence in Norway, 1834-36'; and C. LORING BRACE'S 'The Norse Folk' (1857).

§ 5. The material for Sweden in English is more abundant. ANDREW STOMBERG'S recent 'History of Sweden' (A. & U. 1932) is patriotic and popular; and a 'History of Sweden' by N. M. CRONHOLM was published at Chicago in 1902 (2 v.). E. G. Geijer's old 'History of Sweden,' one of the best of modern national histories, comes down to Christina's abdication (E. tr. 1845); and a French tr., 1845, brings the narrative briefly down to 1801. The German trans. in Heeren and Ukert's ser. is carried on by F. F. Carlson—in all 6 Bde. (1832-87); and on that and later periods there are several good English and American treatises: PAUL BARRON WATSON, 'The Swedish Revolution under Gustavus Vasa' (Low, 1889); Dr. C. M. BUTLER'S 'History of the Reformation in Sweden under Charles IX'

(N.Y. 1883); JOHN LEVETT STEVENS, 'The History of Gustavus Adolphus' (1885); C. R. L. FLETCHER's 'Gustavus Adolphus' (Heroes ser.)—an excellent monograph; the Rev. B. CHAPMAN's earlier 'History of Gustavus Adolphus' (1856); FRANCIS WILLIAM BAIN's 'Christina, Queen of Sweden' (1890)—the most critically careful book on the subject; R. N. BAIN, 'Charles XII and the Collapse of the Swedish Empire, 1682-1719' (Heroes ser. 1895); and the same writer's 'Gustavus III and his Contemporaries, 1746-92' (2 v. K.P. 1894). The 'Gustav Adolf IV of Sweden: An Exiled King: 1778-1837,' by SOPHIE ELKAN (ed. and tr. by M. Eugénie Koch, 2 v. 1913), is a good scholarly research, well illustrated.

§ 6. Of special sociological importance is the work of Prof. O. MONTELIUS, 'The Civilisation of Sweden in Heathen Times' (Mac. 1888: exp. in French ed. *Temps préhistoriques en Suède et dans les autres pays Scandinaves*, tr. by S. REINACH, 1895), which with Geijer's history gives the English reader an exceptionally full knowledge of a foreign nation's organic history. C. A. V. CONYBEARE's 'Iceland: Its Place in the History of European Institutions' (Parker, 1877) is another interesting study.

§ 7. Of general bearing on the Scandinavian States are A. AHNELT's *Skandinavische Hof- und Staatsgeschichten des 19ten Jahrhunderts* (Stuttgart, 1887) and T. LUND's *Das tägliche Leben in Skandinavien während des 16ten Jahrhunderts* (Copenhagen, 1883). A sociological outline of the Scandinavian evolution is attempted in the editor's 'Evolution of States.'

§ 8. On the constitutional rupture between Sweden and Norway in the early part of the present century may be read 'The Constitution of Norway: An Historical and Political Survey,' by H. L. BRÆKSTAD (Nutt, 1905); articles in the *Fortnightly Review*, October, 1897, and January, 1898; FRIDTJOF NANSEN's 'Norway and the Union with Sweden' (Mac. 1895); and the 'Supplementary Chapter' to the latter work (same).

§ 9. Under the sovereignty of Denmark is Greenland, concerning the population of which see 'Danish Greenland: Its People and Products,' by Dr. HENRY RINK (K.P. 1877). The history of Greenland has a special sociological interest in that the settlement there of Norse colonists in the 10th c. failed to retain the level at which they started, and after the 14th c. assimilated to the more backward conditions of the regional life.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XV.—RUSSIA

§ 1. A RUSSIAN'S 'History of Russia' has obvious claims; and that of H. BRIAN CHANINOV (E. tr. by C. H. HOGARTH: Dent, 1930) deserved translation, covering the ground as it does from the 9th c. to the Revolution. The 'History of Russia' by N. O. KLUCHEVSKY (Dent, 1930) has the same claim. The most competent recent history by an English scholar is that of Sir BERNARD PARES (Cape, 1926). A good English introduction to the pre-War history is J. Fitzmaurice Kelly's 'The Russian People' (Hei. 1901). A short history by a good scholar, however, is also supplied by W. R. MORFILL's 'Russia' (S.N.S.); and the E. tr. of ALFRED RAMBAUD'S *Histoire de Russie* (3 v. 1887) has still a high status. The translation, being added to by the author, is in some respects an improvement on the original work.

§ 2. There are few works in English on pre-War periods of Russian history. One is W. R. S. RALSTON'S 'Early Russian History' (Low, 1874). But the most interesting epoch is well represented by OSCAR BROWNING'S 'Peter the Great' (Hut. 1898); STEPHEN GRAHAM'S later 'Peter the Great' (Benn, 1929); and the 'Peter the Great' of M. GEORGES OUDARD (E. W. Laurie, 1931). For that and the following period we have also R. N. BAIN'S 'The First Romanovs: 1613-1725' (Con. 1905); 'The Pupils of Peter the Great: 1697-1740' (Con. 1897); 'The Daughter of Peter the Great: 1741-62' (same, 1899); and 'Peter III' (same, 1902). In French there is a good research by K. WALISZEWSKI, *Les origines de la Russie moderne: Ivan le Terrible* (1904), tr. in Eng. by Lady Mary Lloyd (Hei. 1904). Then there are two thorough German histories of Catherina II—*Katharina die Zweite*, by A. BRÜCKNER (Oncken's ser. 1883), and the later *Katharina II* by V. A. BILBASOV (2 Bde. Berlin, 1891-93). Brückner has also contributed a magistral work on *Peter der Grosse* to the Oncken series (1879). In English, finally, there is the concise but competent and readable work of W. R. MORFILL, 'A History of Russia from Peter the Great to Alexander

II' (Met. 1902). In French there is further the record in *La Russie au XVIIIe siècle : mémoires inédits sur les règnes de Pierre-le-Grand, Catherine Ire, et Pierre III, avec une introduction par le Prince Augustin Galitzin* (1863).

§ 3. For the later history there are available the French work of G. CRÉHANGE, *Histoire de la Russie depuis la mort de Paul I* (1882); A. VANDAL's *Napoléon et Alexandre I* (1891); F. T. VON BERNHARDT's German *Geschichte Russlands, 1814-31* (3 Bde. in 4, 1863-77); Dr. A. S. RAPPOPORT's 'The Curse of the Romanovs: Paul I and Alexander I; 1796-1825' (C. & W. 1907); and KINGLAKE's well-known 'History of the Invasion of the Crimea' (9 v. Bld.). The reign of Alexander II has received special notice—in the anonymous 'Life of Alexander II' (1883); in the larger work of C. DE CERDOUNE, *L'Empereur Alexandre II* (1883); and in H. VON SAMSON-HIMMELSTIERNA's 'Russia under Alexander III and in the preceding period' (E. tr. F.U. 1893). Mr. Edwards also published 'Russian Projects against India, from the Czar Peter to General Skobelev' (Rem. 1885); and there is a record of 'The Expansion of Russia: 1815-1900' by F. H. SKRINE (C.H.S. 2 v. 2nd ed. 1906). 'The Russo-Turkish War, 1877' was competently narrated by Gen. Sir F. D. MAURICE (Campaign Series, A. & U.).

§ 4. In the way of sociological surveys of Russian life, apart from the work of Mr. Fitzmaurice Kelly, the English reader may study archæology on the one hand and 19th c. life on the other. For the popular and ancient life he has Prof. MAXIME KOVALEVSKY's deeply interesting research, 'Modern Customs and Ancient Laws of Russia' (Nutt, 1891); Dr. J. C. BROWN's 'The People of Finland in Archaic Times' (K.P. 1892); and D. COMPARETTI's 'The Traditional Poetry of the Finns' (E. tr. with intr. by A. Lang, Lmns. 1898).

On Russia of the later 19th c. there are many works of value:—Sir D. MACKENZIE WALLACE's 'Russia' (pop. ed. in 1 vol. Cas.; enl. ed. 2 v. 1905, rev. and enl. ed. in 1 v. 1912); GEORG BRANDES's 'Impressions of Russia' (Scott, 1890); W. R. MORFILL's 'Russia' (Low, 1880); L. TIKHOMIROV's 'Russia, Social and Political' (E. tr. 2 v. Son.). LEROY-BEAULIEU's *L'Empire des Tsars*, again, is a work of the most comprehensive kind, and is trans. into English (3 v. Put. 1893-96). Further, there are the older 'Russia, Past and Present' of H. VON LANKENAU and L. VON OELNITZ (S.P.C.K. 1881); and J. GEDDIE's 'The Russian Empire' (Nelson, 1882). In French there are 3 vols. of illuminating political and literary studies under title *Russes et Slaves* (Hachette), by Prof. LOUIS LÉGER, who has also written a general work on *Le monde slave* (same, 2 t.). The posthumous memoirs of A. T.

VASSILYEV, under the title, 'The Ochrana: the Russian Secret Police' (ed. with intr. by RÉNÉ FULÖP MILLER: Har. 1930) throw some light on the inner side of the Tsarist régime; as does the older 'Truth about Russia' of W. T. STEAD (Cas. 1888).

§ 5. On the great revolutionary movement of the past age, commonly named "Nihilism," there are a number of works. In French there are the *Introduction à l'histoire du Nihilisme russe* of ERNEST LAVIGNE (1880); a trans. of J. B. ARNAUDO's Italian work on *Le Nihilisme et les Nihilistes* (Paris, n.d.); and the *Russes et Allemands* (3e éd. 1881) and *La Russie et les Russes*, of Victor Tissot, which vivaciously set forth the German influences. In English we have the notable works of the late "S. STEPNIAK" (i.e. Sergyei Mikhailovich Kravchinsky): 'Nihilism as it is' (tr. of his pamphlets; F.U. 1895); 'The Russian Peasantry: Their agrarian condition, social life, and religion' (2 v. Son. 1888); 'The Russian Storm-Cloud; or, Russia in her relation to neighbouring countries' (same, 1886); 'Russia under the Tsars' (2 v. W. & D. 1885); and 'Underground Russia' (Russian Free Press, last ed. 1893). There is a trans. of the French work of V. BÉRARD on 'The Russian Empire and Czarism' (Intr. by F. Greenwood; Nutt, 1905). On religious life there is the sympathetic study of AYLMER MAUDE, 'A Peculiar People: The Doukhobors' (Con. 1904). See also Course VIII, § 22. The German work *Aus die petersburger Gesellschaft*, by a Russian, tr. into French as *La société russe* (2 t. 3e éd. 1878), is very informative for its period; and *La pensée russe contemporaine*, by IVAN STANNIK (1903), is a good account of the intellectual movement in Russia at that period. Another very important side of Russian life, however, is dealt with in the still later work of LEO DEUTSCH, 'Sixteen Years in Siberia' (E. tr. by Helen Chisholm, Mur. 1904).

§ 6. Further developments in Russian history in the first years of the century are to be gathered in part from 'Russia from Within,' by ALEX. ULAR (Hei. 1905); 'The Russian Revolutionary Movement,' by KONNI ZILIACUS (Rivers, 1905); H. W. NEVINSON's 'Dawn in Russia' (Harp. 1906); LIONEL DECLE's 'New Russia' (Nash, 1906); and 'The Russian Government and the Massacres,' by E. SÉMÉNOFF (tr. from Fr.), with intr. by LUCIEN WOLF (Mur. 1907), who edited a work on the Sufferings of the Jews (1912). TOLSTOY's 'The Crisis in Russia' (Hei. 1906) presents its author's peculiar point of view.

§ 7. Of the Russo-Japanese War an elaborate illustrated record is presented in E. S. GREW's 'The War in the Far East' (Virtue, 6 v. 1905-6); and a brief account in F. R. SEDGWICK's 'The Russo-Japanese War on Land' (A. & U.), and 'The Cam-

paign in Manchuria' (same). Official reports were given in 'The Russo-Japanese War,' by M. Kinai (K.P. 1906). The great naval battle is described by an eye-witness in VLADIMIR SEMÉNOFF's 'The Battle of Tsu-Shima' (E. tr. Mur. 1906); and there is an anonymous work on 'The Battle of Mukden' (Rees, 1906). For the period down to the World War may be consulted:—MAURICE BARING's 'A Year in Russia' (Met. 1907); 'Russian Essays and Stories' (Met. 1908); 'The Mainsprings of Russia' (Nelson, 1914); 'The Russian People' (Met.); and 'The Russians in Manchuria' (Met. 1905); 'Petrograd Past and Present' by B. W. STEVENI (Richards, 1915); 'Modern Russia' by GREGOR ALEXINSKY, Ex-Deputy of the Duma (E. tr. F.U. 1913); and Dr. E. J. DILLON's 'Russia To-day and Yesterday' (Dent, 1928). The situation at the outset of the World War is presented in STEPHEN GRAHAM's 'Russia and the World: A Study of the War' (Mac. 1915); and the transition period is instructively studied by VLADIMIR KOROSTOVETZ in 'Seed and Harvest' (Faber, 1931). E. VANDERVELDE's 'Three Aspects of World Revolution' (E. tr. A. & U. 1918); PAUL LENSCH's 'Three Years of World Revolution' (Con. 1918); and Dr. E. J. DILLON's 'Eclipse of Russia' (Dent, 1918) set forth the situation at their date.

§ 8. Of works on Russia from the Revolution of 1917 there is already a small library. 'The Dissolution of an Empire' (Mur. 1932), by MERIEL BUCHANAN (Mrs. KNOWLING) is an indictment of the British Government for the non-protection of the Imperial Family from the Bolsheviki. 'Russia in Revolution,' by STINTON JONES (Jenkins, 1917), relates the experiences of an Englishman in Petrograd and during the Upheaval, with illustrns.; and Prof. E. A. ROSS's 'Russia in Upheaval' (F.U. 1919) gives the observations of an American sociologist at a later date. 'The Prelude to Bolshevism,' by A. F. KERENSKY (F.U. 1919), deals with "The Kornilov Rebellion"; and the later 'Memoirs of the Russian Revolution,' by General LONKOMSKY (F.U. 1922) give the experience of a man of action, sometime Assistant War Minister. For 1916 we have 'Russia at the Cross-Roads,' by C. E. BECHHOFFER (K.P.), which is simple but sincere. 'The Russian Revolution' by Prof. JAMES MAVOR of Toronto (A. & U. 1928) keeps clear the historic fact that the Soviets came into existence before the Bolshevists seized power, and that primarily Sovietism and Bolshevism were different things. See also R. POSTGATE, 'The Bolshevik Theory' (Richards, 1920) and the Hon. B. Russell's 'Bolshevism: Practice and Theory' (N.Y. 1920). The famine of 1921-22 is recorded with terrible statistical detail by SERGE IVANOFF in *La Famine en Russie Bolshéviste*

(1922), and in H. H. Fisher's 'The Famine in Soviet Russia: 1919-23' (Mac.).

§ 9. After the establishment of the Bolshevist régime, the abundant serious literature runs largely to a more or less judicial picture of the unprosperous result. EMMA GOLDMAN's 'My Disillusionment in Russia' (Daniel, 1923) is typical. One of the few English-speaking visitors up to that time who could read and speak Russian, Prof. CHARLES SAROLEA of Edinburgh, a Belgian scholar of eminence, gave his 'Impressions of Soviet Russia' (Nash, 1924), a vivid record of observed facts, with a grim prognosis. In 1925 came 'The Red Terror in Russia' by S. P. MELGOUNOV (E. tr. Dent), written during 1923-24, and illustrated with many startling photographs. 'Bolshevist Russia' by Prof. ANTON KALGREN of Copenhagen (E. tr. by Anna Barwell, A. & U. 1927) is an even more impressive indictment, by a former sympathiser with the Revolution and a 'Professor of Slav,' disillusioned by the facts, which are presented in abundance. 'The Speckled Domes: Episodes of an Englishman's Life in Russia,' by GERALD SHELLEY (Duck. 1925), makes a similar impression by its English realism. 'Russia' by NICHOLAS MAKEEV and VALENTINE O'HARA, with introd. by H. A. L. FISHER (Benn, 1925), is a dispassionate and instructive historical conspectus to its date, with a useful chronology and a bibliography.

The various testimonies of visitors have continued to multiply, with some variations of judgment. In 1925 appeared 'Leaves from a Russian Diary' by Prof. P. SOROKIN of Minnesota (H. & B.); 'Six Prisons and two Revolutions' by Col. OLIVER BALDWIN (H. & S.); and 'The Reforging of Russia' by EDWIN WARE HULLINGER (Witherby); in 1927 'What I saw in Russia' by MAURICE BARING (Hei.); HERBERT BURY's 'Russia from Within' (Churchman Pub. Co.); and L. LAWTON's 'The Russian Revolution: 1917-26' (Mac.); and in 1928 'Seeing Russia' by the American E. M. NEWMAN (Funk & W.); 'Present-Day Russia' by IVY LEE (Mac.); 'The Challenge of Bolshevism,' by D. F. BUXTON (A. & U.); 'Russia in Resurrection' by 'An English Europasian' (Rout.); and 'A New Party in Russia,' by P. MALEVOKY-MALEVITCH (Rout.), a small but interesting book, putting a "religious" ideal of compromise (set on foot by "the Europasian party," otherwise "a few intellectuals," in 1921) which does not appear to have in any degree materialised. 'Humanity Uprooted' by MAURICE HINDUS (Cape, 1929) is a vivacious product of detached Americanism, which already seems out of date in the general financial depression.

In that year a fresh revealing light was cast by the exiled LEON TROTSKY in his German book *Die Internationale Revolution und die*

Kommunistische Internationale, like his 'My Life' (But. 1930) was by his former comrades denounced as the result of *bourgeois* bribery. Its picture of Russian failure and distress is as vivid as those given in any foreign indictment. Its presentment of the situation may be checked by the works above named and such contemporary books as 'Leonid Krassin' by his wife, LUBOV KRASSIN (Skeffington, 1929); 'Civic Training in Soviet Russia,' by Prof. S. N. HARPER of Chicago (Un. of Ch. Pr. and C.U.P. 1929); 'The Russian Land,' by A. RHYS WILLIAMS (Bles, 1929); 'Communist Russia,' by ANNE O'H. McCORMICK (W. & N. 1929); 'Dreiser looks at Russia,' by TH. DREISER (Con. 1929); 'The Riddle of Russia,' by E. ASHMEAD-BARTLETT, with introd. by Lord BIRKENHEAD (Cas. 1929); 'In the Land of Communist Dictatorship,' by ANATOLE V. BAIKALOFF (Cape, 1929); 'The Soviet Union Year Book' (A. & U. 1928, '29); KARL KAUTSKY's 'Bolshevism at a Deadlock' (A. & U. 1931).

§ 10. A view in some ways more intimate may be gathered from the accumulating biographies of LENIN, the new-founder of Leningrad. The 'Lenin' of LEON TROTSKY (Har. 1925) has a special authority as a human document, both for the Revolution of 1917 and Lenin the Man. The 'Lenin' of VALERIU MARCU (Gollancz, 1928), if less intimate, has the critical value of detachment. 'Lenin—Red Dictator' by G. VERNADSKY (E. tr. Milford, 1931) is perhaps the most dispassionate book thus far. Another is the *Lenine* of M. LANDAU-ALDANOV (Paris, 1920). The latest at the time of this writing is 'The Man from the Volga,' by F. J. P. VEALE (Con. 1932). 'Leninism,' again, by JOSEPH STALIN, the successor or supplanter of Trotsky (E. tr. A. & U. 1928), sets forth another facet of the founder's doctrine.

Stalin in turn is studied by BORIS BAJANOV in *Avec Staline dans la Kremline* (Paris, 1931), and in a number of other Russian, French, and English books, among the latest of which are 'Stalin,' by STEPHEN GRAHAM (Benn, 1931), which is a careful construction from the previous literature; and 'Stalin' by ISAAC DON LEVINE (Cape, 1931), an intimate picture documented from many official records. M. J. LARSON's 'An Expert in the Service of the Soviet' (E. tr. by Dr. A. S. Rappoport: Benn, 1929) has special significance for its concrete record of procedure; and the books of V. ORLOFF, 'Revelations of a Soviet Diplomat' (W. & N.) and 'The Secret Dossier' (E. tr. Har. both 1932), are further revelatory.

§ 11. On Soviet economic experience and prospects, finally, there are a number of recent books:—LOUIS FISCHER, 'The Soviet in World Affairs' (2 v. Cape, 1930); 'Seven Years in Soviet Russia' (Put. 1931), by PAUL SCHEFFER, author of

'The Russian Revolution: 1917-26' (Mac. 1927); 'An Economic History of Soviet Russia, 1917-31,' by LANCELOT LAWTON (Mac. 1931); 'Soviet Foreign Trade: A Menace and a Promise,' by J. M. BUDISH and S. S. SHIPMAN (A. & U. 1931); 'The Experiment of Bolshevism' by ARTHUR FEILER (E. tr. by H. J. STENNING: A. & U. 1930), a first-hand picture of the situation; and 'An Editor looks at Russia,' by RAY LONG (Con. 1932).

The 'Russia and Ourselves' of the Norwegian statesman VIDKUN QUISLUNG (H. & S. 1932) is well-informed, noting the Soviet's work in sanitary and other reform, while setting forth its general hostile policy of world-revolution as a menace to civilisation. G. T. GRINKO's 'The Five-Years Plan of the Soviet Union' (Lawrence, 1931) is an important record; while 'The Economic Life of Soviet Russia' by CALVIN B. HOOVER (Mac. 1931) professes a notable impartiality. 'Making Bolsheviks,' by Prof. S. N. HARPER of Chicago (C.U.P. 1931); 'Russia's Productive System,' by ÉMILE BURNS (Gollancz, 1931); 'My Russian Memoirs,' by Sir BERNARD PARES (Cape, 1931); and 'Red Bread,' by MAURICE HINDUS (Cape, 1931), author of 'Humanity Uprooted,' are further contributions with an individual character.

§ 12. The Soviet attitude in propaganda outside of Russia is to be gathered from the pamphlet 'In Soviet Russia: Autumn 1930,' by MAURICE DOBB (Mod. Books, Ltd.). On the question of the religious persecution charged on the Soviet Government, there is a carefully documented vindictory statement by W. P. COATES, 'Religion in Tsarist and Soviet Russia' (A.-R. Parly. Comm. 1930).

This discussion, also handled in 'The Church and the Russian Revolution,' by Dr. M. SPINKA (Mac.), appears to have availed on both sides to put aside the important questions of the ethics and economics of the Soviet political system. The DUCHESS OF ARTHOLL's 'The Conscription of a People' (Ph.A., 1931) discusses them on grounds of political principle.

There is a separate study of the situation in Riga, 'The City of the Red Plague: the Bolsheviks in Riga,' by GEORGE POPOFF (E. tr. by R. T. John: A. & U.); and from the general literature of discussion may be further selected: M. S. FARBMAN's 'Russia and the Struggle for Peace' and 'After Lenin'; and PANAÏT ISTRATI's 'Russia Unveiled' (both A. & U.). The recent book by ESSAD BEY, 'Stalin: the Career of a Fanatic' (Lane, 1932), essays to set forth the standing situation. The latest of importance, at the date of this writing, is TROTSKY's 'History of the Russian Revolution' (E. tr. Gollancz, 1932).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XVI.—POLAND

§ 1. THE re-creation of an independent Poland as a result of the World War has generated a new interest in the history as a whole. ROBERT MACHRAY's 'Poland, 1914-31' (A. & U. 1932, illustr.) sets forth the story of the resurrection. R. N. BAIN's 'Slavonic Europe: A Political History of Poland and Russia from 1447 to 1796' (C.U.P.) covers the old period of Polish independence. The best short history of Poland in English is Prof. MORFILL's (S.N.S. 1893). There is trans. in English, however, the short Polish history of Prof. K. WOLSKI, 'Poland, her glory, sufferings, overthrow' (1885); also the work of General VON MOLTKE, 'Poland: An Historical Sketch' (E. tr. C. & H. 1895). For the Reformation and Counter-Reformation period KRASINSKI's 'Sketch of the Religious History of the Slavonic Nations' (rep. 1869) and his 'History of the Reformation in Poland' (2 v. 1839-40) are still illuminating.

§ 2. The older history of the Poles is thoroughly treated in the comprehensive German work of T. SCHIEMANN, *Russland, Polen, und Livland bis im 17ten Jahrhundert* (2 Bde. 1885-87, in Oncken's *Allgemeine Geschichte*); and the fullest foreign account of John Sobieski is Count DE SALVANDY's *Histoire du Roi Jean Sobieski et de la Pologne* (last ed. 1876), which proceeds upon the old *Histoire de Jean Sobieski, Roi de Pologne* of COYER (3 t. Amsterdam, 1761). The latest in English is the 'Sobieski, King of Poland' of J. B. MORTON (E. & S. 1932). But E. H. R. TATHAM's 'Life of John Sobieski' (S. M. 1881) is a careful and complete study; and there is a German research by G. RIEDER, *John Sobieski in Wien* (Wien, 1882).

The story of the partition of Poland is told in a number of the works on the European history of the 18th c.—e.g. vol. vi of the C.M.H.; HASSALL's 'The Balance of Power,' in his 'Periods of European History'; in CARLYLE's 'Frederick'; and in such general surveys as the 'Modern History' of Profs. HAYES and MOON (Mac.) and others mentioned in Course III; also in con-

nection with Napoleon—see ROSE's 'Life.' In this connection may be noted the short German work of W. MICHAEL, *England's Stellung zur ersten Teilung Polens* (Hamburg, 1890).

§ 3. On the condition of Poland in the pre-War period there is available the valuable survey of GEORG BRANDES, 'Poland: A Study of the Land, People, and Literature' (E. tr. Hei. 1903). Apart from this, information is to be had chiefly from works in Polish and other languages. The following are worth consulting: E. KNORR, *Die pölnischen Aufstände seit 1830* (Berlin, 1880); Baron E. VON BRUEGGEN, *Polens Auflösung* (Leipzig, 1878); I. OZIEDUSZYCKI's *Der Patriotismus in Polen* (Cracow, 1884). There is further, in English, an excellent monograph on 'The Polish Jew: His Social and Economic Value,' by BEATRICE C. BASKERVILLE (C. & H. 1906), which throws much light on Polish political life in general; and the share of Poland in the Russian pre-War revolution may be partly gathered from works named in Course XXXI.

§ 4. For the post-War period may be read, with Mr. MACHRAY's history, Mr. F. H. SIMMONDS' 'Can Europe keep the Peace?' (Hamish Hamilton 1932). This is a searching survey of the dangers surrounding the new State, dealing with the hopes of the German "Forward" party for its re-subjection, and the gradual attainment of stability by the re-born nation. See also 'Poland and the Minority Races,' by A. L. GOODHEART; E. R. B. HANSEN's 'Poland's Westward Trend' (pref. by Dr. August Müller); Prof. FRANCIS BUJAK's 'Poland's Economical Development'; and Count ALEX. SKRZYNSKI's 'Poland and Peace' (all A. & U.).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XVII.—THE MINOR SLAVONIC STATES AND ROUMANIA
(THE BALKANS)

§ 1. THE compendious work of N. FORBES, D. G. HOGARTH and others, 'A History of Bulgaria, Serbia, Greece, Roumania' (O.U.P. 1915), is a competent introduction to the study of its field; and the 'Serbia: Her People, History and Aspirations' of W. M. PETROVITCH (Har. 1915) serves for an outline. The 'History of Roumania' by N. IORGA (tr. from Fr. by J. McCabe, F.U. 1925) is an authoritative record for that country; and the same author's *Histoire des États Balcaniques jusqu'à 1924* (Paris, 1925) covers the general history to its date.

In the post-War reconstruction of States, Bohemia (with Moravia and Silesia, Slovakia and Russinia) became Czecho-Slovakia; while Serbia, Montenegro, and the old Yugoslav provinces of Austria (Bosnia and Herzegovina) became the new Yugo-Slavia or Yugoslavia. As to the history of pre-War Bohemia see Course XXVIII, § 6.

A general view of the history of Serbia (now the established spelling) down to the period of its liberation is furnished by Ranke's work, 'The History of Servia and the Servian Revolution; with a sketch of the Insurrection in Bosnia' (E. tr. B.L. 1853). To the Bohn trans. is added an account of Montenegrin and Bulgarian history, chiefly from the French of Cyprien Robert. Later works of merit are the Rev. W. Denton's 'Servia and the Servians' (Bell, 1862) and 'Montenegro: Its People and their History' (Daldy, 1877); KRASINSKI'S 'Montenegro and the Slavonians of Turkey' (1853); W. CARR'S Stanhope Prize Essay, 'Montenegro' (Oxford, 1884).

Bulgaria is treated of in R. WYON'S 'The Balkans from Within' (Finch, 1904); JAMES SAMUELSON'S 'Bulgaria, Past and Present' (1888); F. V. GREENE'S 'The Bulgarian Campaign, 1877-78' (1903); J. G. C. MINCHIN'S 'The Growth of Freedom in the Balkan Peninsula' (Mur. 1886); W. MILLER, 'The Balkans: Roumania, Bulgaria, Servia, and Montenegro' (S.N.S. 1896) and 'Travels

and Politics in the Near East' (F.U. 1898); TEREZA STRATILESCO's 'From Carpathian to Pindus' (same, 1906); W. HUYSHE's 'Liberation of Bulgaria' (Bliss, 1894); ADOLF KOCH's 'Prince Alexander of Battenberg' (E. tr. 1887); and A. VON HUHN's 'The Struggle of the Bulgarians for National Independence . . . in 1885' (E. tr. Mur. 1886), which describes the war of that year between Bulgaria and Serbia. Bulgaria's part in the World War is noted in the histories named in Course LI.

The later political history of Serbia is handled in HERBERT VIVIAN's 'The Servian Tragedy' (1904), and in 'A Royal Tragedy,' by C. MIJATOVICH (Nash, 1906). 'Servia by the Servians,' comp. and ed. by ALFRED STEAD, with introd. by King PETER I (Hei. 1909), consists of 24 chapters on all aspects of Serbian life at that date by Professors and Ministers of State, with an opening Histor. Survey by the Director of State Archives.

§ 2. In French there are a number of surveys and histories, notably E. MATON's *Histoire du Monténégro* (1881); P. COQUELLE's fuller *Histoire du Monténégro* (1895) and his *La royaume de Serbie* (1894); J. LAMOUCHE's *La Bulgarie dans le passé et le présent* (1892); A. G. DRANDAR's *Les événements politiques en Bulgarie depuis 1876 jusqu'à nos jours* (Bruxelles, 1896); D. DE LOULAY's *En Bulgarie, 1877-78* (1883); J. ERDIE's *Autour de la Bulgarie* (1902); A. A. C. STURDZA, *La terre et la race roumaines* (Paris, 1904: pp. 724); P. ELIADE, *Histoire de l'esprit public en Roumanie au dix-neuvième siècle* (Paris, 1905, etc.); J. C. FILITTI, *Rôle diplomatique des Phanariotes de 1700 à 1821* (Paris, 1901); GEORGE DEMETRIUS, *D'Adrianople à Balta-Lunan: Règne de Bibesco: 1829-56* (Paris, 1893-94, 2 t.); J. DE WITTE, *Quinze ans d'histoire: 1866-81* (Paris, 1905); D. A. STURDZA, *Charles Ier, roi de Roumanie* (Bucarest, 2 t. 1899-1904); A. BELLESORT, *La Roumanie contemporaine* (Paris, 1905). In German may be noted A. TUMA's *Serbien* (1894) and E. FISCHER's *Die Herkunft der Rumänen* (Bamberg, 1904); but above all the massive *Geschichte der orientalischen Angelegenheit* of F. BAMBERG (Oncken's ser. 1888).

§ 3. For the study of the past "Eastern Question" in this connection the judicious work of H. N. BRAILSFORD on 'Macedonia, its Races, and their Future' (Met. 1906) is of importance. The later history is fully presented in the 'Serbia and Europe' of Dr. LAZARE MARCOVITCH (A. & U. 1920); 'The March of the Seventy Thousand,' by HENRY BAERLEIN (Parsons, 1926); 'The Czecho-Slovak Republic: Impressions and Studies,' by Prof. N. VAN WIJK of Leyden (Czech. Soc. 1924); 'Czecho-Slovakia: A Survey of Economic and Social Conditions,' by Prof. Dr. JOSEF GRUBER of Prague (E. tr. 1924: Mac. N.Y.). Col. B. GRANVILLE-BAKER's 'From a Terrace in Prague' (A. & U.)

approaches from the Bohemian side. 'Masaryk of Czechoslovakia,' by D. A. LOWRIE (O.U.P. 1930), is an interesting presentment of that eminent statesman.

§ 4. Yugo-Slavia, as a whole, has received less of English attention, though the pre-War sections had much (§ 1). Dalmatia, now part of Yugo-Slavia, successively ruled in the past by Venice, Turkey, and Austro-Hungary, has been the subject of many treatises, the latest being 'Dalmatia,' by OONA BALL (Faber, 1932). The older 'Dalmatia, the Quarnero, and Istria,' by T. G. JACKSON (O.U.P. 3 v. 1887), is a comprehensive record.

The present Balkan situation is set forth in 'The Balkan Pivot: Yugoslavia: A Study in Government and Administration,' by Prof. C. A. BEARD and G. RADIN (Mac. N.Y.). 'The Land and the Peasant in Roumania,' by DAVID MITRANY (Y.U.P.; Milford, 1930), throws much light on Roumanian problems.

§ 5. 'Dacia: An Outline of the Early Civilisations of the Carpatho-Danubian Countries,' by V. PÂRVAN (C.U.P.), has an appeal for those who seek the historic beginnings.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XVIII.—TURKEY

§ 1. AFTER Gibbon's 57th chapter, **Stanley Lane Poole's 'Turkey'** (S.N.S.) is a good introduction to Turkish history; as is also, on a rather larger scale, the *Histoire de l'empire ottoman* of Viscount A. DE LA JONQUIÈRE in Duruy's *Histoire Universelle* series. FREEMAN'S 'The Ottoman Power in Europe' (Mac. 1877) gives a readable sketch of the subject. For the 19th and the present century, 'The Ottoman Empire and its Successors: 1801-1927,' by W. MILLER (C.U.P., 1922) supplies an adequate and trustworthy record, superseding previous works for that period; and Sir A. TELFORD WAUGH'S 'Turkey: Yesterday, To-day, and To-morrow' (C. & H. 1930) helps to a general view. Sir J. A. R. MARRIOTT'S 'The Eastern Question' is revised in the 3rd ed. (Cl. Pr. 1924).

§ 2. For particular periods the first authority is RANKE, whose account of 'The Ottoman and the Spanish Empires in the 16th and 17th Centuries' is trans. in English (1843); and thereafter A. SOREL'S 'Eastern Question in the 18th Century' (E. tr. Met. 1898) gives a fair and lucid view of the political situation for the period it covers. The Ottoman Conquest (1358-1529) is very competently handled by Prof. BURY in vol. i of the C.M.H.; and the old compilation 'Turkey: Its History and Progress' (2 v. 1854), made by Sir G. Larpent from the journals of Sir J. Porter, is also worth consulting. Later history is broadly handled in S. P. H. DUGGAN'S 'The Eastern Question: A Study in Diplomacy' (N.Y. Columb. Coll. Studies, 1902); in NOEL BUXTON'S 'Europe and the Turks: The Cause and the Cure of the Trouble in the Balkan Peninsula' (Mur. 1907); in E. DRIAULT'S *La Question d'Orient depuis ses origines jusqu'à nos jours* (Paris, 1905); and in A. CAHUET'S *La Question d'Orient dans l'histoire contemporaine* (Paris, 1905). The older 'Essays on Eastern Questions' of W. G. PALGRAVE (1872) are still worth perusal. For the Russo-Turkish War of 1877 see the works named in Course XXXI, § 3, and Course XXXIII.

§ 3. Of Turkish "civilisation" there is little to tell; but of Turkish life some idea may be had from such books as S. Lane Poole's 'Studies in a Mosque' (3rd ed. 1893); *La Turquie actuelle* of M. UBICINI (1855); Sir G. CAMPBELL'S 'A Very Recent View of Turkey' (1878); SUTHERLAND MENZIES'S 'Turkey, Old and New' (2 v. 1883); Mrs. LUCY M. J. GARNETT'S 'Turkish Life in Town and Country' (1904); Mrs. W. R. RAMSAY'S 'Everyday Life in Turkey' (H. & S. 1903); and *La femme turque*, by G. DORYS (Paris, 1902). The intellectual life of 19th c. Turkey is discussed also in various modern works on Islam, notably VAM-BÉRY'S *Der Islam im 19ten Jahrhundert* (1875).

§ 4. The history of Turkey in the present century divides into pre-War and post-War revolutionary developments. On the former period see E. F. KNIGHT'S 'The Awakening of Turkey: A History of the Turkish Rebellion' (Milne, 1909), dealing with the movement of the 'Young Turks'; and ALLEN UPWARD'S 'The East End of Europe' (Mur. 1908), which is the solidest of that writer's works, supplying as it does a concrete record of Turkish political history up to its date. 'Mustapha Kemal: Between Europe and Asia: A Biography,' by DAGOBERT VON MIKUSCH (E. tr. by J. Linton: Hei. 1931), is informative for the post-War period. For lack of dates it cannot well serve as an exact history; but in a simple fashion it casts much revealing light.

On the same period, "intimate" views are furnished in 'Turkey Faces West: A Turkish View of Recent Events and their Origin,' by HALIDÉ EDIB (Khanum), a personal record by the wife of an active politician (Y.U.P., Milford, 1930); and 'Unveiled,' by SEMA EKREM (Bles, 1931), another Turkish lady.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XIX.—THE SARACENS

§ 1. THAT portion of the Arabian (Semitic) people which, at and after the rise of Islam, carried its conquests through Egypt and Syria to Persia and India in the East, and through northern Africa to Spain in the West, has obviously a history of its own. Of this there is a sympathetic and popular presentment by AMEER ALI (Syed), 'A Short History of the Saracens,' with maps and illustrations (Mac. 4th ed. 1926); with which may be read D. G. HOGARTH'S 'Arabia' (Cl. Pr. 1922); A. Gilman's 'The Saracens' (S.N.S.); the 'Arabia Felix' of BERTRAM THOMAS (pref. by T. E. Lawrence; App. by Sir A. Keith: Cape, 1932); and 'The Origin of Islam in its Christian Environment,' Lectures by RICHARD BELL, an expert in Arabic (Mac. 1926). A special list of works on the Moorish dominion in Spain is given above in Course XXIII, § 3; to which may be added 'The Crusaders in the East,' by W. B. STEVENSON (C.U.P.).

§ 2. The pre-Mohammedan life of Arabia is dealt with in most lives of Mohammed; also in the *Histoire des Arabes* of SEDILLOT (1854); the *Essai sur l'histoire des Arabes avant l'Islamisme* of CAUSSIN DE PERCEVAL (3 t. 1847); and P. RADIOT'S *Les vieux Arabes* (1901). In English the chief authorities are Sir WILLIAM MUIR'S works, mentioned in next section and in Course III, § 8. See also Prof. ROBERTSON SMITH'S 'Kinship and Marriage in Early Arabia' (Black: last ed. with add. notes, by S. A. Cook, 1903). Specially valuable, however, are the German research of G. JACOB, *Das Leben der vorislâmischen Beduinen* (1895), and WELLHAUSEN'S *Reste arabischen Heidentums* (1897).

§ 3. The history of the great period of conquest may be read briefly in GIBBON (chs. 50-52 and 56), or in greater detail in Sir W. Muir's 'The Caliphate: Its Rise, Decline, and Fall' (new ed. rev. by Dr. T. H. WEIR: Grant, 1924); A. J. BUTLER'S 'The Arab Conquest of Egypt and the last thirty years of the Roman Dominion' (Cl. Pr. 1892); S. P. SCOTT'S

'History of the Moorish Empire in Europe' (Philad. 3 v. 1904); WELLHAUSEN'S *Das arabische Reich und sein Sturz* (1902); J. BOURNICHON'S *L'Invasion musulmane en Afrique* (Tours, 1890, folio); M. CAUDEL'S *Les premières invasions arabes dans l'Afrique du Nord, 641-697* (1900); S. LANE POOLE'S 'Medieval India under Mohammedan Rule: 712-1764' (S.N.S.); and the same writer's 'History of the Moghul Emperors of Hindustan' (Con. 1892). In French there is available a trans. of IBN ADARI, *Histoire de l'Afrique intitulée Al-Bayano 'l-Mogrib*, by E. FAYNAU (Alger, 2 t. 1901-4). Sedillot's *Histoire des Arabes* is still good for the whole subject.

§ 4. The later Moors are dealt with in H. LEARED'S 'Morocco and the Moors,' ed. by Sir R. F. BURTON (Low, 1891); in R. D. MOREL'S 'Morocco in Diplomacy' (S.E. 1912); and in 'The Truth about Morocco,' by M. A. AFLALO, an anti-British book (Lane, 1904). There are further two learned volumes by the German scholar C. H. BECCER, *Beiträge zur Geschichte Aegyptiens unter dem Islam* (Stras. 1902-3). For the Asiatic Caliphates there are: H. G. RAVERTY, 'History of the Muhammadan Dynasty in Asia' (2 v. 1884); S. Lane Poole, 'The Mohammedan Dynasties' (Con. 1894), and 'Saladin' (Heroes ser. 1898); Prof. Palmer's 'Haroun Alrashid' (1881); Major R. D. OSBORN'S 'Islam under the Khalifs of Bagdad' (1878), a work as much of religious polemic as of history; and Prof. NÖLDEKE'S 'Sketches from Eastern History' (E. tr. Black, 1892).

In German there are WEIL'S great *Geschichte der Chalifen* (5 Bde. 1846-62); A. MÜLLER'S *Der Islam* in Oncken's ser. (2 Bde. 1885-87); and *Studien zur süd-arabischen Altertumskunde*, by O. WEBER (1901).

§ 5. On the sociological side the materials are considerable. Rational discussion on Moslem civilisation began with C. E. OELSNER'S prize essay, *Des effets de la religion de Mohammed* (1810), and HEEREN'S *Essai sur l'influence des Croisades* (1809). Most of the work has been done on the Continent—e.g. Prof. STANISLAS GUYARD'S *La civilisation musulmane* (1884); G. VAN VLOTEN'S *Recherches sur la domination arabe* (Amst. 1894); G. DUGAT'S *Histoire des philosophes et des théologiens musulmans* (1878); A. BEBEL, *Die mohammedanische Kulturperiode* (1884); G. JACOB, *Der nordisch-baltische Handel der Araber im Mittelalter* (1887); Dr. F. DIETERICI'S *Die Naturanschauung und Naturphilosophie der Araber im 10ten Jahrhundert* (1861); H. STEINER'S *Die Mu'taziliten, oder die Freidenker in Islam* (1865); Dr. LUCIEN LECLERC'S *Histoire de la médecine arabe* (1876); and Dr. GUSTAVE LE BON'S *La civilisation des Arabes* (1884), which contains many valuable illustrations. In English, however, there is the volume

"Arabian Society during the Middle Ages," compiled from Lane's notes on the "Arabian Nights," by S. Lane Poole (C. & W. 1883); and 'Moslem Mentality' by L. LEVONIAN (A. & U.). In French there is a *Précis de l'art arabe*, by J. BOURGOIN (Paris, 1889-92, 4 pt.). A sketch of Saracen evolution on the political side has been attempted in the editor's 'Evolution of States,' and on the religious side in his 'Short History of Freethought.'

§ 6. Concerning modern Arabia the best authority is D. G. HOGARTH (§ 1), 'The Nearer East' (Hei. 1902), and 'The Penetration of Arabia: A Record of the Development of Western Knowledge concerning the Arabian Peninsula' (Rivers, 1905).

Modern Arab life has been studied by many travellers. Among the more important are W. G. PALGRAVE, 'A Year's Journey through Central and Eastern Arabia' (2 v. 1862-63); C. M. DOUGHTY, 'Travels in Arabia Deserta' (2 v. C.U.P. 1888: rep.); Sir R. F. BURTON, 'Pilgrimage to El-Medina and Meccah' (2 v. B.L. 1898, edited by Lady Burton, with intro. by S. Lane Poole); 'Christians at Mecca' by AUGUSTUS RALLI (Hei. 1909); J. F. KEANE's 'Six Months in Meccah' (1881) and 'Six Months in the Hejaz' (W. & D. 1887); A. FORDER's 'With the Arabs in Tent and Town' (Marshall Bros. 1902); and L. M. PHILLIPPS's 'In the Desert' (Arnold, 1905). In German may be noted EDUARD GLASER's *Skizze der Geschichte und Geographie Arabiens* (2 Bde. Berlin, 1890).

§ 7. Arab culture is now substantially centred in Egypt, and for its present conditions works named in Course XVIII, §§ 7, 8, may be referred to. As in other fields, the archæological remains are too extensive for notation here; but mention may be made of Sir A. B. W. KENNEDY's 'Petra: its History and Monuments' (Mac. 1923), an attractively illustrated account of that fascinating city and its surroundings, with a historic survey embracing the Nabatæans and a competent study of the types of art, Assyrian and classic, in its monuments. Of similar interest are:—'The Sarcophagus of an Ancient Civilisation: Petra, Edom, and the Edomites,' by G. L. ROBINSON: intr. by Dr. N. F. Albright (Mac. 1931); and *Petra et la Nabatène*, by A. KAMMERER (Paris, 2 t. 1931).

'An Introduction to the Sociology of Islam,' by REUBEN LEVY (vol. i, W. & N. 1931), has a certain special claim as being published for Spencer's trustees.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XX.—CHINA

§ 1. THE arresting work of Mr. LIONEL CURTIS on 'The Capital Question of China' (Mac. 1932) is fitted to create a new interest in that problem; and a study of Chinese history should be a preparative. There are several short histories of China in English: the 'China' of Dr. R. K. Douglas (S.N.S. 1899); that of N. P. EDWARDS, 'The Story of China' (Hut. 1900); and D. C. BOULGER's 'Short History of China' (1900); and China is included also in J. C. HANNAH's 'Brief History of Eastern Asia' (F.U. 1900). Prof. H. A. GILES's 'Historic China' (1882; N.Y. 1902) contains a sketch of ancient Chinese history as well as studies of modern Chinese public life. Mr. Boulger's larger 'History of China' (2 v. 1898) is readable, but not remarkable for research or for sociological interest. A useful addition in this field is supplied by G. F. HUDSON, 'Europe and China: A Survey of their Relations in History' (Arnold, 1931); also in 'China and the West' (1925) and 'China and England' (1928) by W. E. SOOTHILL (both O.U.P.).

Of special value is the 'History of China' by the Rev. J. MACGOWAN (K.P. 1897), that being a "reproduction from the original of the Standard History of China." It is not a literal trans., but follows the Chinese narrative. Perhaps the most instructive English works in short compass are Prof. E. H. PARKER's 'China: Her History, Diplomacy, and Commerce from the Earliest Times to the Present Day' (Mur. 1901) and 'Ancient China Simplified' (same, 1908); but that of Prof. S. W. WILLIAMS, 'A History of China: being the Historical Chapters from "The Middle Kingdom"' (pub. 1883: 2 v. Scrib.) with supp. chapter by F. W. Williams (Low, 1897), is the most exact and systematic for its periods. The old work of J. F. DAVIS, 'The Chinese: A General Description of China and its Inhabitants' (3 small v. 1844), is still worth reading, both for its modern history and its description; as is the work of J. H. GRAY, 'China: A History

of the Laws, etc., of the People' (rep. ed. by W. G. Gregor, 2 v. Mac. 1878).

§ 2. Of ancient Chinese history there is a good sociological digest in 'A Short History of Chinese Civilization' by RICHARD WILHELM (E. tr. by Joan Joshua and intr. by Dr. L. Giles: Har.); and for the remoter periods an able survey by Miss EDITH J. SIMCOX in 'Primitive Civilisations' (2 v. Son. 1894), which gives abundant references. Chronological problems are dealt with in T. FERGUSSON'S 'Chinese Researches: Chinese Chronology and Cycles' (K.P. 1880, etc.). For special research into Chinese origins, however, the student should turn to TERRIEN DE LACOUPERIE'S original and important research, 'Western Origin of Early Chinese Civilisation' (1894). The problems of the evolution of the Chinese script are further dealt with in FRIEDRICH DELITZSCH'S *Die Entstehung des ältesten Schriftsystems* (1897); and the question of racial origins may further be considered in the light of N. B. DENNYS'S 'Folk-Lore of China, and its Affinities with that of the Aryan and Semitic Races' (K.P. 1876).

For the related Mongolian races see H. H. HOWORTH'S 'History of the Mongols, from the Ninth to the Nineteenth Century' (Lmns. 3 v. 1876-88); and 'A Thousand Years of the Tartars,' by Prof. E. H. PARKER (K.P. 2nd ed. rev. 1924).

§ 3. On 19th c. Chinese history may be consulted 'China and the Manchus,' by H. A. GILES (C.U.P.); J. ROSS, 'The Manchus or Reigning Dynasty of China' (Paisley, 1880); Col. T. MEADOWS TAYLOR, 'The Chinese and their Rebellions' (1856); Admiral LINDESAY BRINE'S 'The Taeping Rebellion in China' (1862); Sir ROBERT HART'S essays on the Chinese Question entitled 'These from the Land of Sinim' (C. & H. 2nd ed. 1903); E. J. EITEL, 'Europe in China: The History of Hong-Kong' (Luzac, 1895); Sir R. K. DOUGLAS'S 'Europe and the Far East' (C.U.P. 1904); and 'The History of the Boxer Trouble' (*Shanghai Mercury* office, 1900), as well as the works of Gray, Davis, Parker, and Boulger.

§ 4. Among the many books on latter-day and present-day China may be noted:—C. P. SKRINE, 'Chinese Central Asia' (Met.); A. E. MOULE, 'The Chinese People: A Handbook of China' (S.P.C.K. 1914, maps and illustrns.); J. W. ROBERTSON-SCOTT, 'The People of China' (Met. 1900); JAMES JOHNSTON, 'China and its Future' (Stock, 1899); A. H. SMITH, 'Village Life in China: A Study in Sociology' (Oliphant, 1900); CHESTER HOLCOMBE, 'The Real Chinese Question' (Met. 1901); E. BARD, *Les Chinois chez eux* (1899); A. H. COLQUHOUN, 'China in Transformation' (Harp. 1898); and A. S. KRAUSSE, 'China in Decay'

(C. & H. 1900). 'Eighteen Capitals of China,' by Dr. W. E. GEIL (Con. 1911), is a remarkably informatory and abundantly illustrated survey, by the author of 'The Great Wall of China' (Mur. 1909).

Other books worth returning to are:—Sir R. K. DOUGLAS, 'Society in China' (1894); R. S. GUNDRY, 'China, Present and Past' (1895); P. ANTONINI, *Au pays de Chine* (1888); A. FROUT DE FRONTPERTIUS, *Chine* (1882); Baron G. DE CONTENSON, *Chine* (1884); M. JAMETEL, *La Chine inconnue* (1886); and G. E. SIMON, *La cité chinoise* (1886 : E. tr. 'China, its social and religious life,' 1887); and J. B. AUBRY, *Les Chinois chez eux* (Lille, 1889). Of these works, that of M. Simon is perhaps the most philosophical and instructive; but there is much interest also in the treatise on 'China and the Chinese' by Prof. H. A. GILES (Mac. 1902). On the commercial side may be consulted T. R. JERNIGAN'S 'China's Business Methods and Policy' (F.U. 1904), and 'China in Law and Commerce' (Mac. 1905). The old compilation, *Chine Moderne*, by PAUTHIER and BAZIN (Paris, 1853), remains a valuable storehouse of exact scholarly information.

§ 5. Chinese history is to a considerable extent illuminated by a knowledge of the ancient Chinese thinkers, trans. of whose works are specified in Course VI. The excellent 'History of Chinese Literature,' by Prof. H. A. GILES (Hei. 1901), should be read for further light.

§ 6. China in the recent period of convulsion has naturally received fresh attention. STANLEY P. SMITH'S 'China from Within' (Marshall Bros. 1901) gives an account of the Chinese crisis at its date, as do several of the works named in § 4. On the period of disintegration before that of civil war, see also W. A. P. MARTIN'S 'A Cycle of Cathay: or, China, South and North' (Oliphant, 1896), and 'The Changing Chinese,' by Prof. E. A. ROSS (N.Y. 1912), presents the aspects a decade later, as does 'The Chinese Revolution' by A. J. BROWN (N.Y. 1912). The 'Sun Yat Sen' of J. CANTLIE and C. S. JONES (Jarrold, 1912); and the 'Memoirs' of that statesman (Hut. 1927) portray one of the more interesting of modern Chinese figures. A. BONNARD'S 'In China: 1920-21' (Rout. 1926); the 'What's Wrong with China?' of R. GILBERT (Mur. 1926); BERTRAND RUSSELL'S 'The Problem of China' (A. & U. 1922); and R. WILHELM'S 'The Soul of China' (E. tr. Cape, 1928), have further claims to attention.

J. EARL BAKER'S 'Explaining China' (Philpot, 1927) has authoritative value; and E. M. GULL'S 'Facets of the Chinese Question' (Benn, 1931) is one of the latest surveys of the general situation made with good inner knowledge. 'The China Revolu-

tion' by Prof. H. F. MACNAIR of Chicago (C.U.P. 1931) is another up-to-date and trustworthy record; and A. N. HOLCOMBE's 'The Spirit of the Chinese Revolution' (A. & U. 1930), and 'The Chinese Revolution: A Phase in the Regeneration of a World Power' (O.U.P. 1930), throw further light. From a Chinese writer, T'ANG LEANG LI, we have an 'Inner History of Chinese Revolution' (K.P. 1930) which may be held to reveal much that is partly hidden from foreign students. The 'Chinese Political Thought' of E. D. THOMAS (W. & N. 1928); and 'The Political Philosophy of Confucianism,' by LEONARD SHIHLIEN Hsü (Rout. 1932) may be noted in this connection.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXI.—JAPAN

§ 1. ON Japan there is a competent survey by R. P. PORTER, 'Japan: the Rise of a Modern Power' (Cl. Pr. 1918); also 'A History of Japan,' by Dr. J. Ingram Bryan, in Benn's 6d. ser.; and a good short account by D. Murray, 'Japan' (S.N.S.: 5th ed. rev. by J. H. LONGFORD, 1905). The fuller 'History of Japan' of Sir F. O. ADAMS (K.P. 2 v. 1874-75), if not a wholly satisfactory work, stands for first-hand knowledge. 'The Making of Modern Japan,' by JOHN H. GIBBONS (S.S. & Co.) is a useful conspectus of that period which has most interested Europe; as is the later 'Evolution of New Japan' by J. H. LONGFORD (C.U.P.). The earlier history, since the mediæval period, is well covered in the 'Europe and the Far East: 1506-1912' of Sir R. K. DOUGLAS (same).

Older works in English are:—W. E. GRIFFIS, 'The Mikado's Empire' (K.P. 1883) and 'Japan in History' (Boston, 1892); the 'History of the Empire of Japan' (Tokio, 1893); Sir E. J. REED'S 'Japan: Its History, Traditions, and Religions' (2 v. Mur. 1880); and C. LANMAN, 'Leading Men of Japan' (Boston, 1883). The old Dutch history of Japan by Dr. ENGELBERT KAEMPFER (1693), tr. by Scheuchzer, has been repub. (MacL. 3 v. 1906). Of special critical value is 'A History of Japan during the century of early European Intercourse,' by JAMES MURDOCH, in collaboration with ISOH YAMAGATA (1903). Much light on the inner life of Japan from 700 to 1900 is given by W. G. ASTON'S 'History of Japanese Literature' (Hei. 1899). See also the works on Japanese religion specified in Course VI, § 7.

§ 2. On Japanese civilisation the most fascinating if not the most trustworthy book is the late Lafcadio Hearn's 'Japan: An attempt at Interpretation' (Mac. 1904); but the following are worth study: G. APPORT, *Ancien Japon* (Tokio, 1888); L. L. DE ROSNY, *Les sources les plus anciennes de l'histoire du Japon* (pamph. Paris, 1882) and *La civilisation japonaise* (1883);

also L. E. BERTIN's *Les grandes guerres civiles du Japon* (1894). A memorable episode in Japanese history is recorded in the *Histoire de l'établissement, des progrès et de la décadence du Christianisme dans l'empire du Japon*, by PÈRE DE CHARLEVOIX (2 t. 1828). 'The Evolution of the Japanese,' by the American missionary S. L. GULICK (1905), is specially instructive, but needs to be read critically. 'Tales of Old Japan,' by A. B. MITFORD (Lord Redesdale), is still unrivalled as a revelation of the old Japanese life and ideals, which are further presented by the Japanese scholar YUNKA HIBINO in 'Nippon Shindo Ron, or the National Ideals of the Japanese People' (E. tr. C.U.P.); also in 'The Japanese Spirit,' by OKAKURA YOSHISABURO, with introd. by George Meredith (Con. 1905), a noteworthy presentation of the national life from a patriotic point of view; and in 'Bushidō, the Soul of Japan,' by I. NITOBE (Tokio).

§ 3. On the modern life of Japan there are a number of interesting works—e.g. LAFCADIO HEARN's 'Glimpses of Unfamiliar Japan' (2nd ed. 2 v. K.P. 1903), 'A Japanese Miscellany' (Low, 1899), and 'Gleanings in Buddha Fields' (Harp. 1898); Miss S. J. DUNCAN's 'A Social Departure' (C. & W. 1890); S. MOSSMAN's 'New Japan: Annals and Progress during the past twenty years' (Mur. 1874); W. G. DICKSON's 'Sketch of the History and Government of Japan' (Bld. 1869); Rev. W. G. DIXON, 'The Land of the Morning' (Edinb. 1882); E. G. HOLTHAM, 'Eight Years in Japan' (K.P. 1883); H. FAULD's 'Nine Years in Nipon' (Gardner, 1887); H. NORMAN, 'The Real Japan' (F.U. 1892); J. J. REIN, 'Japan: Travels and Researches' (E. tr. H. & S. 1884) and 'Industries of Japan' (E. tr. same, 1889); J. C. C. NEWTON, 'Japan—Country, Court, and People' (Nashville, 1900); F. BRINKLEY, 'Japan described and illustrated by the Japanese' (Boston, 1897); I. HITOMI, *Le Japon* (1900); F. MARTIN, *Le Japon vrai* (1898); MAURICE DUBARD, *La vie en Chine et au Japon* (1882); and *Le Japon pittoresque*, tr. in Eng. as 'Japanese Life,' etc. (W. & D. 1886). PERCIVAL LOWELL's 'Occult Japan' (Boston: H.M.) is a clever study of Japanese exorcism and miracle-working. Miss A. M. BACON's 'Japanese Girls and Women' (Gay, 1902) is an excellent account of Japanese family life; and 'Behind the Shoji,' by EVELYN ADAM (Met. 1910), is delightful.

§ 4. The standard English work of reference is Prof. B. H. CHAMBERLAIN's 'Things Japanese' (Mur. 5th ed. rev. 1905), which has stood the test of much scrutiny, and may be trusted in preference to the work of any passing traveller. Of equal value for its purpose is Murray's 'Guide to Japan,' of which Prof. Chamberlain was the first author. In French there

is a *Dictionnaire de l'histoire et de la géographie du Japon*, by Father PAPINOT (Hong Kong, 1899), to which there is no corresponding compilation in English. There is, however, available the valuable recent treatise by YOSABURO TAKEPOOHI, 'The Economic Aspects of the History of the Civilisation of Japan' (3 v. A. & U. 1930); and the 'Japan' of H. G. MOULTON (Faber, 1932) deals largely with economic and financial matters.

§ 5. On recent political developments there is information in J. CASSELL's 'History of the Russo-Japanese War' (Cas. 1904-5, 3 v. 4to); H. W. WILSON's 'Japan's Fight for Freedom,' a record of that Russo-Japanese War (Amalg. Pr. 1904) and for the subsequent period in 'Japan's Foreign Policies,' by A. M. POOLEY; A. MORGAN YOUNG's 'Japan under Taisho Tenno: 1912-26'; and W. R. CROCKER's 'The Japanese Population Problem: The Coming Crisis' (all A. & U.); also 'Western Influences in Modern Japan,' by INAZO NITOBE and others (C.U.P. 1932).

§ 6. Among the many books on Japanese art may be noted, for the general reader, 'The Arts of Japan,' by EDWARD DILLON (Met. 1906), a valuable little compilation; the fuller work of W. ANDERSON, 'The Pictorial Art of Japan' (Low, 1886, folio); the earlier book by C. DRESSER, 'Japan: Its Architecture, Arts, and Manufactures' (Lmns. 1882); Sir R. ALCOCK's 'Art and Art Industries in Japan' (1878); the 'Artistic Japan' of S. BING (6 v. highly illustrated, 1888-91); 'Hokusai,' by C. J. HOLMES (1899); and 'Japan and its Art,' by M. B. HUISE (1899).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXII.—PERSIA

§ 1. A COMPETENT up-to-date manual 'Persia' (Cl. Pr. 1922) has been produced by Sir Percy Sykes, author of the comprehensive 'History of Persia' (3rd ed. with supp. essays; 2 v. Mac.), which is now the standard history in English. The 'History of Ancient Persia' by A. W. ROGERS (Scrib. 1929) comes down to the death of Alexander. There are also a 'History of Persia to the Arab Conquest' by W. S. VAUX (S.P.C.K.) and a good short survey by S. G. W. Benjamin, 'Persia' (S.N.S.). A standard German work on ancient Persia is F. JUSTI'S *Geschichte Irans bis zum Ausgang der Sassaniden* (Bd. i of Geiger's *Grundriss der iranischen Philologie*, 1896-1904); available in trans. in vol. ii of the 'History of all Nations.' See also 'Studies in ancient Persian History,' by P. KERSHASP (K.P. 1905), and A. V. WILLIAMS JACKSON'S 'Persia Past and Present' (Mac. 1906).

'The Persian Gulf,' by Sir ARNOLD T. WILSON (Cl. Pr. 1928), author of 'A Bibliography of Persia' (same, 1930), is an expert survey of the history in its regional connections. A scholarly epitome of the history of ancient Persia was given in the *Encyc. Brit.* by the German Profs. NÖLDEKE and GUTSCHMID, who pronounced Canon RAWLINSON'S 'The Seventh Great Oriental Monarchy' inadequate in its handling of Oriental sources. They say the same, with modification, even of the historic (third) volume of SPIEGEL'S *Erânische Alterthumskunde* (1878), which is, nevertheless, a work of great erudition. They claim that the documentary evidence is mostly collected in Nöldeke's trans. of TABARI, entitled *Geschichte der Perser und Araber zur Zeit der Sassaniden* (Leyden, 1879). They count TILLEMONT'S *Histoire des Empereurs*, CLINTON'S *Fasti Romani*, and Saint Martin's notes to LEBEAU'S *Histoire du Bas-Empire* (1828-36), particularly useful for the connection of the Sassanides with Rome; and refer to Hoffmann's trans. of excerpts from the 'Syrian Acts of Persian Martyrs' (*Syrische Akten Persischer Märtyrer*, 1880) for much "serviceable matter." Vol. iv of the Camb. Anc. Hist., 'Persia and the West,' now covers the ancient period.

§ 2. For the Greek period there are available G. B. GRUNDY'S 'The Great Persian War and its Preliminaries' (Mur. 1901) and E. R. BEVAN'S 'The House of Seleucus' (Arnold, 1902); and for the early Christian period J. LABOURT'S *Le Christianisme dans l'empire Perse sous la dynastie sassanide* (1904). Prof. E. G. BROWNE produced an abridged trans. of MOHAMMED IBN EL-HASAN'S History of Tabaristan, 613-1216 (Quaritch, 1905), and P. HORN a *Geschichte Irans in islamitischer Zeit* (1896-1904; Bd. ii of Geiger's *Grundriss*). There is also a history of 'Mesopotamia and Persia under the Mongols,' tr. from the Arabic by G. LE STRANGE (Asiatic Soc. 1903).

§ 3. For the 19th c. there is a 'History of Persia, 1800-58,' following up the old History of Sir JOHN MALCOLM; and a 'General Sketch of the History of Persia' by Sir C. R. CLEMENTS MARKHAM (Chic. 1892). Of works on modern Persian life the principal in English are: C. J. WILLS'S 'The Land of the Lion and the Sun' (W.L. 1891) and 'Persia as it is' (Low, 1886); Sir John Malcolm's 'Sketches of Persia' (rep. 1861, Mur.); J. BASSETT'S 'Persia, the Land of the Imâms' (Blackie, 1887); S. G. W. BENJAMIN'S 'Persia and the Persians' (Mur. 1887); Sir F. Goldsmid's 'Eastern Persia, 1870-72' (Mac. 2 v. 1876); Lord CURZON'S 'Persia and the Persian Question' (Lmns. 2 v. 1892); and ISAAC ADAMS'S 'Persia, by a Persian' (Stock, 1906)—a presentment of Persian life by a Persian convert to Christianity. The economic side of Persian life, again, was handled in the Italian work of E. LORINI, *La Persia economica contemporanea* (Roma, 1900). See also 'Mary Bird in Persia,' by CLARA C. RICE (C.M.S. 1916), and 'Persian Women and their Ways' (1923), 'Through Persia on a Side-Saddle,' by E. C. SYKES, with introd. by Gen. Sir G. GOLDSCHMID (1901); COPLEY AMORY'S 'Persian Days' (Met. 1928); and the charming volume on 'The Persians' (Cl. Pr.) by Sir E. DENISON ROSS, reviewing their civilisation and their art.

§ 4. On the intellectual life of modern Persia light is thrown by the work of the Comte DE GOBINEAU, *Les religions et les philosophies dans l'Asie centrale* (2e éd. 1866); and for the whole history Prof. E. G. Browne's 'Literary History of Persia' (C.U.P. 4 v.) has a twofold value, literary and sociological; as has his 'Press and Poetry of Modern Persia' (same).

§ 5. On the later developments of the pre-War relations of Persia to European Powers the following may be consulted: D. STUART, 'The Struggle for Persia' (Met. 1902); H. J. WHIGHAM, 'The Persian Problem' (Isbister, 1903). The post-War domestic situation is set forth in 'The Economic Position of Persia,' by MOUSTAFA KHAN FATEH (King, 1926).

COURSE XXXIX

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXIII.—INDIA

§ 1. THE history of India is obviously to be treated as "regional," not racial or national, being that of a series and congeries of races and states, which can be conveniently treated only under the geographical heading. Those seeking a conspectus may usefully turn to '**India's Past: A Survey of her Literatures, Religions, Languages, and Antiquities**,' by A. A. Macdonell (Cl. Pr. 1927); or the '**Short History of India from the Earliest Times to the Present Day**' by E. B. Havell (Mac.).

For Ancient India there are the '**Ancient India to the First Century**,' of E. J. RAPSON (C.U.P.); '**The Heroic Age of India**' by Prof. N. K. SĪDHANTA of Lucknow (Rout.); and '**The Early History of India from 600 B.C. to the Mohammedan Conquest**' by VINCENT A. SMITH (Cl. Pr. 4th ed. rev. by S. M. EDWARDS, 1924), the author of the standard '**Oxford History of India**' (rev. and cont. to 1921 by Mr. Edwards: same, 1923), and of the '**Oxford Student's History of India**,' rev. by H. C. RAWLINSON (O.U.P. 1930). These works may be held to supersede the short histories of the last generation.

A comprehensive scholarly history in 6 vols. is in course of production by the C.U.P., Mr. RAPSON having edited vols. i and ii, dealing with Ancient and Medieval India; Col. Sir WOLSELEY HAIG vols. iii and iv, dealing with 'Turks and Afghans'; and H. DODWELL v and vi, of which the former covers 'British India: 1497-1858.' The last will cover 'The Indian Empire: 1858-1918.'

§ 2. Down to the period of the Mohammedan invasions, India has no history worthy of the name: no similarly important civilisation has left so little chronological record of itself. The accounts given by the Greek writers of what was seen of India by Alexander's generation are accordingly of peculiar importance. They are collected by J. W. MCCRINDLE in '**The Invasion of India by Alexander the Great**' (Con. 2nd ed. 1896); and in his three separate volumes on Ancient India as described by Megas-

thenes and Arrian, Ktésias, and Ptolemy (Bombay, 1877-85). The matter is collected in his compilation 'Ancient India as Described in Classical Literature' (Con. 1901). The esteemed 'History of India,' by the Hon. MOUNTSTUART ELPHINSTONE, covering the Hindu and Mohammedan periods, as revised by Prof. Cowell (Mur.), is still very useful; but is at some points further corrected by that of H. G. Keene (rev. ed. J. Grant, 2 v. 1906), which, however, deals only very briefly with the period before European contacts.

§ 3. Much of the early documentary material being religious, Elphinstone's history deals carefully with that; but the historical interpretation cannot yet be said to be established. In this connection should be noted the relevant books named in § 1, or the 'Ancient India' of R. C. Dutt (Lmns.); the excellent handbook of Prof. Rhys Davids on 'Buddhism' (S.P.C.K.); the same scholar's 'Buddhist India' (S.N.S.); the 'Ancient India' of Prof. OLDENBERG (O.C.); the research of VELANDA GOPALA AIYER on 'The Chronology of Ancient India' (Madras, 1901); and the monograph of V. A. SMITH on 'Asoka: The Buddhist Emperor of India' (Cl. Pr. rep. 1920). Prof. RADHAKUMUD MOOKERJII contributes a small study on 'Men and Thought in Ancient India' and a vol. of lectures on 'Asoka' (both Mac.); and D. R. BHANDARKAR has also a vol. of lectures of the same title (Calc. Univ. Pubns.: Lmns.). For both the Vedic and the Buddhistic periods the material is to be followed through the histories of Sanskrit and other native literature, of which three are available to the English reader: the short and tentative 'History of Sanskrit Literature,' by MAX MÜLLER (1859); the fuller 'History of Indian Literature,' by Prof. A. WEBER (E. tr. K.P.); and the very competent 'Sanskrit Literature' of Prof. A. A. Macdonell (Hei. 1900). The whole subject of ancient Indian civilisation is ably and compendiously treated by R. C. Dutt in his 'Civilisation of India' (T.P.S.), and very fully by the same author in his 'History of Civilisation in Ancient India' (K.P. 3 v.). RAJENDRALALA MITRA's 'Indo-Aryans' (2 v. 1881) is also well worth study; and there is a French work, *Essai sur l'évolution de la civilisation indienne*, by the Marquis DE LA MAZELIÈRE (Paris, 2 t. 1903). There are now available a 'Chronology of Ancient India' by SITA NATH PRADHAN; a 'Prehistoric India' by PANCHANAN MITRA; and a study of 'Economic Conditions in Ancient India,' by J. N. SAMADDAR (all Calc. Univ. Pubns.: Lmns.).

§ 4. Explicit history begins with the Mohammedan period, and of this there are fairly full records in English, over and above Elphinstone's History. H. G. KEENE's 'The Turks in India'

(1879); Sir H. M. ELLIOTT'S 'History of India as Told by its Own Historians' (8 v. 1867-77); S. Lane Poole's 'Mediæval India under Mohammedan Rule' (S.N.S.) and 'History of the Moghul Emperors of Hindostan' (Con. 1892); J. S. KING'S 'History of the Bahmani Dynasty, 1347-1482' (Luzac, 1900); Sir E. C. BAYLEY'S 'History of Gujarat' (1888); W. ERSKINE'S 'History of India under Báber and Humáyun' (2 v. 1851); the recent 'Babur, 1483-1580: Diarist and Despot: Founder of the Moghul Empire,' by S. M. EDWARDS, C.S.I. (Philpot, 1926); the 'Mughal Rule in India' of EDWARDS and H. L. O. GARRETT (O.U.P. 1930); Prof. E. SACHAU'S 'Alberuni's India' (K.P. 1888); Count NOER'S 'Akbar' (E. tr. 2 v. 1890); and Keene's 'Fall of the Moghul Empire' (2nd ed. 1887), constitute a sufficiently solid body of historiography. The elaborate '*Storia do Mogor*, or, Mogul India (1653-1708),' of the old Venetian writer NICCOLAO MANUCCI, is trans. by W. Irvine, of the R.A.S. (Mur. 4 v.). A good general view of the subject-matter, however, may be had from the volume by Col. Malleon on 'Akbar' and that of Sir W. W. Hunter on 'Aurangzeb' (Rulers ser.). A Hindu writer, YADUNATHA SARKAR, has produced an interesting work on 'The India of Aurangzib—geography, statistics, and roads—compared with the India of Akbar' (Calc. 1901). As to Sultan Mahmud of Ghazni and his invasion, see Course XL, § 2.

Among monographs by Hindu scholars are:—'The Administrative System of the Marathas,' by SURENDRANATH SEN; 'Bengal in the Sixteenth Century,' by J. N. DAS GUPTA; 'India in the Seventeenth Century,' by the same scholar; 'Historical Records of Baroda,' by RAI BAHADUR B. A. GUPTA (all Calc. Univ. Pubns.: Lmns.), and 'Orissa in the Making,' by BIJAY-CHANDRA MAZUMDAR.

§ 5. The British period is naturally by far the most fully recorded. General surveys are supplied in the 'Oxford' histories of V. A. Smith; fuller in the large C.U.P. History (§ 1). In so far as official habit may have deflected criticism, it may be instructive to go back to the protests embodied in the old 'British Rule in India' of HARRIET MARTINEAU, and J. M. LUDLOW'S 'British India: its Races and its History' (1857). Keene's History, above mentioned, is fuller and more exact. S. J. OWEN'S 'India on the Eve of the British Conquest' (1872) may serve as an introduction to the period; Sir G. ANDERSON'S 'British Administration in India' (2nd ed. rev. and enl. Mac. 1929) is the work of an experienced official; and Sir COURTNEY ILBERT'S 'The Government of India' (Cl. Pr. 1922) is a model of impartiality. The elaborate 'History of British India,' by JAMES MILL (5th ed. with notes and contin.

by H. H. Wilson, 10 v. 1858), is still worth study, but should not be solely trusted either for facts or for sociology.

Elphinstone's 'Rise of the British Power in the East' (1887) is a good and careful research; and Sir A. C. Lyall's '**Rise of the British Dominion in India**' (Mur. U.E.M. 1893) and 'Rise and Expansion of the British Dominion in India' (5th ed. corr. Mur. 1910) have special critical value. Another concise work of merit is the 'Short History of the British in India' by A. D. INNES (Met. 1902). There is also a detailed 'History of the English Settlements' from 1600 to 1767 by J. TALBOYS WHEELER (1878), whose history of the preceding periods has less value; and an account of 'English Factories in India, 1618-21' by W. FOSTER (Frowde, 1906), reproducing official documents. A reference book of special value for the Mogul and British period is 'The Chronology of Modern India, 1494-1894' by Dr. JAMES ROGERS, C.I.E. (Luzac, 1913). It covers 400 years of Indian connection with Europe.

For special study in this field a valuable selection of documents is supplied in the Indian Records Series, published by the Government of India (10 v. Mur.):—'Bengal in 1756-57,' ed. by S. C. HILL (3 v.); 'Old Fort William in Bengal,' ed. by Dr. C. R. WILSON (2 v.); 'The Diaries of Streynsham Master: 1675-80,' ed. by Sir R. C. TEMPLE (2 v.); and 'Vestiges of Old Madras,' by H. D. LOVE (3 v. and index vol.). The first has a historical introduction; and several are illustrated. W. FOSTER's 'The East India House: its History and Associations' (Lane, 1924: 37 illustrns.) has a cognate interest.

A sufficiently clear view of the total process of conquest may further be obtained from W. M. TORRENS's 'Empire in Asia: How we came by it' (1872); Col. Malleson's '**Life of Lord Clive**' (1882); the smaller volume on Clive by the same author in the Rulers series; or the later 'Life of Lord Clive' by Sir G. FORREST (Cas. 1918); and those on '**Warren Hastings**,' by Sir A. C. LYALL (Mac. 1889); by Col. Malleson (C. & H. 1894); and by Capt. L. J. Trotter (Rulers ser.). The latter work, which proceeds on the State Papers for 1772-85, published in 1890, should be read by all for its elucidation of the truth as to Hastings, which has been much obscured by calumny. The facts in this connection are further to be gathered from Sir J. F. STEPHEN's 'The Story of Nuncomar and the Impeachment of Sir Elijah Impey' (Mac. 2 v. 1885). A French point of view is to be studied in *Les Anglais dans l'Inde: Warren Hastings*, by A. BLOVÈS (1904). There are older 'Lives of Clive' by Sir J. Malcolm (3 v. 1836) and G. R. GLEIG (1848). Apart from the general histories, the lives of Cornwallis, Elphinstone, Bentinck, Dalhousie, Clyde,

Canning, Wellesley, Lord Hastings, and Mayo, in the Rulers series, cover the period of British expansion and consolidation. Of several of these statesmen there are fuller biographies:— 'India under Wellesley' by P. E. ROBERTS (Bell); 'The Private Letters of Marquess Dalhousie,' ed. by J. G. A. Baird (Edinb. 1910); 'The Life of Lord Clyde' by Gen. SHADWELL (Edinb. 1881); 'India under Lord Ellenborough: 1842-44,' ed. by Sir A. LAW (Con. 1926); 'Life of the Earl of Mayo,' by Sir W. W. HUNTER (2nd ed. 1876, 2 v.).

§ 6. As regards the other European nations who for a time sought to establish themselves in India, exact information is to be found in separate records concerning them. Thus for the Portuguese activities of the 16th and 17th c. the student may consult, in addition to histories of Portugal, R. S. WHITEWAY'S 'The Rise of the Portuguese Power in India, 1497-1550' (Con. 1899); the Rev. A. J. D. D'ORSEY'S 'Portuguese Discoveries, Dependencies, and Missions in Asia and Africa' (Allen, 1893); and F. C. DANVERS' 'The Portuguese in India' (Allen, 2 v. 1894) and 'Report on the Portuguese Records relating to the East Indies' (same, 1892). The French occupation is fully dealt with in the works of Col. Malleon, 'History of the French in India' (same, rev. ed. 1893) and 'Final French Struggles in India and on the Indian Seas' (same, 1878); and more concisely in his chivalrous monograph on 'Dupleix' (Rulers ser.). See also 'The Struggle between England and France in India,' by E. J. RAPSON (K.P. 1887). The 'History of European Commerce with India,' by DAVID MACPHERSON (1812), is still helpful. French works on the French connection with India are specified in Course XXIV.

§ 7. Of some of the Indian peoples and territories the history has been separately written, as follows: Col. MARK WILKS, 'Historical Sketches of the South of India' (3 v. 4to, 1810-17); W. L. MCGREGOR, 'History of the Sikhs' (2 v. 1846); Capt. J. G. DUFF'S 'History of the Mahrattas' (3 v. 1826); Major W. HOUGH, 'Brief History of the Bhopal Principality' (Calc. 1845); Sir John Malcolm, 'Memoir of Central India' (2 v. 1824); R. C. Dutt's 'Brief History of Ancient and Modern Bengal' (Calc. 2nd ed. 1893); Sir W. W. HUNTER, 'Annals of Rural Bengal' (7th ed. S.E. 1897).

§ 8. The nature of the government of India by the East India Company is to be gathered partly from the general histories and biographies above mentioned (§§ 1, 5), and partly from such special records as 'Ledger and Sword; or the Honourable Company of Merchants Trading to the East Indies,' by B. WILLSON (Lmns. 2 v. 1903), and 'The Administration of the East

India Company: A History of Indian Progress,' by JOHN W. KAYE (2nd ed. 1853). Within a few years from the issue of the latter work there took place the Indian Mutiny, of which an authoritative History was written by Kaye and Col. Malleon (6 v. Lmns. 1896, with index vol. by F. PIMCOTT). There are several shorter accounts—e.g. Lieut.-General INNES's 'The Sepoy Revolt' (Innes, 1897) and 'Lucknow and Oude in the Mutiny' (same, 1896); T. RICE HOLMES's 'History of the Indian Mutiny' (Mac. 5th ed. 1898)—a good concise record; and the works of the same title by CHARLES BALL (2 v. 1858-60) and G. W. FORREST (2 v. Bld. 1907). See also R. G. WILBERFORCE, 'An unrecorded chapter in the Indian Mutiny' (Mur. 3rd ed. 1895), and Col. S. DEWÉ WHITE's 'A Complete History of the Indian Mutiny' (1885); Sir G. O. TREVELYAN's 'Cawnpore' (Mac.); Sir E. WOOD's 'The Revolt in Hindustan, 1857-59' (Met. 1908); and Capt. M. Thomson's 'Story of Cawnpore' (1859).

§ 9. Of progress under the Company and the National systems respectively there is a good survey in R. C. DUTT's 'England and India: A Record of Progress: 1785-1885' (C. & W. 1897). A general view of the state and fortunes of "India under British Rule" may be had from the work of that title by J. Talboys Wheeler (Mac. 1886) and Sir W. W. HUNTER's 'The Indian Empire' (K.P.). How it appears from a native point of view may be partly gathered from the 'History of Hindu Civilisation under British Rule' by P. NATH BOSE, otherwise Pramathanātha Vasu (K.P. 3 v. 1894, etc.); from R. C. Dutt's 'Economic History of India under early British Rule' (K.P. 2nd ed. 1906) and 'Economic History of India in the Victorian Age' (same, 1906); and from 'Some Economic Aspects of British Rule in India,' by G. SUBRAMAKIA IYER (Madras, 1903). Special sections and aspects of native history are set forth in the following:—DOSABHAI FRAMJI, 'History of the Parsis' (Mac. 2 v. 1884); Sir W. LEE WARNER, 'The Protected Princes of India' (same, 1894); Sir LEPHEL GRIFFIN, 'The Rajahs of the Punjab' (K.P. 1870).

§ 10. For the modern history and conditions of India, down to 1909, apart from the general works named in §§ 1, 5, the following may usefully be consulted: 'History of India under Queen Victoria, from 1836 to 1880,' by Captain TROTTER (2 v. 1886); Sir MONIER WILLIAMS's 'Modern India and the Indians' (K.P.); Sir W. W. Hunter's 'England's Work in India' (1881, 10th ed. Madras, 1890); D. C. BOULGER's 'India in the Nineteenth Century' (Marshall Bros. 1901); Sir R. TEMPLE, 'Progress of India, Japan, and China in the Nineteenth Century' (Chambers, 1902); the Lives of the successive Viceroys; 'Indian Polity: A View of the System of Administration in India,' by Gen. Sir G.

CHESNEY (Lmns. 1894); 'The Forward Policy and its Results,' by RICHARD J. BRUCE (same, 1900); Col. H. B. HANNA, 'Indian Problems,' dealing with frontier questions (Con. 3 pts. 1895); G. W. MACGEORGE, 'Ways and Works in India' (Con. 1904). A 'Handbook of Commercial Products of India,' by Sir GEORGE WATT, appeared under the auspices of the Indian Government (Mur. 1907). A number of other works throwing critical light on Indian government were cited in the editor's essay on 'Duties of Empire' in vol. v of the British Empire Series (K.P. 1899-1902), of which valuable compilation (ed. by W. SHEOWRING for the South Place Institute) vol. i ('India, Ceylon, Straits Settlements, British North Borneo, Hong-Kong') is an instructive account by 23 specialists of the large field covered. See also Courses I, § 7; II, § 5.

§ 11. Descriptive or sociographical works on India, apart from the copious output on Sport, have long abounded. In particular may be cited the ethnographical surveys specified in Course I, § 7. Among the general mass may be noted:—G. F. ABBOTT, 'Through India with the Prince' (Arnold, 1906); Sir E. ARNOLD's 'India Revisited' (1886); E. L. ARNOLD's 'On the Indian Hills, or Coffee-Planting in Southern India' (2 v. 1881); T. C. ARTHUR's 'Reminiscences of an Indian Police Official' (1894); M. F. BILLINGTON's 'Woman in India,' with introduction by Lady Dufferin (C. & H. 1895); O. ROTHFELD, 'Women of India' (*n.d.*); 'The Education of the Women of India' by M. G. COWAN (Edinb. 1912); Sir G. C. M. BIRDWOOD's 'Sva: Industrial Arts of India' (rep. ed. by F. H. Brown, Milford, 1915); Sir J. CAIRD, 'India, the Land and the People' (3rd ed. 1884); R. CARSTAIRS, 'Human Nature in Rural India' (Edinb. 1895); A. K. CONNELL, 'The Economic Revolution of India' (1883); G. R. ELSMIE, 'Thirty-five Years in the Punjaub' (Edinb. 1908); H. C. FANSHAWE, 'Delhi, Past and Present' (Mur. 1902); Sir A. H. L. FRASER, 'Among Indian Rajahs and Ryots' (S.S. & Co. 1912); LOVAT FRASER's 'India under Curzon and After' (Hei. 1911); W. HATCH, 'The Land Pirates of India' (S.S. & Co. 1928); R. P. KARKARIA, 'India: Forty Years of Progress and Reform' (Frowde, 1896); J. W. KAYE's 'Christianity in India: A Historical Narrative' (1859); H. G. KEENE's 'A Servant of "John Company": the Recollections of an Indian Official' (Thacker, 1897); W. S. LILLY, 'India, Past and Present' (Sands, 1902); I. MALCOLM, 'Indian Pictures and Problems' (Richards, 1907); S. M. MITRA, 'Indian Problems,' intr. by Sir G. Birdwood (Mur. 1908); A. NEWCOMBE, 'Village, Town, and Jungle Life in India' (Edinb. 1905); T. B. PANDIAN, 'Indian Village Folk: their Works and Ways' (Stock, 1897); J. A. SAUTER, 'Among the

Brahmins and Pariahs' (E. tr. by B. Miall, F.U. 1924); G. WHITEHEAD, 'Indian Problems in Religion, Education, Politics' (Con. 1924); 'The Re-making of Village India,' by F. L. BRAYNE (O.U.P. 1929).

§ 12. As many of the above-named books indicate, there was already, before the close of the last century, a new critical propaganda, largely conducted by Englishmen with official Indian experience, in favour of financial, educational, and other reforms. This connected with the general movement of reform in Europe. It may be traced through such books as 'The Retention of India' by ALEXANDER HALLIDAY (1872); and 'India for the Indians—and for England,' by WILLIAM DIGBY, C.I.E. (1885), author of 'The Famine Campaign in Southern India: 1876-78,' 'Forty Years' Citizen and Official Life in a Crown Colony,' and 'Indian Problems for English Consideration.' 'Ideas about India,' by W. SCAWEN BLUNT (1885) was dedicated to Lord Randolph Churchill. BRADLAUGH, in the later 'eighties, was in Parliament called 'the member for India' (see his Collected Speeches) as W. S. CAINE and FAWCETT had been before him.

The movement inevitably continued; and in 1901 PAUL BOELL studied it in *L'Inde et le problème indien*. Sir HENRY COTTON, K.C.S.I., M.P., first produced in 1885 his 'New India, or India in Transition,' and in 1907 a 5th ed. revised and enlarged. Sir F. S. P. LELY criticised, but admitted need for educational reform, in his 'Suggestions for the Better Governing of India' (A. Rivers, 1906). In 1910 appeared the brilliant book of J. RAMSAY MACDONALD, 'The Awakening of India' (H. & S.), judicially critical, but prophesying wealth for India. Thus the intensification after 1914 was long prepared for; and such books as 'India's Claim for Home Rule' (Madras, 1917), and 'The Governance of India' by GOVINDA DAS (same), and 'The Future Government of India' by K. V. RAO (1918), expressed the new aspirations for self-government that had arisen in Europe. WILLIAM ARCHER, who had watchfully travelled 'Through Afro-America,' and studied Spain in his investigation of the case of Ferrer, went no less vigilantly through India in 1914, and produced in 1917 'India and the Future' (Hut. with 36 fine illustrns.). This is at once sympathetic and critical towards native life, chiming on the religious question with the work of Dr. PARANJPYE (Course VI, § 19) and that of J. R. MacDonald. Nothing more judicial has been published on the modern situation.

The later excitement produced by the 'Mother India' of KATHERINE MAYO (Cape, 1927) and the sequent controversy represented by the 'Father India' of C. S. RANGA IYER

(Selwyn & B. 1927); 'India in the Crucible' by the same author (S. & B. 1927); and 'The Key of Progress: A Survey of the Status and Conditions of Women in India,' by several hands, and foreword by Lady IRWIN, ed. by A. R. CATON (Cl. Pr. 1930)—has strengthened the impression that India needs self reform as much as Home Rule; but the political problem remains

§ 13. On the post-War situation set up by the new constitutional changes there are discussions in the later histories named in § 1. The reforms themselves are set forth in the Official Report by the Secretary of State and the Viceroy; and there is a brief version, 'Indian Constitutional Reforms: The Montagu-Chelmsford Proposals issued for the India Office' (Mur.). See also 'Dyarchy: The Documents,' with an introd. by LIONEL CURTIS (1920), and 'The Political System of British India,' by E. A. HORNE (1922: both Cl. Pr.). The 'Simon Report' is the next historical document of outstanding importance—to wit, the great 'Report of the Indian Statutory Commission,' in 2 vols.: Vol. i—Survey; vol. ii—Recommendations (H.M. Stat. Off. 1930). For criticism see C. F. ANDREWS' 'India and the Simon Report' (A. & U.); and 'India: Peace or War?' by C. S. RANGA IYER, M.I.L.A., author of 'Father India,' 'India in the Crucible,' etc. (Har. 1931).

There are several books on Mr. Gandhi:—'Mahatma Gandhi: His Own Story,' 'Mahatma Gandhi at Work: His Own Story Continued,' and 'Mahatma Gandhi's Ideas: including Selections from his Writings' (all ed. by C. F. ANDREWS: A. & U. illustr.). See further 'Indian Nationalism,' by EDWYN BEVAN (Mac.); 'India Insistent,' by Sir HARCOURT BUTLER, an experienced administrator (Hei. 1931); and 'India in Revolt,' by Maj.-Gen. F. C. FULLER (E. & S. 1931), for the present situation.

§ 14. Study of Indian matters in general is greatly assisted by 'The Cyclopædia of India' and the 'Imperial Gazetteer.' 'The Times Book of India' (1930) is a standard up-to-date survey, by over fifty hands, of all manner of Indian matters.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXIV.—MINOR ASIATIC STATES AND PEOPLES

It is convenient thus to group the peoples of Burma, Siam, Ceylon, Korea, Afghanistan, Nepál, Tibet, Bhutan, Turkestan, Siberia in general, the Malay Archipelago, and Indo-China.

§ 1. They are to be followed generally in histories of the Far East (Course XXXVII, § 1), but there is a considerable literature of monographs. The old work of J. TALBOYS WHEELER, 'Short History of India and of the Frontier States of Afghanistan, Nipal, and Burma' (Mac. 2nd ed. 1894), gives a general introduction from the Indian side; and for the remaining eastern area there is the 'Brief History of Eastern Asia,' by J. C. HANNAH (F.U. 1900). On Burma see S. W. COCKS, 'A Short History of Burma' (Mac.); E. G. BROWN's 'Burma as I saw It: 1889-1917; with a Chapter on Recent Events' (Met. 1926); A. FYTCHE's 'Burma, Past and Present' (2 v. 1878); and C. J. F. S. FORBES, 'British Burma and its People' (Mur. 1878); on Siam, J. BOWRING's 'The Kingdom and People of Siam' (2 v. 1857); Dr. J. ANDERSON's 'History of English Intercourse with Siam in the Seventeenth Century' (K.P. 1890); E. YOUNG's 'The Kingdom of the Yellow Robe' (Con. 1898); and V. FRANK's 'The Land of the White Elephant' (N.Y. 1889). The trans. from JUSTI, 'Central and Eastern Asia in Antiquity,' in vol. ii of the 'History of All Nations' (Course III, § 3), is valuable all round.

§ 2. Col. MALLESON wrote a good 'History of Afghānistān' (2nd ed. 1879); H. G. RAVERTY compiled from native records an account of 'Afghanistan and part of Baluchistan' (3 v. fol. 1880); and there is a brief general account of 'Afghanistan and the Afghans' by H. W. BELLEW (1879), who did also a vol. on 'The Races of Afghanistan' (same, 1880). See also G. A. GREY's 'At the Court of the Amir' (1895); and 'Among the Wild Tribes of the Afghan Frontier' by T. L. PENNELL, pref. by Earl ROBERTS (S.S. & Co. 1912). The outstanding figure in Afghan history is Mahmoud of Ghazni or Ghazna; and 'The Life and Times of Sultan Mahmoud of Ghazna,' by Dr. MUHAMMAD NAZIM, with a foreword by the

late Sir Thomas Arnold (C.U.P. 1931), is apparently the first modern monograph of scholarly quality. The history of the wars of Afghanistan and the British Empire has been written by A. FORBES, 'The Afghan Wars of 1839-42, 1878-80' (S.S. & Co. 1892); by J. W. KAYE (3 v. 4th ed. 1878); by Col. H. B. HANNA, 'The Second Afghan War: 1878-80' (Con. 2 v. 1897-1904); and by H. HENSMAN, 'The Afghan War of 1879-80' (1881).

§ 3. Contemporary Tibet is intelligently presented by a Tibetan lady in 'We Tibetans' by LHA-MO (Rin Chen, Mrs. Louis King), with a historic introduction by L. M. KING (S.S. & Co. 1926: with 28 illustrns.); and from an English standpoint in D. MACDONALD'S 'The Land of the Lama' (S.S. & Co. 1929); and in 'Tibet' (1924) and 'The People of Tibet' (1928), by Sir CHARLES BELL (both Cl. Pr.), author of 'The Religion of Tibet.' See also 'Intimate Glimpses of Mysterious Tibet' by G. E. O. KNIGHT (Fetter House, 1930).

Concerning Tibet and Nepál much information is given in the 'Travels in Tartary, Thibet, and China' of the Abbé HUC (E. tr. 2 v. n.d.). Consult also: C. H. DESGODINS, *Le Thibet* (2e éd. 1885); B. HODGSON'S 'Essays on the Languages, Literature, and Religion of Nepaul and Tibet' (1874); H. OLDFIELD'S 'Sketches from Nipal, Historical and Descriptive' (2 v. 1880); A. H. S. LANDOR'S 'In the Forbidden Land' (Hei. 1904) and 'Tibet and Nepal' (Black, 1905); P. LANDON'S 'Lhasa' (H. & B. 1905); E. CANDLER'S 'The Unveiling of Lhasa' (Arnold, 1905); F. GRECARD'S 'Tibet: The Country and its Inhabitants' (Hut. 1904); and SVEN HEDIN'S 'Central Asia and Tibet' (H. & B. 1903). On the first British invasion compare P. MILLINGTON'S 'To Lhasa at last' (S.S. & Co. 1905) and A. M. SCOTT'S 'The Truth about Tibet' (S.M. 1905). The 'History of Nepál,' tr. by Dr. D. WRIGHT from the Parbatiyā (1877), is worth attention. As to Bhutan, see G. SANDBERG'S 'Bhotan, the Unknown State' (Calc. 1898).

'An Account of Tibet,' by I. DESIDERI, ed. by F. DE FILIPPI (Rout. 1932), is a rep. of the old Travels of Desideri, a Jesuit, in 1712-24.

§ 4. On Mongols and Tartars see E. H. PARKER'S 'A Thousand Years of the Tartars' (Course III, § 4) and the extensive 'History of the Mongols,' by H. H. HOWORTH (Lmns. 4 v. 1876-78). A. VAMBERY has dealt with an interesting section of the history of Turkestan in his 'History of Bokhara' (1873). On the latter theme there is a quantity of historical and modern information in the Rev. Dr. JOSEPH WOLFF'S 'Narrative of a Mission to Bokhara' (1852). The modern history of Central Asia is mainly to be gathered in connection with that of the advance of

Russia in Asia, as to which see:—H. STUMM, 'Russia in Central Asia' (E. tr. 1885); H. LAUSDELL, 'Russian Central Asia' (Low, 2 v. 1885), rep. in 1 vol. as 'Through Central Asia' (same, 1887); Lord CURZON, 'Russia in Central Asia' (Lmns. 1889), which gives a bibliography; J. W. BOOKWALTER's 'Siberia and Central Asia' (Springfield, 1899); J. F. FRASER's 'The Real Siberia' (Cas. 1902); G. KENNAN's 'Siberia and the Exile System' (1891); M. P. PRICE, 'Siberia' (Met. 1912); and 'War and Revolution in Asiatic Russia' (A. & U. 1918). For later records see the works describing Soviet Russia (Course XXXI, §§ 8–11).

§ 5. On **Korea** see 'Life in Corea,' by W. R. CHARLES (1888); 'Korea of the Japanese,' by H. B. DRAKE (Lane, 1930); W. E. GRIFFIS, 'Corea: The Hermit Nation' (7th ed. enl. Harp. 1905); Lord Curzon's 'Japan, Korea, China' (Con. rev. ed. 1896); Mrs. ISABELLA BISHOP's 'Korea and Her Neighbours' (Mur. 2 v. 1898); R. S. GUNDRY's 'China and Her Neighbours' (C. & H. 1893); and E. DALLEY's *Histoire de l'église de Corée* (1874, 2 t.), which has an introductory chapter of general history.

§ 6. **Ceylon** is dealt with in the general histories of India, but also separately by a number of writers: first notably by Sir J. EMERSON TENNENT, 'Ceylon' (5th ed. 1860). The 'Ceylon, Past and Present' of C. M. ENRIQUEZ (H. & B. 1927: many illustrns.); and the 'Short History of Ceylon' by H. W. CODRINGTON (Mac.), supply good general accounts. JOHN FERGUSON's 'Ceylon in 1883' gives an account of progress to that date. For later accounts see J. C. WILLS's 'Ceylon: A Handbook' (1907); 'Twentieth-Century Impressions of Ceylon,' ed. by A. WRIGHT (Fetter Ho. 1907); 'Golden Tips: A Description of Ceylon and its great Tea Industry' (4th ed. Cas. 1905); 'Buried Cities of Ceylon' (Hut. 1908) and other works by H. W. CAVE.

§ 7. The **Malay Archipelago**, otherwise the Indian Archipelago, has a population of over 40,000,000, once mainly Buddhists, now for the most part Mohammedans. For a general view see 'Malaya: an Account of its People, Flora, and Fauna' by C. M. ENRIQUEZ (H. & B. 1927: largely illustr.); the 'Illustrated Guide to the Federated Malay States' (official, 1910), ed. by C. W. HARRISON; and the 'Malay Sketches' (1896) of Sir F. W. SWETTENHAM, who further contributes a preface to 'My Life in Sarawak' by the Raneé (1913). The general ethnology is set forth in the 'Papers' of I. H. N. EVANS (C.U.P.) and in his 'Studies in Religion,' etc. 'in British North Borneo and the Malay Peninsula' (same). The general history is partly written in J. CRAWFORD's old 'History of the Indian Archipelago' (3 v. 1820); and in H. S. R. ST. JOHN's 'The Indian Archipelago'

(2 v. 1853); also in Baron C. B. H. VON ROSENBERG's *Der malayische Archipel* (1878). There is an old 'History of Sumatra' (1783); and in 1821 was published 'Malay Annals, translated from the Malay Language by the late Dr. JOHN LEYDEN,' with intr. by Sir Stamford Raffles. As to **Borneo** see Miss G. L. JACOB's 'Sir J. Brooke, Rajah of Sarawak' (Mac. 2 v. 1876); and W. H. FURNESS's 'Home Life of the Borneo Head-Hunters' (illus. Lipp. 1902); Dr. A. R. WALLACE's 'Malay Archipelago' (Mac.); CH. BRUCE's 'Twenty Years in Borneo' (Cas. 1924); and 'The Sea Dyaks of Borneo' by F. H. GOMES (S.P.G. 2nd ed. 1910), as well as other works named in Course I, § 8f; and Course XXXIX, § 10, end.

§ 8. Of **Indo-China** there are general accounts in 'The Colonisation of Indo-China,' by J. CHAILLEY-BERT (E. tr. by A. B. BRABANT: Con. 1894); and in *L'Indo-Chine française* (1911), by H. RUSSIER and H. BRENIER. The fullest account of **Cambodia**, its old civilisation, and its remains, which include the marvellous Angkor, is in *Le Cambodge* by E. AYMONTIER (Paris, 3 t. 1900-4). See also 'Indian Cultural Influence in Cambodia,' by B. R. CHATTERJI (Calc. Univ. Pub. Lmns.).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXV.—HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

(4.)—BRITAIN AS A GEOGRAPHICAL WHOLE

§ 1. A GENERAL knowledge of British history from the earliest times will be found a useful preparation for any fuller study; and in so far as that has not been adequately acquired at school it is supplied by the up-to-date '**British History from the Earliest Times to the Present Day, with a History of the Overseas Dominions,**' by **L. Ceell Smith**, plus Appendices on Literature, Government, Architecture, and Navy, by other hands (Riv. 5th ed. 1927). This survey (sold also sep. in 2 pts.) may be taken as condensing sensibly and accurately the latest knowledge, with much checking and collaboration by competent teachers.

The student will find further help to an exact and comprehensive recollection of the historic process in '**A Digest of British History**' by **S. H. McGrady** (H. Russell: enl. ed. rep. 1923 with introd. by O. Browning) which has merit as a conspectus, though not seldom open to detail criticism for its generalisations. It is the frequent arbitrariness of these, in compendiums, that makes the study of expository history indispensable for full knowledge. Sociological is rarer than historiographical judgment.

Other expert manuals in compact form are the '**Advanced History of Great Britain from the Earliest Times to 1923**' by Prof. **T. F. Tout** (Lmns.); the '**History of the British Empire**' by **C. S. S. Higham** (same); '**The Growth of the British Empire**' by **P. H. and A. C. Kerr** (same); the '**Short Social and Political History of Britain**' by **R. L. Mackie** (rev. ed. Har.).

But it is not to be assumed that the latest books are in all respects necessarily the best; and the student who seeks to understand an evolution will consult the earlier works in which he can observe processes of reasoning and interpretation; while the more spacious of the later histories may be expected to present larger views than the works prepared even by good teachers to enable young people to pass examinations.

The student, then, who reads the more advanced but generalised

'History of England' by Prof. G. M. TREVELYAN (Lmns. 1926), or 'A New History of Great Britain' by R. B. MOWAT (new ed. 1926: over 400 illustrns. O.U.P.), will proceed in the light of critical modern scholarship to any fuller investigation he may desire to make. Earlier general histories of England, with a general eye to Britain, as J. R. GREEN'S 'Short History of the English People' (Mac.), GARDINER'S 'Student's History of England' (Lmns. 3 v. or 3 in 1) are still well worth reading on special grounds. Green, if romantic and at times poetically speculative, is notably vivid; and he supplies a needed chronology; while Gardiner presents a multitude of instructive illustrations.

§ 2. The prehistoric and Roman period has latterly been studied with a new vigilance. 'Roman Britain,' by R. G. COLLINGWOOD (O.U.P. 1923); the 'Life in Ancient Britain: A Survey of the Social and Economic Development from Earliest Times to the Roman Conquest,' by Norman Ault (Lmns. 50 illustrns.); and the 'Prehistoric and Roman Wales' of R. E. M. WHEELER (Cl. Pr. 1925: 114 illustrns. and maps) present the latest results of research; but the older 'Celtic Britain' of Prof. JOHN RHYS (S.P.C.K.) remains suggestive. F. HAVERFIELD'S 'The Romanisation of Roman Britain' (4th ed. 1923) and 'The Roman Occupation of Britain' (1924: both rev. by George Macdonald: Cl. Pr.); the 'Ancient Britain and Julius Caesar' of T. RICE HOLMES (same, 1907); 'The Roman Era in Britain' by JOHN WARD (Met. 1911); and 'The Archaeology of Roman Britain' by R. G. COLLINGWOOD (Met. 1930), supply together a full view of what can thus far be known. See also 'The Last Age of Roman Britain,' by E. FOORD (Har. 1925), and T. D. KENDRICK'S 'History of the Vikings' (Met.).

Some of the older books, however, retain status or interest. A learned examination of all the ancient documentary references to Britain is made in C. ELTON'S 'Origins of English History' (Quar. 1882); and a vivacious discussion of the problem of racial origins will be found in LUKE OWEN PIKE'S 'The English and their Origin' (Lmns. 1866). Of the archaeological remains of the period down to the rise of civilisation among the invading Saxons there is a good survey in WRIGHT'S 'The Celt, the Roman, and the Saxon' (K.P. 4th ed. 1885), with which should be compared 'The Origin of the English Nation,' by H. M. CHADWICK (C.U.P.), a trustworthy recent handbook. The 'Remains of the Prehistoric Age in England,' by B. C. A. WINDLE (Met. 1904) is still useful.

§ 3. The Saxon invasion may be specially studied in Prof. R. W. CHAMBERS'S 'England before the Norman Conquest,' with a foreword on Roman Britain by Dr. M. Cary (Lmns.);

J. R. GREEN's 'The Making of England' (Mac. 2 v. 1897); or in the more exact work of D. A. HAIGH, 'The Conquest of Britain by the Saxons: A Harmony of the *Historia Britonum*, the Writings of Gildas, the *Brut*, and the Saxon Chronicle' (1861). A good condensed account of Saxon history is supplied by the '**Anglo-Saxon Britain**' of Grant Allen (S.P.C.K.); and a more diffuse one in the 'History of the Anglo-Saxons,' by Sir FRANCIS PALGRAVE (rep. 1867, with illustrns.). But the most authoritative of the studies of the period is still J. M. KEMBLE's 'The Saxons in England' (2 v. rep. 1876, Quar.), which superseded SHARON TURNER's 'History of the Anglo-Saxons.' See also 'The Origin of the Anglo-Saxon Race,' edited by T. W. and L. E. SHORE (Stock, 1906); and H. M. CHADWICK's 'Studies on Anglo-Saxon Institutions' (Clay, 1905).

The reaction between invaders and natives may be studied in connection with the history of the Bretons. *Les Bretons insulaires et les Anglo-Saxons du V^e au VII^e Siècle* by A. DE LA BORDERIE (1873), and the *Histoire du peuple Breton* of YVES SEBILLOT (1903) give good general accounts, which should be checked by the comprehensive English and French histories.

§ 4. The Norman Conquest broadly completes the ethnic construction of England, Scotland, Ireland, and Wales, and is compendiously presented in J. R. GREEN's 'The Conquest of England' (Mac. 2 v. 1899). FREEMAN's 'Short History of the Norman Conquest' (Cl. Pr. 3rd ed. 1896) prepares for the study of his comprehensive History of the same period (same, 5 v. and Index vol.), and 'William Rufus' (1882, 2 v. Cl. Pr.). The effects in the north, the west, and Ireland are to be studied as a whole. Scotland, previously a composite nationality, becomes a new one, with its special history, from Bruce onwards, and remains so till the accession of James I in England; whereafter, by the Union under Anne, it becomes constitutionally part of Britain; and the total history, conveniently to be named English, is that of the United Kingdom of Great Britain and Ireland.

§ 5. In so far as ethnology can throw any light on national development, it is to be scientifically studied in the later works which put aside the mere patriotic assumptions of the earlier, notably the doctrines of inherent gift for self-government in the "Teutonic" race or races. W. Z. RIPLEY's 'Races of Europe' (Course I, § 4) supplies a sound basis; and Dr. HADDON's 'The Races of Man and their Distribution' (C.U.P.) is to be studied in the same connection. Dr. G. SCHÜTTE's 'Our Forefathers: the Gothonic Nations' (E. tr. vol. i, C.U.P.) serves for the ethnography of all the tribes so classified.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXVI.—HISTORY OF GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

(B.)—ENGLAND

THE “predominant partner” emerges, under its historical name, from the Anglo-Saxon conquest, and retains that name under and after the Norman; “Brittany” as part of France keeping the label of the Roman Britannia, alongside of the Normandy which did not give its name to England. The account of the latter nation, by Clemenceau, as “a French colony which went wrong,” may usefully be kept in mind.

§ 1. English history, then, has been considered in its beginnings in the previous Course, and is to be followed up from 1066, alike in the general “British” and “English” histories there named. From that point the sociographical and the political aspects may be studied concurrently. In the ‘English Society in the XIth Century’ of PAUL VINOGRADOFF (Cl. Pr. 1908), they are connected in the judicial view of a cultured European; and the reader who desires a complete survey of the whole may turn to ‘The Evolution of England’ by J. A. WILLIAMSON (Cl. Pr. 1931).

The ‘**Short History of England**, from the Earliest times to . . . 1919,’ by Cyril Ransome (Lmns.), is a good guide. But the historic process is to be followed for the full understanding of any “evolution.” It may be studied in ‘The Scholars’ History of England: 55 B.C.—A.D. 1485’ by Sir JAMES RAMSAY (Cl. Pr. 1898–1913, 8vo. i–ii, ‘Foundations’; iii, The Angevin Empire; iv, The Dawn of the Constitution: 1216–1307; v–vi, Genesis of Lancaster; vii–viii, Lancaster and York, 1399–1485), or, for that millennium and a half and the sequel, in the other serial histories. One of these is the ‘History of England’ ed. by Prof. OMAN (Met. 7 v.: i, by ed., ‘From the Beginnings to 1066’; ii, by H. W. C. DAVIS, ‘Under the Normans and Angevins’; iii, ‘In the Later Middle Ages: 1272–1485’ by Prof. K. H. VICKERS; iv, by A. D. INNES, ‘Under the Tudors’; v, by G. M. TREVELYAN, ‘Under the Stuarts’; vi,

by Sir C. GRANT ROBERTSON, '1714-1815'; vii, by Sir J. A. R. MARRIOTT, '1815-1900.' Yet another good series, under the general title of 'The Political History of England,' ed. by the Rev. Dr. W. HUNT and R. L. POOLE, is published in 12 v. (Lmns.). The scheme runs: vol. i, to 1066, by Dr. T. HODGKIN; ii, 1066 to 1216, by Prof. G. B. ADAMS, of Yale; iii, 1216 to 1377, by Prof. T. F. TOUT; iv, 1377 to 1485, by Prof. Sir C. OMAN; v, 1485 to 1547, by H. A. L. FISHER; vi, 1547 to 1603, by Prof. A. F. POLLARD; vii, 1603 to 1660, by Prof. F. C. MONTAGUE; viii, 1660 to 1702, by Prof. Sir RICHARD LODGE; ix, 1702 to 1760, by I. S. LEADAM; x, 1760 to 1801, by Dr. W. HUNT; xi, 1801 to 1837, by the Hon. G. C. BRODRICK and Dr. J. K. FOTHERINGHAM; xii, 'The Reign of Victoria,' 1837 to 1901, by Sir SIDNEY J. LOW.

The once-famous History of DAVID HUME is still worth the attention of special students and leisured readers for its general originality of judgment; but it cannot now be usefully taken as a standing authority, its materials having been greatly supplemented at every point. It is not unprofitable for any reader, however, to compare with other narratives the lengthy 'History of England' by the Catholic Dr. LINGARD (6th ed. 1854-55; rep. 1888, 10 v. Dublin), which handles the history down to 1689 with a good deal of acumen from a Catholic's standpoint.

§ 2. It will soon be realised by the careful student that the judgments of historiographers are to be checked by the sources. These they usually specify; but there are a number of separate compilations. For clues the student may consult the list of authorities given in J. BASS MULLINGER's section of the 'Introduction to the Study of English History,' compiled by him and Prof. S. R. GARDINER (1881). This useful handbook covers the whole ground of English history, as do the compilation of Dr. G. C. LEE, 'Leading Documents of English History' (Bell, 1900) and the 'Select Documents of English Constitutional History,' by Profs. G. B. ADAMS and H. MORSE STEPHENS (Mac. 1901). More comprehensively planned than either, however, is the work of Dr. CHARLES GROSS, 'The Sources and Literature of English History, from the Earliest Times to about 1485' (Lmns. 1900). Of narrower scope, but much interest, is the compilation entitled 'Liberty Documents,' selected and prepared by MABEL HILL, and edited by Dr. A. B. HART (Lmns.).

The importance of documents is now so generally recognised that the C.U.P. supplies a long series in which Mr. H. HALL's 'Formula Book' and 'Studies in English Official Historical Documents'; F. E. HARMER's 'Select . . . Documents of the 9th and 10th Centuries'; and the 'Tudor Constitutional Docu-

ments' and 'Documents of the Reign of James I,' ed. by Dr. J. R. TANNER, are specially inviting. Other collections are embodied in Dr. TANNER's 'English Constitutional Conflicts of the 17th C.,' the Constitutional Documents published for the Historical Association (Bell); Prof. C. W. COLBY's 'Selections from the Sources of English History' (Lmns.); Prof. D. O. DYKES's 'Source Book of Const. Hist. from 1660' (same); 'Constitutional Documents of the Puritan Revolution, 1625-1660,' ed. by Dr. GARDINER (Cl. Pr. rev. 1906); and 'The Inductive English History: The Study of Sources and Authorities,' by F. G. SNOWBALL and T. W. BOWTELL (Har.), B. i dealing with England before the Normans.

§ 3. Those concerned chiefly with sociography may now avail themselves of a number of recent manuals, following up that of VINOGRADOFF (§ 1), as, his 'Villainage in England' (Cl. Pr. 1892); 'The English Borough in the 12th C.,' by A. BALLARD (C.U.P.); 'English Monastic Life,' by Cardinal GASQUET (Met.); 'A Sketch of the History of Civilisation in Medieval England, 1066-1500,' by R. TREVOR DAVIES (Mac.); 'An Economic History of England' by CHARLOTTE M. WATERS (O.U.P. 1925); or that of E. LIPSON (Course XV, § 7). There is a series by L. T. SALZMAN: 'English Life in the Middle Ages' (O.U.P. 1926), 'English Industries of the Middle Ages' (1923), and 'English Trade in the Middle Ages' (1931: both Cl. Pr.). On different planes are 'Mediæval London,' by Dr. W. BENHAM and C. WELCH (S.S. & Co. new ed. 1911); 'The Pastons and their England,' by H. S. BENNET (C.U.P.); G. G. COULTON's 'Five Centuries of Religion' (same, 2 v.); J. W. JEUDWINE's 'Tort, Crime, and Police in Mediæval Britain' (W. & N. 1917); A. S. LEACH's 'The Schools of Medieval England' (N.Y. Mac.); G. Guest's 'Social History of England' (Bell, 10th ed. rev.); and E. H. Dance's 'Outlines of British Social History' (Lmns.).

['The Rise and Growth of the English Nation, with special reference to Epochs and Crises: A History of and for the People,' by Dr. W. H. S. AUBREY (Pop. ed. in 3 v., Stock, 1899), will never be made a school or college text-book, being indeed not intended for "students"; but to the plain man who does not "study" history it supplies a record that may greatly interest and effectively instruct him. Offering no critical apparatus, but supplying a good general bibliography, it distils from a very wide knowledge a multifarious but continuous narrative, which comes down to 1895. There is no attempt at literary effect; but nothing can be clearer than the simple style. Many more imposing histories supply less information over the whole period from Julius Cæsar down to 1895. Expressly democratic, it is

appreciative of capable kings and ecclesiastics; and claims to be truly patriotic. The index, of an extraordinary fullness, reveals the comprehensiveness of the research involved.]

Of older works of the kind the chief is 'Social England,' orig. ed. by Dr. H. D. TRAILL with many collaborators (later ed. with many illustrns. 6 v. 4to, Cas.). It has much interest, but is inadequate as regards early commercial and industrial history, for which the student must turn to the works of Cunningham and Ashley (Course XV, § 7). A shorter work, dealing with the developments of architecture, costume, shipping, trade, town and country life, monasticism, education, and art, is the meritorious 'Companion to English History (Middle Ages),' ed. by F. P. BARNARD (Cl. Pr. 1902). Of special importance for the Saxon period is 'The English Village Community,' by F. SEEBOHM (Lmns. 3rd ed. 1884), and further research on 'Tribal Custom in Anglo-Saxon Law' (same). [For archæology, the 'County Archæologies' ed. by T. D. KENDRICK (Met.: in prog.) will be found helpful. See also his 'Archæology of the Channel Islands' (Met.).]

Such monographs as the 'Lanfranc' of A. J. MACDONALD (1926); the 'John Wyclif: A Study of the English Medieval Church,' by H. B. WORKMAN (2 v. 1926: both Cl. Pr.); the 'England in the Age of Wycliffe' of Prof. G. M. TREVELYAN (Lmns. 1899); A. L. SMITH's 'Church and State in the Middle Ages' (Cl. Pr. 1913); 'The Great Revolt of 1381' by Sir C. OMAN (same, 1906); 'Simon de Montfort,' by CHARLES BÉMONT (new ed. by E. F. Jacob, 1930); the older books on the same figure by G. W. PROTHERO (1877) and R. PAULI (E. tr. 1876); and 'Stephen Langton' by F. M. POWICKE (1928: both Cl. Pr.), assist in the task of realisation. The last named points back to the two volumes of C. E. MAURICE on 'Lives of English Popular Leaders in the Middle Ages,' the first dealing with Stephen Langton, and the second with Tyler, Ball, and Oldcastle (1872-75). HUBERT HALL's 'Society in the Elizabethan Age' (Son. 4th ed. 1901) has a more general value for the period it covers.

Particularly copious and instructive are 'Medieval England: A new edition of BARNARD's *Companion to English History*,' ed. by H. W. C. DAVIS (Cl. Pr. 1924), and 'Shakespeare's England: An Account of the Life and Manners of his Age,' by many hands (same: 2 v. 1917: both illustr.). Other scholarly surveys are 'The Medieval Village' and 'English Monastic Finances in the Later Middle Ages,' by G. G. COULTON (C.U.P. 1926).

§ 4. The history of Parliament as a whole is very competently set forth in Prof. A. F. POLLARD's 'Evolution of Parliament' (Lmns. 1920), which is well abreast of modern scholarship. All inquiries

in this field should be checked by the Essay on the 'Origins of the House of Commons' by Dr. D. PASQUET of Paris (E. tr. with pref. and add. notes: C.U.P. 1925); but such works as the late Prof. F. W. Maitland's lectures on 'The Constitutional History of England' (C.U.P. 1909), his 'Domesday Book and Beyond,' his introduction to GIERKE (Course XIV, § 5), his 'Township and Borough,' and his joint work with Sir F. POLLOCK, 'The History of English Law before the time of Edward I' (same: 2 v.), should be studied for their critical thinking. 'A Short History of English Law from the earliest times to the end of the year 1927,' by EDWARD JENKS (4th ed. enl. Met. 1929), is of authoritative rank.

For full details of the growth of the social structure on its legal side, recourse should be had to the Constitutional Histories so called. Competent introductions in short space were supplied in the last generation by P. V. SMITH's 'History of the English Institutions' (Riv. 1876) and F. C. MONTAGUE's 'Elements of English Constitutional History' (Lmns.). It is worth while to consult also the 'Essays Introductory to the Study of English Constitutional History,' by H. O. WAKEMAN and A. HASSALL (Lmns. 1891), and the collections of historic documents above specified (§ 2). D. J. Medley's 'Student's Manual of English Constitutional History' (S.M. 2nd ed. 1898) is adequate for most purposes, as it utilises the special investigations of Prof. Maitland and Sir F. Pollock. Standard rank, however, is still held by the massive 'Constitutional History of England' of Bishop STUBBS (3 v. Cl. Pr.); and for the Tudor, Stuart, and early Georgian periods by Hallam's 'Constitutional History' (3 v. Mur.). The less interesting 'Constitutional History of England' of Sir T. ERSKINE MAY (3 v. Lmns. 3rd ed. with supp. chap. 1875) covers the period 1760-1871. For later political history see Course XIV, § 15. The student is warned that the works of the German scholar GNEIST on English constitutional history, though laudably learned, are vitiated by arbitrary theories. For a criticism of them see REDLICH and HIRST's 'Local Government in England' (Mac. 2 v. 1903)—itself an important historical treatise. J. H. ROUND's 'Feudal England' (Son. 1895) also embodies much learning, critically applied, despite flighty judgments on sociological issues. 'A Constitutional History of the First British Empire,' by Prof. A. B. KEITH (O.U.P. 1930), is a good recent American compendium covering the ground down to the American Revolution.

Study in all of these fields is aided and checked by a full and trustworthy chronology, such as the 'British History Chronologically Arranged: 55 B.C.-A.D. 1919' of ARTHUR HASSALL (Mac.), and his 'European History Chronologically Arranged: A.D. 476-

1920' (same). The '**Handbook in Outline** [or, latterly, '**Skeleton Outline**'] of the Political History of England to 1901, Chronologically Arranged,' by **A. H. Dyke Acland** and **C. Ransome** (Lmns.) remains signally useful; and Mr. Ransome's Summary of his '**Short History of England**' has the same merit.

§ 5. Different periods, from the Saxon onwards, may be studied in special histories, notably in the vols. of Methuen's and Longmans' series (§ 1. See also § 3). Asser's '**Life of Alfred**' has been critically edited by W. H. STEVENSON (Cl. Pr. 1904), and '**The Life and Times of Alfred the Great**' by C. PLUMMER (Cl. Pr. 1902) deals fully with that period. '**Mediæval England**,' by **Mary Bateson** (S.N.S.) is a good general view; and the old '**History of England during the Early and Middle Ages**,' by the late C. H. PEARSON (Bell, 2 v. 1867), is an able work, deserving more attention than it has received. On the Saxon and Norman Conquests see Course XLI, §§ 3, 4. FREEMAN's '**William the Conqueror**' is a short monograph (Mac.: E.S.S.). The little volume by J. F. MORGAN, '**England under the Norman Occupation**' (1858), is still worth reading, though the ground has been more exactly gone over by Stubbs, Maitland, and others. Miss K. NORGATE's '**Minority of Henry III**,' '**England under the Angevin Kings**' (2 v. 1897), '**Richard the Lion Heart**,' and '**John Lackland**' (1902, all Mac.) are meritorious researches. Less bulky are Mrs. J. R. GREEN's '**Henry the Second**' (Mac.: E.S.S.) and Bishop STUBBS's '**The Early Plantagenets**' (Lmns.). Dr. W. S. McKECHNIE's massive work on '**Magna Carta**' (Macl. rev. ed. 1914) should be checked by the criticism of J. W. JEUDWINE, '**The Manufacture of Historical Material**' (W. & N. 1916).

The series of small volumes on '**English History by Contemporary Writers**' (Nutt) is helpful for this period; and the volumes on '**The Crusade of Richard I**' (ed. T. A. Archer), '**The Misrule of Henry III**,' '**Simon de Montfort and His Cause**' (ed. W. H. Hutton); and '**Edward III and His Wars**' (ed. Prof. Ashley) should be noted. '**England under Henry III: 1216-1272**' by MARGARET A. HENNINGS (Lmns.) is "illustrated from contemporary sources." '**The Baronial Opposition to Edward II**,' by J. C. DAVIES (C.U.P. 1919), is illuminative; as are the '**Studies in the Period of Baronial Reform and Rebellion**' of Prof. E. F. JACOB (Cl. Pr.). On Edward I there are available the monograph of Prof. TOUT (Mac.: E.S.S.) and that of R. B. SEELEY, '**The Life and Reign of Edward I**' (S.S. & Co. 1872); and on Edward III, W. LONGMAN's '**Life and Times of Edward III**' (2 v. 1869), Dr. J. MACKINNON's '**History of Edward the Third**' (Lmns. 1900), and Prof. G. UNWIN's '**Finance and Trade under Edward**

III' (Lmns. 1918). C. H. PEARSON's 'English History in the Fourteenth Century' (Riv. 1876) is a small volume of great interest. On the Wiclif period may be studied the collection of unpublished documents entitled 'The Peasants' Rising and the Lollards,' edited by Mr. Trevelyan and E. Powell (Riv. 1899). The terrible episode of the Black Death has been fully treated by Dr. GASQUET, 'The Great Pestilence' (S.M. 1893); and the socially important reign of Richard II has been elaborately handled in connection with French history by the French scholar H. A. WALLON, *Richard II* (2 t. 1864).

§ 6. Similarly full treatment of the succeeding reigns is supplied in J. H. WYLIE's admirably learned work 'England under Henry IV' (Lmns. 4 v. 1884-98), and his and W. T. WAUGH's 'The Reign of Henry V' (C.U.P. 3 v.). These reigns are also treated in the able handbooks of JAMES GAIRDNER on 'The Houses of Lancaster and York' (Lmns.) and 'Henry VII' (Mac. : E.S.S.); but his fuller 'Life and Reign of Richard III' (new ed. C.U.P.), read with the vindictory work of Sir C. R. MARKHAM, 'Richard III: His Life and Character' (S.E. 1906), goes far to support the older presentment by CAROLINE A. HALSTED (2 v. 1844). There is now available the U. of L. series (Lmns.), which includes 'England under the Lancastrians,' by JESSIE H. FLEMING; '... under the Yorkists, 1460-85,' by ISOBEL D. THORNEY; and '... under the Early Tudors,' by C. H. WILLIAMS—all illustr. from contemporary sources. On the entire century much sociological light is thrown by the Rev. W. Denton's 'England in the Fifteenth Century' (Bell, 1888), and by ALICE STOPFORD (Mrs. J. R.) GREEN's 'Town Life in the Fifteenth Century' (Mac. 2 v. 1894). Dr. J. S. BREWER's 'Reign of Henry VIII' (prefs. to Calendar of Papers, ed. by J. GAIRDNER, 1884) is a copious and authoritative work, covering a particularly important reign. 'Studies in Midland History,' by Prof. CONRAD GILL (O.U.P. 1930), cover the 15th, 16th, and 17th centuries.

§ 7. At this point begin the elaborate period histories. J. A. FROUDE's brilliant 'History of England from the Fall of Wolsey to the Defeat of the Spanish Armada' (Lmns. 12 v.), which has been both fairly and unfairly criticised, remains a literary classic—to be checked by Cardinal GASQUET's 'Henry VIII and the English Monasteries' (pop. ed. in 1 v. Nimmo, 1899), which is equally open to challenge. Prof. A. F. POLLARD's 'Wolsey' (Lmns. 1929), on the other hand, is the best study, thus far, of its subject. On the Reformation in general see §§ 14, 15, below.

Coming down only to 1588, Froude's main history does not complete the reign of Elizabeth, on which, however, there are good monographs by Prof. BEESLY and Bishop CREIGHTON (Mac.).

Many matters are made newly clear in SPEDDING's great 'Letters and Life of Francis Bacon' (7 v. Lmns. 1862-74; abrd. in 2 v. 1878). M. A. S. HUME's 'Sir Walter Raleigh' (F.U. 1897) is abreast of recent research.

§ 8. From the accession of James I to the Commonwealth we have the very careful and copious History of Prof. S. R. Gardiner, originally published in sections, and making uniform volumes in the cheaper rep. (Lmns.). The same writer's little book on 'The First two Stuarts and the Puritan Revolution' (Lmns.) has special authority in its kind. Gardiner's history is rounded off by Sir C. FIRTH's 'Last Years of the Protectorate, 1656-58' (Lmns. 2 v. 1909), and 'The House of Lords during the Civil War' (same, 1910). H. D. TRAILL's 'Strafford' (Mac.) has less merit, but may be read as a counter testimony. T. MAY's (1647) History of the Long Parliament (2nd rep. 1854) is instructive still.

The Revolution may be freshly approached through 'The Puritans in Power,' by G. B. Tatham (C.U.P. 1913); 'The Barbone Parliament,' by H. A. GLASS (J. Clarke, 1899); and 'The Interregnum, 1648-60: Studies of the Commonwealth,' by F. A. Inderwick (Low, 1891), a vivacious work. A lasting interest attaches to CLARENDON's famous 'History of the Great Rebellion' (best ed. Cl. Pr. 6 v.; 1 v. ed. of 1843 still on sale); but that work is to be studied in the light of later researches. Of the extensive literature on Cromwell it may suffice to specify: CARLYLE's 'Oliver Cromwell's Letters and Speeches' (3 v. C. & H.), usefully to be read in the annot. ed. by Mrs. S. C. LOMAS (Met. 3 v., intr. by Sir CH. FIRTH, 1904), which is at many points corrective; or with the 'Speeches of Oliver Cromwell' as edited by C. L. STAINER (Frowde, 1901), who gives the actual reports.

Further light is thrown by Lord MORLEY's 'Oliver Cromwell' (Mac. 1899); Gardiner's 'Cromwell's Place in History' (Lmns. 3rd ed. 1897) and 'Oliver Cromwell' (same, 1901); FREDERIC HARRISON's 'Oliver Cromwell' (E.S.S.); Sir C. H. Firth's 'Oliver Cromwell and the Rule of the Puritans in England' (Heroes ser. 1900), a specially competent monograph; the same exact scholar's study on 'Cromwell's Army' (Met. 1902); and the two works of Sir R. F. D. PALGRAVE, 'Oliver Cromwell, the Protector: An Appreciation based on Contemporary Evidence,' and 'Oliver Cromwell and the Royalist Insurrection of 1655' (Low, 1890 and 1903), which are worthy of examination as presenting with care a hostile view. Prof. MASSON's somewhat lumbering 'Life of Milton' (Mac. 6 v.: sep. rep. of 'Chapters from the Sixth Volume': Mac. 1898) throws a great deal of light on the intellectual life of the period; and the views of 'Home Life under

the Stuarts' and 'Social Life under the Stuarts,' by ELIZABETH GODFREY (Richards, 1904), are both attractive and instructive.

§ 9. For the reign of Charles II a principal source is Bishop BURNET's abundantly interesting 'History of My Own Time' (best ed. Cl. Pr. 6 v.); but the chapters of Hallam and the careful research of W. D. CHRISTIE, 'Life of the First Earl of Shaftesbury,' should here be referred to by those concerned for accuracy. A good general view is given in the 'England under the Restoration' of THORA G. STONE, with pref. by Prof. A. F. Pollard (Lmns.). O. AIRY's 'The English Restoration and Louis XIV' (Epochs ser.) gives a helpful general view of Restoration politics, as does KEITH FEILING's 'British Foreign Policy, 1660-72' (Mac.). There now becomes available the most widely read of all English histories, that of MACAULAY (many eds.; one annot. by T. F. Henderson in 'World's Classics,' O.U.P. 5 v. 1931). In so far as it leaves unfinished the reign of William III, it is briefly supplemented by the monograph of Mr. Traill on that king (Mac.)

§ 10. For the 18th c. as a whole it is well to take as guide W. E. H. LECKY's comprehensive 'History of England in the Eighteenth Century' (rep. in 7 v. Lmns.), which is the best work of its author; but the age is also fully covered in periods by the following series: Prof. G. M. TREVELYAN's new 'England under Queen Anne' (Lmns. vol. ii, 1932); J. H. BURTON's 'History of the Reign of Queen Anne' (Bld. 3 v. 1880); F. W. WYON's 'History of the Reign of Queen Anne' (2 v. C. & H. 1876); Lord STANHOPE's 'History of England, 1713-83' (Mur. 9 v.); and W. MASSEY's 'England during the Reign of George III' (Lmns. 4 v.), all less attractive than Macaulay, but of a fair level of trustworthiness. Sir A. W. WARD's 'Britain and Hanover' is a useful conspectus (Cl. Pr. 1899). See also the Lives of the leading statesmen: Bolingbroke, Walpole, Chatham (in the copious 'William Pitt, Earl of Chatham' by A. VON RUVILLE: E. tr. 3 v. 1907, Put.), Burke, the younger Pitt, and Fox; also 'The Structure of Politics at the Accession of George III' (2 v.), and 'England in the Age of the American Revolution,' by L. B. NAMIER (Mac.).

The history of the loss of the American Colonies, till recently written usually from a generously pro-American point of view, as by Sir GEORGE TREVELYAN, 'The American Revolution' (Lmns. 3 v. 1905), and by Mrs. MARY MARKS, 'England and America: The History of a Reaction' (2 v. 1907), is now to be checked by the work on 'The Cause and Character of the American Revolution' by H. E. EGERTON (Cl. Pr. 1923); the impartial research of 'The Struggle for American Independence' by S. G. FISHER

(Lipp. 2 v. 1908); and the two works of Prof. VAN TYNE of Michigan, 'The Causes of the War of Independence' and 'The War of Independence' (Con. 1930), which proceed largely on unpublished documents.

§ 11. The political history of the 19th c. may be studied continuously in the works of HARRIET MARTINEAU, 'History of England, 1800-15' (Bell) and 'History of the Thirty Years' Peace' (same, 4 v.); SPENCER WALPOLE'S 'History of England, 1815-58' (Lmns. 6 v.) and 'History of Twenty-five Years: 1856-70' (same, 2 v. 1904); Rev. W. N. MOLESWORTH'S 'History of England, 1830-74' (3 v. C. & H. 1874; abr. in 1 v. 1878); H. C. DAVIS, 'The Age of Grey and Peel,' with intr. by Prof. Trevelyan (Cl. Pr. 1929); the works on Chartism named in Course XIV, § 9; JUSTIN MCCARTHY'S 'History of Our Own Times' (4 v. C. & W.); the 'History of Modern England,' by HERBERT PAUL (5 v. Mac. 1904-6); and Sir S. Low's 'Reign of Victoria' (above, § 1). On the social side (more or less neglected in the foregoing works) the "Victorian Era" is intelligently treated by the contributors to T. HUMPHRY WARD'S 'Reign of Queen Victoria' (2 v. S.E.); and in the 'Social Transformations of the Victorian Age' by T. H. S. ESCOTT (S.S. & Co. 1897), which conveys much light.

For the rest, the personal-political life of the period may be studied in the biographies specified in Course XIV, § 15; in such works as Sir THEODORE MARTIN'S official 'Life of the Prince Consort' (5 v. S.E. abr. ed. in 1 v.); GREVILLE'S 'Journals of the Reigns of George IV, William IV, and Victoria' (8 v. Lmns.); and the political evolution in the works of AMOS and TODD on Constitutional and Parliamentary History, mentioned in Course XIV, § 15. To these may be added the treatise of G. LOWES DICKINSON on 'The Development of Parliament during the 19th Century' (Lmns. 1895) and that of E. JENKS, 'Parliamentary England: The Evolution of the Cabinet System' (F.U. 1903).

British expansion in the 17th, 18th, and 19th centuries has naturally received much attention, as in J. A. WILLIAMSON'S 'Short History of British Expansion' (Mac. 2 v. 1930); 'The Expansion of Britain' by W. R. KERMACK (O.U.P. 1922); 'The Beginnings of Overseas Enterprise,' by Sir CHARLES LUCAS (same, 1913), and the same author's 'The British Empire' (Mac.). The domestic history since the death of Queen Victoria is to be gathered concisely from the works of G. P. GOOCH and F. BENNS (Course III, § 8), L. CECIL SMITH, S. H. McGRADY, and Prof. TOUT (XLI, § 1); C. RANSOME (above, § 1); several works named in Course XIV, § 17; and others specified in Course XV, §§ 12, 13. The War History and the sequelæ are dealt with in Course LI.

§ 12. For several periods English history has been written more elaborately by foreigners, up to the time of their works, than by natives, and in these cases the foreign point of view is instructive. Thus, J. M. LAPPENBERG'S 'History of the Anglo-Saxon Kings' (E. tr. 2 v. rev. ed. Bell, 1881) in the German series of HEEREN-UKERT, once the leading authority, is still worth reading; as are the 'History of the Norman Conquest of England,' by A. THIERRY (E. tr. 2 v. B.L.), and Lappenberg's 'History of England under the Norman Kings' (E. tr. rev. and added to by B. THORPE, 1857). The further *Geschichte von England* of R. PAULI (5 v.), which comes down to 1509, and is continued by MORITZ BROSCHE, has original merit. The later *England unter den Tudors* of Dr. WILHELM BUSCH (Stuttgart, Bd. i. 1892, E. tr. vol. i. 1895, Innes) was the fullest study then made of that period, so far as it went; and RANKE'S 'History of England, principally in the Seventeenth Century' (E. tr. Cl. Pr. 6 v.) is valuable as showing English developments in relation to those of other European nations. More interesting are the series of works by GUIZOT on the period of the Rebellion, all trans.: 'History of Charles the First and the English Revolution' (2 v. B.L.), 'History of Oliver Cromwell and the English Commonwealth' (same, 2 v.), 'History of Richard Cromwell and the Restoration of Charles II' (same, 2 v. 1856), and 'Monk and his Contemporaries' (same, 1866). Pauli's 'Oliver Cromwell' is trans. (B.L. 1888); and there is also a German study of *Oliver Cromwell und die puritanische Revolution* by Moritz Brosch (1886), and one by the same author on *Lord Bolingbroke und die Whigs und Tories seiner Zeit* (same, 1883). The French research of J. BOURELLY, *Cromwell et Mazarin* (1886), is of special interest; and the older work of ARMAND CARREL, 'The Counter Revolution' (E. tr. B.L.), is still worth reading for its criticism.

On the socio-political side also good work has been done in English history by foreigners. The earlier history of English commerce is independently investigated in G. SCHANZ'S *Englische Handelspolitik* (2 Bde. 1881, not trans.), and in Dr. RICHARD EHRENBURG'S *Hamburg und England in Zeitalter der Königin Elisabeth* (Jena, 1896). See also Dr. SCHULZE-GÄVERNITZ'S 'The Cotton Trade in England and on the Continent' (E. tr. S.M. 1895)—a trans. of his *Der Grossbetrieb*.

§ 13. A number of works on economic history specified in Course XV, § 7, deal with Britain; and in addition to these may be here named 'The Sovereignty of the Sea,' by Dr. T. WEMYSS FULTON (Bld. 1911); Prof. G. L. CRAIK'S old 'History of British Commerce' (rep. from Knight's Pictor. Hist. of England; 3 small v. bd. in one, 1844)—a useful condensation and revision of the

matter of the older 'Annals of Commerce' of MACPHERSON (1805, 4 v. 4to)—a revision of the still older work of ANDERSON (3 v. 4to, 1787-89). The later work of LEONE LEVI, 'History of British Commerce, 1763-1870' (2nd ed. Mur. 1880), is full and trustworthy for its period; and T. WARNER's 'Landmarks in English Industrial History' (Blackie, 1899) is a good general guide. The short 'Industrial History of England' of Prof. H. DE B. GIBBINS (Met.) embodies much useful matter.

Among the other useful researches on special aspects of social and political history may be noted the following: R. M. GARNIER, 'History of the English Landed Interest' (Son. 1892), and 'Annals of the British Peasantry' (same, 1895); 'The English Peasant,' by RICHARD HEATH (F.U. 1893); 'Tyburn Tree: its History and Annals,' by ALFRED MARKS (Brown, Langham, *n.d.*); L. O. PIKE's 'History of Crime' (2 v. 1873-76) and 'Constitutional History of the House of Lords' (Mac. 1894); the work of Redlich and Hirst, above mentioned (§ 4); M. OSTROGORSKI's 'Democracy and the Organisation of Political Parties' (E. tr. Mac. 2 v. 1902); HUBERT HALL, 'History of the Customs Revenue' (Stock, 2 v. 1885; rep. in 1 v. 1892); Dr. C. CREIGHTON, 'A History of Epidemics in Britain from A.D. 664 to the Extinction of the Plague' (C.U.P. 2 v. 1891-94); C. D. COLLET, 'History of the Taxes on Knowledge, their Origin and Repeal' (F.U. 2 v. 1899); T. D. INGRAM, 'England and Rome: From the Norman Conquest to 1688' (Lmns. 1892); W. A. SHAW, 'Select Tracts and Documents Illustrative of English Monetary History: 1626-1730' (Clement Wilson, 1896), and 'History of Currency: 1252 to 1894' (Wilson, 2nd ed. 1896).

§ 14. On English Church history there is an extensive literature. In general the later surveys are to be preferred, though there are exceptions. In this connection may be studied the learned 'Church and Manor: A Study in English Economic History,' by S. O. ADDY (Allen & Co. 1913), a work of real historic value. It is difficult to point to a good history in small bulk; but the 'Introduction to the History of the Church of England,' by H. O. WAKEMAN (Riv. 1899), is a judicial and scholar-like performance. The history edited by Dean Stephens and the Rev. Dr. W. Hunt (Mac. 7 v.) is on the whole satisfactory in point of scholarship; and that by Canon R. W. DIXON (Rout. 3 v. 1878-93) is laudably outspoken as to the Reformation. On that episode, the work of Dr. J. H. BLUNT, 'The Reformation of the Church of England' (Lmns. 2 v. 1878); the shorter account by Dr. James Gairdner, 'The English Reformation: What it Was and What it has Done' (S.P.C.K.); and that of the Rev. G. G. PERRY (Lmns.), are among the most competent.

The Roman Catholic point of view is given in Bishop F. G. LEE's 'The Church under Queen Elizabeth' (1892); but Lingard is a more rational advocate on that side. A non-Romish but anti-Puritan standpoint is vigorously taken in the 'Essays on Subjects connected with the Reformation in England,' by Dr. S. R. MAITLAND (1849; rep. Lane, 1899), to the last ed. of which the Rev. A. W. Hutton has prefixed a judicial and informative introduction. Dean Hook's 'Lives of the Archbishops of Canterbury' is worth noting as a good store of out-of-the-way information (Mac. 12 v.). C. HOLE's 'Manual of English Church History' (Lmns. 1910) is a useful conspectus; and Dr. W. H. FLECKER's short survey of 'British Church History to A.D. 1000' (Bell, 1913) has won much clerical approval. Three of the volumes in the Church Epochs series, 'The English Church in the Middle Ages,' by the Rev. W. HUNT; 'Wycliffe and Movements for Reform,' by R. L. POOLE; and H. O. Wakeman's 'The Church and the Puritans,' make with the before-named works on the Reformation a good continuous record. There is further an elaborate 'History of the English Church during the Civil Wars and under the Commonwealth,' by Dr. W. A. SHAW (2 v. Lmns. 1900); whereafter come C. J. ABBEY and Dr. J. H. OVERTON's 'English Church in the Eighteenth Century' (same, 2nd ed. 1878); Dr. Overton's 'The Evangelical Revival in the Eighteenth Century' (Epochs ser.); and his larger work, 'The English Church in the 19th Century' (1894). In the Epochs series, also, are interesting histories of the universities of Oxford and Cambridge, the first by the Hon. G. C. BRODRICK and the second by J. Bass Mullinger. Fuller histories have been supplied in the larger work of MULLINGER, 'The University of Cambridge' (3 v. C.U.P.) and the large 'History of Oxford University' by Sir CHARLES MALLET (Met. 1931, 3 v.).

§ 15. Of the Nonconformist bodies there are a number of histories, both general and particular. A continuous general record is supplied by D. NEAL, 'History of the Puritans' (4 v. 1732-38; rep. 3 v. 1837) down to 1688; D. BOGUE and J. BENNETT, 'History of Dissenters' (2nd ed. by Bennett, 2 v. 1833), covering the period from 1688 to 1808; and Bennett's 'History of Dissenters from 1808 to 1838' (1839). J. B. MARSDEN's 'History of the Early Puritans'—Ref. to 1642, and 'History of the Later Puritans'—1642-1662 (both 2nd ed. 1853-4) aimed at moderation. A short general survey is made by H. S. SKEATS, 'History of the Free Churches of England' (rep. with contin. by S. Miall to 1891, 1894). Among the separate denominational histories the principal are: 'The History of Independency in England since the Reformation,' by JOSEPH FLETCHER (4 v.

1847); T. CROSBIE, 'History of the English Baptists' (4 v. 1738); J. WADDINGTON, 'Congregational History, 1200-1800' (5 v. 1869-80); A. STEVENS, 'History of Methodism' (3rd ed. rev. 2 v. 1873-74); 'A New History of Methodism' ed. by TOWNSEND, WORKMAN, and EAYERS (H. & S. 2 v. 1909); and the 'Story of Methodist Union,' by Mr. TOWNSEND (Milner, 1906); 'The History, Opinions, and . . . Position of the English Presbyterians' (1834); and the 'History of the Presbyterians in England' by Rev. A. H. Drysdale (1889). The later work of J. S. FLYNN, 'The Influence of Puritanism on the Political and Religious Thought of the English' (Mur. 1920), is a capable critical study, covering British and American aspects to the present century.

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXVII.—GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

(C.)—SCOTLAND

SCOTLAND, like England and Ireland, bears a factitious name, the first "Scots" having certainly come from Ireland (563), where they were so known. "Scotia" was then a name for what we now term Ireland. Thus the "Scotland" which later spoke a dialect of "Anglo-Saxon" retained the name of the "Celtic" race which had partly re-peopled the old "Alban," either conquering or becoming the "Caledonians" or "forest-men" met by the Romans. The Irish-Scottish Gaelic-speaking stock came ultimately to be known as "Highlanders," long after the Britonic Kingdom, which in the north had been Pictish, became Scotia, and thus finally came under Scoto-English kings.

Its history proper begins, like that of England, with the Roman invasion. The Christianisation began with St. Ninian (on whom there is a monograph by A. SCOTT: Nutt, 1918) late in the Roman period, and was renewed from Ireland under St. Columba. The *brochure* of 1880, 'Who are the Scotch?' by JAMES BONWICK, raises more problems than it solves; but is worth attention. What it leaves clear is that Wallace and Bruce were "English."

§ 1. As all general histories of Scotland begin with the Roman invasion, the evolution can be followed through these. An adequate general history is perhaps still a desideratum, even after the issue of that by Prof. SANFORD TERRY (C.U.P. 1920); but the beginner has an excellent guide in the '**Outlines of Scottish History**' by Dr. W. M. Mackenzie (Black, 1907; rep. 1916), which covers the ground from Roman times till "the Disruption" (1843). It is strictly documentary in method, and has the special merit of attending to the economic side and to the sociological results, so far as space allows. The fuller 'History' by Prof. P. HUME BROWN (C.U.P. 3 v. 1899-1902) is nearly unimpeachable as to accuracy and impartiality. The larger History by ANDREW LANG (4 v. Bld. 1907) has merits of its own, especially as regards

freshness of style and appreciation, though lacking in balance and proportion, and, like the other, stands for an independent survey of all the materials. Of the older and bulkier histories, that of Dr. J. HILL BURTON (Bld. 8 v.) remains the most distinguished. It is, however, rather frequently inaccurate as to names and dates, and should not be relied on for specific details without checking it by the work of Hume Brown or others. A more serious blemish is its flagrant prejudice against everything Celtic; as to which see 'The Saxon and the Celt' (1897, sec. iv). The older History of P. FRASER TYTLER (4 v.) covers only a portion of Scottish history, but remains instructive for that; and the same may be said of the still older history of MALCOLM LAING (2nd ed. 4 v. 1804). The 'Constitutional History of Scotland' by J. and J. A. R. MACKINNON (Lmns.) comes down only to the Reformation. R. S. RAIR's 'Outline of the Relations between England and Scotland, 500-1707' (Blackie, 1901) is a useful companion to any study of the independent period.

§ 2. The culture-history of Scotland is well covered by Hill Burton down to the 18th c.; but the most luminous survey of it, coming down to the 19th, is made by Buckle in his 'Introduction to the History of Civilisation in England,' which, however, needs critical checking. Buckle gives many references to Scottish authorities. The oldest remains are considered in DONALD A. MACKENZIE's 'Ancient Man in Britain,' with pref. by Elliot Smith (Blackie, 1923). A challengeable research on the mediæval period has been published by R. W. COCHRAN-PATRICK, 'Mediæval Scotland' (MacL. 1892); and Miss I. F. GRANT's small illustrated vol. 'Everyday Life in Old Scotland' (A. & U. 1931) is illuminating for the beginner. This field may be studied in the larger light of several books dealing with Catholic Europe, as the work entitled 'Five Centuries of Religion,' by G. G. COULTON (C.U.P.); also his 'Social Life in Britain from the Conquest to the Reformation' and 'The Medieval Village' (all C.U.P.); 'The Medieval Mind' by Dr. H. O. TAYLOR (Mac. 4th ed. 1925, 2 v.); 'Medieval France' by JOAN EVANS (Cl. Pr.); 'Medieval England' (XLII, § 3). 'Life and Work in Medieval Europe,' by Prof. P. BOISSONADE (E. tr. K.P.); 'The Legacy of the Middle Ages' (O.U.P.); and Miss I. F. GRANT's 'Social and Economic Development of Scotland before 1603' (O. & B. 1930). The 'Old World Scotland' of T. F. HENDERSON (1893) is also sociographical.

§ 3. For the Reformation period, discussed in all the general histories, the biographical side is important. The 'Precursors of Knox,' by Prof. P. LORIMER (1857), should not be overlooked. The old 'Life of John Knox' and 'Life of Andrew Melville,' by Dr. McCRIE (Bld. rep.), are notably learned works, shedding much

light on their periods, but distinctly partisan in their judgments; and the former is in a measure superseded by the work of Prof. Hume Brown (Douglas, 2nd ed. 2 v. 1895). Mr. Lang's 'John Knox and the Reformation' (Lmns. 1905) is more vehemently critical, but full of important matter. More favourable to the monarchic side is JOHN SKELTON's 'Maitland of Lethington' (Bld. 2 v. 1887-88), dealing with the period of Mary and the Reformation; but the more judicial 'Maitland of Lethington' by E. RUSSELL (Nisbet, 1912) is the better contribution to history. Prof. Hume Brown's 'Scotland in the Time of Queen Mary' (Met. 1904) is the most careful survey of that period. EDWIN MUIR's 'John Knox' (Cape, 1930) has real merit. 'The Counter-Reformation in Scotland, 1569-1930,' by DONALD MACLEAN (J. Clarke, 1932), deals with Catholic Revival.

§ 4. For the period from the Reformation to the Revolution of 1688, apart from Hume Brown's 'Scotland before 1700' (Douglas, 1893), the most impartial and most penetrating research is that of W. L. MATHIESON, 'Politics and Religion in Scotland from 1550 to 1695' (MacL. 2 v. 1902). His sequent series: 'Scotland and the Union: A History of Scotland from 1695 to 1747' (same, 1905), 'The Awakening of Scotland: 1747-97' (same, 1910), and 'Church and Reform in Scotland: 1797-1843' (same, 1916) may be said to constitute the best sociographical history of Scotland for a period of three centuries. For the 18th c. in general there are:—J. RAMSAY, 'Scotland and Scotsmen in the Eighteenth Century' (Bld. 2 v. 1888); and M. G. J. KINLOCH's 'Studies in Scottish Ecclesiastical History in the Seventeenth and Eighteenth Centuries' (S.M. 1898). H. GREY GRAHAM's 'Social Life of Scotland in the Eighteenth Century' (Black, 1-v. ed. 1901) is a most readable if slightly sensational study. Sir HENRY CRAIK's 'Century of Scottish History, 1745-1845' (Bld. 2 v. 1901) is a discursive work on the period following "the Forty-five," from the old Tory and "Moderate" standpoint. A partial corrective is to be found in the second volume of OMOND's 'Lord Advocates of Scotland.'

§ 5. The 'History of Civilisation in Scotland,' by Dr. JOHN MACKINTOSH (Paisley, Gardner, rev. ed. 4 v. 1892-96), is in large part a library of extracts indicating the history of literature and thought in Scotland, but it further embodies a valuable mass of historical learning, and gives abundant references over and above those furnished by Buckle. CHAMBERS's 'Domestic Annals of Scotland' (3 v. 1858-61, abr. ed. 1 vol. 1885) is a rich and entertaining store of illustrative matter from all manner of sources. Still further light on social conditions may be had from the two volumes

edited by Prof. Hume Brown, 'Early Travellers in Scotland' and 'Scotland before 1700' (Douglas, 1891 and 1893). For a later period there is a great mass of information in 'The Industries of Scotland, their Rise, Progress, and Present Condition,' by DAVID BREMNER (1869); and there is a slight but useful sketch of 'Scottish Industrial History' by Miss HUTCHISON STIRLING (Blackie, 1906). The later 'Social and Industrial History of Scotland' by Dr. S. MACKINNON (Blackie, 1920) covers the ground from the earliest times to the Union.

§ 6. The original or "source" historians of Scotland are made widely accessible to students by the praiseworthy series of reprints edited by Skene, Laing, and Reeves ('Historians of Scotland,' 10 v. Edinb. 1871-80); and Scotland is rich in reprints of documents illustrating many periods of her history, issued by the Maitland, Bannatyne, Spalding, and other publishing Clubs, and by the more recently established Scottish History Society, as well as by the Scottish Society of Antiquaries. There are in addition collected sets of Burgh Records, Exchequer Rolls, and other State Papers, to most of which references are given in the works of Mackintosh, Hume Brown, and Lang. Most convenient little books, on this line, are Nutt's 4 v. entitled 'Scottish History from Contemporary Sources.' Mackintosh also indicates the archaeological collections. A special introduction on this side, however, is given in R. MUNRO's 'Prehistoric Scotland' (Bld. 1899). A good general view of the subject matter is offered in Prof. DANIEL WILSON's 'Prehistoric Annals of Scotland' (2nd ed. Mac. 2 v. 1863); but there are later researches of importance, notably R. MUNRO's 'Ancient Scottish Lake-Dwellings' (Douglas, 1882); and D. MURRAY's 'An Archaeological Survey of the United Kingdom' (MacL. 1896). 'The Pictish Nation: its People and its Church,' by A. B. SCOTT (Foulis, 1918), is an attempt to reconstruct an elusive "culture."

§ 7. Celtic Scotland has down till modern times been as distinct from "Saxon" Scotland as is the latter from England. Of this period the standard history is W. F. SKENE's 'Celtic Scotland: A History of Ancient Alban' (2nd ed. 3 v. 1886-90, Douglas), which, however, should be checked by the 'Celtic Place-Names' of Prof. W. J. WATSON (Bld. 1926). Skene's earlier work, 'The Highlanders of Scotland,' should be read in the critical edition of Dr. MACBAIN (Stirling, 1902). J. MACKINNON's 'Culture in Early Scotland' (W. & N. 1892) is a good scholarly survey. The more modern history of the Gaelic-speaking population has been written in various works, notably J. BROWNE's 'History of the Highlands and of the Highland Glens' (4 v. 1838); D. GREGORY's 'History of the Western

Highlands and Isles of Scotland from 1493 to 1625' (1836, rep.); D. MITCHELL, 'A Popular History of the Highlands to the Close of the '45' (Paisley, 1900); and W. C. Mackenzie's 'Short History of the Highlands' (Gardner, 2nd ed. 1907).

The histories of most of the principal clans have been separately written—those of the Camerons, Frasers of Lovat, Macdonalds, Macleods, Christophers, and Mackenzies, by A. MACKENZIE (Inverness, 1884-96); that of the Macfarlanes by C. M. LITTLE (1893); that of the Macgregors by K. MACLEAY (1881) and A. G. M. MACGREGOR (1898); that of the Macleans by J. M. MACLEAN (Cincinnati, 1889); that of the Macraes by A. MACRAE (Dingwall, 1899); and that of the clan Donald (3 v.) by the Messrs. MACDONALD (Inverness). For important contributions to Celtic history in its various branches the Transactions of the Gaelic Society of Inverness should be consulted. The work of C. N. M. NORTH, 'Records of the Dress and Arms and Sciences of the Highlanders,' is in 2 v. folio (1881).

§ 8. Of works on periods and episodes of early Scottish history the following are among the most informative: 'The Norsemen in Alban,' by R. L. BRENNER (Macl. 1924); E. W. ROBERTSON, 'Scotland under Her Early Kings' (2 v. 1862); 'Scotland: the Ancient Kingdom,' by DONALD A. MACKENZIE (Blackie, 1930); COSMO INNES, 'Scotland in the Middle Ages' (1860), and 'Sketches of Early Scottish History' (1861). MAXWELL'S 'Robert the Bruce' (Heroes ser. 1897) is a critical contribution to the history of the War of Independence. The monographs of Dr. W. M. MACKENZIE, 'The Battle of Bannockburn' (Macl. 1913), 'The Secret of Flodden' (Edinb. 1931), and 'The Mediæval Castle in Scotland' (Met. 1927) are among the most exact products of Scottish scholarship. The 'Bannockburn' is acknowledged by the military experts to have clearly established the facts in detail. The Rhind Lectures of JOSEPH BAIN on 'The Edwards in Scotland' (Douglas, 1901) are of less critical importance.

Mary Queen of Scots has inspired quite a literature, belonging rather to biography than to history. The merits of her case may be sufficiently gathered from the following:—'The Persecution of Mary Stewart: The Queen's Cause: A Study in Criminology' by His Honour Sir EDWARD PARRY (Cas. 1931); 'The Casket Letters and Mary Queen of Scots,' by T. F. HENDERSON (Black, 2nd ed. 1890); SKELTON'S 'Mary Stuart' (1893) and 'Essays' (Bld. 1893); MIGNET, 'History of Mary Queen of Scots' (E. tr. B.L.); HOSACK, 'Mary Queen of Scots and Her Accusers' (Bld. 2 v. 2nd ed. 1870-74); B. SEPP, *Maria Stuart und ihre Ankläger* (München, 1884), and three other works on details of the question (same, 1884-88); and A. LANG, 'The

Mystery of Mary Stuart' (Lmns. rev. ed. 1904). As a corrective to Mr. Lang at certain points may be taken Mr. Henderson's 'Mary Queen of Scots: Her Environment and Tragedy' (Hut. 2 v. 1905), a fresh contribution to an abounding literature. Miss F. A. MACCUNN's book on the same subject, 'Mary Stuart' (Met. 1905), gives the feminist view; and 'Mary Queen of Scots,' by HILDA T. SKAE (Foulis, 1912), has 8 portraits in collotype and 16 illustrns. in colour.

Following on Mathieson's research for the 17th c., the biographical element comes again to the front in the Rebellion. MARK NAPIER's 'Life and Times of Montrose' (1840) is far from being a model research; but the 'Montrose' of JOHN BUCHAN (Nelson, 1928) and MOWBRAY MORRIS's 'Montrose' in the Men of Action series (Mac. 1892) are more judicial. For the Cromwell period should be studied the two volumes of important matter entitled 'Scotland and the Commonwealth' and 'Scotland and the Protectorate,' edited for the Scottish History Society by C. H. Firth (1895 and 1899). Another vol., ed. by Prof. Gardiner, deals with the relations between Charles II and Scotland in 1650. The chapters in Prof. Gardiner's History on this period in Scotland should also be consulted. The work of W. S. DOUGLAS on 'Cromwell's Scotch Campaigns: 1650-51' (Stock, 1898) is written poorly, but embodies a good deal of research. The monograph bearing the ill-judged title, 'Clavers, the Despot's Champion: A Scots Biography, by a Southern' (Lmns. 1889), is really a careful and trustworthy performance, preferable to the monograph of Mowbray Morris, 'Graham of Claverhouse,' oddly placed in the English Worthies series (Lmns. 1887). Enriched by fresh research and well documented is Prof. C. S. TERRY's 'John Graham of Claverhouse' (Con. 1905). There are also minor biographies of various historical characters in the Famous Scots series (Oliphant); but these are not always adequate. On the Union there are two good researches: G. W. T. OMOND, 'Early History of the Scottish Union' (Oliphant, 1897); and J. MACKINNON, 'The Union of England and Scotland' (Lmns. new ed. 1907). On 'Prince Charles Edward Stuart' there is a monograph by Lang (Black, new ed. 1903); and another by Prof. C. S. TERRY, 'The Young Pretender' (Met. 1903).

§ 9. Of Scottish ecclesiastical history a sufficient general view may be had from Buckle; at least for the 16th and 17th centuries. The many old Presbyterian histories cited by him will hardly reward the general reader. For the Catholic period scholarly guidance is given by G. GRUB's 'Ecclesiastical History of Scotland' (4 v. 1861) and by Bishop DOWDEN's 'The Celtic Church in Scotland' (S.P.C.K. 1894). See also W. LOCKHART, 'The

Church of Scotland in the Thirteenth Century' (Bld. 1889). A general record down to modern times is supplied in J. CUNNINGHAM's 'Church History of Scotland' (2 v. 1882). For the Episcopalian Church there is a special History by J. P. LAWSON (1843). M. G. J. Kinloch has written 'A History of Scotland, chiefly in its Ecclesiastical Aspects' (2nd ed. 2 v. 1888); and A. F. MITCHELL a study on 'The Scottish Reformation' (Bld. 1900) in the light of modern research. A. SMELLIE's 'Men of the Covenant' (Edinb. Melrose) has been a successful book, and has run into several editions (one 2s. 6d.). It is a readable volume, but dithyrambic in style and confessedly *ex parte*. Much more judicious, though still conservative, is D. HAY FLEMING's 'Story of the Scottish Covenants' (Oliphant, 1904). The same may be said for his little book on 'The Scottish Reformation' (Sc. Ref. Soc. 1903).

§ 10. On the elusive subject of the Scottish Parliament, the most scholarly books are those by R. S. Rait, 'The Scottish Parliament before the Union of the Crowns' (Blackie, 1901), and C. S. Terry, 'The Scottish Parliament: Its Constitution and Procedure, 1603-1707' (Macl. 1905).

§ 11. Literary history, as distinct from the history of literature, is dealt with in Hume Brown's 'Scotland before 1700' (§ 4); in J. H. MILLAR's 'Literary History of Scotland' (F.U. 1903); in T. F. Henderson's excellent manual on 'Scottish Vernacular Literature' (Nutt, 1901); and in Grey Graham's 'Scottish Men of Letters of the Eighteenth Century' (Black, 1901). The dramatic work of the pre-Reformation period is well noticed in Prof. A. W. WARD's 'History of English Dramatic Literature' (Mac. rev. ed. 3 v. 1899).

§ 12. It is through literary utterances that the latter-day national life of Scotland (as to which see 'Scotland of the Scots' by G. R. BLAKE, Pit. 1918; 'The Re-Discovery of Scotland,' by G. M. THOMSON: K.P. 1929; and 'Scotland,' by R. S. RAIT: Benn, 1930) finds particular expression as apart from its general share in English activities. The 'Albyn: or, Scotland and the Future' of C. M. GRIEVE (K.P. 1927), author of 'Contemporary Scottish Studies,' is an optimistic answer to the somewhat flightily pessimistic 'Caledonia: or, The Future of the Scots,' by G. M. THOMSON (same: both in the To-day and To-morrow series).

§ 13. 'Critical Reviews Relating chiefly to Scotland,' by Dr. D. H. FLEMING (H. & S. 1912), cover many books published from 1889 to 1908.

COURSE XLIV

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXVIII.—GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

(D.)—WALES

THE 'Welsh' = "foreigners" received that name from their Saxon enemies, the proper name for the race being "Cymry." But, as in the case of the rest of Britain and Ireland, the fortuitous name becomes the historic.

§ 1. There is a general 'History of Wales,' by O. M. EDWARDS, in the S.N.S.; a good little 'History of Wales' by Prof. J. E. LLOYD in the Benn 6d. ser.; and a full 'History of Wales' in 2 v. (Lmns.) by the same scholar. The history of ancient Wales is to be approached on the side of the ancient Cymric literature; and the 'Celtic Britain' of Prof. John Rhys (S.P.C.K.) is a good introduction to all the problems involved. On a larger scale, but excellent in arrangement and clearness of treatment, is D'ARBOIS DE JUBAINVILLE'S *Cours de littérature celtique* (6 t.), and the other works by him mentioned in next Course (§ 3). For Britain he draws mainly on Irish sources. See also Prof. Rhys's Hibbert Lectures on 'Celtic Heathendom' (W. & N.); R. OWEN'S 'The Kymry' (Carmarthen, 1892); A. G. LITTLE'S 'Medieval Wales' (F.U. 1902); and H. ZIMMER'S series of *Keltische Studien* (1881, etc.). A number of the short histories of the last generation were slight compilations; but a good general view of the mediæval period is supplied by J. E. LLOYD in 'The Welsh Chronicles' (O.U.P. 1930); and J. E. DE HIRSCH-DAVIES in 'Catholicism in Medieval Wales' (Washbourne, 1916). F. SEEBOHM'S 'Tribal System in Wales' (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1905) is a valuable and original research; and W. F. SKENE'S edition of the 'Four Ancient Books of Wales' (2 v. 1868) is important. Prof. Rhys's 'Celtic Folklore: Welsh and Manx' (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1901) is an authoritative and scholarly collection.

§ 2. The 'Wales and the Wars of the Roses' of H. T. EVANS (C.U.P.) is an important conspectus; and 'The Making of Modern Wales: Studies in the Tudor Settlement of Wales' by H.

LLEWELLYN WILLIAMS (Mac.) has similar scholarly value. J. C. MORRICE'S 'Wales in the Seventeenth Century' (Jarvis & F. 1918) is a further survey, bringing the social history to the period of stability. 'The Romance of Wales,' by A. G. BRADLEY (G.W.R. 1929) agreeably connects the historic with the picturesque; and his 'Owen Glyndwr and the Last Struggle for Welsh Independence' (Put. 1927) vouches for his study of the records.

§ 3. From the time of the English Conquest the political history of Wales is bound up with that of England; but its social history may to some extent be separately followed in such works as:— 'Some Contributions to the Economic History of Wales' by J. E. JONES (King, 1928); W. R. WILLIAMS, 'Parliamentary History of the Principality of Wales, 1541-1895' (1895); E. J. NEWELL, 'History of the Welsh Church to the Dissolution of the Monasteries' (1895); J. REYS and D. B. JONES, 'The Welsh People' (F.U. 1900); W. HUGHES, 'A History of the Church of the Kymry' (Stock, 1894, rep. 1916); H. LEWIS, 'The Ancient Laws of Wales' (ed. J. E. Lloyd, 1889); D. YOUNG, 'The Origin and History of Methodism in Wales' (Kelly, 1893); Rev. Dr. T. REES, 'History of Protestant Nonconformity in Wales, from its rise in 1633 to the present time' (2nd ed. 1883); and H. T. EDWARDS, 'Wales and the Welsh Church' (Riv. 1889).

The work of the Rev. J. V. MORGAN, 'The Church in Wales in the Light of History' (C. & H. 1918), faces the situation after Welsh Disestablishment; and his 'Philosophy of Welsh History' (Lane, 1914) is an attempt to generalise the past.

§ 4. To ancient Wales in particular may be attached 'The Druids: A Study in Keltic Prehistory,' by T. D. KENDRICK (Met. 2nd ed. 51 illustrns.).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXIX.—GREAT BRITAIN AND IRELAND

(E.)—IRELAND

IN the case of Ireland there is no longer any question of a respectful treatment of things Celtic, Southern Ireland being now the definitely Celtic and Catholic State, after an evolution which had grafted on the race of the pre-Christian Celtic invaders, Norman-English and Lowland-Scottish elements in the historic period.

§ 1. The history may be approached either through works of the present Free State period or those of the last century. ELEANOR HULL's 'History of Ireland and her People' is completed (Har. vol. ii, 1931). Mr. STEPHEN GWYNN in his 'History of Ireland' (Mac. 1923), condensed in his 'Student's History of Ireland' (Lmns. 1925), insists that "Ireland should always be viewed as part of Europe," which is equally true of all European countries; and that "the civilisation to which Ireland belongs is that of Europe, *not* of the British Isles," which seems meaningless, British civilisation being equally European, and earlier influenced by Rome than that of Ireland. He handles with earnest interest the early period, which most educated Irishmen, like the late W. E. H. Lecky, used to know very little about. The avowal, however, that he has always sought to interpret the past "in the light of the present which I knew," does not clearly promise a strict historic treatment; though that does not affect the literary attraction of his book.

§ 2. A different approach is offered by the 'Ireland' of ROBERT DUNLOP (Cl. Pr. 1922), or by the shorter histories of Ireland which are abreast of modern knowledge, as:—A. M. SULLIVAN's 'The Story of Ireland' (Dublin, 1894); P. W. Joyce's 'Concise History of Ireland' (S.M. 1906); G. G. Walpole's 'Short History of Ireland' (K.P. 1885); C. P. DEANE's work of the same title (Stock, 1886); J. E. HERBERT's 'Short History of Ireland to 1798' (Dublin, 1886); J. H. MCCARTHY's 'Outline of Irish History' (C. & W. 1883) and 'Ireland since the Union'; W. A. O'CONNOR's

'History of the Irish People' (1886); P. W. JOYCE's 'Short History of Ireland to 1608' (Lmns. 1893); W. S. GREGG's 'Irish History for English Readers' (2nd ed. 1886); J. A. PARTRIDGE's 'Making of the Irish Nation' (F.U. 1886); and W. O'CONNOR MORRIS's 'Ireland, 1494-1868' (C.U.P. 1907). Mrs. J. R. GREEN produced also 'A History of the Irish State to 1014' and 'The Making of Ireland and its Undoing: 1200-1600' (both Mac.).

There is a French history by E. GANNERON, *L'Irlande depuis son origine jusqu'aux temps présents* (Tours, 1888); and those who read French will find in the work of GUSTAVE DE BEAUMONT, *L'Irlande sociale, politique, et religieuse* (7e éd. 2 t. 1881), a sociological history of uncommon merit, giving a more complete idea of Irish evolution than is supplied by any single book in English. The oddly-entitled work of S. E. B. BOUVERIE-PUSEY, 'The Past History of Ireland: A Brief Sketch' (F.U. 1894), was very competently done, but is only an essay. The ablest of Irish histories in some respects is the uncompleted '**Short History of the Irish People**' by Dr. A. G. Richey (Dublin, 1887), which has been allowed for many years to remain out of print.

Of the older histories those by LELAND (London, 1773, 3 v.) and PLOWDEN, 'Historical Review of the State of Ireland' (1803, 3 v.), are the most esteemed.

§ 3. On the ancient period, among the most scholarly studies are those of O'CURRY, 'Lectures on the Manners and Customs of the Ancient Irish,' with introduction by Prof. Sullivan (W. & N. 3 v. 1873); Prof. Rhys's '**Celtic Britain**' (S.P.C.K.); the same scholar's 'Studies in Early Irish History' (Cl. Pr. 1905), and Hibbert Lectures on 'Celtic Heathendom'; and Dr. Sophie Bryant's '**Celtic Ireland**' (K.P. 1889). Further light is to be had from the works of D'ARBOIS DE JUBAINVILLE, *Introduction à l'étude de la littérature celtique* (1883), *Les Celtes jusqu'à l'an 100 avant notre ère* (1903), and 'The Irish Mythological Circle and Celtic Mythology' (E. tr. S.M. 1906); and there are good elucidatory notes in CONNELLAN's edition of 'The Annals of Ireland by the Four Masters' (Dublin, 1846). Wakeman's 'Handbook of Irish Antiquities' has been ed. by JOHN COOKE (Mur. 1903). On the basis of these and other researches has been compiled 'A Social History of Ancient Ireland,' by Dr. P. W. JOYCE (Lmns. 2 v. 1903), which gives as clear and full a conception of ancient Irish life as can readily be attained. Prof. BURY's 'Life of St. Patrick and his Place in History' (Mac.) has given light and leading to many, as to Mr. Gwynn. There is also a recent research, 'Ireland's Place in Prehistoric and Early Historical Europe,' by WALTHER BREMER (Hodges, 1929).

§ 4. Further study may proceed by means of works dealing chronologically in fuller detail with particular periods—e.g. 'A History of Mediæval Ireland from 1110 to 1513,' by Prof. EDMUND CURTIS (Mac.); Lady M. C. FERGUSON'S 'Story of the Irish before the Conquest' (rep. Dublin, 1901); and STANDISH O'GRADY'S 'History of Ireland,' vol. i, 'Prehistoric and Bardic History' (Low, 1881). In the series of handbooks on 'English History by Contemporary Writers' (Nutt) is one by F. P. BARNARD (1888) on 'Strongbow's Conquest of Ireland,' which is worth mastering in connection with the general histories; and 'Edward Bruce's Invasion of Ireland,' by OLIVE ARMSTRONG (Mur.), is an interesting monograph. Concerning the relation of Ireland to the Papacy at the time of the English Conquest, there is an essay by S. MALONE, 'Adrian IV and Ireland' (Dublin, 1899). The history of the Irish Church before the Conquest is ably dealt with, further, in Prof. JAMES HERON'S 'The Celtic Church in Ireland' (1898); in H. ZIMMER'S 'The Celtic Church in Britain and Ireland' (E. tr. Nutt, 1902); and in G. T. STOKES'S 'Ireland and the Celtic Church: History of Ireland from St. Patrick to 1172' (H. & S. 1886). There is a shorter sketch of 'Ancient Britain and the Irish Churches,' by W. CATHCART (Bap. Tract Soc. 1894), and one by J. HEALY, 'The Ancient Irish Church' (Ch. Hist. ser. 1886). 'The Early History of Trinity College, Dublin' has been written concisely and well by the Rev. W. URWICK (Dublin, 1892); and at greater length by Prof. MAHAFFY, under the title 'An Epoch in Irish History' (F.U. 1903), with a good deal of bias.

§ 5. On Irish Church history there is a further literature of considerable extent. Dr. Stokes followed his first vol. with one on 'Ireland and the Anglo-Norman Church: History of Ireland from the Conquest to the Reformation' (H. & S. 1889). Other works are T. OLDEN'S 'The Church of Ireland' (Nat. Ch. ser. 1892); T. WALSH'S 'The Church of Erin' (N.Y. 1885, 3 pts.); and J. MACBETH'S 'Story of Ireland and her Church' (Dublin, 1899). The German Catholic scholar A. BELLESHEIM also produced a copious *Geschichte der Katholischen Kirche in Irland* (3 Bde. 1890-91). H. S. SKEATS'S 'The Irish Church: A Historical and Statistical Review' (rep. 1868) comes down to the period of the disestablishment of the Protestant Episcopalian Church.

§ 6. One of the best accounts of a period of Irish history is Dr. R. Hassencamp's 'History of Ireland from the Reformation to the Union' (E. tr. Son. 1888), a work written with a learning and an impartiality too rare in this field. It is, indeed, only from the Tudor period that Irish history is continuously and clearly to be traced; and the most elaborate of modern histories is R.

BAGWELL's 'Ireland under the Tudors' (Lmns. 3 v. 1885-90). The treatise of the poet SPENSER, 'A View of the Present State of Ireland' (1597), and Sir JOHN DAVIES's 'Discovery of the True Causes why Ireland was Never Entirely Subdued' (1612)—both reprinted with other works of Davies and FYNES MORYSON's 'Description of Ireland' in 'Ireland under Elizabeth and James I' (ed. by Prof. H. Morley, Rout. 1890)—are of great importance; and it is worth while to consult the trans. of Don P. O'S. BEAR's Latin record, under title 'The Ireland of Elizabeth,' by M. J. BYRNE (Dublin, 1904).

On the Insurrection of 1641 some fresh light has been thrown by T. FITZPATRICK's 'Bloody Bridge and other Papers' (Dublin, 1903). Apart from Hassencamp, the Irish history of the Stuart and Commonwealth period is in some respects elucidated by the historical tractates of Bishop FRENCH (rep. as 'Historical Works,' Dublin, 1846, 2 v.). For the rest it is covered in the general English History of Gardiner; but there is a special research by J. P. Prendergast, 'The Cromwellian Settlement' (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1870), which challenges study, as does the same writer's 'Ireland from the Restoration to the Revolution: 1660-1690' (same, 1887). The Restoration and Revolution period, again, is covered by Macaulay, whose work, however, should in this connection be checked by the research of Thomas Davis, 'The Patriot Parliament of 1689' (rep. ed. by Sir C. Gavan Duffy, F.U. 1893); and the lectures entitled 'Studies in Irish History: 1649-1775,' with intr. by R. BARRY O'BRIEN (Mac. 1903). See also, for the later Elizabethan period, the reprint of T. STAFFORD's *Pacata Hibernia*, ed. by Mr. O'Grady (W. & D. 2 v. 1896).

§ 7. For the 18th c. we have the very full record of the Irish sections of LÆCKY's 'History of England in the Eighteenth Century,' which in the Cabinet ed. are separately grouped so as to make a continuous Irish history (Lmns. 5 v.). The same author's 'Leaders of Public Opinion in Ireland' (Lmns. 2 v. rep. 1903) deals chiefly with this period; as do Sir N. PARNELL's 'History of the Penal Laws against the Catholics, from 1689 to the Union' (4th ed. 1825), and the volume entitled 'Two Centuries of Irish History: 1689-1870,' edited by JAMES BRYCE. FROUDE's 'The English in Ireland' (Lmns. 3 v.) has no special historical value, and is very erratic in its appreciations. Froude's attitude on Irish problems is discussed in 'The Saxon and the Celt,' sec. viii. ARTHUR YOUNG's 'Tour in Ireland: 1776-1779' (rep. 2 v. B.L.) shows the state of the population before the Rebellion; and the history of that episode is to be gathered from the following:—'History of the Irish Rebellion of 1798: A Personal Narrative,' by C. H. TEELING (1828, several reps.); Rev. J.

GORDON, 'History of the Rebellion in Ireland' (Lond. 1803); T. CLONEY, 'A Personal Narrative' (Dub. 1832); EDWARD HAY, 'History of the Insurrection' (Dub. 1803); and the work of F. W. PALLISER, 'The Irish Rebellion of 1798' (S.M. 1898).

In this connection should also be noted W. J. FITZPATRICK's 'Secret Service under Pitt' (Lmns. 1892), and J. G. SWIFT MACNEILL's 'The Irish Parliament: What it Was and What it Did' (Cas. 1885). JOSEPH H. FISHER's book, 'The End of the Irish Parliament' (Arnold, 1911) is a searching critical survey of the political evolution of the 18th c.

§ 8. The state of Ireland at the beginning of the 19th c. may be further realised by help of THOMAS NEWENHAM's 'Statistical and Historical Inquiry into the Progress and Magnitude of the Population of Ireland' (Lond. 1805). On the political side there is the literature concerning the Union, of which may be noted: R. DUNLOP's 'Grattan' (in Allen's Statesmen ser. 1889); J. G. SWIFT MACNEILL's 'How the Union was Carried' (K.P. 1887), which took the Nationalist side; and T. D. INGRAM's 'History of the Legislative Union of Great Britain and Ireland' (Mac. 1887), which took the other. The latter writer's 'Critical Examination of Irish History' (Lmns. 2 v. 1900) is partisan and unjudicial, but should be examined.

§ 9. The later history is competently surveyed in Judge O'Connor Morris's 'Ireland, 1798-1898' (Innes, 1898), but may be studied in further detail in the following: R. BARRY O'BRIEN, 'The Parliamentary History of the Irish Question, 1829 to 1869' (Low, 1880); R. DUNLOP's 'Daniel O'Connell' (Heroes ser. 1900); G. J. SHAW LEFEVRE, 'Peel and O'Connell' (K.P. 1887); W. P. O'BRIEN, 'The Great Famine in Ireland' (W. & D. 1896); T. P. O'CONNOR, 'The Parnell Movement' (F.U. 1889); BARRY O'BRIEN's 'Life of Charles Stewart Parnell' (S.E. 1899); and the 'CHARLES STUART PARNELL; the last Five Years' of Sir A. ROBBINS (But. 1926). J. DENVIR's 'The Irish in Britain' (K.P. 1892) deals with an interesting side of Irish history not generally handled in the histories.

§ 10. Great help to a comprehension of the political history is given by the Right Hon. J. T. BALL's 'Historical View of the Legislative Systems Operative in Ireland, from the Invasion of Henry II to the Union' (rep. Lmns. 1889). As regards the dark history of English interference with Irish commerce, there is available a rep. of the old work of HELY HUTCHINSON, 'Commercial Restraints of Ireland' (Dub. 1882); but the matter has been more thoroughly gone into in the later work of Miss ALICE E. MURRAY, 'A History of the Commercial and Financial Relations between England and Ireland, from the period of the Restoration,'

with pref. by Prof. HEWINS (King, 1903), which has been followed up by 'The Economic History of Ireland in the 17th' and 'in the 18th Century' of Dr. GEORGE O'BRIEN (2 v. 1918-19: Maunsell), and 'Anglo-Irish Trade in the 16th C.,' by ADA K. LONGFIELD (Rout.). An excellent bird's-eye view of Irish history, of great sociological merit, was given by the late J. F. McLENNAN in ch. xiii of his 'Memoir of Thomas Drummond' (1867). At pages 239-40 he gives references to the authorities he has followed, and that memoir throws much light on the political history of Ireland in the first half of the 19th c. For the 18th, it is worth while to refer to C. LITTON FALKINER's 'Studies in Irish History and Biography' (Lmns. 1902).

§ 11. On the posture of Ireland's affairs after Gladstone's decision to seek a solution in Home Rule, there may be consulted:—'Ireland's Disease,' by PHILIPPE DARYL (E. tr. Rout. 1888); GEORGE MOORE's 'Mr. Parnell and his Island' (Son. 1887) and 'An Untilled Field' (F.U. 1903); Sir HORACE PLUNKETT's temperate study, 'Ireland in the New Century' (Mur. 1904); W. O'CONNOR MORRIS's 'Present Irish Questions' (Richards, 1901); F. DE PRESSENSÉ, *L'Irlande et l'Angleterre depuis l'acte d'Union jusqu'à nos jours* (1889); PAUL FOURNIER, *La Question Agraire en Irlande* (1882); the propagandist work of MICHAEL DAVITT, 'The Fall of the Feudal System in Ireland' (Harp. 1904); Lord DUNRAVEN's 'The Outlook in Ireland: The Case for Devolution and Conciliation' (Mur. 1907) and 'The Crisis in Ireland' (same, 1905); 'Modern Ireland and her Agrarian Problem,' by the German publicist MORITZ J. BONN (E. tr. Mur. 1906); *L'Irlande contemporaine et la question irlandaise*, by L. PAUL-DUBOIS (1907). J. H. MORGAN, in 'The New Irish Constitution' (H. & S. 1912), discusses competently the new situation created at that date.

§ 12. The history of Ireland in the years from 1900 to 1910, and 1910 to 1923—the carrying of the Home Rule Bill of 1912; the rise of the Sinn Féin movement before and during the World War; the final establishment of the Free State in 1922; the sanguinary fighting in and after the Dublin insurrection of 1916; the turmoils of civil strife which accompanied the "settlement"—is to be read in the concise but well-informed narratives of Eleanor Hull and Stephen Gwynn (§ 1) and further in 'The Irish Free State: 1922-1927' by DENIS GWYNN (Mac.); the same writer's 'Life of John Redmond' (Har. 1932); and the 'Life of Tim Healy' by LIAM O'FLAHERTY (Cape, 1927).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXX.—HISTORY OF BRITISH "DOMINIONS"

§ 1. THE autonomous sections of the "British Empire" having rejected the primary title of Colonies, they are now named "Dominions," a new adaptation of that term. A general view of the process of British colonisation is supplied in such manuals as 'The Growth of the Empire,' by A. W. JOSE (Mur.); '**The Expansion of Britain**' by W. R. KERMAK (Cl. Pr. 1922); 'The British Empire beyond the Seas' by Dr. MARION I. NEWBIGGIN (Bell); 'The British Empire since 1783: Its Political and Economic Development' by Profs. NEWTON and EWING (Met.); G. F. BOSWORTH'S 'History of the British Empire' (Mac.); and in older handbooks such as A. CALDECOTT'S 'English Colonisation and Empire' (Mur. U.E.M.), also in H. E. EGERTON'S 'Short History of British Colonial Policy' (Met. 1897), which, however, is to be read for its facts, not for its judgments. A very intelligent introduction was supplied by FOX BOURNE'S 'The Story of Our Colonies' (rep. 1888). 'Bonds of Disunion,' by C. J. ROWE (Lmns. 1883), was an indictment of 'English Misrule in the Colonies.'

A competent history on a large scale, 'The Cambridge History of the British Empire,' has been begun by the C.U.P., to consist of 8 v., of which two are to be given to 'British India' and 'The Indian Empire'; but these already enter into the 'Cambridge History of India.' Vol. i, published, covers 'The Old Empire, from the Beginnings to 1783.' 'A Short History of British Expansion,' by JAMES A. WILLIAMSON, is really a large treatise in 2 v. (Mac. 2nd ed. 1930). Further study may follow the histories of the now autonomous sections separately. The separate histories have naturally multiplied.

§ 2. *Canada and Newfoundland.* 'The Evolution of the Dominion of Canada' by EDWARD PORRITT (Har.) is a very competent record. The whole history of the colony is well and compendiously covered in '**A History of Canada**,' by C. G. D. ROBERTS (K.P. 1904); in the later '**Short History of Canada**,' by

C. L. Thomson (Marshall), with chronology; in 'A First Book of Canadian History' by W. S. WALLACE (with 'Sword and Trowel,' a vol. of illustrative Documents: both Mac.); and in very full detail in W. KINGSFORD'S 'History of Canada' (K.P. 10 v. 1888, etc.); while the British period is well covered in Sir J. G. BOURINOT'S 'Canada under British Rule, 1760-1900' (Toronto, 1901). For the French period there are FRANCIS PARKMAN'S 'Canada under French Rule' (Mac.) and a series of special monographs by the same author, including 'The Old Régime in Canada' (2 v.), 'A Half-Century of Conflict: France and England in America, 1700-1748,' 'The Conspiracy of Pontiac and the Indian War, 1760-1769' (3 v.), and 'Montcalm and Wolfe' (all Mac.). A more compact history is 'The Rise and Fall of New France' by Prof. G. M. WRONG (Mac. 2 v.).

'A Manual of the Constitutional History of Canada, from the Earliest Period to the Year 1888' was produced by Dr. J. G. BOURINOT, Clerk of the Canadian House of Commons. On the Canadian constitution there are, further, two careful researches in the Johns Hopkins University Studies ser. (Baltimore), 'Federal Government in Canada,' and 'Local Government in Canada,' besides the work of J. E. C. MUNRO, 'The Constitution of Canada' (C.U.P. 1889), and the recent able essay on 'The Quebec Act' by Prof. R. COUPLAND (Cl. Pr. 1925). There is further an encyclopædia in 7 v. under the title 'Canada,' by J. C. HOPKINS (Toronto, 1898-1900). A good sociological estimate is supplied by J. A. HOBSON'S 'Canada To-day' (F.U. 1906). The more recent 'Canada and the United States' of H. L. KEENLEYSIDE (A. & U.) is an inquiry of special interest; and the 'Essays in Politics' of ANDREW MACPHAIL (Lmns. 1909) are illuminating on Canadian matters. Of special interest, too, is 'The Race Question in Canada,' by ANDRÉ SIEGFRIED (Nash, 1907); with which compare 'The Evolution of French Canada,' by Dr. J. C. Bracq (Mac.).

Of *Newfoundland* there are several histories: C. PEDLEY'S 'History of Newfoundland' (1863); J. HATTON and M. HARVEY'S 'Newfoundland: Its History and Present Condition' (Chapman, 1883); and 'A History of Newfoundland,' by D. W. PROWSE (E. & S. 2nd ed. rev. 1897). Mr. Harvey has also published 'Newfoundland, England's Oldest Colony' (Low, 1897); a 'Short History of Newfoundland' (Collins, 1890); and a 'Text Book of Newfoundland History' (Boston, 1885). See further 'The Truth about Newfoundland' by BECKLES WILLSON (2nd ed. Richards, 1901). DON C. SEITZ'S 'Newfoundland' (A. & U.) is a recent survey with illustrns.

The history of the Hudson's Bay Company is separately traced

by Beckles Willson under the title 'The Great Company' (S.E. 2 v. 1902). 'Scots in Canada' by J. M. GIBBON (K.P. 1911) is 'A History of the Settlement of the Dominion from the Earliest Days to the Present Time,' with 12 illustrns. in colour.

§ 3. *Cape Colony, Natal, and United South Africa.* D. FAIRBRIDGE supplies 'A History of South Africa' (Cl. Pr. 1917: 53 illustrns. and maps); E. A. WALKER a 'History of South Africa' (Lmns. 1928) which comes down to recent years; also a 'Historical Atlas of S. A.' (Milford, 2 v.); and Sir G. E. Cory a 'History of the Rise of S. A.,' of which there have appeared 5 v. (last 1930), bringing the record down only to 1853 (Lmns.). The completest history, accordingly, is so far the 'History of Africa South of the Zambesi,' by Dr. G. W. THEAL, rev. and greatly enl. in 9 v. (A. & U.), to which he has added the 'History of S. A. from 1872 to 1884' (same, 2 v.). Dr. Theal also contributed a 'South Africa' to the S.N.S., and 'The Progress of S. A. during the 19th Century' (Chambers, 1902).

'The Union of South Africa,' by the Hon. H. R. BRAND (Cl. Pr. 1909) records that unification. 'Race Problems in New Africa,' by W. C. WILLOUGHBY (same, 1923), faces a standing question; and 'Complex South Africa' by W. M. MACMILLAN (F. & F. 1930) is a recent presentment of the political situation; as was H. H. FYFE'S 'South Africa To-day' (Nash, 1911) for its date. Vol. viii of the C.U.P. British Empire series is to be devoted to S. A. in general.

On the South African or Boer War the work of Sir A. CONAN DOYLE is not to be recommended; but the official 'History of the War in South Africa, 1899-1902,' by Gen. Sir F. MAURICE and M. H. GRANT (H. & B. 1906-10), has many merits. There is also a 'German Official Account of the War in S. A.' (E. tr. 2 Pts. Mur.). The large controversial and other literature on the Boer War includes Sir A. M. S. METHUEN'S 'Peace or War in South Africa' (6th ed. enl. Met. 1901; rev. and rep. as 'The Tragedy of South Africa,' 1905); 'The Transvaal from Within,' by J. P. FITZPATRICK; 'The Boers in Europe: A Sidelight on History,' by G. W. T. OMOND (Black, 1903); 'Pen Pictures of the War, by Men at the Front' (Marshall, 1900); 'The Truth about the War,' by W. T. STEAD (pam.; another, same title, 4th ed. 1902, by J. M. R.); and 'Blood and Gold in South Africa,' by G. H. PERRIS (1902).

For the post-War period, Earl Buxton's 'General Botha' (Mur. 1924) is intimately trustworthy and revelatory; and the 'South Africa' of JAN H. HOFMEYER (Benn, 1932) is a representative statement of the claims and ideals of the Dutch element in S. A. life in the past generation and the present. 'Africa and

some World Problems,' by J. C. SMUTS (Cl. Pr. 1930), is of comparable importance.

The first vol. of Dr. Theal's History is devoted to 'The Ethnography and Condition of South Africa before A.D. 1505'; and the notable remains of the primitive art of some of the native races are surveyed in 'South Africa's Past in Stone and Paint' (C.U.P.). On the Native Races there are a number of books (Course I, § 8a). A special authority attaches to 'The South African Races: Their Progress and Present Condition,' ed. by the S. A. Native Races Committee (Mur.). W. H. DAWSON's 'South Africa: People, Places, and Problems' (Lmns. 35 illustrns.) is a useful general survey.

§ 4. *Australia*. J. F. FRASER's 'Australia: the Making of a Nation' is a competent general view. 'The Discovery of Australia' is fully treated of by Prof. G. ARNOLD WOOD (Mac.); and one of the C.U.P. manuals, the 'Australia' of J. W. GREGORY, supplies a conspectus; while 'A Short History of Australia' by Ernest Scott (O.U.P. 3rd ed.) meets general needs.

On *New South Wales* there are:—Dr. J. D. LANG's 'Historical and Statistical Account of New South Wales' (2 v. 4th ed. 1874); F. HUTCHINSON's 'New South Wales, the Mother Colony of the Australias' (Syd. 1896); and Sir H. PARKES's 'Fifty Years in the Making of Australian History' (Lmns. 2 v. 1892); besides the official 'Historical Records of New South Wales' (Sydney).

Victoria's history may be gleaned from W. BANNOW's 'The Colony of Victoria' (Melb. 1897); and E. FINN's 'Chronicles of Early Melbourne' (2 v. Melb. 1889); as that of *Queensland* may be from H. S. RUSSELL's 'The Genesis of Queensland' (Syd. 1888) and T. WEEDEN's 'Queensland Past and Present' (Brisb. 1897). *South Australia* is abundantly dealt with in R. GOUGER's 'The Founding of South Australia,' ed. by E. Hodder (Low, 1898); E. HODDER's 'History of South Australia' (same, 2 v. 1893); and B. T. FINNISS's 'Constitutional History of *South Australia*' (S.M. 1886).

For the rest of the continent there is A. F. CALVERT's 'Western Australia: Its History and Progress' (S.M. 1894). Other handbooks by P. MENNELL, E. FAVENC, T. CHAMBERS, and J. M. PRICE, deal chiefly with the future. 'A Statistical Account of the Seven Colonies of Australasia' is published at Sydney.

The history of the whole continent is set forth in G. W. RUSDEN's 'History of Australia' (C. & H. 3 v. 1883), which also covers *Tasmania*; but there is a 'History of Tasmania,' by J. FENTON (Hobart, 1884). A. and G. SUTHERLAND, again, have written a short 'History of Australia and New Zealand, 1606-1900' (Lmns.); and E. JENKS a 'History of the Australasian

Colonies from their Foundation to the year 1893' (C.U.P. 1896); and there is a vol. on 'The Progress of Australasia in the 19th Century' (Chambers 1902). The early documents relating to the discovery of the continent are collected by R. H. MAJOR, 'Early Voyages to Terra Australis' (Hakluyt Soc. 1859). A. F. Calvert has produced a history of 'The Discovery of Australia' (2nd ed. Dean, 1892) and one of 'The Exploration of Australia' (2 v. Philip, 1895-96), as well as an account of 'The Aborigines of Western Australia' (S.M. 1894); and there is 'A Story of Australian Exploration,' by R. THYNNE (F.U. 1894). 'Half a Century of Australian Progress,' by W. WESTGARTH (Low, 1889), gives a general record; and 'The Constitution of the Commonwealth of Australia,' by W. I. MOORE, presents the later political transformation. Those interested in Australian politics should further turn back to 'The Land Systems of Australasia,' by W. EPPS (Son. 1894), and 'State Experiments in Australia and New Zealand,' by the Hon. W. PEMBER REEVES (Richards, 2 v. 1902). A French view is given by L. VIGOUROUX, *L'Évolution sociale en Australasie* (1902).

The Federation of Australia, effected in 1901, imposed among other changes the acceptance by N.S.W. of the tariff system existing in Victoria; and the subsequent development does not exhibit financial benefit. The 'Economic History of Australia,' by E. SHANN (C.U.P. 1930), and 'The Failure of Federalism in Australia,' by A. F. CARAWAY (O.U.P. 1930), present a noteworthy historical view of the situation. The Australian Official Year Book (Australia Ho.) annually supplies statistical information.

§ 5. *New Zealand.* 'New Zealand in the Making,' by Dr. J. B. CONDLIFFE (A. & U.), is 'A Survey of Economic and Social Development'; and the O.U.P. manual of Sir R. STOUT and J. L. STOUT, 'New Zealand,' is particularly well-informed; while 'The Long White Cloud' of the Hon. W. PEMBER REEVES (1898) and his 'New Zealand' (in Story of the Empire ser.) have unquestioned authority. The same publicist's 'State Experiments in Australia and New Zealand' (§ 4) is of importance for the history of both dominions. The long appreciated 'Old New Zealand, by A Pakeha Maori' is rep. with an intr. by Dr. HOCKEN (O.U.P. 1922).

The Maori, who, unlike the Australian indigenes, may be said to have a collective history, are very fully studied in JOHN WHITE'S 'Ancient History of the Maori' (Low, 4 v. 1889); and G. W. RUSDEN compiled a detailed 'History of New Zealand' (C. & H. 3 v. rep. 1896). T. M. HOCKEN'S 'Contributions to the Early History of New Zealand' (Low, 1898) deals chiefly with Otago. W. L. REES' 'Life and Times of Sir George Grey' (2 v.

Hut. 2nd ed. 1896) is of special value in this connection. See also J. C. FIRTH's 'Nation-Making: A Story of New Zealand' (Lmns. 1890), and 'The Progress of New Zealand in the Century,' by R. Y. IRVINE and O. T. G. ALPERS (Chambers, 1902). The section on New Zealand in ANTHONY TROLLOPE's very readable work, 'Australia and New Zealand,' was separately issued (1874).

§ 6. *Minor Possessions.* E. J. EITEL's 'Europe in China' (Luzac, 1895) supplies a history of Hong-Kong; ALFRED B. ELLIS a 'History of the Gold Coast of West Africa' (C. & H. 1893); C. C. REINDORF, a 'History of the Gold Coast and Ashante' (Basel, 1895); and A. B. C. SIBTHORPE, a 'History of Sierra Leone' (2nd ed. Stock, 1881); while Miss **Kingsley** contributed a volume on 'West Africa' to the S.N.S. 'The Making of Northern Nigeria' by Capt. C. W. J. ORR (Mac.) has an interest sometimes lacking in more prestigious works. British Honduras has found a historian in A. R. GIBBS (Low, 1883); and British Guiana one in J. RODWAY (Georgetown, 1893), author of several handbooks on the same territory. There are:—a 'History of Barbadoes' by Sir R. H. SCHOMBURGK (1848), a 'History of the West Indies' by A. K. FISKE (N.Y. 1899), and a study of 'The British West Indies' by A. E. ASPINALL (Pit. 1912); while a 'History of Antigua,' by V. L. OLIVER (1894-99), runs to 3 v. The old 'History of the British Colonies in the West Indies,' by BRYAN EDWARDS (5th ed. 5 v. 1819), if somewhat diffuse, is still worth consulting; though the general Empire histories deal with the subject. 'A United West Indies,' by the Hon. C. GIDEON MURRAY (West. Strand Pub. Co. 1912), is a plea for the policy indicated.

On Malta and Gibraltar there are popular histories by M. M. BALLOU (Boston, 1893) and H. M. FIELD (C. & H. 1889). The modern history of Malta is very fully handled for one period in W. HARTMAN's 'History of Malta during the . . . French and British Occupations: 1798-1815' (new ed. rev. and exp. by J. Holland Rose, Lmns. 1909).

Among the prosperous Crown Colonies is *Mauritius*, so named when held by the Dutch, under the Stadtholder Maurice; later, under French rule, named *Ile de France*; becoming British in 1810. The 'School History of Mauritius,' by W. H. INGRAMS (Mac. 1931), is a lucid and interesting record. *St. Helena*. The use of the island for the detention of Napoleon I has won for it special historic attention, as in T. H. BROOKE's 'History of . . . St. Helena . . . to 1823' (2nd ed. 1824); J. C. MELLISS's 'St. Helena' (1875) and the 'St. Helena' of E. L. JACKSON (W.L. 1903).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXXI.—THE UNITED STATES

§ 1. HISTORIES of the United States, for the most part by American scholars, have greatly multiplied within the present century, some of the "standard" works of the last being superseded. The beginner has a primer in **R. McElroy's 'History of the United States'** (Benn, 6d. ser. 1928), from which he may pass to 'A Student's History of the United States' by **EDWARD CHANNING**, author of a standard '**History**' in 6 large vols. (both Mac.), as well as 'The United States of America: 1765-1865' in the C.H.S. Another good general History in 1 v. is that of **H. W. ELSON** (Mac.); yet another, 'The United States' by **T. C. PEASE**, of Illinois Univ. (Bell); and there is a short 'Graphic History of the U.S.' by **WADDY THOMPSON** and **ESTELLE ROSS** (Har.).

If a preference among the general histories may be here suggested, it would be for the works of two American scholars, **S. E. MORISON** and **Prof. T. COMMAGER**, the first, by **Mr. Morison**, entitled 'The Oxford History of the United States: 1783-1917' (O.U.P. 2 v. 1927); the second 'The Growth of the American Republic,' by him and **Prof. COMMAGER** (N.Y. and O.U.P.), which is a massive and masterly performance. The 'Three Centuries of American Democracy' by **Prof. WILLIAM MACDONALD** of Brown Univ. (Lane, 1923) is a lively and readable survey, popular but not uncritical, and supplied with a good small bibliography and a chronology. The 'Short History of the U.S.' by **Dr. J. S. BASSETT** (Mac.) is a tolerably full one: his 'Plain Story of American History' being more compendious. Vol. vii of the C.M.H. is devoted to 'The United States.'

§ 2. The history of the British colonies in North America, as apart from Canada, is conveniently to be taken as part of that of the United States. It is separately set forth in 'The Pilgrims and their History,' by **Prof. R. G. USHER** (Mac. 1918); 'The Making of Pennsylvania,' by **S. G. FISHER** (Philad. 1896); 'The Colonial Era in America,' by **Dr. G. P. FISHER** (Low, 1892); also in 'The

Dutch and Quaker Colonies,' by JOHN FISKE (2 v. Mac. 1899), and in the later work of Prof. H. L. OSGOOD, 'The American Colonies in the Seventeenth Century' (Put. 2 v. 1904). Of the more important colonies, as such, there are separate histories—notably: Fiske's 'Old Virginia and her Neighbours' (Mac. 2 v. 1897); J. W. McCRADY'S 'History of South Carolina under the Proprietary Government' (same, 1897); 'Under the Royal Government' (same, 1899), and 'In the Revolution' (same, 2 v. 1901-2); Fiske's 'The Beginnings of New England to 1689' (Mac. 1899). There is a very competent general history by J. A. DOYLE, 'The English in America' (Lmns. 3 v. 1882, etc.).

Further, there are the separate surveys:—PALFREY'S 'History of New England' (5 v. 1859-92); C. E. CHAPMAN'S 'History of California: The Spanish Period' (Mac.); J. H. BROWN'S 'History of Texas' (St. Louis, 2 v. 1893); D. G. WOOTEN'S 'Comprehensive History of Texas' (2 v. 1898); T. H. HITTEL'S 'History of California' (San Fran. 4 v. 1897); J. W. MOORE'S 'History of North Carolina' (2 v. 1880); W. G. BROWN'S 'History of Alabama' (N.Y. 1900); J. T. SCHARF, 'History of Maryland' (Philad. 2 v. 1882); H. H. BANCROFT'S 'History of Utah' (San Fran. 1890); 'The Story of the Mormons . . . to the Year 1901,' by W. A. LINN (Mac.); C. GAYARRÉ'S 'History of Louisiana' (3rd ed. 4 v. 1885); and P. A. BRUCE'S 'Economic History of Virginia' (Mac. 7 v. 1896). JUSTIN WINSOR'S 'Narrative and Critical History of America' (8 v. 4to, 1886-89; Low) covers the whole history of North America, but 5 vols. are devoted to the period before the formation of the United States. It represents some of the best results of specialist study to its date, being the work of many collaborators.

§ 3. On the revolutionary period there is an extensive special literature. 'The American States during and after the Revolution: 1775-1789' by A. NEVINS (Mac.) is a comprehensive survey. A new critical period, however, set in with S. G. FISHER'S 'The Struggle for American Independence' (Lipp. 2 v. 1908), a continuation and expansion of his previous book, 'The True History of the American Revolution.' Previous American histories had been rhetorical and undocumented; and the current English histories were pro-American. Fisher's record is scientifically critical, and copious in detail; and has led to further research. In 1923 appeared 'The Causes and Character of the American Revolution,' by H. E. EGERTON (Cl. Pr.); and in 1927 'The Preliminaries of the American Revolution as seen in the English Press,' by F. J. HINKHOUSE (Col. U. P. and King).

The investigation being continued, Professor VAN TYNE of

Michigan, who also had written on 'The Causes of the War of Independence,' produced a new history of 'The War of Independence' (Con. 1930). It is in the light of these revealing investigations that shorter and other histories of the period—such as J. M. LUDLOW's 'War of American Independence' (Lmns.: Epochs ser.) and Fiske's 'War of Independence' (Boston, 1889)—are now to be estimated. 'The American War of Independence,' by Lt.-Col. F. E. WHITTON, C.M.G. (Mur. 1931), is a recent research and exposition by a competent military authority.

§ 4. There are now available a number of scholarly studies and compilations on "Sources" for U.S. History, as, the 'Source Book of American History' of A. B. HART (Mac. rev. ed.) and the valuable collection, edited by him and others, 'American History told by Contemporaries,' which covers the era from 1492 to 1929 (Mac. 5 v.). There is also the 'Documentary Source Book of American History' ed. by Dr. W. MACDONALD (same), which with the 'Leading American Treaties' of Prof. C. E. HILL (same) and the others cited constitute a broad basis for the study of the comprehensive histories, as the 'History of the United States' by Dr. J. F. RHODES (Mac. 8 v.). Prof. R. L. SCHUYLER's 'The Constitution of the United States: An Historical Study of its Formation' makes a conspectus (Mac.).

§ 5. Period histories are also available, as, the 'History of the War of 1812 between the U.S. and Great Britain,' by R. JOHNSON (N.Y. 1882), and 'The Middle Period: 1817-58,' by J. W. BURGESS (N.Y. 1897); whereafter we come to the Civil War, which is the subject of many studies, the later being naturally the more systematic. On American slavery, which lay at the root of the Civil War, there is an immense literature. J. R. SPEARS's 'The American Slave Trade: Its Origin, Growth, and Suppression' (Bickers, 1901) and W. H. SMITH's 'Political History of Slavery' (N.Y. 1903) are surveys of good repute. Professor CAIRNES's 'The Slave Power' (2nd ed. 1863) was a notably able criticism. There are also a 'History of the Negro Race in America, 1619-1880,' by G. W. WILLIAMS (N.Y. 1883), and a 'History of the Rise and Fall of the Slave Power in America' (Boston, 3 v. 1872-77). In this connection the biography, 'William Lloyd Garrison: The Story of his Life Told by his Children' (Boston, rep. 4 v. 1894), has an abundant interest. See also F. B. SANBORN's 'Life and Letters of John Brown' (Boston, 1885).

The 'History of the Civil War: 1861-1865,' by the historian J. F. RHODES (Mac. 1919), crisply written, is well-documented, mapped, and trustworthy. Rossiter Johnson's 'History of the Secession War' (Boston, 1887) is a good succinct

view; and the military history has been written in fourteen monographs on the separate 'Campaigns of the Civil War' by twelve different writers (N.Y. 1881-83). The great biography 'Abraham Lincoln: A History,' by J. G. NICOLAY and J. HAY (N.Y. 10 v. 1890, etc.), gives on the whole the most comprehensive record. The biography of Charles Sumner, by M. STOREY (Boston, 1900), should be read in this connection; also the 'Life of JOHN C. CALHOUN' by G. M. PINCKNEY (Charleston, 1903). The personal memoirs of Generals GRANT (2 v. 1885), SHERIDAN (2 v. 1888), and SHERMAN (2 v. 1875) are of special military interest. For the Southern view see the 'Memoir of Jefferson Davis,' by his wife (2 v. 1890); G. F. R. HENDERSON'S 'Stonewall Jackson and the Civil War' (2 v. 1900); F. LEE'S 'General Lee' (1894), G. LITTING'S 'Life and Campaigns of General Lee' (C. & W. 1875), and H. A. WHITE'S 'R. E. Lee and the Southern Confederacy' (1897); also J. C. SCHWAB'S 'The Confederate States of America, 1861-5: A Financial and Industrial History of the South during the Civil War' (N.Y. 1901). Among shorter lives of Lincoln may be noted that of J. T. MORSE (1893). 'The Borderland of the Civil War' by Prof. E. C. SMITH (Mac.) extends the historic record.

§ 6. The period of reconstruction and recuperation is dealt with in E. B. ANDREWS'S 'History of the Last Quarter-Century' (N.Y. 2 v. 1896); in PERCY GREG'S 'History of the United States' (1887); G. G. CURTIS'S 'Constitutional History of the United States' (Harp. 1889), and several other American histories, notably W. WILSON'S 'History of the American People' (N.Y. 5 v. 1902). 'The Peacemakers of 1864,' by E. C. KIRKLAND (Mac. 1927), throws a clear light on the difficulties of the political settlement; and the new development is copiously related in E. P. OBERHOLTZER'S 'History of the United States since the Civil War' (Mac. 3 v. :—i, 1865-68; ii, 1868-72; iii, 1872-78)—in prog.

§ 7. Systematic histories of the Constitution are provided in the 'Genesis and Birth of the Federal Constitution,' by various writers, ed. by Dr. J. A. C. Chandler (Mac.); in the 'Genesis of the Constitution of the U.S.,' by B. LONG (same); in 'The American Revolution: A Constitutional Interpretation'; and in 'The Constitution of the U.S.' by Prof. R. L. SCHUYLER (same). Latterly the political thought of the constitution-making period has been freshly investigated, notably in 'The Unknown Washington: Biographic Origins of the Republic,' by JOHN CORBIN (Scrib. 1930), a searching study of the actual political discussions of the period, which had been disregarded by the popular historians.

§ 8. Biographies throw many sidelights on the revolutionary

and early republican period. The most important are those of Washington, Jefferson, Paine, the Adamses, Madison, and Hamilton. On the last named there is a good monograph, 'Alexander Hamilton: an Essay' by W. S. CULBERTSON (O.U.P. 1911), to be read with 'Jefferson and Hamilton: the Struggle for Democracy in America,' by CLAUDE G. BOWERS (Con. 1926). Dr. MONCURE CONWAY'S 'Life of Thomas Paine' (Put. 2 v. 1891, rep. in 1 v. ed. by Mrs. Bradlaugh Bonner: Watts); his later and partly different work tr. in French by F. Rabbe, *Thomas Paine et la Révolution dans les deux mondes* (Paris, 1900); and his 'Omitted Chapters of History Disclosed in the Life and Papers of E. Randolph, Governor of Virginia' (Put. 1888) are of special value in this connection. On all the American statesmen of the period there are monographs in the 'American Statesmen' series (Boston: H.M.).

Fuller works of special historical importance are the Lives of Washington, by J. SPARKS (1852), O. STODDARD (N.Y. 1886, Lives of Presidents ser.), and others; 'The True Benjamin Franklin' by S. G. FISHER (Lipp. 1899); 'The Life and Letters of Thomas Jefferson' by F. W. HIRST (Mac. 1926); JAMES PARTON'S 'Life and Times of Aaron Burr' (1872); and 'Life and Times of Benjamin Franklin' (2 v. 1864); H. S. RANDALL'S 'Life of Thomas Jefferson' (N.Y. 3 v. 1888); 'Autobiography and Letters of Benjamin Franklin,' ed. by John Bigelow (W.L. 1891); and W. C. RIVES'S 'Life and Times of James Madison' (3 v. 1866). There is a short modern life of Washington by C. C. KING (C. & H., 1894). See also Woodrow Wilson's 'George Washington' (Harp. 1913) and PAUL L. FORD'S 'The True George Washington' (N.Y. 1897). The 'George Washington' of RUPERT HUGHES (Hut. in prog.) is on the largest scale of all. (Biographies of Lincoln and his contemporaries are specified above, § 5.)

§ 9. Apart from the political crises narrated in the general histories, the outstanding American event of the close of the 19th c. was the war with Spain over the troubles in Cuba. This is crisply and clearly related in 'History up to Date' by W. A. JOHNSTON (Allenson, 1899); also in 'A History of the Spanish-American War,' by R. H. TITHERINGTON (App. 1900). The war has been described as opening a new epoch in the history of the States, making possible their entrance into the World War by dismissing the "Monroe doctrine." See 'Leading American Treaties,' by Prof. C. E. HILL (Mac.); 'Anglo-American Relations during the Spanish-American War,' by Prof. BERTHA A. REUTER (same); 'A History of American Foreign Relations,' by Prof. L. M. SEARS; and 'Recent American History' by Prof. L. B. SHIPLEE (Mac.).

The outcome of the Cuban War is to be traced in 'A History of the Cuban Republic,' by Dr. C. E. CHAPMAN (Mac.) and in 'Cuba and the Intervention,' by A. G. ROBINSON (N.Y. 1905: previous history chiefly by Spanish writers); 'Porto Rico: History and Conditions,' by K. MIXER (Mac. 1926).

For previous acquisitions by the States see 'A History of Alaska,' by H. W. CLARK, and 'A History of Hawaii' by R. S. KUYKENDALL (both Mac.).

§ 10. Much study has been devoted to the industrial, commercial, and financial history of the States. The general 'Industrial History of the United States' by L. R. WELLS (Mac. 1922) is a competent survey. In addition to the other works specified in Course XV, § 7, may be consulted 'A History of American Manufactures from 1608 to 1860,' by J. L. BISHOP (1861-64). R. M. SMITH's 'Emigration and Immigration: A Study in Social Science' (N.Y. 1890) is an important conspectus, as is E. E. SPARKS's 'The Expansion of the American People' (Chicago, 1900).

On the later immigration policy see 'Immigration Restriction,' by Prof. R. L. GARIS (Mac.); 'Immigration: A World Movement and its American Significance' by H. P. FAIRCHILD (Mac.); and 'The Immigration Problem,' by Prof. J. W. JENKS and W. J. LAUCK (Funk & W. 2nd ed. 1912). See also 'Labour Problems: A Text-Book,' by Prof. T. S. ADAMS and HELEN L. SUMNER; 'The American Labour Movement,' by MARY R. BEARD; the 'History of Labour in the United States,' by seven writers (2 v.); and 'A History of Trade Unionism in the U.S.,' by Prof. S. PERLMAN (all Mac.).

On the important history of American tariffs see the works of TAUSSIG, P. ASHLEY, and RABBENO, mentioned in Course XV, § 13; also 'The Tariff: An Interpretation of a Bewildering Problem,' by GEORGE CROMPTON, and Prof. TAUSSIG's 'Free Trade, the Tariff and Reciprocity' (both Mac.). There are also a 'Financial History of the United States,' by A. S. BOLLES (N.Y. 3 v. 1879-86); an 'Industrial History,' by the same author (N.Y. 1878); an 'Essay on the Monetary History of the United States,' by C. J. BULLOCK (N.Y. 1900); an 'Economic and Social History of New England,' by W. B. WEEDEN (Boston, 2 v. 1890); and a 'History of Bimetallism in the United States,' by J. L. LAUGHLIN (N.Y. 1886).

§ 11. On American party politics in general there is a further extensive literature. Prof. C. A. BEARD has contributed 'The American Party Battle' and the larger work 'American Government and Politics'; and Prof. C. H. ERBE 'Questions and Problems in American Government' (all Mac.). 'Party Govern-

ment in the House of Representatives,' by Dr. P. DE W. HASBROUCK (same), is another non-party survey; and Profs. C. E. MERRIAM and H. F. GOSNELL give yet another, 'The American Party System' (rev. ed. 1929: all Mac.); while 'The Story of the Democratic Party' is told by H. MINOR (same). Prof. MERRIAM has also produced studies of 'American Political Theories' and 'American Political Ideas'; and, with Prof. H. E. BARNES, edited 'A History of Political Theories: Recent Times,' by various writers (all Mac.).

The literature on separate political issues includes:—'The Relation of Government to Industry,' by MARK L. REQUA; 'The Consolidation of Railroads,' and 'Government Ownership and Operation of Railroads,' by Prof. W. M. W. SPAWN; 'Proportional Representation' by G. G. HOAG and Dr. G. H. HALLETT. In the last generation the 'History of Political Parties in the United States' was very fully written by J. P. GORDY (4 v. 1895-1903), and more briefly by A. JOHNSTON, 'History of American Politics' (N.Y. 1890); J. H. HOPKINS, 'History of Political Parties in the United States' (N.Y. 1900); and J. MACY, 'Political Parties in the United States' (Mac. 1900). The 'Presidents of the U.S. from Pierce to McKinley' of T. G. MARQUIS (Lipp. 1907, 2 v.) conveys a continuous view of party fortunes.

A notable development of American life is traced in C. NORDHOFF's 'Communitistic Societies of the United States' (Harp. 1875) and in J. H. NOYES's 'History of American Socialisms' (Philad. 1870). A separate work on 'The Oneida Community' was published by ALLAN EASTLAKE, one of its members (Redway, 1900). There is also a 'History of Co-operation in the United States' in the series of Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies (Baltimore).

A general view of Church history in the States is given in L. W. BACON's 'History of American Christianity' (Eng. ed. with pref. by J. Bryce: Clarke, 1899); and there is a compendious history of 'Education in the United States,' by R. G. BOONE (App. Internat. Education Ser.).

§ 12. Sociographical study may profitably begin with the great compendium of JAMES BRYCE on 'The American Commonwealth' (Mac. 2 v.), the standard work of its kind; which, however, may be usefully checked by the work of W. W. WILLOUGHBY on 'The American Constitutional System' (Cent. Co. 1904); and the same writer's study, 'The Supreme Court of the United States: Its History and Influence in Our Constitutional System' (Johns Hopkins Univ. Studies). On the broad social aspects there are available the 'Political and Social History of the United States,' by Profs. H. C. HOCKETT and A. M. SCHLESINGER (Mac. 2 v.—i, 1492-1828; ii, 1829-1925); the copious 'History of American

Life' by seven scholars, ed. by Prof. SCHLESINGER and D. R. Fox (Mac. 12 v. in prog.); 'A Social History of the American Negro,' by B. BRAWLEY (Mac.); and 'The Rise of American Civilisation' by CH. A. BEARD and MARY R. BEARD (Cape, 2 v. 1927), a discursive work of sociological interpretation.

All of these works belong to the modern period of prosperity, though all are more or less critical. A new note is struck in 'A Searchlight on America,' by JAMES TRUSLOW ADAMS (Rout. 1930), which has found a more attentive audience than would before have been possible. 'Stand and Deliver,' by E. H. LAVINE (Rout. 1931), claims to be a factual revelation of the reign of "racketeering" and other gangs in New York; and 'Dynamite: The Story of Class Violence in America,' by LOUIS ADAMIC (Cape, 1931), indicates its purport. 'Tragic America,' by THEODORE DREISER (Con. 1932), is in still darker colours. 'The American Renaissance,' by R. L. DUFFUS (Knopf, 1928), had been more cheerful. The work entitled 'Prosperity: Myth and Reality in American Economic Life,' by M. J. BONN (Hop. 1931), is another study of the period of depression. The phenomena there noted, which belong to the stage of industrial and commercial collapse, are considered in Course LI, in the section on Post-War Problems.

THE REDSKINS

Here may be given some references to the literature concerning the history and civilisation, so far as traceable, of the races inhabiting North America at the time of the first European settlements. In Course I, § 8e, a number of anthropological works have been named, which partly touch on the history. Among the most trustworthy and comprehensive writings on the subject are those of LUCIEN CARR, 'The Mounds of the Mississippi Valley' (Smithsonian Inst. 1893); 'The Social and Political Position of Women among the Huron-Iroquois Tribes' (Salem, 1884); 'The Food of Certain American Indians' (Worcester, Mass. 1895); and 'Dress and Ornaments of Certain American Indians' (same, 1897). One of the most elaborate works on the history proper of any section of the American Indians is C. COLDEN's 'History of the Five Indian Nations of Canada' (N.Y. 2 v. 1902). To the earlier literature of the subject an exact guide is given by Justin Winsor in 'The New England Indians: A Bibliographical Survey: 1630-1700,' rep. from the Proceedings of the Massachusetts Histor. Soc. (1895). The old work of H. S. SCHOOLCRAFT, 'Information respecting the history . . . of the Indian tribes of the U.S.' (1853-57), remains an important collection (6 pts.).

Much varied information is given also in the works of G. CAT-

LIN (Course I, § 8e). Additional vivid details in J. W. SCHULTZ'S 'My Life as an Indian' (Mur. 1907); C. H. GRINNELL'S 'North American Indians of To-day' (Pearson, 1900); F. W. HODGE'S 'Handbook of American Indians, North of Mexico' (Amer. Bur. of Ethno. 1907), and other works named in Course I. But for a connected view of the later fortunes of the Redskins the reader should turn to 'A Century of Dishonour: A Sketch of the United States Government's dealings with some of the North American Tribes,' by H. H., with pref. by Bishop WHITTLE and introd. by Pres. J. H. SEELYE (C. & W. 1881)—a sufficiently painful record.

THE COLOURED POPULATION

The history and the conditions of the Afro-American or Coloured population are to be studied in books mentioned above (§§ 5, 12). A competent survey of the problem as it stands in the present generation is presented in WILLIAM ARCHER'S 'Through Afro-America' (C. & H. 1910). See also BOOKER T. WASHINGTON'S 'My Larger Education' (H. & S. 1911) and (with W. Du Bois) 'The American Negro' (F.U. 1909); and 'The Souls of Black Folk,' by W. E. B. Du Bois (Con. 1905). The literature of the negro population is surveyed in 'Representative American Negro Literature,' ed. by V. F. CALVERTON (N.Y.), and is further discussed in his 'Liberation of American Literature' (Scrib. 1932).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXXII.—THE CENTRAL AND SOUTH AMERICAN REPUBLICS

§ 1. THE republics of Central and South America, growing as they all do out of the Spanish and Portuguese conquests of the 16th c., may properly be regarded as a kindred group. A good general view of the subject is to be had from the work of Prof. **Bernard Moses**, 'The Establishment of Spanish Rule in America: An Introduction to the History and Politics of Spanish America' (Put. 1898); and the modern developments are set forth in 'A History of South America,' by **CHARLES E. AKERS** (Mur. 3rd ed. 1931: exp. to 1930 by **L. E. ELLIOTT**); 'Latin America: Its Rise and Progress,' by **F. GARCIA CALDERON** (E. tr. 1913: pref. by **Poincaré**); **W. S. ROBERTSON**'s 'History of the Latin-American Nations' (N.Y. 1922); and 'The Rise and Progress of the South American Republics,' by **GEORGE W. CRICFIELD** (F.U. 1908), which deals also with *Mexico, Central America, Cuba, and San Domingo*. The 'South America' of Prof. **C. F. JONES** (A. & U. 1930) is richly illustrated.

A pre-War survey of the existing States was furnished by **T. C. DAWSON**, 'The South American Republics' (Put. 2 v. 1903); which is followed by Dr. **E. W. SHANAHAN**'s 'South America: an Economic and Regional Geography, with an Historical Chapter' (Met. 2nd ed. rev.). 'South America and the War,' by **F. A. KIRKPATRICK** (C.U.P.), brings up the narrative to the last decade.

§ 2. *Mexico*.—For the history of the pre-Spanish peoples see **H. H. BANCROFT**'s 'Native Races' (Course V, § 3) and **WINSOR**'s 'History of America' (Course XLVII, § 2); and for that of the Spanish Conquest, Course XXIII, § 5; also the excerpts trans. from the Spanish 'Discovery and Conquest of Mexico' by **BERNAL DIAZ DEL CASTILLO**: 1517-21, with introd. and notes, by **A. P. MAUDSLEY** (K.P.). There is a C.U.P. manual on 'The Civilization of Ancient Mexico,' by **L. Spence**. The 'Mexico' of **C. R. ENOCK** (Benn) is a good modern survey; and 'Mexico and Its Heritage' by **ERNEST GRUENING** (S.P. 1929) reviews all the

aspects. H. H. BANCROFT'S 'Popular History of the Mexican People' (K.P. 1888) proceeds upon adequate knowledge.

Among the numerous works on modern Mexico may be noted H. M. FLINT'S 'Mexico under Maximilian' (Philad. 1867); E. G. DE LA BÉDOLLIÈRE'S *Histoire de la Guerre de Mexique* (Paris, 1866); U. R. BURKE'S 'Life of Benito Juarez' (Rem. 1894); C. F. LUMMIS'S 'The Awakening of a Nation' (N.Y. 1898); and G. ROUTIER'S *La Mexique de nos jours* (Paris, 1895). There is an English trans. of the elaborate work of J. SIERRA, 'Mexico: Its Social Evolution' (3 v. fol. 1900-4); also a French work on *La Mexique économique*, by C. H. STÉPHAN (Paris, 1904); and a vivid account of 'The Real Mexico' by H. H. FYFE (Har. 1914).

On the politics of that period consult 'Dictators of Mexico,' by JOHN DE KAY (E. Wilson, 1914), and for the next decade, 'Is Mexico Worth Saving?' by G. A. CHAMBERLAIN (Indianop. 1920), which proposes forcible intervention; and 'President Obregón: A World Reformer,' by Dr. E. J. DILLON (Hut. 1923). The latter work challenges U.S. policy in general, charging the non-fulfilment of pledges to Cuba and the Philippines. On the latter, see 'The Philippines, Past and Present,' by D. C. WORCESTER (new ed. with Biog. Sketch and 4 add. chs. by Prof. R. HAYDEN: Mac.).

§ 3. *Guatemala* is dealt with in the work of W. T. BRIGHAM, 'Guatemala: The Land of the Queztlal' (F.U. 1887); also in E. G. SQUIER'S 'The States of Central America' (N.Y. 1858); as well as in works of travel by Dr. G. BERNOULLI, JULIUS FRÖBEL, W. MARR, L. MORELET, O. STOLL, and others. Recent history is summarised in art. in *Encyc. Brit.*; as in the cases of §§ 4, 5, 6, 9, 17.

§ 4. *Salvador* and *Honduras* are discoursed of in several of the books named in § 3, also in C. CHARLES'S 'Honduras' (Chic. 1890); T. R. LOMBARD'S 'The New Honduras' (Chic. 1887); and E. G. Squier's 'Honduras: Descriptive, Historical, and Statistical' (1870). There is a Spanish work, *Nociones de historia del Salvador*, by RAFAEL REYES (San Salvador, 1886).

§ 5. For *Nicaragua* see Squier's 'Nicaragua' (N.Y. 2 v. 1852); G. NIEDERLEIN'S 'The State of Nicaragua' (Philad. 1898); A. R. COLQUHOUN'S 'The Mastery of the Pacific' (Hei. 1902); and the more recent 'American Policy in Nicaragua' of H. L. STIMSON (Scrib. 1928).

§ 6. On *Costa Rica* there is a considerable literature, including two histories in Spanish: F. BARRANTE'S *Elementos de historia de Costa Rica* (San José, 1892) and L. FERNANDEZ'S *Historia de Costa Rica, 1502-1821* (Mad. 1889), besides the official compilation by J. B. CALVO, *República de Costa Rica* (San José), of

which there is an English trans. (Chic.). See also H. W. BATES's 'Central and South America' (Stanford, rev. ed. 1882) and P. BIOLLEY's 'Costa Rica and her Future' (Washington, 1889).

§ 7. *Colombia* is dealt with comprehensively in Dr. P. J. EDER's 'Colombia' (Benn), and more concisely in the work of Bates, above mentioned; and there is a Spanish history, *Compendia de historia de Colombia*, by J. J. BORDA (Bogotá, 1890), as well as a general handbook in French, *La République de Colombie: Géographie, histoire, organisation*, etc. by R. MUÑEZ and W. JAHAY (Brussels, 1893).

§ 8. On *Venezuela* see Bates; 'Venezuela,' by L. V. DALTON (Benn, S. Amer. ser.); J. M. SPENCE, 'The Land of Bolivar' (Low, 1878, 2 v.); and W. E. CURTIS's 'Venezuela' (Osgood, 1896).

§ 9. *Ecuador* has a *Historia Ecclesiástica* in Spanish (Quito, 1881); and there is a *Resumen de la historia del Ecuador* by CEVALLOS (Guayaquil, 1888), besides the *Historia del reino de Quito* of VELASCO, of which there is a French trans. by Ternaux-Campans (2 v. Paris, 1840). See also Bates.

§ 10. *Brazil*. 'The Conquest of Brazil,' by ROY NASH (Cape, 1927) is a fresh historical survey; and the 'Brazil' of PIERRE DENIS (E. tr. S. Am. ser. Benn), and 'Brazil To-day and Tomorrow' of L. E. ELLIOTT (Mac.) are up-to-date accounts of that republic; as is 'Brazil after a Century of Independence' of H. G. JAMES (Mac.). The history down to the republican Revolution is briefly outlined in H. M. STEPHENS's 'Portugal' (S.N.S.); but fully and adequately related in the work of C. E. AKERS (§ 1). The developments are discussed in O. D'ARAUJO's *L'Idée républicaine au Brésil* (Paris, 1893) and A. FIALHO's *Historia de fundação da República* (Rio de Janeiro, 1891). There is a good *Esquisse de l'histoire du Brésil* in the compilation *Brésil en 1889*, edited by E. Levasseur for the Paris Exposition of that year. 'The Land of the Amazons,' by Baron DE SANTA-ANNA NERY (E. tr. from Fr. by G. HUMPHREY: Sands, 1901) is an informatory account of modern pre-War Brazil, with a sociological retrospect of the evolution under the old régime. A sociological sketch of Brazilian evolution is attempted in the editor's 'Evolution of States.'

§ 11. For the older history of *Peru* see PRESCOTT (Course XXIII, § 5), and for the archæology E. G. Squier's 'Peru' (Mac. 1877), or the German work *Kunst und Kultur von Peru* of MAX SCHMIDT (Berlin, 1931), which is a copious and learned account of the archæological remains. For the modern period, the 'Peru' of C. R. ENOCK (Benn) is enlightening. Among last century works note may be taken of 'Lima,' by M. A. FUENTES

(1866), and C. R. MARKHAM's 'History of Peru' (Chic. 1892) and 'The War between Peru and Chili' (Low, 1882). There is a Spanish *Historia del Peru Independiente*, by M. F. PAZ SOLDAN (3 t. 1868-74; rev. ed. Buenos Aires, 1888). LARRAZABEL's 'Life of Bolivar' (N.Y. 1866) contains historical matter relative to the establishment of the other South American Republics.

§ 12. Of *Chile*, or *Chili*, there is a very readable informal history by AUGUSTIN EDWARDS (author of 'Chile: My Native Land': same pub.) under the title 'Peoples of Old' (Benn, 1929), which embodies wide knowledge of the native races, with futuristic-archaistic illustrns. by Don Luis Vergas Rosas. The 'Chile To-day and To-morrow' of L. E. ELLIOTT (Mac. illustr.) and the 'Chile' of G. F. SCOTT-ELLIOT (Benn) present the history and civilisation in general. There are also a 'History of Chile' in English by A. M. HANCOCK (Chic. 1893), and three in Spanish—the *Historia general de Reyno de Chile* (3 t. Valp. 1877-78); the *Historia general de Chile* of CLAUDIO GAY (Paris, 8 t. 1847-54); and the *Historia general de Chile* of D. BARROS ARANA (Santiago, 1884, etc.). See also H. W. BATES's 'South America' (above, § 5) and THEODORE CHILD's 'The Spanish-American Republics' (Osgood, 1892).

§ 13. *Bolivia* is competently presented in the monograph of PAUL WALLÉ (E. tr. by B. MIAL: Benn); but on the State there is little historical matter. Its name preserves that of Bolivar, the 'Liberator,' and its beginnings are to be gathered from his biography. That by LARRAZABEL has been followed by 'Simon Bolivar: "El Libertador": a Life of the Chief Leader in the Revolt against Spain in Venezuela, New Granada, and Peru,' by F. LORAIN PETRE' (Lane, 1910), which is judicially critical.

§ 14. *Paraguay* is the subject of several histories besides the expert monograph 'Paraguay' by W. H. KOEBEL (Benn):—C. A. WASHBURN, 'The History of Paraguay' (Boston, 1871); G. THOMPSON, 'The Paraguayan War' (1869); L. A. DEMERSAY, *Histoire physique, économique et politique du Paraguay* (2 t. Paris, 1865); A. J. KENNEDY, 'La Plata, Brazil, and Paraguay during the War' (1869). See also E. DE BOURGADE LA DARDYÉ's 'Paraguay, the Land and the People' (E. tr. P. & Son, 1892, ed. by E. G. Ravenstein). GOTHEIN's *Der christlichsoziale Staat in Paraguay* (in G. SCHMOLLER's *Staats- und Sozialwissenschaftliche Forschungen* series, Leipzig, 1883) is a useful inquiry.

§ 15. On *Uruguay* the historical authority is FRANCISCO BAUZA's *Historia de la dominacion española en el Uruguay* (Montevideo, 1880). In English see 'Uruguay: Its Geography, History, Industries,' etc. (Liverpool, 1897); and the later monograph by W. H. KOEBEL (Benn).

§ 16. *Argentina*. For the history of the *Argentine Republic* consult W. A. HIRST's 'Argentina,' with introd. by MARTIN HUME (Benn); 'The Argentine Republic' of PIERRE DENIS (E. tr. by J. McCabe: F.U. 1912); and the competent and compendious '**History of the Argentine Republic**' by F. A. Kirkpatrick, with introd. by Prof. HAROLD TEMPERLEY (C.U.P. 1931). For earlier accounts, see the works of Bates and Child, above mentioned; and 'The Emancipation of South America,' an abridged trans. by W. Pilling (P. & Son, 1892) from B. MITRE's *Historia de San Martín* (4 t. Paris, 1890). There is also an *Historia Argentina* by L. L. DOMINGUEZ (4th ed. Buenos Aires, 1870). The 'Handbook of the River Plate,' by M. G. and E. T. MULHALL (1893), covers Argentina, Paraguay, and Uruguay.

§ 17. The island republic of *Santo Domingo* (which includes the eastern part of Hayti), in the West Indies, belongs practically to the Central and South American group. For its history see S. HAZARD's 'Santo Domingo, Past and Present' (Low, 1873). There is a school history in Spanish by J. G. GARCIA, *Compendio de la historia de Santo Domingo* (1879); and an unfinished *Historia* by A. MONTE Y TEJADA (vol. i, Habana, 1853). See also the works on Hayti mentioned in Course XLIX, § 5.

§ 18. The social and psychic life of the native races is to be gathered from WAITZ's vols. *Die Amerikaner*, in his *Anthropologie der Naturvölker* (Th. iii, 1865), and 'The Civilisation of the South American Indians' by Prof. RAFAEL KARSTEN, as well as that of DOMVILLE-FIFE (Course I, p. 13) and those of Santa-Anna Nery and A. Edwards (§§ 10, 12) in this Course. A good general view is to be gathered from the sections on 'The Tribes of Central America' and 'The Tribes of South America' in ch. ii of Pt. II of 'The Primitive Races of Mankind' by Prof. MAX SCHMIDT of Berlin (E. tr. Har. 1926).

The recent 'Latin America in World Politics' of J. F. RIPPY (Knopf, 1929), and 'The New Map of South America' by H. A. GIBBONS (Cape, 1929) are helpful to the whole study.

§ 19. Of Porto (or Puerto) Rico, annexed by the U.S. from Spain, there is a history in Spanish by S. BRAU (1894), and one in English by R. A. VAN MIDDELDYK (N.Y. 1903).

COURSE XLIX

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXXIII.—THE AFRICAN RACES

ONLY for recent periods is the history of the indigenous African races recoverable, apart from Egypt and Abyssinia. Whites who have become acquainted with the orally preserved memories of certain tribes or groups have put them on record; and certain historical inferences have been drawn as to the past relations of peoples. There are also archæological and other traces of ancient contacts between the indigenes and foreign races.

§ 1. As to the variety of races in Africa compare Prof. MAX SCHMIDT's section on 'The Tribes of Africa' in ch. ii of Pt. II of 'The Primitive Races of Mankind' (E. tr. Har. 1926), which supplies a map of 'Peoples of Africa'; 'The Bantu Past and Present' by S. M. MOLEMA (Edinb. 1920); G. W. STOW's 'The Native Races of South Africa,' ed. by Dr. G. M. THEAL (Son. 1905); Dr. THEAL's own 'Ethnography and Condition of S. A. before 1505' (A. & U.); TOPINARD's 'Anthropology' (E. tr. C. & H. 1890); THEAL, 'The Beginnings of S.A. History' (F.U. 1902); Sir H. H. JOHNSTON's 'The Colonisation of Africa' (C.U.P. 1899); and 'The River Congo' (Low, 4th ed. 1895); and the Rev. S. JOHNSON's 'History of the Yorubas' (K.P.).

§ 2. The recent history of the native peoples of South Africa may be broadly gathered from Theal's 'History of South Africa South of the Zambesi . . . to 1884' (A. & U. 11 v.); also from J. F. INGRAM's 'Natalia: History of Natal and Zululand' (Marshall, 1897); JOHN BIRD's 'The Annals of Natal' (S.A. 1888); H. BROOK's 'Natal' (1887); F. E. COLENSO's 'The Ruin of Zululand' (Redway 2 v. 1884-85); F. R. STATHAM's 'Blacks, Boers, and British' (Mac. 1884); and J. TYLER's 'Forty Years in Zululand' (Boston, 1891). The German work of the missionary KROPP, *Das Volk der Xosa-Kaffern im östlichen Süd Afrika* (Berlin, 1889), gives a good deal of historical information.

§ 3. On African tribes or races in general, a large number of more or less studious books are specified in Course I, § 8a, which see. In addition to these may be named the following more or less

authoritative accounts:—Sir R. F. BURTON, 'Mission to Gelele, King of Dahomey' (2 v. 1864; rep. 1893-4); and 'Zanzibar' (2 v. 1872); Dr. GEORGE SCHWEINFURTH'S 'The Heart of Africa' (1871, cheap rep. Low, 2 v.); H. M. STANLEY, 'Through the Dark Continent,' 'In Darkest Africa,' and 'The Congo and its Free State' (all Low); R. H. S. BACON, 'Benin: The City of Blood' (Arnold, 1897); Capt. C. H. ARMITAGE and Col. A. F. MONTANARO, 'The Ashanti Campaign of 1900' (Sands, 1901); D. T. LAING, 'The Matabele Rebellion' (Dean, 1897); Hon. A. WILMOT, 'Monomotapa: Its Monuments and History' (F.U. 1896).

Recent history is partly to be gathered also from:—E. W. BLYDEN, 'Christianity, Islam, and the Negro Race' (1889); C. C. REINDORF, 'History of the Gold Coast and Ashante' (1895); R. S. BADEN-POWELL, 'The Matabele Campaign' (Met. 1897) and 'The Downfall of Prempeh' (Met. 1896); A. B. ELLIS, 'History of the Gold Coast' (1893); 'Khama, King of the Bainangwato,' by JULIAN MOCKFORD (Cape, 1931); Miss KINGSLEY, 'The Story of West Africa' (S.N.S. 1899); S. L. HINDE, 'The Fall of the Congo Arabs' (Met. 1897); H. WARD, 'Five Years with the Congo Cannibals' (C. & W. 1890); A. B. C. SIBTHORPE, 'History of Sierra Leone' (2nd ed. 1881); Lieut.-Col. A. F. MOCKLER-FERRYMAN, 'British Nigeria' (Cas. 1902); the later 'History of Nigeria' by A. C. BURNS (A. & U.); Sir H. H. Johnston, 'The Uganda Protectorate' (Hut. 2nd ed. 1905); GILLMORE PARKER'S 'Through Gasa Land' (1890); Dr. HEINRICH BRODE'S 'Tippo Tib: The Story of a Central African Despot, narrated from his own accounts' (Arnold, 1907); and COLIN HARDING'S 'In Remotest Barotseland' (H. & B. 1905). Of modern developments, that in the French conquest of the Chad region is sketched by D. CAMPBELL, 'Wanderings in Central Africa' (S.S. & Co. 1929). Previous adjustments were discussed in Sir J. SCOTT KELTIE'S 'The Partition of Africa' (Stanford, 2nd ed. 1895). On the Belgian Congo in general see T. A. BARNS, 'An African Eldorado' (Met.).

§ 4. Of the small free State of *Liberia* there is a recent survey, 'Liberia Old and New,' by J. L. SIBLEY and D. WESTERMANN (J. Clarke, 1928), besides an old historical and statistical account by G. S. STOCKWELL, 'The Republic of Liberia' (N.Y. 1868); and one in French, by Col. H. WAUWERMANS, *Liberia: Histoire de la fondation d'un état nègre libre* (Bruxelles, 1885). See also F. A. DURHAM'S 'The Lone Star of Liberia' (Stock, 1893); CASELY HAYFORD'S 'Gold Coast Native Institutions' (1903). For the history up to the end of the World War see R. C. F. MAUGHAM, 'The Republic of Liberia' (A. & U. 1920), and his 'Africa as I have Known It' (Mur.).

§ 5. The Republic of *Hayti*, in the West Indies (see Course XLVIII, § 17) is substantially a negro state, nine-tenths of the population being blacks, and the rest nearly all mulattos. Its history has been copiously written in French: N. MADION, *Histoire de Haïti* (3 t. 1847); K. NAU, *Histoire des Caciques de Haïti* (Port-au-Prince, 1855); B. ARDOUIN, *Études sur l'histoire de Haïti* (Paris, 10 t. 1853-61); and J. JUSTIN, *Études sur les institutions Haïtiennes* (Paris, 1894). There is also an English work, 'Hayti, or the Black Republic,' by Sir SPENSER ST. JOHN (S. E. 2nd ed. 1889); and two in German, J. HANDELMANN'S *Geschichte von Haïti* (1856) and W. JORDAN'S *Geschichte der Insel Haïti* (2 Bde. 1849). See also V. SCHOELCHER'S *Vie de Toussaint L'Ouverture* (Paris, 1889), and L. J. MARCELIN'S *Haïti : ses guerres civiles* (3 pties. Paris, 1892-3).

§ 6. On *Madagascar* there is early matter in the old (1674) 'Voyages of the Sieur D. B. to the Islands Dauphine or Madagascar and Bourbon or Mascarenne' (E. tr. Nutt) and the *Collection des ouvrages anciens concernant Madagascar*, by A. GRANDIDIER (Paris, 3 t. 1903-5). A good general view is given in the Rev. JAMES SIBREE'S 'The Great African Island' (F.U. 1896), which describes Madagascar before the French conquest. The detailed works on Madagascar are also French, notably: ALFRED GRANDIDIER, *Histoire physique, naturelle et politique de Madagascar* (1901); A. YOU, *Madagascar : Histoire—organisation—colonisation* (1905); J. POIRIER, *Conquête de Madagascar, 1895-96* (1902); L. BRUNET, *L'Œuvre de France à Madagascar* (1903); and R. BLANCHARD, *Madagascar au début du xxe siècle* (1902).

§ 7. The most generally civilised portion of the African races is that which now inhabits the southern parts of the United States, as to which see Course XLVII, end. The history of their first introduction and enslavement is to be gathered from CLARKSON'S 'History of the Abolition of the African Slave Trade' (exp. ed. 1839), and the works mentioned in Course XLVII, § 5. On the problem of the present position and future prospects see the works named at the end of Course XLVII; also P. A. BRUCE'S 'The Plantation Negro as Freeman' (Put. 1899); and the article on 'Lynching,' by JOSEPH B. BISHOP, in the *Internat. Quarterly* for September-December, 1903, which contains also an article by the editor on 'Black and White in Africa.' The coloured man's point of view was competently put by Dr. E. W. BLYDEN in the small volume of addresses entitled 'West Africa before Europe' (1905); and in his other work above named (§ 3).

§ 8. *Abyssinia*'s history is continuously traceable for a much longer period than that of the more southerly dark-skinned races, by reason of its early Christianisation. On the ecclesiastical side

it may be followed through the 'Church History of Ethiopia,' by MICHAEL GEDDES (1696); Sir E. A. WALLIS BUDGE's 'History of Ethiopia, Nubia, and Abyssinia' (Met. 2 v.); and LA CROZE's *Histoire du Christianisme d'Ethiopie* (1739). The section of the latter work which narrates the history of the disastrous Jesuit mission to Abyssinia in the 17th c. is trans. in English and pub. in the 'Travels of the Jesuits,' by LOCKMAN (1743). In EDUARD GLASER's *Die Abessinier in Arabien und Afrika* (1895) will be found special researches as to the pre-Christian history of Abyssinia. Modern information is to be obtained chiefly through works of travel—as those of JAMES BRUCE (1768–73, 5 v.); Sir W. CORNWALLIS HARRIS, 'The Highlands of Ethiopia' (1844, 3 v.); THÉOPHILE LEFEBVRE, *Voyage en Abyssinie, 1839–43* (6 v. 1845–54); P. DE LAURIBAR, *Douze ans en Abyssinie* (1898); and W. P. E. S. RÜPPEL, *Reise in Abyssinie* (2 Bde. 1832–40). A useful recent survey is supplied by C. F. REY, 'In the Country of the Blue Nile,' with pref. by Lord E. Gleichen (Duck. 1927).

The history of the British campaign of 1866–67 is told by H. M. STANLEY, 'Magdala' (rep. Low, 1896); and later views are given in H. VIVIAN's 'Abyssinia' (1901); AUGUSTUS B. WYLDE's comprehensive work, 'Modern Abyssinia' (Met. 1901); and G. FITZ-HARDINGE BERKELEY, 'The Campaign of Adowa and the Rise of Menelik' (Con. 1902). There is a *Bibliografia Etiopica* by the Italian scholar G. FUMAGALLI (Milan, 1893), and a collection of *Rerum Ethiopiarum Scriptores Occidentales inediti a saec. XVI ad XIX*, ed. BECCARI (Roma, 3 t. 1903–6).

§ 9. *Zanzibar* is the subject of a comprehensive work, 'Zanzibar in Contemporary Times: A Short History of the Southern East in the Nineteenth Century,' by R. N. LYNE (H. & B. 1905), and of the later 'Zanzibar' and 'School History of Zanzibar' by W. H. INGRAMS (Mac.).

§ 10. The volume entitled 'Madeira, Canary Islands, and Azores,' by A. S. BROWN (13th ed. rev. S.M. 1926), gives accounts of the places named. Madeira is more fully dealt with in 'The Land of the Wine,' by A. J. D. BIDDLE (Philad. 2 v. 1901); and there is a Spanish work on the *Carácter de la conquista y colonización de las Islas Canarias*, by R. TORRES CAMPOS (Madrid, 1901); also a *Historia de las Islas Canarias*, by A. MILLARES CUBAS (Las Palmas, 10 t. 1893–95).

§ 11. Of the traces of ancient gold-seeking civilisation in the South there is an account by J. T. BENT, 'The Ruined Cities of Mashonaland' (Lmns. rep. 1895); and a fuller one in the later work of R. N. HALL, 'Great Zimbabwe' (Met. 1905).

NATIONAL, REGIONAL, AND RACIAL HISTORIES

XXXIV.—MELANESIA AND POLYNESIA

ONLY since the modern exploration of "the South Sea Islands" can they be said to have a recorded history, apart from the results reached by anthropologists in the study of their traditions and their movements. A general view, competently framed, was set forth by ABRAHAM FERNANDEZ, in his 'Account of the Polynesian Race' (1878-85, 3 v.).

Further studies of a historic nature are contained in much of the literature indicated in Course I, § 8 c, d: in particular in 'The Social and Political Systems of Central Polynesia' by R. W. WILLIAMSON (C.U.P. 3 v.); in Dr. G. BROWN'S 'Melanesians and Polynesians'; J. Macmillan Brown's 'Maori and Polynesian: their Origin, History, and Culture'; W. H. R. RIVERS'S 'The History of Melanesian Society' and 'The Depopulation of Melanesia'; and Dr. R. H. CODRINGTON'S 'The Melanesians'; also in 'Population Problems of the Pacific' by S. H. ROBERTS (K.P.).

Among French researches are to be noted *Les Polynésiens, leur origine* (4 t. 1880-84) by Dr. P. A. LESSOU, and HENRI MERGER, *Le monde Polynésien* (1902). German research underlies the treatment of the problem in RATZEL'S 'History of Mankind' (tr. of the *Völker Kunde*: Mac. 3 v.). The Micronesians are included in most of the larger studies. Among recent monographs should be noted 'The Mystery of Easter Island' by Mrs. SCORESBY ROUTLEDGE (Sefton, Praed, 1920).

A recent work of much interest, 'Samoa under the Sailing Gods' by N. A. ROWE, with intr. by LLOYD OSBOURNE (Put. 1930), gives a discursive but intimate account of modern Samoan history, bringing a grave indictment against the administration of Samoa by New Zealand since the War. The system is described by Mr. Osbourne as "appalling" in contrast with the pre-War German rule under Dr. Solf, which is represented as ideal. The narrative is full and documented.

THE WORLD WAR AND POST-WAR PROBLEMS

§ 1. 'A Short History of the Great War,' with 19 maps, by Prof. A. F. POLLARD (Met. 3rd ed.) is a competent record by a trained historian; C. R. L. FLETCHER's 'The Great War: 1914-1918' (Mur.) has similar merit; and Douglas Jerrold's 'The War on Land: 1914-1918' (Benn, 6d. ser.) is a handy conspectus. Another form of record is supplied in the 'War Diary: 1914-1918' of the MASTER OF BELHAVEN (Mur.).

Most of the belligerents published official collections of documents on the causation of the War, Britain being represented by 'British Documents of the Origins of the War' (H.M. Stat. Office) and 'Collected Diplomatic Documents relating to the Outbreak of the European War' (1915: Wyman, F. U. and others); also by H. HALL's 'British Archives and the Sources for the World War' issued (1925) by the Carnegie Endowment for International Peace, and 'German Diplomatic Documents: 1871-1914' (Met.). 'The Russian Army in the World War,' by Gen. N. N. GOLOVINE (Y.U.P. and Milford, 1932) supplies a non-official record on that side.

§ 2. After the Peace the new Austrian Republic issued *Diplomatische Aktenstücke zur Vorgeschichte des Krieges 1914* (Wien, 1919), by way of expansion of the original Austro-Hungarian Redbook; and in 1923 the Carnegie Endowment published, in trans., 'Official German Documents relating to the World War' (2 v.); and in 1924 'Outbreak of the World War: German Documents collected by K. KAUTSKY,' ed. by M. Montgetas and W. Shucking.

§ 3. From the military point of view 'The Real War,' by Capt. Liddell Hart (Faber, 1930) has been praised by some experts as the best history of the War in small compass. 'An Outline History of the War,' by G. V. CAREY and H. S. SCOTT (C.U.P.), is also promised longevity. Such works as 'From Bismarck to the World War,' by ERICH BRANDENBURG (E. tr. 1927, O.U.P.), and 'The World Crisis of 1914-18: An Interpretation,' by ELIE HALÉVY (Cl. Pr. 1930), present considered judgments on the whole historic event; and 'The Origins of the World War'

by the American Prof. S. B. FAY (Mac. 2 v.) has been accepted as an impartial and judicious investigation. Prof. J. W. GARNER's 'International Law and the World War' (Lmns. 2 v.) is another authoritative survey.

§ 4. Official histories of the War have also been produced by the chief belligerents. The English 'History of the Great War based on Official Documents' (Mac.) has reached its 5th vol. (1931), apparently outgoing in speed of production the official histories of other countries. (Vol. i, 'France and Belgium, 1914'; ii, also 1914; iii and iv, 1915; v, 1916: all compiled by Sir J. E. EDMONDS.) Separately, we have 'The Official History of the Gallipoli Campaign'—'Military Operations: Gallipoli,' compiled by Gen. C. F. ASPINALL OGLANDER (Hei. 2 v. 1929-32); also 'Military Operations: Egypt and Palestine,' comp. by Capt. CECIL FALLS and Major A. F. BECKE (2 v. H.M. Stat. Off.); and 'Cameroons and Mesopotamia,' comp. by Gen. MOBERLY; and 'Togoland and the Cameroons' (same).

The Naval History of the War, 'Based on Official Documents,' and like the other 'By Direction of the . . . Committee of Imperial Defence,' has reached its 4th vol. (Lmns.):—i, 'To the Battle of the Falklands, Dec. 1914'; ii, 'To the entry of Italy . . . May 1915'; iii, 'Up to and including the Battle of Jutland'—all by Sir J. S. CORBETT; iv, 'June 1916 to April 1917,' by Sir H. NEWBOLT. Another series announced as 'Official History of the Great War' (Mur.), thus far includes 3 vols. on 'Seaborne Trade,' by C. E. FAYLE; and 3 by A. Hurd on 'The Merchant Navy.' See also 'Ostend and Zeebrügge,' being the despatches of Admiral Sir ROGER KEYES, ed. by C. S. JERRY (O.U.P. 1919).

There is further an official British History of 'The War in the Air' (Cl. Pr.) of which 3 vols. have been issued: i, by Sir WALTER RALEIGH (1922); ii and iii, by H. A. JONES (1928). Finally, there is 'The Times Illustrated History of the War' in 22 vols.

§ 5. Among the many narrative and critical works on sections or aspects of the War may be noted:—General VON HOFFMANN's 'The War of Lost Opportunities' and K. F. NOWAK's 'The Collapse of Central Europe,' with introd. by Lord Haldane (E. tr. Rout.); Capt. the Hon. B. BINGHAM, 'Falklands, Jutland, and the Bight,' with pref. by Earl Beatty (Mur.); 'Letters from a Flying Officer,' by R. S. WORTLEY (1928), and 'The Story of a North Sea Air Station,' by C. F. S. Gamble (1928: both O.U.P.); 'In the Side Shows,' by Capt. WEDGWOOD BENN, D.S.O. (H. & S. 1919); Rear-Admiral J. E. T. HARPER, 'The Truth about Jutland' (Mur.); 'Intrigues of the War,' by Gen. Sir F. Maurice, pref. by Marquis of Crewe (pam. 1922); 'The Commonwealth at War,' by Prof. A. F. POLLARD (Lmns. 1917); OLIVE GILBREATH,

'Russia in Travail' (Mur.); General B. GOURKO, 'Russia, 1914-17: Memories and Impressions of War and Revolution' (Mur.); Gen. Sir W. PULTENEY and B. BRICE, 'The Immortal Salient,' with pref. by the Earl of Ypres (same); 'My Four Years in Germany,' by James W. GERARD (N.Y. 1917); 'Dr. Muehlton's Diary' (E. tr. Cas. 1918); 'The Tragedy of Lord Kitchener,' by VISCOUNT ESHER (Mur.).

§ 6. Among variously authoritative personal pronouncements are:—'*J'accuse! von einem Deutschen*' (Lausanne, 1915: E. tr. 'I Accuse, by a German Writer': H. & S. 1915); 'The Genesis of the War,' by the EARL OF OXFORD AND ASQUITH (Cas. 1923); 'Twenty-Five Years: 1892-1916,' by VISCOUNT GREY (H. & S. 2 v. 1925); 'The World Crisis: 1911-14,' etc., by the Rt. Hon. WINSTON CHURCHILL (But. 6 v. 1923-31); the memoirs of MM. POINCARÉ and CLEMENCEAU (Course XXIV, § 28); 'My Memoirs: 1878-1918,' by Ex-Kaiser WILLIAM II (Cas. 1922); M. TARDIEU'S 'The Truth about the Treaty,' with Foreword by E. M. House and introd. by Clemenceau (E. tr. H. & S. 1921); and 'The Truth about Reparations and War Debts,' by Mr. LLOYD GEORGE (Hei. 1932). The last-named work explains that the responsibility for the course taken as to Reparations lay not with the statesmen in charge but with everybody else, including in particular the financiers, European and American, who briefed them.

§ 7. The Treaty of Peace (which fixed no sum for Reparations) was republished in 1920 (O.U.P. and H. & S.): 'The German Treaty: Text, with introd. by Lord R. CECIL, pref. by H. W. V. TEMPERLEY, and a Brief Commentary,' under the auspices of the Institute of International Affairs. On the Peace Conference at Versailles there is a large literature, notably 'A History of the Peace Conference of Paris,' ed. by H. W. V. TEMPERLEY (O.U.P. 6 v. 4to, 3296 pp.). On a much smaller scale we have 'What Really Happened at Paris: The Story of the Peace Conference, 1918-19, by American Delegates,' ed. by E. M. House and Prof. C. Seymour (H. & S. 1921). 'The World after the Peace Conference,' by ARNOLD J. TOYNBEE (O.U.P. 1925) is an instructive survey; and the same expert has produced a series of large and important annual volumes under the title 'Survey of International Affairs' (O.U.P.) from 1924 onwards; also a summary of 'British Empire Foreign Relations since the Peace Settlement' (same, 1928). A similar 'Survey of American Foreign Relations, 1928,' by CHARLES P. HOWLAND (same), renders an equivalent service.

§ 8. *Mandated States*. By these surveys the student may follow the fortunes of the States and territories entrusted under

"Mandate" to the supervision of Britain and other Allied Powers by the League of Nations. Dr. A. M. MARGOLIOUTH, of Johns Hopkins, supplies a full account and analysis of 'The International Mandates' (O.U.P. 1930). Thus Palestine and Lebanon were mandated (1922) to Great Britain; Syria to France; the bulk of Tanganyika to Britain, but part of it, Ruanda-Urundi, to Belgium; Togoland and the Cameroons to Britain and France in partition; S.W. Africa to the Union of S.A.; the Pacific Islands north of the equator to Japan; the former German territory and islands in and around New Guinea to Australia; Samoa to New Zealand; Nauru jointly to the Dominions and Britain—so far administered by Australia. Iraq was formally mandated to Britain; but by later treaty was made independent.

Of the territories in question, Palestine has received most attention; and the 'Unholy Memories of the Holy Land' by H. B. SAMUEL (Hogarth Press, 1930) (see also Course XIX, § 6), indicates some of the friction that has taken place. *England und Palästina: Ein Beitrag zur Britisches Empire-Politik*, by Dr. JOSEF KOHN (Berlin, 1931), is a comparatively impartial German survey, made with inner knowledge. It gives an intelligent view of the modifications undergone by Zionism. The position as to Samoa is noted in Course I, end. The Official Publications of the League of Nations include Texts of the various Mandates, Reports on Disturbance in Palestine, Slavery in Liberia, the Mandates System, etc. (A. & U.).

§ 9. *The League of Nations*. The greatest result of the World War, from a sociological point of view, was the establishment of the League. A very competent concise account of its creation and activities is supplied in 'The League of Nations' by H. Wilson Harris (Benn's 6d. ser.). Among other books on the subject may be noted 'The League of Nations To-day: Its Growth, Record,' etc., and 'The League, the Protocol, and the Empire,' both by ROTH WILLIAMS (A. & U.); 'The Geneva Experiment' by W. E. RAPPARD, and 'The League Committee and World Order' by H. R. G. GREAVES (both O.U.P.). The League itself has issued a multiform mass of literature of the most important kind, discussing (1) the Protection of Minorities; (2) Economics and Finance, including Agriculture, Industry, Trade Depression, Commerce, Cartels, Gold, Populations, Production of Foods and Raw Materials, Statistics, Tariffs and Taxation, and, separately, the financial position of various States.

Under the heading of Health it reports on prevention of diseases, treatments of special forms, prophylaxy in general, welfare of the blind, etc., with reports of special Medical Conferences on special problems. In regard to social politics, it

reports on marriage law, illegitimacy, juvenile courts, "licensed houses," obscene publications, opium and other drug traffics, survivals of slavery, "white slave traffic."

Seeing that in addition to these manifold activities the League deals constantly and practically with the primary task of handling the frequently arising disputes between States, Disarmament Conferences, the pacific settlement of international difficulties in general; the codification of international law, the amendment of the Covenant of the League where necessary, and the guidance and assistance of minor States in special distress, it will be realised that it already constitutes an establishment of international control to a degree never before approached. Its informative and directive literature is so extensive that even a Selected List of the Principal Documents, Year Books, and Periodicals (included in the catalogue of A. & U.) runs to hundreds.

§ 10. The world-wide yearning to make impossible such a vast calamity as that of the World War, and the well-grounded conviction that another such calamity (predicted by some for 1948) would mean the probable collapse of European civilisation, nerves the unceasing effort to establish and solidify the functions of the League of Nations. The vast holocaust of the War having revealed what a military critic has called "the damnable folly and wickedness" of "useless" bloodshed involved in the experiments of leaders faced by new military problems; and the degenerative effect of the vast destruction of the best young minds of the combatant nations being at least partly recognised, there has arisen in some minds the scheme of a "World State" in opposition to the ideal of the League.

Inasmuch as the danger to the world's peace emerges in terms of the "nationalism" of German and other sufferers by the territorial revisions of 1919, as against the nationalism of the peoples who thereby escaped from German and other dominion, it is argued that "nationalism" must be somehow eliminated. The ideal has been propounded by H. G. WELLS and other gifted publicists without political experience: see an early plea: 'The Need of the Nations: An International Parliament,' anon. (Watts, 1907). They argue for the creation of a "World State" with a single world-controlling legislature, framed on *a priori* principles and in disregard of all evolution. The fact that the League represents an evolving action does not appear to be recognised from this angle.

§ 11. *Post-War Economic Problems.* The far-reaching economic sequelæ are competently indicated in short space by Prof. A. L. BOWLEY in 'Some Economic Consequences of the Great War' (H.U.L. 1929). 'The World Economic Crisis, 1927-1931,' by

Dr. PAUL EINZIG (Paris), carries the diagnosis further. At first the German protestations of incapacity to pay were treated as the mere efforts of the chief culprit to escape penalties. 'Germany under the Dawes Plan,' by Prof. MAX SERING (King, 1929), is a pro-German work, in which Germany is regarded as a War-innocent victim, but it supplies information as to the working of Reparations. Mr. A. CROZIER LONG's 'The Mythology of Reparations' (Duck. 1929) is not pro-German, but critical, while defending the principle. The 'History of Reparations' by CARL BERGMANN, with Foreword by Sir J. STAMP (Benn, 1927), is valid up to its date.

That the cumulative world depression of the past few years was a result of the conjunction of the policies of War Reparation and exaction of Inter-Ally debts, with a system of tariffs which blocked all payments, seems only latterly to have been surmised either by the financiers most closely concerned or by the employers and workers who were being reduced to bankruptcy and destitution. The menacing growth of Unemployment, accordingly, was first treated as a problem by itself. 'The Riddle of Unemployment,' by Prof. DOUGLAS KNOOP of Sheffield (Mac. 1931), is a careful and illuminating inquiry, covering all the factors and noting suggested remedies; and Sir W. H. BEVERIDGE, who had previously written instructively on 'Unemployment: A Problem of Industry' (2nd ed. Lmns. 1910), has dealt with the recent situation in 'Causes and Cures of Unemployment' in a usefully compendious fashion (Lmns. 1931) mentioned in Course XV, § 12. A rev. ed. has been issued—June 1932. There is also a temperate study, 'The Unemployed: Old Policies and New,' by R. C. DAVISON (Lmns. 1929).

On the same problem, vital practical data are carefully set forth in 'Unemployment Insurance in Great Britain: The National System and Additional Benefit Plans,' by MARY BARNETT GILSON (A. & U. 1931). Lastly, there are American studies of 'The Problem of Unemployment' by PAUL DOUGLAS and AARON DIRECTOR (A. & U. 1931), and of 'The Post-War Employment Problem' by Prof. HENRY CLAY (Mac.), in which the special American crisis is thoughtfully examined. As to Russia, the "appalling state of unemployment, far surpassing that of any other country," is temperately but briefly handled in P. MALEOSKY-MALEVITCH's 'A New Party in Russia' (Rout. 1928; with intr. by L. Lawton), unemployment being in a measure connected with over-population.

§ 12. *The Economic Causation.* The welcome work of Sir GEORGE PAISH, 'The Way to Recovery' (Put. 1931), appears to have been the first systematic exposition of the view that the World Depression has been produced by the policy of Reparations

and the repayment of Inter-Ally Debts, claimed by nations which at the same time sought to exclude, by tariffs, the goods sent by the debtors in payment. (That the view, though refused a hearing in the press for years after the War, was previously current, had been partly indicated by the pronouncement of President Hoover for a year's moratorium.) 'The End of Reparations' by HJALMAR SCHACHT, formerly of the Reichsbank (ed. by G. Glasgow, Cape, 1931) has thus an obvious title to a hearing; and at the time of the present writing (Lausanne Conference, June 1932) the demand for the cancelment of all Reparations and Inter-Ally Debts, as the only way of restoring prosperity to the world, appears to be the prevalent belief in England among all men of economic training. That the economic fallacy of all large-scale War Reparations in the modern industrial era was fully demonstrated in the case of the Indemnity exacted by Germany from France after 1871, however, appears to have been generally forgotten by the victor Powers. See the facts set forth in 'The Franco-German War Indemnity and its Economic Results,' by H. H. O'Farrell (Harrison, 1913), and Sir NORMAN ANGELL'S 'The Great Illusion.' 'Information on the Reparation Settlement,' by J. W. WHEELER-BENNETT and H. LATIMER (A. & U. 1930), gives the financial facts in the present case. 'Recovery,' by Sir Alfred Salter (Bell, 1932), heralds a settlement.

It is to be remembered that the issue was raised during the War; that there was a European movement for 'Peace without Indemnities,' which was strongly opposed in France; and that till near the end German publicists were intimating that Germany would exact a compensation of £2,000,000,000. (See 'The Great Plan: How to Pay for the War,' by A. E. STILLWELL (H. & S. 1918).) The later German attitude is considered in 'Germany and Europe' by F. STIEVE; and Count KAROLYI'S 'Fighting the World: The Struggle for Peace' (both Rout.).

§ 13. *The Special Political Problems.* In 'The Ordeal of This Generation' (A. & U. 1929) GILBERT MURRAY searchingly surveys the imperfect machinery thus far set up for the prevention of war. The work of J. T. SHOTWELL, 'War as an Instrument of National Policy, and its Renunciation in the Pact of Paris,' with intr. by G. Murray (Con. 1929), invites study in the same connection. 'The New World: Problems in Political Geography' by Dr. I. BOWMAN (Har. 1929) is of importance for a comprehensive view; and 'Divided Europe' by SOMERSET DE CHAIR (Cape, 1931) offers "an analysis of International Problems." 'A Survey of International Affairs: 1930,' by A. J. TOYNBEE, and 'Documents on International Affairs: 1930,' ed. by J. W. WHEELER-BENNETT (O.U.P.: both 1932) bring the record thus far.

On the case of the Republic of Finland (for which the League settled the dispute over the Aland Islands) see 'Finland,' by T. W. ATCHLEY (Sidgwick & J., 1931)—a good historic study up to the present time. The fortunes of the Republics of Esthonia, Latvia, and Lithuania may be followed in the general histories, or in Vol. XXXI of 12th ed. of the *Encyc. Brit.* (1922). For Poland see Course XXXII; for Czechoslovakia and Yugoslavia, Course XXXIII.

As to the Near East, 'The Tragedy of Greece,' by S. P. P. COSMETATOS (K.P. 1929), and 'Arabia of the Wahabees,' by H. St. J. B. PHILBY (Con. 1929), throw light on post-War proceedings. Greek history since the War may further be followed in PRINCE ANDREW of GREECE's 'Towards Disaster' (E. tr. Mur. 1930). The case of Turkey is noted in the books cited at the end of Course XXXIV; and that of Russia at the end of Course XXXI. In addition to the book of F. L. BENNS (Course III, § 8), the copious work of R. H. GRETTON, 'Modern History: 1880-1922' (Secker, 1930); 'An Economic History of Europe: 1760-1930' by ARTHUR BIRNIE (Met. 1930); and 'Europe: A History of Ten Years,' by R. L. BUELL (Mac. 1929), may be profitably consulted for recent historical events.

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

I.—THE LIFE OF WOMEN

§ 1. THIS is necessarily dealt with, as regards primitive conditions, in many recent works of Anthropology, named in Course I, § 5, as those of Hobhouse, Westermarck, Crawley, Starcke, McLennan, Lubbock, Tylor, Malinowski, and Briffault; and is further specially handled in Dr. OTIS T. MASON's study of '**Woman's Share in Primitive Culture**' (App. 1894) and the '**History of Matrimonial Institutions**' by Prof. G. E. HOWARD of Chicago (F.U. 3 v. 1904). There was already a large literature on the theme before 1800; and a good survey is latterly supplied by K. A. WIETH-KNUDSEN's '**Feminism: A Sociological Study of the Woman Question from Ancient Times to the Present Day**' (E. tr. Con. 1928). '**Sex in Civilisation**,' ed. by V. F. CALVERTON and S. D. SCHMALHAUSEN (A. & U. 1929) and the '**Sex and Civilisation**' of Dr. P. BOUSFIELD (K.P.) also serve to unify the subject.

§ 2. The biological basis is scientifically studied in '**The Evolution of Sex**,' by Geddes and Thomson (C.S.S.); '**The Evolution of Sex and Intermediate Conditions**,' by Dr. GREGORIO MARANÓN (E. tr. A. & U.); and the ethical problem in '**Sexual Ethics**,' by ROBERT MICHELS (E. tr. A. & U.); '**Sin and Sex**,' by ROBERT BRIFFAULT (same); and '**The Ethics of Feminism**,' by A. R. WADIA (same). The '**Woman: A Scientific Study and Defence**' (adapted from M. FOUILLÉ's), by the Rev. T. A. SEED (Greening, 1900), is hardly the former, but serves well as the latter. Havelock Ellis's '**Man and Woman**' (C.S.S.) is at once sociological, physiological, and psychological; and in that threefold aspect may be said to begin the scientific treatment in English.

§ 3. No English book on women, however, is so comprehensive on the anthropological side as the large German work of P L O S S, rev. and exp. by BARTELS, *Das Weib in der Natur- und Völkerkunde* (2te Aufl. 2 Bde. 1887), which is remarkable for its abundant and carefully planned illustrations. Another solid German work, the '**Woman**' of BERNARD A. BAUER, has been

trans. by E. S. JERDAN and N. HAIRE (Cape, 1927. Sale restricted to adult students and members of the learned professions). A. HURTREL'S *La Femme: sa condition sociale depuis l'antiquité jusqu'à nos jours* (1887) has more value than its French predecessors; as has the work of JULES SIMON and Dr. GUSTAVE SIMON, *La Femme du XXIème Siècle* (1892). The work of O. HENNE AM RHYN, *Die Frau in der Kulturgeschichte* (1892), is a methodical sociological survey. The notable work of Bebel, '**Woman in the Past, Present, and Future**,' was made accessible to English readers by a trans. (Reeves, 1907); but the original has in later editions been considerably expanded. New psychological discussion of the "woman question" was set up in '*Studies in the Psychology of Woman*,' by LAURA MARHOLM (1899), and in the more sober treatise of Prof. W. I. THOMAS of Chicago, '*Sex and Society*' (F.U. 1907).

§ 4. There are a number of studies of various value in the life of women of particular races at several epochs. Among racial surveys are to be noted '*Feminism in Greek Life from Homer to Aristotle*,' by F. A. WRIGHT (Rout. 1923), a scholarly yet a popular book; the four scholarly studies of Mdlle. CLARISSE BADER, *La femme romaine* (2e éd. 1877), *La femme grecque* (2 t. 1872), *La femme dans l'Inde antique* (1864), and *La femme biblique* (1866). There are also *La femme dans l'antiquité grecque*, by G. NOTOR (1901); one on '*Sexual Life in Ancient Greece*,' by HANS LICHT (Rout. 1931); a '*Sexual Life in Ancient India*,' by J. J. MEYER (Rout. 2 v. 1930), a learned and instructive work; LUCY M. J. GARNETT'S '*The Women of Turkey and their Folklore*' (Nutt, 1893); *La femme turque*, by G. DORYS (Paris, 1902); the work of SYED AMEER ALI, '*Woman in Islam*' (Lahore, 1893); that of EMMANUEL WEILL, *La femme juive* (1874); the small volume of G. PATURET, *La condition de la femme dans l'ancienne Égypte* (1886); '*Women under Primitive Buddhism*,' by I. B. HORNER (Rout. 1930); and '*Persian Women and their Ways*,' by C. C. RICE (C.M.S. 1923); and the later books on Indian female life named in Course XXXIX, §§ 11, 12. In English, attention is claimed by the very scholarly treatise of the late E. F. M. BENECKE, '*Antimachus of Colophon and the Position of Women in Greek Poetry: A Fragment printed for the Use of Scholars*' (Son. 1896). There is an elaborate research on *Die Frauen des Orients in der Geschichte, in der Dichtung und im Leben* by Baron A. VON SCHWEIGER-LERCHENFELD (Wien, 1903-4).

§ 5. On the life of European women in the modern period there is a considerable literature, much of it flimsy. Among the solidier treatises are the following: THOMAS WRIGHT, '*Woman-kind in Western Europe from the Earliest Times*' (1869); R. DE

MAULDE LA CLAVIÈRE, 'Women of the Renaissance: A Study of Feminism' (E. tr. Son. 1900); C. BUECHER, *Die Frauenfrage im Mittelalter* (Tübingen, 1882); S. A. RICHARDS's 'Feminist Writers [i.e. French] of the Seventeenth Century' (Nutt, 1914), which opens up a literary vista, with a bibliography; and LINA ECKENSTEIN's 'Woman under Monasticism' (C.U.P. 1896)—a specially scholarly research of great sociological interest, done with much judgment. 'Woman in Europe,' edited by T. Stanton (Low, 1884), is a valuable collection of essays by a number of collaborators, revised by the editor, and introduced by Miss F. P. Cobbe. The essays deal with modern life conditions and progressive movements among the women of all European countries. Fuller researches are presented in M. BAUER's *Das Geschlechtsleben in der deutschen Vergangenheit* (Leip. 1902); E. OELSNER's *Die Leistungen der deutschen Frau in den letzten vierhundert Jahren* (Guhraan, 1894); and A. LASSERRE's *La participation collective des femmes à la révolution française* (Paris, 1905). An obscure and repellent question is handled on scholarly lines in *Le droit du seigneur au moyen âge*, by E. A. DE FORAS (Chambéry, 1886), and in C. SCHMIDT's *Jus primæ noctis* (Freiburg, 1881).

The conditions of women's life in England have been minutely studied on one line in A. R. CLEVELAND's 'Woman under English Law: From the Landing of the Saxons to Present Times' (H. & B. 1896), and in GEORGINA HILL's 'Women in English Life from Mediæval to Modern Times' (Bentley, 2 v. 1896); and a useful research has been made by Mrs. C. C. STOPES, 'British Freewomen, Their Historical Privileges' (S.S.S.). 'The Status of Women under the English Law,' by Dr. A. B. WALLIS CHAPMAN and MARY W. CHAPMAN (Rout. 1909), is another careful chronological handbook. For further sidelights see THOMAS WRIGHT's 'Domestic Manners and Sentiments in England' (1861); and for searching discussions of the social and moral problem the 'Vindication of the Rights of Women,' by MARY WOLLSTONECRAFT (1792; rep. 1891, F.U.; and 1892, Scott); MARGARET FULLER's 'Woman in the Nineteenth Century' (1850), and J. S. MILL's 'The Subjection of Women' (Lmns. 6d. rep. 1906). The political discussion before the Act of Enfranchisement was usefully reduced to clear issues in 'The Case for Woman Suffrage,' edited by Brougham Villiers (F.U. 1907); and in Mrs. Philip Snowden's 'The Feminist Movement' (Collins, 1916). A study of much originality and interest is the 'Women and Economics' of Mrs. C. P. STETSON, afterwards GILMAN (Put. 1899; 6d. rep. 1906). The economics of women's labour has been much studied in recent years—e.g. 'Women Workers in the Industrial Revolution,' by IVY PINCHBECK (K.P.); 'Women's Work and Wages,' by E. CADBURY and

others (F.U. 1906); 'Women and their Work,' by the Hon. Mrs. LYTTELTON (Met. 1901); 'Educated Working Women,' by CLARA E. COLLET (King, 1902); and Miss (Prof.) E. J. MORLEY'S 'Women Workers in Seven Professions' (Rout. 1914). See also other works named in Course XV, § 12, also 'The Family,' by HELEN BOSANQUET (1906), and 'The Morality of Marriage,' by MONA CAIRD (Redway, 1897).

§ 6. The effect on woman's life of religion in the Christian period is critically and thoughtfully studied in **Joseph McCabe's** 'The Religion of Woman' (Watts, 1905), and very brightly and shrewdly in HELEN GARDENER'S 'Men, Women, and Gods' (N.Y. Truthseeker Co., many eds.). A tragic phase of the historic period, as apart from savage sorcery in general, is the supposititious practice of witchcraft (as to which see Course LXVIII, § 6). This has been studied in a number of recent works, of which perhaps the most vivacious is 'The Philosophy of Witchcraft,' by IAN FERGUSON (Har. 1924).

§ 7. The quasi-scientific question of the capacities of women is handled in a hostile spirit by E. FERRI in his 'Socialism and Positive Science' (I.L.P. Office, 1900), of which there is a criticism by the present editor in *The Reformer*, Dec. 1901. There is also an essay on 'The Possibilities of Women' in his 'Essays in Sociology,' vol. ii. In this connection should be noted BUECHNER'S essay, *Das Gehirn der Frau*, in his *Thatsachen und Theorien* (1887). Buckle's lecture on 'The Influence of Women on the Progress of Knowledge' (Misc. Works) has been separately issued at 6d. (Fifield, 1906).

The modern education of women is discussed in books noted in Course LVI, § 11; but note may be made here of the pioneer work of Dr. W. B. HODGSON, 'The Education of Girls and the Employment of Women of the Upper Classes, Educationally Considered: Two Lectures' (2nd ed. 1869), to which there is appended the prospectus of the College for Women at Hitchin (1869).

The manifold record of women's work in the World War is to be partially gathered from a number of treatises, as, 'Women War Workers,' ed. by G. STONE (Har. 1917).

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

II.—SLAVERY

§ 1. THE English reader is supplied with a good general view in the '**History of Slavery and Serfdom**,' by Prof. J. K. Ingram (Black, 1895), which gives a short bibliography. The chief items are the great work of H. WALLON, *Histoire de l'esclavage dans l'antiquité* (1847, 3 t. 2e éd. 1879), and that of S. SUGENHEIM, *Geschichte der Aufhebung der Leibeigenschaft und Hörigkeit in Europa* (1861); with the later work of R. H. BARROW, 'Slavery in the Roman Empire' (Met.). To these may be added the work of H. DONIOL, *Serfs et vilains au moyen âge* (1900); that of W. H. SMITH, 'The Political History of Slavery' (2 v. Put. 1903); and that of LETOURNEAU (Course IV, § 1). A very vivid view of the effects of slavery on civilisation is presented in the work of W. Romaine Paterson, '**The Nemesis of Nations**' (Dent, 1907).

§ 2. On the common assertion that Christianity abolished slavery, note should be taken of C. COHEN's '**Christianity and Slavery**' (P.P.) and, in particular, of the work of PATRICE LARROQUE, *De l'esclavage chez les nations chrétiennes* (2e éd. 1864), which goes searchingly into the subject, and supplies exact textual citations. In this connection should further be consulted a number of historical testimonies not specified by Dr. Ingram: e.g. MICHELET, *Histoire de France*, t. vii, *Renaissance*, note du § 5, Introd.; U. R. BURKE, 'History of Spain,' Hume's ed. i, 116, 407; GIBBON, Bohn ed. clerical editor's note, ii, 50-54; HARDWICK, 'Church History: Middle Ages,' 1853, p. 58 and refs.; MILMAN, 'History of Latin Christianity,' 4th ed. ii, 45-46, 51; LECKY, 'History of European Morals,' small ed. ii, 70-71. See also Dr. E. NYS, 'Researches in the History of Economics' (E. tr. 1899), pp. 34, 68.

The course of slavery in the different nations is to be followed in the sociographical works on their history, indicated in previous Courses. For modern slavery in the United States, see Course XLVII, § 5.

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

III.—HISTORY OF JURISPRUDENCE AND INTERNATIONAL LAW

§ 1. INTRODUCTORY views on this subject are to be gathered from the following writers, cited in previous Courses: Tylor (I, § 1); Maine, McLennan, Westermarck, Morgan (I, § 5); Seeböhm (XLII, § 3) and HEARN (Lmns. 1875), of whose 'Aryan Household' the sub-title is 'An Introduction to Comparative Jurisprudence.' MAINE'S 'Early Law and Custom' (Mur.) is also worth study in this connection, if read in Sir F. Pollock's ed. (1906). Standard treatises are:—'The Elements of Jurisprudence,' by Sir T. E. HOLLAND (12th ed. 1924), and 'Outlines of Historical Jurisprudence,' by Sir P. VINOGRADOFF (2 v. 1920-22: both Cl. Pr.). Such sociological studies as that of G. TARDE, *Les transformations du droit* (1894), and that of G. RICHARD, *L'origine de l'idée du droit* (1862), point in the required direction. The German work of E. NEUKAMP, *Entwicklungsgeschichte des Rechts* (Berlin, 1895, etc.), is more systematic than anything in English up to its date; but J. W. SALMOND'S 'Essays in Jurisprudence and Legal History' (Stevens, 1891) has merit.

§ 2. The history of Roman jurisprudence has been written with special fulness, perhaps nowhere more instructively than in 'Rome the Lawgiver,' by Prof. DECLAREUIL (Course XXI, § 9). The 'Introduction to Roman Law' of the late Prof. JAMES HADLEY of Yale (Milford, 1932) is a series of lectures marked by ripe scholarship. A standard French work is CUQ'S *Des institutions juridiques des romains* (2 t. 1891-1902); and Prof. J. MUIRHEAD'S 'Historical Introduction to the Private Law of Rome' (Black, 1899) is a study of high competence. 'The Roman Law of Marriage' (Cl. Pr.) is an expert study by Prof. P. E. CORBETT of McGill Univ. SOHM'S 'Institutes of Roman Law' (E. tr. Cl. Pr. rev. ed. 1907) is of accepted authority; as are the Cl. Pr. texts of Justinian and Gaius, with trs. and commentaries.

§ 3. Specialist students may, however, turn to some of the exact and elaborate histories of Roman law in German, of which may be named:—F. SCHULIN, *Lehrbuch der Geschichte des römischen*

Rechts (Stut. 1889); M. VOIGT, *Römische Rechtsgeschichte* (Leip. 1892, etc.); and O. KARLOWA, *Römische Rechtsgeschichte* (Leip. 1885, etc.). R. VON IHERING'S *Entwicklungsgeschichte des römischen Rechts* (Leip. 1894) is reputed eccentric, but has originality and value. On the mediæval history of Roman law there is a special research in French: J. FLACH, *Etudes sur l'histoire du droit romain au moyen âge* (1890); and special praise is due to the late Prof. F. W. MAITLAND'S 'Studies in Canon Law' (Met. 1898).

§ 4. To some extent the comprehension of the history of jurisprudence is furthered by works on the philosophy or general principles of law, as Prof. W. JETHRO BROWN'S 'Austinian Theory of Law' (Mur. 1906)—a capable exposition of a writer who has been handled with much prejudice by the school of Maine; W. G. MILLER'S 'The Philosophy of Law' (1884); Sir W. H. RATTIGAN'S 'The Science of Jurisprudence' (1899); J. W. SMITH'S 'Common Law' (12th ed. Stevens, 1905); the works of Holland and Vinogradoff (§ 1); and 'The Genius of the Common Law' by Sir F. POLLOCK (Col. U. P. 1912); and the same expert's 'First Book of Jurisprudence for Students' (Mac. 6th ed. 1929).

§ 5. Of English law the history to Edward I is very completely written by Sir F. POLLOCK and Prof. MAITLAND in collaboration (C.U.P. 2 vols. 1895); also by W. S. HOLDSWORTH (Met. 3 v. 1903-9). Sir J. F. STEPHEN'S 'Digest of the Law of Evidence,' 'Digest of the Criminal Law' (3rd ed. 1887), and 'History of the Criminal Law' (3 v. all Mac.) are standard works; and Sir K. DIGBY'S 'History of the Law of Real Property' (Cl. Pr. 1897) is a competent performance. On ecclesiastical law, a standard work is 'The Book of Church Law,' by the Rev. J. H. BLUNT, revised by Phillimore and G. E. Jones (Lmns. 10th ed. 1905). Of the development of criminal law and practice in the United States, the 'Crime and Criminal Law in the U.S.' by HENRY BEST (Mac. 1931) is an authoritative presentment.

§ 6. Feudalism, which is studied in action in the histories of medieval Europe, is to be regarded as a mode of law. A good general view is to be had from the lectures of Prof. J. T. ABDDY on 'Feudalism: Its Rise, Progress, and Consequences' (Bell, 1890); or from Prof. ASHLEY'S essay, 'Feudalism,' in the vol. of 'Essays Introductory to the Study of English Constitutional History,' ed. by Wakeman and Hassall (Lmns. 1891). For specialist investigations see, further, L. GAUTIER, *La Chevalerie* (1891; E. tr. 'Chivalry,' Rout. 1891); L. BRASIER and J. L. BRUNET'S series on *Les ordres de Chevalerie* (1902, etc.); G. NEILSON, 'Trial by Combat' (W. & N. 1890); E. JENKS, 'Law and Politics in the Middle Ages' (Mur. 1898); C. SEIGNOBOS, *La régime féodale en Bourgogne jusqu'en 1360* (1892); A. H. INMAN, 'Domesday and

Feudal Statistics' (Stock, 1901); EVELYN CECIL, 'Primogeniture: A Short History of its Development in Various Countries and its Practical Effects' (Mur. 1895); C. BOUTELL, 'English Heraldry' (Gibbings, 6th ed. 1899); F. E. HULME, 'The History Principles, and Practice of Heraldry' (Son. 1892).

§ 7. Since the World War, International Law has acquired a new importance. For the study, there are available:—a current manual, '**A Handbook of Public International Law**,' by Dr. P. H. WINFIELD (Mac. 10th ed. 1925), and the larger treatise by Dr. T. J. LAWRENCE, 'The Principles of International Law' (same, 7th ed. rev. by Dr. Winfield), besides 'Documents illustrative of International Law' (same). The study is specially extended in 'Medieval Internationalism,' by R. F. WRIGHT (W. & N. 1930), and the massive treatise of Dr. COLEMAN PHILLIPSON, 'The International Law and Custom of Ancient Greece and Rome' (Mac. 2 v.). The standard work is still 'A Treatise on International Law,' by W. E. HALL (8th ed. edited by A. P. HIGGINS, Cl. Pr. 1924). The smaller work of Prof. J. L. BRIERLY on 'The Law of Nations' (Cl. Pr. 1928) has received high praise.

§ 8. Among earlier works of merit are:—a historical sketch in the 'Elements of International Law,' by H. WHEATON (Stevens, 3rd Eng. ed. 1889); T. D. WOOLSEY's 'Introduction to the Study of International Law' (Low, 1875, rep. from 4th Amer. ed.), which is framed on historical lines; 'A History of the Law of Nations,' by T. A. WALKER (1899); and the *Origines de droit international* of E. NYS (1894). In N. W. SENIOR's 'Historical and Philosophical Essays' (Lmns. 2 v. 1865) is reprinted his review of Wheaton's original 'History of the Law of Nations' (1844), which is still worth attention. Of high repute are HOLTZENDORF and ALPHONSE RIVIER's *Introduction au droit des gens* (1889) and Prof. WESTLAKE's 'Chapters in the Principles of International Law' (C.U.P. 1894). A vivacious outline of the subject is given in the Temple Primer on 'International Law,' by F. E. SMITH, afterwards Lord Birkenhead (Dent, 1900), who also wrote in collaboration with N. SIBLEY on 'International Law as interpreted during the Russo-Japanese War' (F.U. 1905); and an important treatise on the law as to 'Commerce in War' has been contributed by L. A. ATHERLEY-JONES and H. H. L. BELLOT (Met. 1906). All should now be studied in the light of the literature of the League of Nations (Course LI).

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

IV.—HISTORY OF COMMERCE AND INDUSTRY

§ 1. THIS begins with the phenomena of primitive trading, as latterly observed by anthropologists (Course I); and the subject has been lucidly treated by Prof. Elizabeth Hoyt in '**Primitive Trade: its Psychology and Economics**' (K.P. 1926), which adds to a psychological theory a very useful bibliography. The '**Social Organisation**' of Dr. W. H. R. RIVERS; '**Money and Monetary Policy in Ancient Times**,' by A. R. BURNS; and '**Life and Work in Prehistoric Times**,' by Prof. G. RENARD of Paris (all Rout.), further assist to general conceptions.

§ 2. C. A. Herriek's '**History of Commerce and Industry**' (Mac. N.Y.); Prof. H. de B. Gibbins's short '**History of Commerce in Europe**' (Mac. 1891); the '**History of Commerce**,' by Prof. Clive Day (Lmns. 1907); the '**General History of Commerce**' of W. C. WEBSTER (Ginn, 1903); and F. J. V. MARCHANT's '**Commercial History: An Introduction**' (Part I: To the End of the Middle Ages; Pit. 1901) give good general views; and special surveys of the history of British, European, and other commerce are named in Course XV, §§ 1, 7. Prof. E. SPECK's German *Handelsgeschichte des Alterthums* (1900; Bd. i, *Die orientalischen Völker*) is a good record for antiquity; and the *Histoire du Commerce de toutes les nations*, by H. SCHERER (Fr. tr. with added notes, 2 t. 1857), may still be found worth consulting for antiquity and the Middle Ages. For Italy see the work of PÖHLMAN (Course XXII, § 11). For the highly interesting commercial side of ancient Sumeria, Babylon, Assyria, and Egypt, recourse should be made to the detailed histories of those countries. For China see Course XXXVI, §§ 1, 3-6; and for Japan, Course XXXVII.

§ 3. Among the most interesting histories of the commerce of separate nations and regions are:—H. PIGEONNEAU, *Histoire du commerce de la France* (1885, etc.), a very comprehensive work; the shorter *Histoire du commerce français* of C. PÉRIGOT (1884); the short '**Industrial History of England**,' by Prof. Gibbins (Met.); W. VON HEYD, *Histoire du commerce du Levant au moyen*

âge (Fr. tr. ed. by Furcy Raynaud, 1886, 2 t.); E. LEVASSEUR, *Histoire des classes ouvrières en France avant 1789* (1900, etc.); and ARNOLD TOYNBEE'S 'The Industrial Revolution in England' (Riv. 1884). A very good investigation is that translated in English under the title 'The Mercantile System and its Historical Significance' (Mac. 1896), from GUSTAV SCHMOLLER'S *Studien über die wirthschaftliche Politik Friedrichs des Grossen* (1884).

§ 4. Industrial as distinguished from commercial history is further to be traced through a number of works mentioned in previous Courses on the histories of nations. For good scientific views, resting on historical knowledge, see Gustav Schmoller's *Ueber einige Grundfragen der Socialpolitik und der Volkswirtschaftslehre* (Leip. 1898), and *Zur Social- und Gewerbpolitik der Gegenwart*—a volume of speeches and essays (1890).

Modern commercial history (see Course XV) has been critically traced in the attempt to find its laws—*e.g.* in H. M. HYNDMAN'S 'Economic Crises of the Nineteenth Century' (S.S.S. 1892); D. H. SMITH, 'Economics of Empire Trade' (Rout.); E. D. JONES, 'Economic Crises' (Mac. 1900); and C. JUGLAR, 'History of Panics and their Periodical Occurrence in the United States' (N.Y. 1893). On co-operation there is the old 'History of the Rochdale Pioneers' (A. & U.), by G. J. HOLYOAKE; also a shorter work of great ability by BEATRICE POTTER (Mrs. Sidney Webb), 'The Co-operative Movement' (S.S.S.); and another on 'Distributive Co-operative Societies,' by Dr. L. PIZZAMIGLIO (same).

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

V.—HISTORY OF EDUCATION

§ 1. THE short '**History of Education**,' by **T. Davidson** (Con. 1900), was freshly and originally conceived; and with the later works of **Dr. J. W. Adamson**, '**A Short History of Education**' (C.U.P.); **Dr. H. Thistelton Mark**, '**An Outline of the History of Educational Theories in England**' (1915: A. & U. 2nd ed.); '**An Introduction to the Study of Education**,' by **Prof. E. P. Gubberley** of Leland (Har.); and the '**History of Pedagogy**,' by **G. Compayré** (E. tr. with annotns. by **W. H. Payne**; Son. 1903), will supply a good basis for detailed study. **Oscar Brown-ing's** older '**Introduction to the History of Educational Theories**' also is a lucid outline (1881). '**The Evolution of Educational Theory**,' by **Sir John Adams** (Mac. 1912), who also supplies the primer '**Educational Theories**' (Benn, 6d. ser.), may rank as a standard treatise. Special interest attaches to '**A History of Secondary Education**,' by **Dr. I. L. Kandel** of Columbia (Har.).

§ 2. Germany is especially rich in histories of educational thought—e.g. **C. A. Schmid**, *Geschichte der Erziehung* (Stuttgart, 1884, etc.); **A. Schorn**, *Geschichte der Pädagogik* (Leip. 1885); **T. Ziegler**, *Geschichte der Pädagogik* (1895); **J. Koenigbauer**, *Geschichte der Pädagogik* (1886)—a short survey; the *Lehrbuch der Geschichte der Pädagogik* of **H. Schiller** (1887); and the work of the same title by **M. Rappes** (1898, etc.). Above all towers the massive *Geschichte der Pädagogik* of **J. Schmidt** (5 Bde. 1868, etc.).

§ 3. On education in the ancient world (briefly treated in the works specified in § 1) there is a good monograph by **Prof. Laurie**, '**A Historical Survey of Pre-Christian Education**' (Lmns. 2nd ed. 1900); and a brilliant one by **Prof. Mahaffy**, '**Old Greek Education**' (1881). '**Schools of Hellas: An Essay on the Practice and Theory of Ancient Greek Education**,' by **K. J. Freeman**, ed. by **M. J. Rendall**, with pref. by **Dr. Verrall** (Mac. 3rd ed.), has won special esteem by its scholarship and insight. There are also the essay of **W. Hobhouse**, '**Theory and Practice of Ancient**

Education' (S. M. 1885); the two able works of THOMAS DAVIDSON, 'The Education of the Greek People and its Influence on Civilisation' (Arnold, 1895) and 'Aristotle and Ancient Educational Ideals' (Great Educators ser. Hei. 1892); that of G. CLARKE, 'The Education of Children at Rome' (Mac. 1896); and the earlier research of Prof. A. S. WILKINS, 'National Education in Greece' (1873).

In French and German there is a further literature: J. L. USING, *Erziehung bei den Griechen und Römern* (1885); F. STADELMANN, *Erziehung und Unterricht bei den Griechen und Römern* (1891); C. CASSAU, *Die Pädagogik der Alten* (1882); P. GIRARD, *L'éducation athénienne* (1889); J. P. ROSSIGNOL, *De l'éducation chez les anciens* (1888); and A. HARRENT, *Les écoles d'Antioche* (1898).

§ 4. Modern European education is substantially to be traced to the system which grew out of the educational experiments of Charlemagne, made with the help of northern ecclesiastical teachers who had partly preserved classical methods. As to those beginnings see J. BASS MULLINGER's research, 'The Schools of Charles the Great in the Ninth Century' (Lmns. 1877); and FRANÇOIS MONNIER's *Alcuin et Charlemagne* (2e éd. 1864). For further light see E. LEGRANGE, *Les écoles au moyen âge* (Brux. 1884); the fuller German histories of *Pädagogik*; and the national histories of education specified in the following sections.

§ 5. A thorough history of English education has yet to be written; but the gist of what has been collected is to be found in the works of Prof. J. W. ADAMSON, 'English Education: 1789-1902' (C.U.P. 1930); Prof. H. HOLMAN, 'English National Education: A Sketch of the Rise of Public Elementary Schools in England' (Blackie, 1898); A. F. LEACH, 'English Schools at the Reformation' (Con. 1897); and J. E. G. MONTGOMERY, 'State Intervention in English Education: A Short History from the Earliest Times down to 1833' (C.U.P. 1902). See also Dr. FOSTER WATSON's manual, 'The Old Grammar Schools,' and his larger work, 'The English Grammar Schools to 1660' (C.U.P.); N. CARLISLE's 'Concise Description of the Endowed Grammar Schools' (1818); Dr. FURNIVALL's 'Education in Early England' (E.E.T. Soc.); the late Prof. BAYNES's 'What Shakespeare Learned at School' (rep. in Works, Lmns. 1894); and the special histories of schools and universities named in §§ 8, 9.

'Scottish Education, School and University, from early times to 1908,' with addendum '1908-13,' by Dr. J. KERR (C.U.P.), is a special survey of merit.

§ 6. The history of education in France, as in England, is somewhat imperfectly traced till the modern period, apart from the records of the universities; but there is an interesting research

by P. C. BERNARD, *De l'enseignement élémentaire au XI^e et XII^e Siècles* (1824); another by L. TARSOT, *Les écoles et les écoliers à travers les âges* (1892); and the growth of the common schools is largely dealt with by A. DES CILLEULS, *Histoire de l'enseignement libre dans l'ordre primaire en France* (1898); L. AUDIAT, *L'instruction primaire avant 1789* (1896); and C. DEJOB, *L'instruction publique en France et en Italie au XIX^e Siècle* (1894). On the Protestant schools of the monarchic period see G. E. NICOLET, *L'école primaire protestante jusqu'en 1789* (Auxerre, 1891); and for the Revolution period see A. BABEAU, *L'école du village pendant la Révolution* (1881), and the works of Pierre and Allain, named in Course XXIV, § 18.

There are several competent works in English on the same subject:—‘The Little Schools of Port Royal’ and ‘The Port-Royalists on Education,’ by H. C. BARNARD; the same scholar’s ‘The French Tradition in Education: Ramus to Madame Necker de Saussure,’ with 8 plates and 2 maps; and G. HODGSON’S ‘Studies in French Education from Rabelais to Rousseau’ (all C.U.P.); also one on ‘Bilingual Teaching in Belgium,’ by T. R. DAWES (same).

§ 7. For German school and educational history, up to the last generation, apart from the universities, there are H. J. KAEMMEL’S *Geschichte des deutschen Schulwesens im Uebergange* (1882); F. A. SPECHT’S *Geschichte des Unterrichtswesens in Deutschland* (1885); and A. PIMLOCHE’S French essay, *La réforme de l’éducation en Allemagne au XVIII^e Siècle* (1889). For Italy see F. CERRUTI’S *Storia della Pedagogia in Italia* (1883).

§ 8. Down till modern times the most important aspect of educational history in the European world has been the history of universities, to which a good introduction is supplied by Prof. LAURIE’S ‘Lectures on the Rise and Early Constitution of Universities’ (K.P. 1886). The most comprehensive and authoritative English work on the subject is H. RASHDALL’S ‘Universities in the Middle Ages’ (Frowde, 2 v. 1895). See also the C.U.P. manual by R. S. RAIT, ‘Life in the Medieval University.’

In German there are the works of Prof. F. PAULSEN, *Wesen und geschichtliche Entwicklung der deutschen Universitäten*, trans. in English as ‘The German Universities: Their Character and Historical Development’ (Mac. 1895); the same author’s *Geschichte des gelehrten Unterrichts auf den deutschen Schulen und Universitäten* (2te Aufl. 2 Bde. 1896–97); and Prof. G. KAUFMANN’S *Die Geschichte der deutschen Universitäten* (1888, etc.). On the modern development of French universities see E. BEAUSSIRE, *L’Université sous la troisième République* (1884).

§ 9. Most universities have their special histories—e.g. A.

LEFRANC, *Histoire du Collège de France* (1892); CHARLES DESMAZE, *L'Université de Paris, 1200-1875* (1876); those on Oxford and Cambridge named in Course XLII, § 14; Sir A. GRANT, 'Story of the University of Edinburgh' (Lmns. 2 v. 1884); J. W. STUBBS, 'History of the University of Dublin' (Dublin, 1889); 'A History of Manchester College,' by V. D. DAVIS (A. & U.), and JOSEPH VON ASCHBACH, *Geschichte der Wiener Universität* (Wien, 3 Bde. 1865-88). But clues to all this literature are given by Dr. Rashdall, whose work will suffice for all but specialists.

Further light on educational progress is to be drawn from A. F. LEACH'S 'The Schools of Medieval England' (Met. 2nd ed.).

§ 10. On the inside, as a science or praxis, the history of education is to be followed through the lives of the great educationists. These are discussed in all histories of pedagogy, and there is a good general essay on 'The Doctrines of the Great Educators,' by R. R. RUSK (Mac.); but there are monographs on the more distinguished, as Prof. Laurie's 'Comenius' (6th ed. Clay, 1899), and his shorter work on the same in the Educ. Lib. ser. In the Internat. Educ. ser. (App.) is a trans. of 'Pestalozzi: His Life and Work,' by ROGER DE GUIMPS; and the Autobiography of FROEBEL is trans. by H. K. Moore (Son. 1886). See also F. H. HAYWARD'S 'Educational Ideals of Pestalozzi and Froebel' (Holland, 1904); and 'The Student's Herbart' (Son. 1902). Of less famous educationists there are some good sketches in J. LEITCH'S 'Practical Educationists' (1876); and R. H. QUICK'S 'Essays on Educational Reformers' (Lmns. 1890) is specially meritorious. Prof. S. S. LAURIE has also published 'Studies in the History of Educational Opinion from the Renaissance' (C.U.P.).

§ 11. Ever since the issue of FÉNELON'S *De l'éducation des filles* (rep. with intro. by Prof. Gréard, 1890; tr. as 'Treatise on the Education of Daughters' by Rev. T. T. Dibdin, 1805) the education of girls has constituted a special problem. How the matter has latterly been dealt with may be gathered from such books as Miss C. S. BREMNER'S 'Education of Girls and Women in Great Britain' (Son. 1897); Miss S. A. BURSTALL'S 'The Education of Girls in the United States' (same, 1894); Miss ALICE ZIMMERN'S 'The Renaissance of Girls' Education in England: A Record of Fifty Years' Progress' (Innes, 1898); and 'The Jubilee Book of the Girls' Public Day School Trust: 1873-1923' (C.U.P.).

§ 12. The literature of educational praxis in all civilised countries is so immense that no full survey of it can be attempted in this Course. It must suffice to indicate, after the works above specified, some of the leading treatises on the subject. The most notable in past periods are: ASCHAM'S 'Scholemaster' (Arber's

rep. Con.; also in B.L.); MONTAIGNE's essay (B. i, ch. 24, 25); MILTON's letter 'Of Education' (rep. with 'Areopagitica' in Cas. 6d. ed.); LOCKE's 'Conduct of the Understanding' and 'Thoughts Concerning Education'; ROUSSEAU's *Émile* (tr. N.Y. 1893); JEAN PAUL RICHTER's *Levana* (tr. in B.L.); FROEBEL's 'Education of Man' (tr. in Appleton's Internat. Educ. ser.); J. F. HERBART's 'Letters and Lectures on Education' (E. tr. Son. 1907); HARRIET MARTINEAU's 'Household Education' (1849); J. H. NEWMAN's 'Idea of a University'; and Herbert Spencer's 'Education' (R.P.A. rep. Watts). Naturally these treatises are at many points subject to later criticism, and all should be read in the light of later discussions, especially of such works as Prof. BAIN's 'Education as a Science' (I.S.S.); HUXLEY's essay on 'Science and Education' (Mac.); Prof. SULLY's 'Teacher's Handbook of Psychology' (Lmns. 4th ed. 1897), and others mentioned in Course XII, § 4. An interesting and suggestive volume of essays on education, from the point of view of a man of letters, was published under the title 'Let Youth but Know,' by 'Kappa'—the late WILLIAM ARCHER (Met. 1905).

The volume entitled 'Teaching and Organisation,' edited by Prof. P. A. BARNETT (Lmns. 1897), is a collection of twenty-three essays by as many contributors, going over nearly all the ground of school-work from various points of view. It is thus rather a body of criticism and suggestion than 'A Manual of Practice,' as it is described on the title-page; but it is none the less worthy of a place in every educationist's library. The 'Chapters on the Aims and Practice of Teaching,' edited by Prof. FREDERIC SPENCER (C.U.P. 1897), is a similar compilation, containing twelve essays by as many contributors.

The discussion of educational method is continuous, many points being still, or newly, in debate. Among recent works are:—'School Management and Methods of Instruction,' by G. COLLAR, B.Sc., and C. W. CROOK, B.Sc.; 'Principles of Class Teaching,' by J. J. FINDLAY; 'The Thinking Hand, or Practical Education in the Elementary School,' by J. G. LEGGE; 'A Defence of Classical Education,' by R. W. LIVINGSTONE; 'Problems of National Education,' by Twelve Scottish Educationists, ed. by JOHN CLARKE; 'The Logical Bases of Education' and the 'Psychology of Education,' by Dr. J. WELTON (all Mac.); 'Educational Advancement Abroad,' by Twelve Specialists, with introd. essay by Prof. HEARNshaw; 'The Principles of Education,' by Prof. W. C. RUEDIGER; and 'Conflicting Psychologies of Learning,' by Prof. BOYD H. BODE (all Har.); 'The Purpose of Education,' by ST. GEORGE L. F. PITT, with pref. by Prof. BOUTROUX (C.U.P. 2nd ed. 1916).

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

VI.—HISTORY OF CHURCHES, ORDERS, AND SECTS

§ 1. ON the general history of the Christian Church to the Reformation guidance is given in Courses III and VIII. 'The Decline of the Medieval Church,' by J. G. FLICK (Rout. 2 v. 1930), is a competent general survey. Of special importance for their independence and learning are the 1st and 4th vols. of G. G. COULTON's 'Life in the Middle Ages: I, Religion, Folk-Lore and Superstition; IV, Monks, Friars, and Nuns' (C.U.P.). 'Episcopacy, Ancient and Modern,' ed. by Dr. CLAUDE JENKINS and K. D. MACKENZIE (S.P.C.K. 1930), is intended to illustrate the actual working of episcopacy in general, as well as its origin and spread.

§ 2. Of the chief "Orders" of the Catholic Church, the history is to be gathered partly from the general works above indicated, and further from the great compilations of the separate Orders, notably the *Annales Minorum*, begun by LUCAS WADDING and J. M. FONSECA AB EBORA at Rome in 1731, and carried on down to our own day (over 25 t. fol.); the *Annales Ordinis Predicatorum*, begun by A. BREMOND and continued by others (Rome, 1756, etc. fol.), and the *Brevis Historia Ordinis Fratrum Prædicatorum* of E. MARTÈNE and U. DURAND (1724, fol.), which are the work of the Dominicans; and the *Annales Ordinis S. Benedicti* of the learned Benedictine Dom MABILLON (Paris, 1703-39, 6 t. fol.), with other works set on foot by him. There is also an old general *Histoire des Ordres monastiques, religieux, et militaires*, by HELVOT, of relatively moderate bulk (Paris, 1714-19, 8 t. 4to), which deals with most of the Orders, and gives many further clues.

The lesser Orders, too, have their records—e.g. for the Cistercians the *Annales Cistercienses* of MANRIQUEZ (Lyons, 1642, 4 t. fol.) and the *Essai de l'histoire de l'Ordre de Citeaux* of LE NAIN (Paris, 1696, 9 t. 8vo); for the Carthusians, MASSON's *Annales Cartusiani* (Correria, 1687, fol.) and DORLAND's *Chronicon Cartusiense* (1608; Fr. tr. 1644). Concerning the Trappists see the two French lives of the Abbé de la Trappe (1702, 1703). For

other Orders see Helyot; and for the orders of chivalry see Course LIV, § 7.

Modern historiography does not give such liberal attention to the monastic orders; but information may be had from the *Monumenta Ordinis Fratrum Predicatorum Historica* now in progress (Louvain, 1896, etc.); the *Monumenta Franciscana* in the 'Rolls' Ser. (2 v. 1858-62); the German works of R. CRUEL, *Geschichte der deutschen Predigt im Mittelalter* (1879), and K. ENBEL, *Geschichte der oberdeutschen Minoriten* (1886); A. G. LITTLE's 'The Gray Friars at Oxford' (Oxf. Hist. Soc. 1892); and Dr. A. JESSOPP's 'The Coming of the Friars' (F.U. 1889). H. J. FEASEY's 'Monasticism: What is It?' (Sands, 1898) is a somewhat inadequate work on an interesting theme, but gives many clues. It may be supplemented by HARNACK's 'Monasticism: Its Ideals and History' (E. tr. W. & N. 1901); G. G. COULTON's 'The Truth about the Monasteries' (S.M. 1906); A. W. WISHART's 'Short History of Monks and Monasticism' (Trenton, U.S. 1902).

On the Jesuits see the works mentioned at the end of Course XXII, to which may be added the following: *Historia Societatis Jesu*, begun by N. ORLANDINUS in 1620 and continued till recent times (6 t. fol.); A. STEINMETZ, 'History of the Jesuits' (E. tr. 3 v. 1848-51); MARY F. CUSACK, 'The Black Pope: A History of the Jesuits'—from a Catholic standpoint (1896); E. GOTHEIN, *Ignatius von Loyola und die Gegenreformation* (Halle, 1895); J. N. HUBER, *Die Jesuiten Orden* (1873); P. E. F. HOFFMANN, *Die Jesuiten* (2 Bde. 1871); and J. CRÉTINEAU-JOLY, *Histoire . . . de la Compagnie de Jésus* (6 t. 1845-46).

§ 3. Concerning the history of the Church of England and the Dissenting Churches of this country, guidance has been given in Course XLII, §§ 14, 15. To the list of works there named, as regards Nonconformist bodies, may be added the following:—

Baptists.—A. H. NEWMAN, 'A History of Anti-Pedo-baptism to 1609' (Philad. 1897), and 'History of Baptist Churches in the United States' (1894); C. A. RAMSEYER, *Histoire des Baptistes jusqu'à nos jours* (Neuchâtel, 1897, pp. 640); H. C. VEDDER, 'A Short History of the Baptists' (Bap. Tract Soc. 1897).

Congregationalists.—R. W. DALE, 'History of English Congregationalism' (H. & S. 1907); G. HUNTINGTON, 'Outlines of Congregational History' (Boston, 1885); J. ROSS, 'History of Congregational Independency in Scotland' (Glasgow, 1900); W. WALKER, 'History of Congregational Churches in the United States' (1894); and F. W. COX, 'Congregational Churches of Australia' (Adelaide, 1887).

Methodists.—W. H. DANIELS, 'A Short History of the People Called Methodists' (H. & S. 1882); J. MCGEE, 'The March of

Methodism Round the Globe' (N.Y. 1893); B. GREGORY, 'Side Lights on the Conflicts of Methodism, 1827-52' (Cas. 1892).

Unitarians.—J. H. ALLEN, 'Historical Sketch of the Unitarian Movement Since the Reformation' (N.Y. 1894); R. WALLACE, 'Antitrinitarian Biography' (3 v. 1850); G. BONET-MAURY, *Des origines du christianisme unitaire chez les Anglais* (1881); W. LLOYD, 'The Story of Protestant Dissent and English Unitarianism' (P. Green, 1899); J. H. ALLEN and R. EDDY, 'History of the Unitarians in the U.S.' (Amer. Ch. Hist. Ser. 1894).

Quakers.—A. N. BRAYSHAW, 'The Quakers: their Story and Message'; E. GRUBB, 'What is Quakerism?' and 'Quaker Thought and History' (all A. & U.); F. S. TURNER, 'The Quakers' (Son. 1889); FRANCES A. BUDGE, 'Story of George Fox and Some Early Friends' (1886); J. CUNNINGHAM, 'The Quakers' (1898); A. W. BENNETT, 'Pre-Foxite Quakerism' (1894, pam.); A. C. BICKLEY, 'George Fox and the Early Quakers' (H. & S. 1884); T. HODGKIN, 'George Fox' (Met. 1896).

Minor Sects.—J. T. TEULON, 'The History and Teaching of the Plymouth Brethren' (S.P.C.K. 1883); J. WOOLCOCK, 'A History of the Bible Christian Churches in the Isle of Wight' (Newport, 1897; part of a history of the whole sect). See further A. S. DYER's 'Sketches of English Nonconformity' (Masters, 1893).

§ 4. For the history of Protestantism in other countries see the works named in Courses II, § 5; XXVII, § 3, and the Index generally. To these may be added the following: J. I. GOOD, 'Origin of the Reformed Church in Germany' (U.S. 1887), and 'History of the Reformed Church in Germany' (same, 1894); R. ROCHOLL, *Geschichte der evangelischen Kirche in Deutschland* (Leip. 1897); A. WEILL, *Histoire de la guerre des Anabaptistes* (1874); KARL KAUTSKY's 'Communism in Central Europe in the Time of the Reformation' (E. tr. F.U. 1897); SAMUEL SMILES's 'The Huguenots: . . . in England and Ireland' (Mur. 1868).

§ 5. The history of the community known as the "Moravian Brethren" has been somewhat abundantly written. From its American headquarters (Bethlehem, Pa.) come J. T. HAMILTON's 'History of the Moravian Church during the 18th and 19th Centuries' (1900), and E. A. DE SCHWEINITZ's 'History of the Church Known as Unitas Fratrum' (1885). There is further a 'Short History of the Moravian Church,' by J. E. HUTTON (1895); and in French there are *L'église de l'Unité des Frères*, by E. A. SENFT (Neuchâtel, 1888), and the *Histoire . . . de l'église des Frères de Bohême et de Moravie*, by A. BOST (Genève, 2 t. 1831).

§ 6. In the present connection may be noted C. W. HECKETHORN's 'The Secret Societies of All Ages and Countries' (Redway, rev. ed. 2 v. 1897).

HISTORIES OF PHASES OF CIVILISATION

VII.—HISTORY OF AMUSEMENTS, SUPERSTITIONS,
AND SOCIAL USAGES

THIS composite section, which is not properly a Course, may be considered as noting aspects of social, in distinction from political and orthodox religious history. Broadly speaking, it is an account of how people have spent their time outside of labour and business, war and hunting and worship, and reading and the arts, and of their divagations in non-ecclesiastical superstition. These topics are only slightly and incidentally dealt with in most of the works named in our historical Courses; and there is a considerable literature which can best be grouped under the present heading.

§ 1. Apart from works on anthropology in general, we may thus classify 'The Study of Man,' by A. C. HADDON (1898), which includes chapters on toys and games. The same study may be followed up in a number of separate investigations: S. KULIN's 'Korean Games' (1895); A. M. DAVIS's 'Indian Games' (1886); and E. FALKENER's 'Games Ancient and Oriental' (Lmns. 1892). British games in particular are dealt with in ALICE B. GOMME's 'Traditional Games of England, Scotland, and Ireland' (Nutt, 1894-99); Mrs. F. KIRK's 'Old English Games and Physical Exercises' (Lmns. 1906); and P. H. DITCHFIELD's 'Old English Sports, Pastimes, and Customs' (Met. 1891). The last-named author has issued another work, extending the survey to 'Old English Customs Extant' (Redway, 1896).

§ 2. For classical antiquity see GUHL and KONER's work (Course XX, § 10); and A. H. GREENIDGE's 'Roman Public Life' (Mac. 1901); also the two works of W. A. BECKER on Greek and Roman life, 'Charicles' and 'Gallus' (E. tr. 1844-45; sev. reps.); and W. RICHTER's *Die Spiele der Griechen und Römer* (1887). 'Athletics of the Ancient World,' by Dr. E. N. GARDINER (O.U.P. 1930), is an important scholarly survey.

§ 3. This subject is largely bound up with the study of Folklore; and in addition to the works in that field named in Course I, resort may profitably be had to the following by G. L. GOMME:

'Dictionary of British Folklore' (Nutt, 1894, etc.), 'Folklore Relics of Early Village Life' (Stock, 1883), and 'Handbook of Folklore' (Folklore Soc. 1890). Mr. Gomme also edited for the 'Gentleman's Magazine Library' four volumes on 'Manners and Customs, Superstitions and Traditions' (Stock). There is, further, a shelf of works on local British folklore, as: W. HENDERSON, 'The Folklore of the Northern Counties' (Nutt, 1879); CHARLOTTE S. BURNE, 'Shropshire Folklore' (Trübner, 1883); JOHN HARLAND and T. T. WILKINSON, 'Lancashire Folklore' (1867); P. ROBERTS, 'Cambrian Popular Antiquities' (1815); W. GREGOR, 'Folklore of the North-east of Scotland' (1881); J. NAPIER, 'Folklore of the West of Scotland' (Gardner, 1879); BLACK'S 'Folklore of Orkney and Shetland' (Nutt, 1901).

§ 4. In the Badminton Library ser. (Lmns.), dealing with all manner of sports, there is a certain amount of historical matter. J. KERR's 'History of Curling' (Douglas, 1890) and W. G. BEERS's 'Lacrosse' (Montreal, 1875) supply such information.

§ 5. A great deal of curious and interesting information is loosely grouped in the following compilations: L. Eichler's 'Customs of Mankind' (Hei. 1925); JOHN BRAND's old 'Popular Antiquities of Great Britain' (B.L. ed. by Sir H. Ellis, 3 v.; also rev. and enlarged ed. by W. C. Hazlitt, 3 v. 1870); W. HONE's 'Every-Day Book' (2 v.), 'Table Book,' and 'Year Book' (1838); R. CHAMBERS's 'The Book of Days: A Miscellany of Popular Antiquities' (2 v. 1869); and PAUL LACROIX's 'Manners, Customs, and Dress during the Middle Ages' (E. tr. 1877). Much information of the same kind is collected in F. NICOLAY's *Histoire des croyances, superstitions, mœurs, usages, et coutumes* (3 t. 1901); and the student should in this connection have regard to the collections of facts in Sir J. G. FRAZER's 'Golden Bough,' Sir E. B. TYLOR's 'Primitive Culture,' and other works named in Course I. 'The Origins of Popular Superstitions, Customs, and Ceremonies,' by T. SHARPER KNOWLSON (Laurie, 1930), is compiled in the light of latter-day research.

§ 6. "Witchcraft," in the sense of normal savage sorcery and the inferred practice of prehistoric man, is discussed in many or most of the works of anthropology specified in Course I. A broad aspect of the subject is faced in 'Possession: Demoniacal and other' (in primitive, ancient, mediæval and modern life) by Prof. T. K. OESTERREICH of Tübingen (E. tr. K.P. 1930). As a phenomenon in the history of Christendom, so-called witchcraft has latterly received some special attention. The Rev. MONTAGUE SUMMERS, author of a 'History of Witchcraft' (K.P. 1926), has usefully re-edited REGINALD SCOT's 'Discoverie of Witchcraft' (orig. pub. 1584; rep. by Dr. BRINSLEY NICHOLSON in 1886),

with elucidatory matter (Rodker, 1930); also the *Compendium Maleficarum* made by F. M. GUAZZA, and trans. by E. A. Ashwin (same); and 'The Vampire: His Kith and Kin' (K.P. 1929), a trans. of the old *Malleus Maleficarum* (by SPRENGER and others), with notes; 'An Examen of Witches, drawn from Various Trials,' by H. BOGUET (E. tr. by E. A. Ashwin: both Rodker, 1929); and E. A. Ashwin's tr. of Nicolas Remy's 'Demonolatriy' (same, 1930).

See also 'Witchcraft in Old and New England,' by Prof. G. L. KITTREDGE of Harvard (Milford, 1930); 'Witchcraft, Magic, and Alchemy,' by GRILLET DE GIVRY (E. tr. by J. C. Locke: Har. 1931), which both describes and illustrates those and other kindred topics, including cartomancy (fortune-telling from cards), cheiromancy (hand-reading), and astrology; C. G. LELAND's 'Gipsy Sorcery and Fortune-Telling' (F.U. 1891); J. W. WICKWAR, 'Witchcraft and the Black Art' (Jenkins, 1925); and T. WRIGHT's 'Narratives of Sorcery and Magic from the most Authentic Sources' (2 v. 2nd ed. 1851). 'Witch-Hunting' is a collection of indictments for witchcraft, 1559-1736, ed. by C. L'ESTRANGE EWEN (K.P.).

§ 7. Freemasonry is the subject of a large literature, much of it loosely speculative as to origins. Definite information may be sought in the 'Constitutions of the Ancient Fraternity of Freemasons' (1873), and in the more recent 'Concise History of Freemasonry' (Gale & P. 1903). A hand-book was supplied in 'Kenning's Masonic Cyclopaedia,' ed. by Rev. A. F. WOODWARD (1878).

§ 8. Much additional information of the same general order is to be found in the works of JOHN ASHTON: 'Old Times'—dealing with the end of the 18th c. (Nimmo, 1885); 'Men, Maidens, and Manners a Hundred Years Ago' (1888); 'A History of Gambling in England' (Duck. 1898); 'A History of English Lotteries' (1893); and 'The Devil in Britain and America' (W. & D. 1896).

§ 9. Present-day games and sports are discussed in a large number of works, of which it may suffice to indicate the following:—H. G. BOHN, 'Handbook of Games' (B.L.); HOFFMANN's 'Cyclopaedia of Card and Table Games' (Rout.); J. H. WALSH, 'British Rural Sports' (1886); J. G. WOOD, 'The Playground' (1884); and W. W. NEWELL, 'Games of American Children' (N.Y. 1884).

§ 10. The history of chess and playing-cards is sketched in encyclopædia articles. See also H. E. BIRD's 'Chess History' (Dean, 1893); A. VAN DER LINDE's *Quellenstudien zur Geschichte der Schachspiels* (Berlin, 1881); and the bibliography in R. I. GREEN's 'Chess' (Bell). There is an elaborate old book on 'The Origin and History of Playing-cards,' by W. A. CHATTO (1848); and a more trustworthy (and costly) recent 'History of Playing

Cards' by Miss C. P. HARGRAVE (A. & U. 1931). The 'Catalogue of Playing-cards,' by W. H. WILLSHIRE (Brit. Mus.), and the 'History of Playing Cards,' by TAYLOR and others (C. & W.), have historical interest. A wider field of social investigation is covered in the work of A. STEINMETZ on 'The Gaming Table: Its Votaries and Victims, in all Times, especially in England and France' (2 v. 1870).

§ 11. A French scholar, CH. MAGNIN, has produced an *Histoire des Marionnettes en Europe depuis l'antiquité jusqu'à nos jours* (2e éd. 1862); and there are a number of later works on dancing, notably the 'History of Dancing' by GASTON VUILLIER (É. tr. 3 pts. 4to, Hei. 1898); E. SCOTT's 'Dancing in all Ages' (Son. 1899); and J. DUFF BROWN's 'Characteristic Songs and Dances of all Nations' (1901).

§ 12. Under the present general heading is to be considered the history of gardening, which has a considerable literature—e.g. the Hon. ALICIA M. AMHERST's 'History of Gardening in England' (Quar. 1896); A. BARNARD, 'Orchards and Gardens, Ancient and Modern' (1895); R. BLOMFIELD and F. I. THOMAS, 'The Formal Garden in England' (Mac. 1892); A. MANGIN, *Histoire des Jardins* (Tours, 1887, fol.); W. P. TUCKERMANN, *Die Gartenkunst der italienischen Renaissance Zeit* (1884); and H. JAEGER, *Gartenkunst und Gärten sonst und jetzt* (1888, pp. 529). Of books on gardening the literature is large. See WALTER P. WRIGHT's 'Scientific and Practical Gardening,' 'Garden Trees and Shrubs,' 'Roses and Rose Gardens,' etc. (A. & U.).

§ 13. Gastronomy has had not a few historians, as apart from practical teachers of cookery; and those interested in the former theme may turn to G. H. ELLWANGER's 'The Pleasures of the Table: An Account of Gastronomy from Ancient Days to Present Times' (Hei. 1903).

§ 14. The history of costume (see Lacroix in § 5) may be noted in this loose connection, having been the subject of much modern research. Examples of special studies are:—'Greek Dress . . . from Pre-Hellenic Times to the Hellenistic Age,' by ETHEL B. ABRAHAMS (Mur. 1908); 'Ancient Egyptian, Assyrian, and Persian Costumes and Decorations,' by MARY G. HOUSTON and FLORENCE S. HORNBLOWER; 'English Costume from William I to George IV,' by DION CLAYTON CALTHROP; 'English Costume of the 19th Century,' by IRIS BROOKE and JAMES LAVER (also one on 18th c.); and 'Peasant Costume in Europe,' by KATHERINE MANN (all Black, illustr.).

HISTORY OF THE PHYSICAL SCIENCES

THIS is here considered as a study apart from or additional to that of the sciences as bodies of codified knowledge, the latter having regard mainly to the sciences in their present state.

§ 1. 'An Introduction to the History of Science' by Dr. W. Libby (Har.) is a competent general survey. Though now in many respects inadequate owing to the wide and rapid development of science since its date, and never quite satisfactory, the general 'History of the Inductive Sciences,' by WHEWELL (3rd ed. 3 v. 1857), has not been superseded by any equally elaborate and scholarlike work; but the American 'History of Science' edited by Dr. H. S. WILLIAMS (Harp. 5 v. 1904) has the merit of freshness and lucidity, and comes down to the end of the last century. J. Marmery's 'The Progress of Science: Its Origin, Course, Promoters, and Results' (C. & H. 2nd ed. 1898) is a very helpful general record; and R. ROUTLEDGE's 'Popular History of Science' (Rout. 1881) is an eminently readable work. In German there is a good *Grundriss einer Geschichte der Naturwissenschaften* (Leip. 1896, etc.).

§ 2. Among the many interesting books covering periods and aspects of scientific progress biographically may specially be noted E. Clodd's 'Pioneers of Evolution, from Thales to Huxley' (Watts, rep.); Sir Oliver Lodge's 'Pioneers of Science' (Mac. 1892). Of great importance to the sociological student is Prof. A. WHITE's 'History of the Warfare of Science with Theology in Christendom' (Mac. 2 v. 1896). J. W. DRAPER's briefer 'History of the Conflict between Religion and Science' (I.S.S.: rev. rep. Watts) will serve for many.

The great scientific advances made in the nineteenth century are recorded in works named in Course IV, § 7, briefly traced in the address on 'Fifty Years of Science,' by Sir JOHN LUBBOCK, Lord Avebury (1890), and more fully in H. S. WILLIAMS's 'The Story of 19th Century Science' (Harp. 1900); A. E. IKIN's 'Recent Advances in Science' (S.M. 1902); LUCIEN POINCARÉ's 'The New Physics and its Evolution' (E. tr. I.S.S. 1907);

and W. C. D. WHETHAM'S 'Recent Developments of Physical Science' (Mur. 1904); and are criticised in Dr. A. R. WALLACE'S 'The Wonderful Century' (Son. new ed. 1903). The guiding principles of the advance are set forth in CLIFFORD'S 'Common Sense of the Exact Sciences'; STALLO'S 'Concepts of Modern Physics' (both I.S.S.); and Prof. KARL PEARSON'S 'Grammar of Science' (exp. ed. Black, 1900).

§ 3. The first to be constituted of the physical sciences was Astronomy, of which there are several good histories in English. The short anonymous 'History of Astronomy,' published about 1830 in the Library of Useful Knowledge, is a notably competent work; but the fuller records of JOHN NARRIEN, 'An Historical Account of the Origin and Progress of Astronomy' (1833; rep. 1850), and ROBERT GRANT, 'History of Astronomy' (1852), are likewise excellent. Later manuals of high competence are the 'History of Astronomy' by Prof. G. FORBES (Watts, 1909); the 'History of Astronomy' by Arthur BERRY (Mur. U.E.M.) and the 'History of Astronomy' by Walter W. BRYANT (Met. 1907). The progress of astronomy to 1900, finally, is ably set forth in Miss AGNES M. CLERKE'S 'History of Astronomy during the 19th Century' (Black, 4th ed. 1902). There is also a short French work, *L'astronomie au XIX^e Siècle*, by Prof. A. BOILLOT (1864), which sketches the whole history of the science to its date.

§ 4. The development of Mathematics before the present century can be studied in the 'Brief History of Mathematics' by Dr. KARL FINK (E. tr.; O.C.; 2nd ed. rev. 1903); or in the 'Short Account of the History of Mathematics' by W. W. R. BALF (Mac. 3rd ed. 1901).

§ 5. The history of Physics, partly covered in a number of the books named in § 1, but now being developed to an unforeseen extent, is separately handled for the past in F. CAJORI'S 'History of Physics in its Elementary Branches' (N.Y. 1899); in the French *Histoire de la physique* of J. C. POGGENDORF (1883); and in at least three German treatises—A. HELLER'S *Geschichte der Physik* (1882); F. ROSENBERGER'S *Geschichte der Physik* (3 Th. 1882-90); and E. GERLAND'S *Geschichte der Physik* (1892). Much of the earlier history of physics belongs to Italy, and there is in Italian an elaborate *Storia del metodo sperimentale in Italia* (Firenze, 5 t. 1891-98). Of Chemistry there are the concise popular 'History' by Sir E. THORPE (Watts, 1909, 2 v.) and standard histories by Dr. E. VON MEYER (E. tr. 2nd ed. Mac. 1898) and by Dr. HUGO BAUER (E. tr. Arnold, 1906). The past history of Mechanics is fully treated in 'The Science of Mechanics: A Critical and Historical Account of its Development,' by Prof. ERNST MACH, of Vienna (E. tr. K.P. 2nd ed. rev. 1902). There is

a compact 'History of Geology' by H. B. WOODWARD (Watts, 1911); and there are available an able 'History of Geology and Palæontology' by K. A. VON ZITTEL (E. tr. C.S.S.) and Sir A. GEIKIE's interesting volume on 'The Founders of Geology' (Mac. 1897).

§ 6. There is a good short 'History of Biology,' by Prof. L. C. Miall (Watts, 1911); and an excellent 'History of Botany' of J. VON SACHS (E. tr. Frowde, 1890). The history of Biology is further partly to be gathered from our Course on the History of Medicine, and from the 'Historical Sketch' prefixed to Darwin's 'Origin of Species.'

§ 7. The most rapidly developed of all the sciences in modern times, and the most rapidly advancing still, is that of Electricity, and for that there is a considerable literature. Interesting general accounts are supplied in J. Munro's 'Story of Electricity' (Newnes, 1896) and 'The Romance of Electricity' (R. T. Soc. 1893). There is a compendious German *Geschichte der Elektrizität*, by G. ALLBRECHT (1885); a fuller one by E. HOPPE (Leip. 1884; 622 pp.); and a French *Histoire de l'électricité*, by J. LE BRETON (1884). For the earlier stages of telegraphy see 'A History of Electric Telegraphy to the Year 1837,' by J. L. FAHIE (1884). The great progress made in the 19th c. is set forth in 'Electricity of To-day,' by Dr. C. R. GIBSON (S.S. & Co.); 'A Century of Electricity,' by T. C. MENDENHALL (Boston, 1887); 'Modern Views on Electricity,' by Sir O. LODGE (Mac. 1907); and 'The Age of Electricity,' by P. BENJAMIN (Cas. 1887). See also monographs on Edison, by W. and A. DICKSON (C. & W. 1894); on Hertz, by Sir O. Lodge (1894); on Tesla, by T. C. MARTIN (N.Y. 1894); and the early account of 'Wireless Telegraphy,' by S. G. BURROWS (Jack's Shilling Ser.).

§ 8. Of modern scientific developments the most notable are those indicated by the terms "Röntgen Rays" and "Radium," and both have been made the subject of a number of treatises. Brief and lucid expositions are furnished in 'Radium Explained' by Dr. W. HAMPSON (Jack's Shilling Ser.), who gives references to other works; 'A System of Radiography,' by W. J. BRUCE (Lewis, fol. 1907). See also Sir O. Lodge's Romanes Lecture, 'Modern Views on Matter' (Frowde, 1907), since which date speculation has greatly advanced. For practical developments, consult the vols. in the Science of To-day ser. (S.S. & Co.), and the C.U.P. Manual on 'The Conquest of the Air.'

HISTORY OF MEDICINE

§ 1. PROBABLY the best introduction to this subject is **E. T. Withington's 'Medical History of the Earliest Times'** (Scien. Pr. 1894); but there are also a good 'Short History of Medicine' by **CHARLES SINGER** (Cl. Pr. 1928); and a trans. of the useful German work of **J. H. BAAS**, 'Outlines of the History of Medicine' (N.Y. 1889). There is yet another 'Epitome of the History of Medicine,' by **ROSWELL PARK** (Philad. 1898); besides 'The Infancy of Medicine' by **DR. DAN MACKENZIE** (Mac. 1927). Among later surveys are:—'Magician and Leech: A Study in the Beginnings of Medicine, with special reference to Ancient Egypt,' by **WARREN R. DAWSON**, F.R.S.M., etc. (Met.); 'The Medicine Man: A Study in the Evolution of Shamanism,' by **DR. J. L. MADDOX** (Mac. N.Y.); 'The History of Medicine,' by **Prof. M. NEUBURGER** of Vienna (E. tr. O.U.P. 2 v.); and 'The History of Medicine from . . . the Pharaohs to the end of the 18th C.,' by **DR. C. G. CUMSTON** (K.P.).

§ 2. On ancient medicine the most abundant details are to be found in **FRANCIS ADAMS's** trans. of 'The Seven Books of Paulus Ægineta: With a Commentary Embracing a Complete View of the Knowledge Possessed by the Greeks, Romans, and Arabians on all Subjects Connected with Medicine and Surgery' (Sydenham Soc. 3 v. 1844-47). This is a work of extraordinary learning, by a Scotch country surgeon. See an account of Dr. Adams in **DR. JOHN BROWN's** 'Locke and Sydenham' (1866, and later). There is a short study on 'Ancient Egyptian Medicine,' by **DR. JAMES FINLAYSON** (Glasgow, 1893), and a good modern treatise on 'Arabian Medicine,' by **E. G. BROWNE** (C.U.P.).

§ 3. Many sidelights on medical history are to be had from the biographies of eminent physicians. Among these may be noted **SIR B. W. RICHARDSON's** 'Disciples of Æsculapius' (Hut. 2 v. 1900), which gives many clues; 'The Doctor's Oath' by **W. H. S. JONES**; 'The Physician in English History' (both C.U.P.); **SIR CLIFFORD ALLBUTT's** 'Historical Relation of Medicine and Surgery to the end of the 16th Century' (Mac. 1895); and the series

of biographies entitled 'The Masters of Medicine' (F.U.). J. THOMSON'S 'Account of the Life, Lectures, and Writings of W. Cullen' (Bld. 2 v. 1859) contains a good historical view of the systems in vogue during a century or two before Cullen's time—notably those of Stahl, Hoffmann, Haller, and Boerhaave. Yet further information is to be gathered from PUSCHMANN'S 'History of Medical Education' (E. tr. Lewis, 1891), and, for the modern period, from R. B. CARTER'S section on 'Medicine, 1837-87' in 'The Reign of Queen Victoria' (S.E. 2 v. 1887).

§ 4. Many studies have been made as to the history of special branches of the medical art. Among the most esteemed are the 'Lectures on the History of Physiology,' by Sir MICHAEL FOSTER (C.U.P. 1903); and AUGUST HIRSCH'S 'Handbook of Historical and Geographical Pathology,' tr. by Dr. C. Creighton (New Sydenham Soc. 1886). Dr. Creighton has further produced an important 'History of Epidemics in Britain' (C.U.P. 2 v. 1891-94); and there is further available the well-known work on 'The Epidemics of the Middle Ages' of J. F. C. HECKER (E. tr. by B. G. BABINGTON, Sydenham Soc. 1844). See, too, G. HENSLOW'S 'Medical Books of the 14th C.' (C. & H. 1899).

§ 5. On the vexed question of vaccination the careful reader will consult the learned and impartial research of Prof. E. M. CROOKSHANK, 'History and Pathology of Vaccination' (Lewis, 2 v. 1889); also the anti-vaccinationist history by WILLIAM WHITE (E. W. Allen, 1885); and Dr. CREIGHTON'S 'Jenner and Vaccination' (Son. 1889) and 'The Natural History of Cow-pox and Vaccinal Syphilis' (Cas. 1887).

§ 6. In the French and German literature of the subject may be noted the following: J. BOUILLET, *Précis d'histoire de la médecine* (1883); J. M. GUARDIA, *Histoire de la médecine* (1884); P. DIGNAT, *Histoire de la médecine* (1888); H. HAESAR, *Grundriss der Geschichte des Medicins* (1884); M. BARTELS, *Die Medicin der Naturvölker* (1894, etc.); MAURICE ALBERT, *Les médecins grecs à Rome* (1894); E. DUPOUY, *Le moyen âge médical* (1888), and the *Geschichte der medicinischen Wissenschaften in Deutschland* of A. HIRSCH (Munich, 1893). On the interesting subject of Arab medicine (§ 2) may be consulted the *Histoire de médecine arabe* of Dr. LUCIEN LECLERC (1876, 2 t.). On ancient Hindu medicine there is a volume of 'Studies,' by A. F. R. HOERNLE (Frowde, 1907), dealing with Osteology.

HISTORY OF THE INDUSTRIAL ARTS

§ 1. THE beginnings are broadly considered in most works on primitive man, but specially in 'The Origins of Invention,' by OTIS T. MASON (C.S.S.), and are further to be traced through the literature of Anthropology, dealt with in Course I. See in particular the 'Anthropology' of TYLOR; CLODD'S 'Story of Primitive Man'; JOLY'S 'Man before Metals,' and the works of Marett, Wilson, Stevens, Evans, Munro (specially instructive), Tylor, and Lubbock. See also, in Course LII, the works of O. T. Mason and Ploss (§ 1); in Course LIII those of Wallon and Doniol (§ 1); in Course IV, those of Schneider, Letourneau, and (§ 7) Mason, Beckmann, White, etc.; the 'Universal History' (ed. Hammerton) (§ 2); and the works of Wilhelm, Jones, and Childe (§ 4). There is further a good inquiry by A. ESPINAS, *Les origines de la technologie : Étude social* (1897).

§ 2. A helpful general view of the evolution of industrial arts from the prehistoric period was given in the two volumes on 'The Technical History of Commerce,' by Dr. JOHN YEATS (1872), of which the first deals with Prehistoric, Ancient, and Mediæval Industrial Art, and the second with Modern Industrial Art. On primitive industry see further, in the work of PESCHÉL on 'The Races of Man,' the section on 'The Industrial, Social, and Religious Stages of Development'; in LETOURNEAU'S 'Sociology' the sketch in bk. v, chap. 2; and in Ratzel and Waitz the similar sections. A valuable conspectus of primitive industry is given in Dr. G. SCHWEINFURTH'S 'Artes Africanæ' (1875, 4to). Other clues to the beginnings of industry are to be had from the records of travellers and missionaries.

§ 3. Among the histories of civilisation, that of Seignobos (IV, § 4) pays more attention to industrial progress than does that of Ducoudray; but full expositions of such progress are to be found in the German works on *Culturgeschichte* named in the same Course, § 2. On the progress of the industrial arts in the ancient world, further information is to be had in the Histories of Antiquity (Course III, §§ 5, 6); and those of Glotz and Louis

(§ 6). For French industrial development Monteil (Course XXII, § 3) is variously interesting; and for English, the shorter work of Prof. GIBBINS, 'The Industrial History of England' (28th ed. rev. and enl. by J. F. Rees, 1925), followed on a larger scale by his 'Industry in England: Histor. Outlines' (11th ed. both Met.). A good deal of information is to be had from the copious history of 'Social England,' and from Dr. Cunningham's 'Growth of English Industry and Commerce,' before mentioned. There is further an interesting special study by Baron J. DE BRAYE, 'Industrial Arts of the Anglo-Saxons' (Son. 1893, 4to).

§ 4. In the way of special studies of lines of industrial history, again, German research has been active—e.g. *Die Geschichte des Eisens* of Dr. L. BECK (Bd. I, 1884), bringing the record to the year 1500; *Die Geschichte der Textilkunst* of F. FISCHBACH (1883); and the translated work of Schulze-Gävernitz on the Cotton Trade. In English there is a competent work on 'The Steam Engine and its Inventors,' by R. L. GALLOWAY (Mac. 1881); and, by the same author, 'A History of Coal Mining in Great Britain' (same, 1882); as well as G. A. SEKON's 'The Evolution of the Steam Locomotive, 1803-1898' (1899). W. FLETCHER's 'History of Steam Locomotion on Roads' (Spon, 1891) comes just to the beginning of the new development of automotor cars.

In English, naturally, there have been many histories of the great export industry of Cotton, as:—'The Cotton Industry of Great Britain,' by Dr. A. URE (2 v. 1836); 'History of the Cotton Manufacture in Great Britain,' by EDWARD BAINES (1835); 'The Cotton Trade,' by G. MCHENRY, which studies the effects of slavery (1863); and 'The Lancashire Cotton Industry: A Study in Economic Development,' by Sir SYDNEY J. CHAPMAN—a record of special competence (Manch. U.P. 1904). H. SCRIVENER's 'Comprehensive History of the Iron Trade throughout the World' (1841) brings down the conspectus to the beginning of the expansive modern period; and the handbook of J. S. JEANS, 'The Iron Trade of Great Britain' (Met.), indicates later developments. 'Glass-making in England,' by H. J. POWELL (C.U.P.), points to the far-reaching history of that art. On printing, see the 'Short History of the Art of Printing,' by R. A. PEDDIE (Grafton, 1927); on shorthand, 'The History of Shorthand Writing,' by M. LEVY (1862).

§ 5. Not primarily industrial in aim, but important to industry, are the modern inventions of the "velocipede," the "motor-car" or automobile, and the airship. Of these the earlier histories are compendiously told in 'Motors and Motoring,' by Prof. HENRY SPOONER (Jack's Shilling Ser.); and in 'Balloons, Air-Ships, and Flying Machines,' by GERTRUDE BACON (same). See also the

French work of H. de GRAFFIGNY, *Les moteurs, anciens et modernes* (1881), and C. JARROTT's 'Ten Years of Motors and Motor-Racing' (Richards, 1906). The later history is to be followed in the books indicated at the close of Courses III and LV; and in 'A Narrative History of Aviation,' by JOHN GOLDSTROM (Mac. N.Y.).

Among the most important of modern industrial arts and crafts are those of electricity and photography. See Course LIX, § 7. Further developments are strictly parts of the history of science, which is continuous. That of photography may be gathered from the 'Practical Pictorial Photography' of A. H. HINTON (Hazell, 1910). 'The Film till Now,' by PAUL ROTH (Cape, 1930), is announced as "the first serious study of the film."

§ 6. Among biographies bearing on modern industrial progress are to be noted SAMUEL SMILES's 'Lives of Boulton and Watt,' which gives an account of the introduction of the steam engine; his 'Life of George Stephenson,' which similarly deals with the introduction of the locomotive; his 'Lives of the Engineers' (5 v.); and his 'Life of James Nasmyth' (all Mur.); also W. POLE's 'Life of Sir William Siemens' (same). In French there is an interesting *Histoire de quatre inventeurs français au dix-neuvième siècle*, by Baron ERNOUF. For older inventions generally there is available the above-named 'History of Inventions' of JOHANN BECKMANN (E. tr. B.L.); which is supplemented by W. H. DOOLITTLE's 'Inventions in the Century' (Chambers' 19th C. Ser. 1905). See also such works as 'Spon's Dictionary of Engineering' (4 v.); the Dictionaries of Arts, Manufactures, and Sciences of Ure and Brande & Cox, and the later cyclopædias and handbooks. As to engineering, a general idea of modern progress may be had from 'Sixty-Three Years of Engineering,' by Sir FRANCIS FOX (Mur.). There is an interesting work by G. SUTHERLAND on 'Twentieth-Century Inventions: A Forecast' (Lmns. 1901).

§ 7. Further general views on the growth and nature of modern industries may be obtained from 'The Romance of Industry and Invention,' by R. COCHRANE (Chambers 1896); 'The Romance of Modern Commerce,' by J. BURNLEY (Cas. 1889); A. WATTS's 'Scientific Industries Explained' (1881); and BEETON's 'Dictionary of Industries and Commerce' (W.L. 1888).

§ 8. Midway between the industrial and the fine arts lie those of pottery, tapestry, and decorative work in gold and silver. For these may be consulted 'A History of Ancient Pottery' (Mur. 2 v.), based on the 'History of Ancient Pottery,' by Dr. S. BIRCH (Mur. 1873); 'The Story of the Potter,' by C. F. BINNS (Newnes, 1898); the *Histoire de la céramique* of E. GARNIER (Tours, 1882); the 'Old Chinese Porcelain' of EGAN MEW (1909, Messrs. Jack), and A. L. HETHERINGTON's 'The Pottery and Porcelain Factories

of China' (Rout.), which treats the subject historically; 'The First Century of English Porcelain' by W. MOORE-BINNS (H. & B. 1906), and the 'English Pottery and Porcelain' of E. A. DOWMAN (4th ed. enl. by A. D. GINN; Gill, 1904).

Other interesting fields are covered in the *Histoire générale de la tapisserie* of E. MUNTZ (1878, fol.); and the *Histoire de l'orfèvrerie . . . jusqu'à nos jours* of F. DE LASTERIE (1875). The 'History of Tapestry from the Earliest Times to the Present Day,' by W. G. THOMSON (H. & S. 1930), is necessarily costly in respect of its illustrations, but is very comprehensive.

Under the present heading, too, may be noted two short works on decoration: R. MÉNARD, *Décoration en Égypte* (1884, 76 pp.), and G. DIERCKS, *Das arabische Ornament* (1883, *Sammlung Kunstgewerblicher Vorträge*, 32 pp.), and the following general surveys: W. N. BROWN, 'A History of Decorative Art' (1900); H. BALFOUR, 'The Evolution of Decorative Art' (Per. 1893); E. MOLINIER, *Histoire des arts appliquées à l'industrie du 5e à la fin du 18e siècle* (1896, etc. fol.); F. LITCHFIELD, 'Illustrated History of Furniture' (rev. ed., Truslove, 1907); A. JACQUEMART, 'A History of Furniture,' ed. by Mrs. Bury Palliser (Reeves, 1907); R. GLAZIER's 'Manual of Historic Ornament' (Batsford, 1906); H. HAVARD, *Histoire des styles, etc.* (2 t. fol. 1899-1900).

§ 9. There are various monographs on the industrial arts of different countries—e.g. 'The Art Manufactures of India,' by TRAILOKYANĀTHA (Calc. 1888); G. M. URBANI DE GHELTOF, *Les arts industriels à Venise* (Venice, 1885); J. J. A. WORSAAK, 'The Industrial Arts of Denmark' (S.K. Mus.). See also, for Japan, Course XXXVII, § 6.

§ 10. Elaborate works have been produced on the history of furniture-making in England, as:—O. BRACKETT, 'An Encyclopædia of English Furniture,' with 300 plates (Benn: who publishes a long series of *Chats* on all manner of wares, by A. Hayden and other experts); T. ARTHUR STRANGE, 'English Furniture, Decoration, etc., during the 17th, 18th, and 19th Centuries' (1900, fol.); 'A History of English Furniture,' by P. MACQUOID (Medici Soc. 4 v.); G. O. WHEELER, 'Old English Furniture' (Gill, 1907); and J. A. HEATON, 'Furniture and Decoration in England during the 18th Century' (Bumpus, 2 v. fol. 1892). Works on French furniture are numerous, e.g. A. SAGLIO's 'French Furniture' (Newnes, 1907); and there is the general 'Encyclopædia of Furniture' for many countries, ed. by Dr. H. SCHMITZ (Benn). 'The Gentle Art of Faking Furniture' by H. CESCINSKY (C. & W.) has industrial as well as ethical interest.

HISTORIES OF THE FINE ARTS

I.—ARCHITECTURE

THE term "arts" covers alike the "fine arts" and the "industrial arts," and the former to some extent historically grew out of the latter; but it is convenient to group and trace them separately; and at least one of the former, music, originated artistically, and not industrially. The anthropological beginnings of all are set forth in some of the works named in the next Course, § 1; but further light is to be had from the work of VIOLETT-LE-DUC, 'The Habitations of Men in All Ages' (E. tr. 1876). To fix the order of genesis is not necessary to the purpose of these Courses; but we may begin with architecture as that which first reached a high development. It is here considered historically, not professionally.

§ 1. In English there are available the primer 'Architecture,' by A. L. N. RUSSELL (Har.); 'The Architect in History,' by MARTIN BRIGGS (Cl. Pr. 1927); the comprehensive treatise, 'Architecture,' by Sir T. G. JACKSON (Mac. illust.); 'Architecture,' by C. BARMAN, in Benn's 6d. ser.; and, among older books, the 'Short History of Architecture,' by A. L. TUCKERMAN (1887); the compendious 'Guide to the Study of the History of Architecture,' by E. J. TARVER (1888), which gives many bibliographical references; the 'Elementary History of Architecture,' by N. D'ANVERS—i.e. Mrs. Bell (Low, 1881); the short 'Story of Architecture,' by C. T. MATHEWS (N.Y. 1896); and R. STURGIS'S 'European Architecture: A Historical Study' (Mac. 1896); besides a good illustrated 'History of Architecture,' by B. and B. F. FLETCHER (Batsford, 1896). Finally, there is the elaborate 'History of Architecture,' by J. FERGUSSON ('Ancient and Medieval,' 2 v. 1893; 'Modern Styles,' 2 v. 1891, Mur.).

The English reader is thus well catered for, but among French and German works may be mentioned the *Histoire d'architecture* of A. CHOISY (2 t. 1899) and the standard *Geschichte der Architectur* of W. LÜBKE (2 Bde. 1884-86).

§ 2. On Egyptian architecture there is a good guide in '**The Architecture of Ancient Egypt**,' by **Edward Bell** (Bell), whose monographs on 'Prehellenic Architecture in the Ægean' and 'Early Architecture in Western Asia' (same) have an obvious kindred interest. There is an old monograph by **G. WILKINSON**, '**The Architecture of Ancient Egypt**' (1850); but later knowledge is embodied in the '**Egyptian Archæology**' of **G. MASPERO** (E. tr. rev. ed. 1895).

§ 3. Greek and Roman architecture are of course dealt with in the general histories; but there are various treatises dealing separately with each, and especially with that of Greece. '**A Handbook of Greek and Roman Architecture**' by **D. S. ROBERTSON** (C.U.P.) is a good survey. The short '**Architecture**' of **A. M. Brooks**, of Indiana Univ. (Har.) deals with the classic; and '**The Foundations of Classic Architecture**,' by **H. L. WARREN**, and vol. i of '**Daedalus and Thespis**,' by **W. MILLER** (both Mac. N.Y.), are competent and well-illustrated treatises. Here, again, **E. Bell** is helpful with his '**Hellenic Architecture**' (Bell). Vol. i of **R. Sturgis's** '**History of Architecture**' (Batsford, 1907) deals with "Antiquity" in general; and there is a historic survey of '**The Architecture of Greece and Rome**,' by **W. J. ANDERSON** and **R. P. SPIERS** (same, 1907). Besides the work of **Tyrwhitt** (§ 4) may be noted *L'architecture grecque*, by **V. LALOUX** (1888); the *Études sur l'architecture grecque* of **A. CHOISY** (1884), and **E. COURROYER's** *L'architecture romaine* (1888). See also the works on classical art specified in the following Course.

§ 4. The transition from ancient to modern architecture is made through the Byzantine, as to which see: '**Byzantine and Romanesque Architecture**' by **Sir T. G. JACKSON** (C.U.P. 2 v.); **C. F. M. TEXIER** and **R. P. PULLAN**, '**Byzantine Architecture**' (1864, fol.); and **Prof. T. ROGER SMITH** and **J. SLATER's** '**Classic and Early Christian Architecture**' (Low, Handbooks ser.). In the same connection may be studied '**Greek and Gothic**,' by **R. S. J. TYRWHITT** (S.E. 1881); and **G. CLAUSSE's** *Basiliques chrétiennes : Italie, Sicile* (2 t. 1893).

§ 5. The great field of architectural expatriation is that of the "Gothic." On this see '**Gothic Architecture in England and France**,' by **G. H. WEST** (Bell, 2nd ed. 1927); **S. GARDNER's** '**Guide to English Gothic Architecture**' (C.U.P. 2nd ed.); **Sir T. G. JACKSON's** '**Gothic Architecture in France, England, and Italy**' (C.U.P. 2 v.); the '**A B C of Gothic Architecture**' of **J. H. PARKER** (2nd ed. 1882); **C. H. MOORE's** '**Gothic Architecture**' (Mac. 1890); the handbook on '**Gothic and Renaissance Architecture**,' by **Prof. T. R. SMITH** and **E. J. POYNTER** (Low); **M. H. BLOXAM's** '**Principles of Gothic**

Ecclesiastical Architecture' (Bell, 3 v. 11th ed. 1882); GILBERT SCOTT's 'Lectures on Medieval Architecture' (Mur. 2 v. 1878-79); W. LÜBKE's 'Ecclesiastical Art in Germany' (E. tr. 1870); and the expert 'Lectures on Architecture' of VIOLET-LE-DUC (E. tr. 2 v. 1877-81).

§ 6. British developments are noted in all the chief works, and separately dealt with in T. D. ATKINSON's 'Short History of English Architecture' (Met. 1904); and CYRIL DAVENPORT's 'Architecture in England' (same); in THOMAS RICKMAN's 'Architecture in England from the Conquest to the Reformation' (1835); and more comprehensively in T. H. TURNER's sumptuous treatise, 'Domestic Architecture in England in the Middle Ages' (4 v. 1877-83). See also T. RICKMAN's 'Attempt to Discriminate the Styles of Architecture in England,' with additions by J. H. PARKER (7th ed. 1881). Among later works may be noted E. S. PRIOR's 'History of Gothic Architecture in England' (Bell, 1900, 4to); J. F. HUNNEWELL's 'England's Chronicle in Stone' (Mur. 1886); and T. L. WORTHINGTON's 'Remnants of Old English Architecture' (1888, fol.). T. D. Atkinson has also produced a 'Glossary of Terms used in English Architecture' (Met. 1906). 'Modern English Architecture' is a careful monograph by CHARLES MARRIOTT (C. & H.).

On English Renaissance work there are three treatises—the elaborate 'History of Renaissance Architecture in England, 1500-1800,' by R. BLOMFELD (Bell, 1897, 2 v. 4to); the 'Short History of Renaissance Architecture in England,' by the same writer (same, 1900); and J. A. GOTCH's 'Architecture of the Renaissance in England,' in 2 v. fol. (Batsford, 1891-94). Dr. MONCURE CONWAY's 'Travels in South Kensington' (1882) make a delightful introduction to the subject.

Scottish architecture is very fully and competently dealt with in 'Castellated and Domestic Architecture in Scotland,' by D. MACGIBBON (Douglas, 3 v. 1886-87); and in 'Ecclesiastical Art in Scotland,' by the same writer in collaboration with T. ROSS (same, 3 v. 1895-97). See also Dr. W. M. MACKENZIE's 'The Medieval Castle in Scotland' (Met. 1927), an important historical research.

§ 7. The architectural literature of France is particularly abundant. Of special value is the great *Dictionnaire raisonnée de l'architecture française du 11e au 16e Siècle* (10 t. 1856-68), by VIOLET-LE-DUC. In English there is available the American work of J. F. Hunnewell, 'Historical Monuments of France' (Boston, 1884). Among the modern French works on French and other Gothic architecture may be specified those of E. BARBEROT, *Histoire des styles de l'architecture* (2 t. 1891); L.

PALUSTRE, *L'architecture de la Renaissance* (1892); and C. EULART, *Origines françaises de l'architecture gothique en Italie* (Athens, 1894).

§ 8. Special attention has been given to Italian architecture in 'A History of Architecture in Italy,' by CHARLES A. CUMMINGS, with intr. by R. A. Cram (Benn, 2 v.); in W. J. ANDERSON'S 'The Architecture of the Renaissance in Italy' (Batsford, 1898); and in R. CUTTANEO'S 'Architecture in Italy from the 6th to the 11th Century' (F.U. 4to, 1896). There is also a short manual by J. WOOD BROWN on 'Italian Architecture' (Siegle, 1905).

German architecture naturally receives full attention in the works of Lübke; but it is also dealt with in the works on Gothic.

On Indian architecture there is a special study by E. B. HAVELL, 'The Ancient and Medieval Architecture of India: A Study of Indo-Aryan Civilisation' (Mur.); and on the exceptional evolution of Japan, largely determined by the danger to strong buildings from earthquakes, we have the 'Impressions of Japanese Architecture,' by RALPH A. CRAM (Har. 6o illustrns.).

HISTORIES OF THE FINE ARTS

II.—SCULPTURE, PAINTING, DRAWING, AND REPRODUCTION

§ 1. THE prehistoric forms of art are dealt with in many of the works included in Course I, as in Mr. **Burkitt's** little book (H.U.L.) on '**Our Forerunners**,' and his '**Prehistory**'; also in Prof. G. **BALWIN BROWN's** '**The Art of the Cave Man**' (Mur. 1931: many illustrns.). E. A. Parkyn, '**Prehistoric Art**' (Lmns. 1915), is another comprehensive treatise; and S. **REINACH's** *Répertoire de l'Art Quaternaire* (Leroux, 1913) is a complete collection up to its date. '**Rock Paintings from Central Africa**'—72 coloured collotypes from drawings copied by G. W. Stow, with introd. and notes by **DOROTHEA F. BLEEK** (Met. 1930)—is one of the latest additions to these interesting records, presenting "modern primitive" work.

§ 2. Perhaps the best approach and stimulus to the study of art in general is the French scholar **Salomon Reinach's** widely popular illustrated work '**Apollo**' (E. tr. Hei. 1907), or, alternatively, **Helen Gardner's** '**Art through the Ages: an Introduction to its History and Significance**' (Bell: 679 illustrns.). The historic beginnings of all the fine arts lie close together; and they are set forth connectedly in a number of works of the last generation, notably in **RUDOLF MENGE's** '**Introduction to Ancient Art**' (E. tr. 1887); **E. GROSSE's** '**The Beginnings of Art**' (E. tr. App. 1897); **YRJÖ HIRN's** '**The Origins of Art**' (Mac. 1900); **Sir W. M. CONWAY's** '**The Dawn of Art in the Ancient World**' (Per. 1891); '**Evolution in Art**' by **RUTH DE ROCHEMONT** (Mac. N.Y.); **A. C. Haddon's** '**Evolution in Art**' (C.S.S. 1895); and **H. BALFOUR's** '**Evolution of the Decorative Art of the Modern Races of Mankind**' (Per. 1893). See also the '**Elementary History of Sculpture**,' by **N. D'ANVERS** (Low, 1881); and the '**Elementary History of Art**' (Low, 3rd ed. 1889), by the same writer.

§ 3. Ancient art in general is dealt with comprehensively in **F. VON REBER's** '**History of Ancient Art**' (E. tr. Low, 1882). On Greek art there is a whole library, out of which may be selected **F. B. Tarbell's** short '**History of Greek Art**'

(Mac. 1896); Sir C. WALSTON'S 'Greek Sculpture and Modern Art,' his monographs on Alcamenes and Pheidias, and 'Notes on Greek Sculpture' (all C.U.P.); the recent monograph, 'Pheidias,' by J. G. HOWARD (Mac. N.Y.); WINCKELMANN'S 'History of Ancient Art' (E. tr. 2 v. Low, 1881)—a famous German product of the 18th c. still worth study; G. REDFORD'S 'Manual of Ancient Sculpture' (Low, 2nd ed. 1886); M. COLLIGNON'S *Histoire de la sculpture grecque* (1892); A. FURTWÄNGLER'S 'Masterpieces of Greek Sculpture' (Hei. 1894); P. PARIS'S 'Manual of Ancient Sculpture' (E. tr. augm. by Miss J. Harrison; 1890); and W. LÜBKE'S 'History of Sculpture' (E. tr. 2 v. 1872), which, however, includes modern sculpture. On sculpture ancient and modern there is a short 'History of Sculpture' by Dr. H. N. FOWLER (Mac. N.Y.). M. Reinach has compiled a valuable *Répertoire de la statuaire grecque et romaine* (3 t. 1903-4); and a *Répertoire des vases peints grecs et étrusques* (2 t. 1899); and there is an elaborate German *Griechische Kunstgeschichte*, by H. VON BRUNN (1893, etc.).

Of special importance for classic art is the trans. of 'Pliny's Chapters on the History of Art,' by K. JEX BLAKE (Mac. 1896), with commentary and introduction by E. Sellers, and add. notes by Dr. H. L. Schwabe. The painting of the classic age, to which Pliny is a guide, is studiously surveyed in 'Ancient Painting,' by Miss M. H. SWINDER of Yale (Milford, 1930).

§ 4. On Egyptian art (see Course XVIII, § 2) there is a general survey by JEAN CAPART of Brussels (E. tr. A. & U.); a monograph by C. RYAN, 'Egyptian Art' (C. & H. 1894); another by W. M. FLINDERS PETRIE, 'Elementary Handbook of Egyptian Decorative Art' (Met. 1895); and one on 'Egyptian Archæology' by G. MASPERO (E. tr. Grevel, 1895). But the most comprehensive surveys of ancient art, apart from that of the "classic" period, are those of the monumental series of works by M. G. PERROT and C. CHUPIEZ, all tr. in English: 'History of Art in Ancient Egypt' (C. & H. 2 v. 1883); 'Phœnicia' (2 v. 1885); 'Chaldea and Assyria' (2 v. 1884); 'Sardinia, Judea, Syria, etc.' (2 v. 1890); 'Phrygia, Lydia, etc.' (1892); 'Persia' (1892); 'Mycenean Art' (2 v. 1894). In the series of 'Monographs on Eastern Art' is one on 'Babylonian Art' by S. HARCOURT-SMITH (Benn). There is also a French study by A. GAYET, *L'art persan* (1895).

§ 5. For the early Christian period there is a 'History of Early Christian Art,' by the Rev. E. L. CUTTS (S.P.C.K. 1893); but there are more systematic treatises in French and German: F. BOURNAND, *Histoire de l'art chrétien* (2 t. 1891); F. X. KRAUS, *Geschichte der christlichen Kunst* (1895, etc.); F. R. SALMON, *Histoire de l'art chrétien au dix premiers siècles* (Lille, 1891). See also the monograph of C. BAYET, *L'art byzantin* (1883); that

of C. DIEHL, *L'art byzantin dans l'Italie méridionale*; the *Histoire de l'art byzantin* of N. KONDAKOV (1886, etc. fol.); and F. von Reber's 'History of Medieval Art' (E. tr. N.Y. 1887). M. Reinach, again, supplies a *Répertoire de peintures du moyen âge et de la Renaissance, 1280—1580* (1905, etc.), and a survey of *La sculpture en Europe avant les influences gréco-romaines* (1896).

§ 6. In French there is a good short *Histoire des beaux arts* by R. PEYRE (1894), and a more elaborate *Histoire des beaux arts* by R. MÈNARD (3 t. 1882); in German a short *Handbuch der Kunstgeschichte* by E. FRANTZ, and a very full one by A. H. SPRINGER (4 Bde. 1898). There is also a translation of the older 'History of Art' of W. LÜBKE (S.E. 2 v. 1868). For the general history of painting the standard authority was long WOLTMANN and WOERMANN'S 'History of Painting' (E. tr. ed. by Sidney Colvin, 2 v. 1880-87). More specialised theoretical studies are 'An Introduction to the language of Drawing and Painting' by ARTHUR POPE (Milford, 2 v. 1931); 'Modern Art: Why, What, and How' by H. R. POORE (Put. 1931); and 'The Lure of the Fine Arts' by F. C. TILNEY (C. & H. 1931).

§ 7. On the great art period of the Renaissance there is again a large literature. 'The Renaissance,' by Dr. E. F. JACOB (Benn's 6d. ser.), and Prof. ADOLFO VENTURI'S 'Short History of Italian Art' (Mac.) give good general views, as do 'The Birth of Western Painting,' by R. BYRON and D. T. RICE, with 96 illustrns. from Mistra and Mount Athos, Giotto and Duccio, etc. (Rout.), and the *Histoire de l'art pendant la renaissance en Italie et en France*, by E. MUNTZ (1888, etc.). A good book on the subject is H. WOLFFLIN'S 'The Art of the Italian Renaissance' (E. tr. Hei. 1903). Two standard works are the classic 'History of Painting in Italy' by LANZI (E. tr. B.L. 3 v.), and the much more exact modern researches of CROWE and CAVALCASELLE, 'A New History of Painting in Italy from the 2nd to the 16th Century' (Mur. 3 v.) and 'History of Painting in North Italy from the 14th to the 16th Century' (same, 2 v. 1871).

But even these works are to be read under correction of the more scientific investigations of the modern school which rose with G. MORELLI, whose 'Italian Painters' (Mur. 2 v.) and 'Italian Masters in German Galleries' (Bell, 1883) are trans. Some of the most important results in fresh discrimination and ascription may be gathered from BERNHARD BERENSON'S manuals, 'The Florentine Painters of the Renaissance,' 'The Venetian Painters of the Renaissance,' 'The Central Italian Painters of the Renaissance,' and 'The North Italian Painters of the Renaissance' (Put. 1894-1907), and from his two volumes of essays entitled 'The Study and Criticism of Italian Art' (Bell, 1901-2), which

are of capital importance in their field, notably as to Giorgione and Correggio. The same writer's 'Lorenzo Lotto' (Bell, rev. ed. 1905) is a model of scientific research and criticism. His method carries much useful suggestion to students in other departments; and his latest vol. 'Italian Pictures of the Renaissance' (Cl. Pr. 1932), a careful list of located paintings, has an interesting preface and 'Explanations.'

Italian sculpture has been specially treated of in 'Italian Sculpture of the Renaissance,' by L. J. FREEMAN (Mac. N.Y.).

§ 8. Etching is an important modern development, the course of which may be broadly followed in P. G. HAMERTON'S 'Etcher's Handbook' (3rd ed. 1881), 'Etching and Etchers' (rep. 1876), and 'The Etchings of Rembrandt' (1894); 'A History of British and American Etching,' by JAMES LAVER (Met.).

Drawing may be historically followed in the Benn ser. of 'Drawings of Great Masters,' including sep. studies of Dutch, Flemish, German, and Italian periods by MELLAERT, MUCHALL-VIEBROCK, K. T. PARKER, and A. E. POPHAM (joint-editors). See also 'Titian's Drawings,' by BARON VON HADELN (Mac. 30 pl.).

For further special studies see 'The Art of Florence: An Interpretation' and 'Venice and its Art,' by Dr. H. H. POWERS (both Mac. N.Y.); 'Giorgione: A New Study,' by Sir MARTIN CONWAY (Benn); and the leading monographs on the great artists of the Renaissance: J. ADDINGTON SYMONDS, 'Life of Michelangelo Buonarroti' (Nimmo, 2 v. 1893); E. MUNTZ'S 'Raphael' (E. tr. C. & H.) and 'Leonardo da Vinci' (E. tr. Hei. 1898, 4to); McCURDY'S 'Literary Remains of Leonardo da Vinci' (Bell, 1904); Crowe and Cavalcaselle's 'Titian' (Mur.); R. A. M. STEVENSON'S 'Velasquez' (Bell, 1895); CURTIS'S 'Velasquez and Murillo' (Low); JUSTI'S 'Velasquez' (E. tr. 1889) and 'Murillo' (1892; not trans.); BERNETE'S 'Velasquez' (Met. 1906). See also 'Claude Lorrain and Modern Art,' by A. M. HIND (C.U.P.).

§ 9. ÉMILE MICHEL has important compilations on Rubens (2 v.) and Rembrandt (both tr. Hei.), the two principal artists of the Flemish and Dutch schools; and there is one on Vandyke by LIONEL CUST (Unicorn Press, 2 pts. 1903). There are further numerous monographs of the last generation, notably a number of attractive little volumes published by Messrs. Bell, and another series published by Messrs. Duckworth, of high general merit.

§ 10. On the art of the different nations there are many separate studies. A. CLUTTON-BROCK provides 'An Introduction to French Painting' (C. & H.); and Sir C. J. HOLMES has produced an excellent series of comprehensive studies on the Italian, Dutch, German, Spanish, French, and British Schools as repre-

sented in the National Gallery (3 v. all Bell). In the older Handbooks of Art History ser. are volumes on 'Spanish and French Painting' by GERARD SMITH; on 'German, Flemish, and Dutch Painting' by H. J. W. BUXTON and E. J. POYNTER. See also Kugler's Handbooks of the German, Flemish, and Dutch Schools. Other useful historical surveys are A. R. WILLARD's 'History of Modern Italian Art' (Lmns. 1900); F. BOURNAND's *Histoire de l'art en France* (1891); E. S. PRIOR's 'Eight Chapters on English Medieval Art' (C.U.P.), and the recent 'American Graphic Art,' by F. WEITENKAMF (Mac. N.Y.), and SAMUEL ISHAM's 'History of American Painting,' a sumptuous work (Mac. N.Y.).

§ 11. English art, primarily derivative, may be profitably studied through the 3rd vol. of Sir C. J. HOLMES (§ 10). Prof. E. M. O'R. Diekey's 'Picture Book of British Art' (Bell) is a compendious and attractive survey. High praise has been given to Sir Robert Witt's 'How to look at Pictures' (Bell, 10th ed. 35 illustrns.), which is at points a useful corrective to the eloquent teaching of Ruskin (Course XIII, § 16). See also 'The Approach to Painting' by THOMAS BODKIN (Bell). References to monographs on, or Lives of, British (and other) artists are given in a number of the works above named, and a full record in the rev. ed. of 'Bryan's Dictionary of Painters and Engravers,' now a highly authoritative work (Bell; 5 v.). 'Evolution in Modern Art,' by FRANK RUTTER (Har.), is a study in painting.

§ 12. For Japan see Dr. E. HART's 'The Historic Arts of Japan' (Mur.); for India, E. B. HAVELL's 'Indian Sculpture and Painting' and 'Handbook of Indian Art' (both Mur.). See also Course XXXVIII, § 3, and above, § 4, as to Persia.

Chinese art bulks chiefly in that of ceramics, carvings, bronzes, and furniture, and may be studied in the competent 'Chinese Art' of R. L. HOBSON, presented in all its forms, in 100 plates in colour (Benn). His sumptuous 'Wares of the Ming Dynasty' and 'The Later Ceramic Wares of China' (same) are splendid productions. Still more sumptuous is the Catalogue of the George Eumorphoulos Collection (Benn, 6 v. issued); the catalogues of 'Chinese Frescoes,' and of 'Chinese, Corean, and Siamese Paintings,' edited by LAURENCE BINYON of the British Museum; and the further 'Catalogue of the Chinese and Corean Bronzes, Sculpture, Jades, Jewellery and other Objects,' ed. by W. PERCEVAL YETTS (same; in prog.).

HISTORIES OF THE FINE ARTS

III.—Music

§ 1. THE history of music has latterly become a much-specialised study; and the O.U.P. presents us with 'The Oxford History of Music' in 7 vols. (1902-29: *Intro.* ed. by P. C. BUCK, 1929; i, ii, 'The Polyphonic Period,' 300-1600, by H. E. WOODRIDGE; iii, 'The 17th Cent.,' by Sir HUBERT PARRY; iv, by J. A. FULLER-MAITLAND, 'Age of Bach and Handel'; v, 'The Viennese Period,' by Sir W. H. HADOW; vi, 'The Romantic Period,' by E. DANNREUTHER—the last four being the first written). On a shortened scale, 'The Growth of Music,' by H. C. COLLES (*Cl. Pr.* 3 v. or 3 in 1), proceeds from the Troubadours to the 19th c. 'The Listener's History of Music' by Sir W. H. HADOW (3 v.) and the 'Miniature History of Music' (both O.U.P.) cater competently for the "listening-in" world. The 'Concise History of Music' by the Rev. H. G. BONAVIDA HUNT (Bell, 25th ed.) is still very serviceable.

§ 2. Some of the other treatises of the last generation may still be found instructive. EMIL NAUMANN's German 'History of Music' (E. tr. 2 v. Cas. 1898-1900), which has been repeatedly produced in a popular serial form, with many illustrations, is perhaps still the best compendious account of the subject available to English readers. An evolutionary view of the general subject is given in W. J. HENDERSON's 'How Music Developed' (Mur. 1899), and in Parry's 'The Evolution of the Art of Music' (I.S.S.), a thoroughly sound and scientific work so far as it goes, though not covering the latest developments of music. 'The Musical Faculty, its Origins and Processes,' by W. WALLACE (Mac.), is a more recent study of great interest.

The older histories of Hawkins and Burney have still an interest for the specialist; but the more recent 'History of Music' by J. F. ROWBOTHAM (3 v. 1885-87) is an able and learned though somewhat speculative work, throwing much light on primitive music, but coming down only to the Troubadours. His 'History of Music' in 1 v. (Bentley, 1893) is a compression

of the other, leaving out all its references as well as much of its matter. Another helpful survey is 'The Growth and Development of Music' by E. DICKINSON (1906), each chapter having an annotated guide to the literature; and in Murray's Musical Series there is an 'Illustrated History of Music' by T. TAPPER and P. GOETSCHUS. GROVE'S 'Dictionary of Music and Musicians,' in its later form (Mac. 3rd ed. 5 v. ed. by H. C. Colles) is not easily to be over-praised.

§ 3. Germany in the last age produced a number of scholarly and copious histories, as those of AMBROS (4 Bde. 1862-78, exp. by LANGHAUS 1882-87); HUGO RIEMANN's later *Handbuch* (1904, etc.); and A. REISSMANN's *Allgemeine Geschichte* (3 Bde. 1863-64); and France the *Histoire* of F. CLEMENT and the *Histoire générale* of F. J. FETIS (6 t. 1869-76), which had in their time standard rank. On the later Continental histories we do not here pronounce; but the older are themselves part of the history of music.

§ 4. As in other lines of evolution, the history of music is to be studied in periods. On the deeply interesting problem of "Primitive Music" the standard authority apparently remains R. WALLASCHEK's work of that title (Lmns. 1893). Somewhat akin as regards the remoteness of the subject from present-day music is KIESEWETTER's *Die Musik der Araber* (1842), a very careful study; and there is merit also in CARL ENGEL's old work 'The Music of the Most Ancient Nations' (Mur. 1864).

On ancient Greek music there is a valuable research by D. B. MONRO, 'The Modes of Ancient Greek Music' (Cl. Pr. 1894), presenting results which modify some old opinions. In German there is an interesting work by R. WESTPHAL, *Die Musik des griechischen Alterthums* (1883, pp. 354); and a ponderous one by the same writer in collaboration with A. ROSSBACH, *Theorie der musikalischen Künste der Hellenen* (3 Bde. 1885-89).

The best account in English of the growth of medieval music is in vols. i and ii of the 'Oxford History.' In French there is an original and valuable study by GEVAERT, *La mélodie antique dans le chant de l'Eglise* (1895). The development of Italian music may be specially studied in E. NAUMANN's *Die italienischen Tondichter* (1876) and R. A. STREATFEILD's 'Masters of Italian Music' (1895); and there is a very interesting and industrious survey by E. VAN DER STRAETEN of *La musique aux Pays-Bas avant le 19e Siècle* (Gand, 8 t. 1867, etc.).

For the modern period are available the 'Transition Period of Musical History' and 'History of Modern Music' by J. HULLAH (2nd ed. Lmns.); and in German the excellent *Geschichte der Musik seit Beethoven, 1800-1900*, of Hugo Riemann (1901), in which is packed a great amount of trustworthy information.

The fullest accounts of English music are HENRY DAVEY'S 'History of English Music' (Curwen, *n.d.*)—a copious and enthusiastic work; and the more recent 'History of Music in England' by ERNEST WALKER (Cl. Pr. 1907), a notably scholar-like and thoughtful research. 'English Music' by Sir W. H. HADOW (Lmns. 1931) is another highly competent treatise. There is also 'The Story of British Music to the Tudor Period,' by F. J. CROWEST (Bentley, 1896). Finally, there is a 'History of American Music' by LOUIS C. ELSON (Mac. N.Y.).

Among other surveys may be mentioned the 'History of Music from the Renaissance,' by EMILY CULVERHOUSE (Allman, 1893); W. NAGEL, *Geschichte der Musik in England* (2 Th. 1894); A. COQUARD, *De la musique en France depuis Rameau* (1891); G. SERVIÈRES, *La musique française moderne* (1897); ALBERT SOUBIES, *La musique en Russie* (Paris, *n.d.*); WALTER NIEMANN, *Die Musik Scandinaviens* (1907) and F. HUEFFER'S volume of essays, 'Half a Century of Music in England' (C. & H. 1889).

§ 5. A further division of research is set up by special studies of the evolution of *forms* of music. There are, for instance, a number of histories of the opera. W. J. HENDERSON'S 'Some Forerunners of Italian Opera' (Mur. Mus. Ser.) challenges attention. R. A. STREATFELD'S 'The Opera' (3rd ed. Rout. 1907) is a readable popular work; as is GUSTAVE CHOUQUET'S *Histoire de la musique dramatique en France* (1873). The record of E. CASTIL-BLAZE, *De l'opéra en France* (1820, 2 t.), is good up to its date. HUGO GOLDSCHMIDT'S *Studien zur Geschichte der italienischen Oper im 17ten Jahrhundert* (2 Bde. 1901-4) is important. Other standard works are: A. REGNARD, *La renaissance du drame lyrique, 1600-1876* (1895); R. ROLLAND'S *Histoire de l'opéra en Europe avant Lully et Scarlatti* (Athens, 1895); L. NOHL, *Das moderne Musikdrama* (Wien, 1884); F. PFOHL'S *Die moderne Oper* (Leip. 1894); and 'Gluck and the Opera,' by E. NEWMAN (Dobell, 1895).

Chamber music is separately followed in a volume with that title by N. KILBURN in the Story of Music ser. (Scott).

Religious music again is to be traced through F. L. HUMPHREY'S 'Evolution of Church Music' (Scrib. 1887) and EDWARD DICKINSON'S 'Music in the History of the Western Church' (Scrib. 1902). The 'Story of Oratorio,' by ANNIE PATTERSON, in the Story ser., is a good survey; and for an elaborate treatment the student may turn to the solid *Geschichte des Oratoriums* of OTTO WANGEMANN (1882). See also W. A. BARRETT'S 'English Church Composers' (Low, 1882) in the Great Musicians ser.; and the study of G. FÉLIX, *Palestrina et la musique sacrée, 1594-1894* (Bruges, 1895); also M. BRENET, *Palestrina* (Alcan, 1906).

A work of special merit is J. S. SHEDLOCK'S 'The Pianoforte

Sonata' (Met. 1895). Sir W. H. Hadow's 'Sonata Form' (Novello, *n.d.*) is especially useful; and a previously neglected chapter in the history of the Symphony is supplied by the learned work of CARL MENNICKE, *Hasse und die Brüder Graun als Symphoniker* (Leip. 1906). On the wide field of the song may be noted H. T. FINCK's 'Songs and Song-Writers' (Mur. 1901); A. Reissmann's *Geschichte des deutschen Liedes* (1874); and MAX FRIEDLÄNDER's *Das deutsche Lied im 18ten Jahrhundert* (3 Bde. 1902). Ernest Newman's 'Hugo Wolf' (Met. 1907) ably discusses more recent aspects of song-writing. For the rest, the growth of musical forms may be followed in Grove's Dictionary.

§ 6. On the much-debated problem of "programme music" may be consulted the copiously documented history of FR. NIECKS, 'Programme Music in the last Four Centuries' (Novello, 1906). For a good critical discussion see the essay 'Programme Music' in E. Newman's 'Musical Studies' (Lane, 1905). The history of notation, finally, is to be read in 'The Story of Notation' (Story ser., Scott, 1903) by C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS, and as regards one period in JOHANNES WOLF's *Geschichte der Mensural-Notation von 1250-1460* (Leip. 3 Bde. 1904, etc.).

§ 7. The following monographs on the evolution of *instruments* are instructive: 'History of the Organ,' in the Story ser. (Scott); C. Engel, 'Researches into the Early History of the Violin Family' (Novello, 1883); G. FOUCHER, 'Treatise on the History . . . of the Violin' (1897); G. HART, 'The Violin' (1884); A. J. HIPKINS, 'A History of the Pianoforte' (S.M. 1889); O. BIE, 'A History of the Pianoforte' (E. tr. Dent, 1899).

§ 8. The literature of modern musical biography is now so immense, and at many points so controversial, that we do not seek to survey it, biography in general being outside our scope. But those who seek the "higher criticism" in this field may be advised to turn to the 'College Addresses' of Sir C. H. H. PARRY (ed. by H. C. Colles: Mac.), and his 'Style in Musical Art' (same); SEDLEY TAYLOR's 'Sound and Music'; 'The Rhythm of Modern Music,' by C. F. ABDY WILLIAMS (both Mac.); the same writer's essay on 'The Aristoxenian Theory of Musical Rhythm' and 'The Physical Basis of Music,' by A. Wood (both C.U.P.); 'The Foundations of Music,' by Dr. H. J. WATT (same); 'The Limitations of Music: a Study in Aesthetics,' by ERIC BLOM (Mac.); ANDRÉ PIRRO's *L'Aesthetique de J. S. Bach* (1907); other non-biographical works of criticism on Masters—as D. G. MASON's 'From Grieg to Brahms' (Gay & Bird, 1903); and ERNEST NEWMAN's 'Study of Wagner' (Dobell, 1899); also his 'Musical Critic's Holiday' (Knopf, 1925), and 'The Unconscious Beethoven: An Essay in Musical Psychology' (same, 1927).

HISTORIES OF THE FINE ARTS

IV.—THE DRAMA

§ 1. DRAMA, as one of the great forms of imaginative fiction, if not potentially the highest, calls for special historical record in respect of its continuous life. Though the H.U.L. handbook, 'Drama,' by **Ashley Dukes** (1926), provides a popular introduction and bibliography, there is no universal history in English; nor are the learned German *Geschichte des Theaters*, by G. KOERTING (Bd. I, 1897) and *Geschichte des Dramas* by J. L. KLEIN (13 Bde. in 15: 1865-86) always adequate, though the former has a good bibliography. But the total history is well covered in separate works, and Miss E. F. JOURDAIN'S 'The Drama in Europe, in Theory and Practice' (Met. 1924: with a good bibliog.) is an aid to a comprehensive view.

§ 2. The ancient classic drama, separately considered, has been abundantly handled. Apart from the general histories of Greek literature (for which see next Course), there are in English: the very competent primer of **L. D. Barnett**, 'The Greek Drama' (T.P.S. Dent); the Greek Tragedy of Prof. **GILBERT NORWOOD** (Met. 2nd ed.) and his 'Greek Comedy' (Met. 1932); 'The Origin of Tragedy,' by Prof. **W. RIDGEWAY** (C.U.P. 1910); 'The Origin of Attic Comedy,' by **F. M. CORNFORD** (Arnold, 1914); the older but scholarly and suggestive work of Dr. **J. W. DONALDSON**, 'The Theatre of the Greeks' (B.L.); and the two learned and comprehensive treatises of **A. E. HAIGH**, 'The Attic Theatre' and 'The Tragic Drama of the Greeks' (Cl. Pr. 1889, 1896), which give results of archæological research after Donaldson's time. To these may be added 'The Greek Theater of the 5th Cent. B.C.,' by **J. T. ALLEN** (Calif. U.P. 1919); *Das griechische Theater*, by **DÖRPFELD** and **REISCH** (Athens, 1896); the slighter treatise of **R. G. MOULTON**, 'The Ancient Classic Drama' (Cl. Pr. 2nd ed. 1898); and the scholarly but compendious sketch prefixed to the *Eschyle* of **M. PATIN** (4e éd. 1877).

§ 3. The less important drama of the Romans, so closely imitative of the Greek, has naturally received less historical

attention. That in turn is handled in the general histories of Latin literature (next Course); but for a fuller treatment see the work of Koerting, above named (§ 1), and ERICH BETHE'S *Prolegomena zur Geschichte des Theaters im Alterthum* (Leip. 1896), which exhibits the evolution alike of the play, the staging, and the theatre.

§ 4. The development of medieval drama may be traced in the valuable research of Sir E. K. CHAMBERS, 'The Medieval Stage' (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1903); also in Creizenach's *Geschichte des neueren Dramas* (3 Bde. Halle, 1893-1904; and partly in the short German *Geschichte des modernen Dramas* of A. KLAAR (1883). The introduction of CH. MAGNIN to his *Théâtre de Hrotsvitha* (1845) is of interest in this connection, as is his earlier uncompleted work, *Les origines du théâtre moderne* (t. i, 1838); but the histories of French literature mentioned in the next Course should also be consulted. Of the Oberammergau Passion Play there have been many editions, e.g. that of W. T. STEAD, Ger. and Eng. (Benn, rep. 1930); that of M. F. DREW (B. & O. 1890); and that of M. FRENCH (K.P. 1890). Of special importance in this connection is 'The Drama of the Medieval Church,' by Prof. KARL YOUNG of Yale (O.U.P. 1932), which contains a collection of dramatic texts ecclesiastically used.

§ 5. Italian, Spanish, and French drama are fully dealt with in all the leading histories of the literatures of the three countries, LANSON'S being particularly good in that field (Course LXVI); while the histories of Spanish literature by SISMONDI, TICKNOR, and KELLY (next Course) deal with that. There are also 18th c. French histories of the French and Italian theatres by the Pères PARFAICT and L. RICCOBONI; a short *Histoire de la littérature dramatique en France depuis ses origines jusqu'au Cid*, by H. Tivier (1873), which is useful for the early period; and a work on *Le Théâtre Français* by S. CHAPUZZEAU (1874), as well as the *Essai sur l'histoire du Théâtre* by G. BAPST (1893). VICTOR HUGO'S ptef. to his *Cromwell* sets forth the dramatic revolution in which he was protagonist, as does the *Histoire du Romantisme* of TH. GAUTIER (2e éd. 1874). In Italian there is a short *Storia del Teatro in Italia* (1869) by P. EMILIANI-GUIDICI, the historian of Italian *belles lettres*.

In English we have 'The Italian Comedy' by P. L. DUCHARTRE (E. tr. Har.), with many illustrns.; 'French Classicism' by C. H. C. WRIGHT (Harvard, U.S., 1920) and H. J. CHAYTOR'S 'Dramatic Theory in Spain' (C.U.P.).

§ 6. The history of English drama has been fully and competently written. There is a good 'Short History of the English Drama' by B. Brawley (Har. 1924), as well as a primer, 'English

Drama, by Dr. A. S. Rappoport (Dent, 1906). The small vol. on '**Drama**' (vol. ii of 'The Age of Shakespeare') in Bell's series of Handbooks, by Thomas Seecombe and J. W. Allen, will serve well as a brief critical record.

Further, there are: 'Shakespeare's Predecessors in English Drama,' by J. A. SYMONDS (rev. ed. S.E. 1900), and 'Shakespeare and his Predecessors,' by F. L. BOAS (Mur. U.E.M.); 'University Drama in the Tudor Age' (O.U.P. 1914), by the same scholar; Prof. F. E. SCHELLING's 'The English Chronicle Play' (N.Y. 1908) and 'The Elizabethan Drama: 1558-1642,' with a prefixed Résumé of the earlier drama (N.Y. 2 v. 1908); Prof. C. F. TUCKER BROOKE's 'The Tudor Drama' (Con. 1912); 'Early Tudor Drama,' by Prof. A. W. REED (Met. 1926); and the copious research of Sir E. K. Chambers, 'The Elizabethan Drama' (Cl. Pr. 4 v. 1930). See also the excellent French work of Prof. J. J. JUSSERAND, *Le Théâtre en Angleterre depuis la Conquête jusqu'aux prédécesseurs immédiats de Shakspeare* (2e éd. 1881). But, above all, there is the comprehensive 'History of English Dramatic Literature,' by Prof. A. W. WARD (Mac. rev. ed. 3 v. 1899), which covers the whole ground down to the death of Queen Anne. There is a monograph on 'Christopher Marlowe' by Miss U. M. ELLIS-FERMOR (Met. 1927); also 'Marlowe, A Conspectus' by J. M. R. (Rout. 1931). J. L. KLEIN's *Geschichte des englischen Dramas* in his comprehensive general work comes down only to 1600; but the *Geschichte des neueren Dramas*, including that of England, by ROBERT PRÖLSS (2 v. 1881-82), comes down to the Victorian period. From CREIZENACH's work of the same title there has been translated the section on 'English Drama in the Age of Shakespeare' (Sidgwick & J. 1916).

§ 7. In view of the original anonymity of much of the Elizabethan drama as first printed, and the long-admitted dubiety of parts of the Shakespeare Canon as well as that of Beaumont and Fletcher, great importance attaches to the 'Biographical Chronicle of the English Drama: 1559-1642,' by F. G. FLEAY (2 v. 1891), and to his 'Chronicle History of the Life and Work of Shakespeare' (1886), which is chiefly a handling of that Canon. Later progressive criticism, discussed as "disintegration," is compendiously dealt with in the 'William Shakespeare' of Sir E. K. CHAMBERS (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1930), who represents the academic rally to the Folio. The present editor's 'State of Shakespeare Study' (Rout. 1931) indicates the grounds and nature of the debate. A general view of the "Bacon-Shakespeare Question" and later theories is given in the new *Encyc. Brit.*

§ 8. The history of English drama from 1660 to 1850 has now been diligently written by Prof. ALLARDYCE NICOLL in four

consecutive works: 'A History of Restoration Drama: 1660-1700' (2nd ed.); '. . . Early 18th C. Drama: 1700-1750' (2nd ed.); '. . . Late 18th C. Drama: 1750-1800'; and '. . . Early 19th C. Drama: 1800-1850' (C.U.P.). There is also a vol. on 'English Drama of the Restoration and 18th C.: 1642-1780,' by Prof. GEORGE H. NETTLETON (Mac. N.Y.). After 1850 history may be partly traced during the past generation with the help of WILLIAM ARCHER's 'English Dramatists of To-day' (Low, 1882); his series of vols. on 'The Theatrical World' (Scott); CLEMENT SCOTT's 'The Drama of Yesterday and To-day' (Mac. 2 v. 1899); and Archer's 'The Old Drama and the New' (Boston, 1923). See also Prof. ALLARDYCE NICOLL's 'The Theory of Drama,' and 'The Development of the Theatre'—with 271 illustrns. (both Har.).

§ 9. Apart from histories in the languages of the different countries, and the histories of literatures in the next Course, the drama of the modern world is dealt with in the great work of KLEIN (§ 1); also in those of Prölss (§ 5). From America comes 'Playwrights of the new American Theatre,' by T. H. DICKINSON (Mac. N.Y.).

§ 10. The drama of ancient India and that of China, with its later but far-reaching history (dating from the 8th c.), are not to be neglected in either a literary or a sociological study of the subject. A. B. KEITH's 'The Sanskrit Drama in its Oriental Development: Theory and Practice' (Cl. Pr. 1924) surveys the former. See also the histories of Indian Literature named in Course XXXIX, § 3; and that of M. WINTERITZ (Lmns. Calcutta Univ. Pub.). The famous drama by KALIDASA, *Sakuntala*, has been prepared for the English Stage in a new version by LAURENCE BINYON, with introd. essay by RABINDRANATH TAGORE (Mac.). A good general view is supplied in the old 'Select Specimens of the Theatre of the Hindus,' by H. H. WILSON (2 v. 2nd ed. 1835), with its scholarly introduction ('The Dramatic System of the Hindus') to the vivid translations, which begin with *The Toy Cart*. He fully translates six, and gives short accounts of twenty-three more, out of a list of sixty.

§ 11. In the early translations from Chinese drama by J. F. DAVIS (*Laou-Seng-Urh*, or, 'An Heir in his Old Age,' 1817; and the tragedy given with his version of *The Fortunate Union*, 2 v. 1829), the dramatic and the literary art alike appear much more naïve. The 'Short View of the Chinese Drama' prefaced to the first book—and embodied in his account of 'The Chinese,' enl. ed. 1844—is slight on the historical side; but a good general record and analysis are given in Ptie. II of the old *Chine Moderne* by PAUTHIER and BAZIN, in which the translations are French, and

more lifelike than those of Davis. Prof. Giles has a good chapter-and-a-half on Drama in his 'History of Chinese Literature' (Hei.). Alike in India and China, the analogies to the European evolution are striking, all alike having roots in cultism.

§ 12. It is the same in Japan. There the dramatic evolution can be followed in 'An Outline History of Japanese Drama' by Prof. F. A. LOMBARD, with intr. by Prof. G. P. BAKER (A. & U. 1928), and in the *Anthologie de la littérature japonaise* of Prof. M. REVON (Delagrave, 1910). 'Kabuki, the Popular Stage of Japan,' by ZOE KINCAID (Mac. 1925), gives an interesting picture of the living theatre. Further details in B. H. CHAMBERLAIN'S 'Things Japanese' (Mur. 5th ed. 1905).

§ 13. The research of Prof. W. RIDGEWAY on 'The Dramas and Dramatic Dances of Non-European Races, in special reference to the Origin of Greek Tragedy' (C.U.P.), competently indicates the rise of drama in general from primitive cultism and popular dance-ritual.

HISTORY OF LITERATURES

§ 1. IN English there is a lack of works on the *universal* history of literature. HALLAM's 'Introduction to the Literature of Europe in the 15th, 16th, and 17th Centuries' (4 v. Mur.) set an example of broad survey; but no English writer appears to cover in one survey the whole literature of the world. In the other leading languages there are several treatises of the kind—e.g. the *Geschichte der Weltliteratur* of Prof. ADOLF STERN of Dresden (1888); the larger work of the same title by A. BAUMGARTNER (1897, etc.); the *Handbuch der Geschichte der Weltliteratur* of E. NASCHÉ (1900); the *Allgemeine Geschichte der Literatur* of G. KARPELES (1891); the *Histoire de la littérature* of P. PRAT (1891); and the *Storia della letteratura* of Prof. A. DE GUBERNATIS (1882, etc.).

§ 2. Perhaps, however, nothing of its kind in any language has more scientific value than 'The Evolution of Literature,' by A. S. MAECKENZIE of Kentucky Univ. (Mur. 1911), which is an introduction to all literature as a phenomenon of life. The English work on 'Comparative Literature,' by D. H. M. POSNETT (I.S.S. 1886), is not a history, but a sociological essay. In the way of general histories of Poetry may be noted JOHN CLARK's vivacious 'History of Epic Poetry' (Post-Virgilian) (O. & B. 1900) and 'The Classic Poets' (S.E. 1879); but these are literary rather than historic studies. Mr. ARTHUR RANSOME's 'History of Story-Telling' (Jack, 1909) has much literary charm, but hardly attempts to fulfil its title. The old 'History of Prose Fiction,' by J. C. DUNLOP, is still valuable, especially in the well-annotated ed. of H. WILSON (B.L.); and there is merit in the shorter *Histoire du Roman* of A. CHASSANG (1862). In German there is a *Grundriss der Geschichte der europäischen Literaturen*, by A. SCHMIDT (Leip. 1885); and in French an *Histoire des littératures étrangères* (pp. 662) by H. TIVIER (1891).

§ 3. There have been produced in English, however, many surveys of separate literatures and of literary periods, notable among which is a series of studies under the editorship of Prof. G. SAINTSBURY, entitled 'Periods of European Literature' (Bld.),

which approximates to a history of post-classic European literature. The volumes are as follows: 1. The Dark Ages, by Prof. W. P. KER; 2. The Flourishing of Romance and the Rise of Allegory, by Prof. Saintsbury; 3. The 14th Century, by F. G. SNELL; 4. The Transition Period, by Prof. G. GREGORY SMITH; 5. The Earlier Renaissance, by Prof. Saintsbury; 6. The Later Renaissance, by DAVID HANNAY; 7. The First Half of the 17th Century, by Prof. H. J. C. GRIERSON; 8. The Augustan Ages, by Prof. OLIVER ELTON; 9. The Middle of the 18th Century, by Prof. J. H. MILLAR; 10. The Romantic Revolution, by Prof. C. E. VAUGHAN; 11. The Romantic Triumph, by T. S. OMOND; and 12. The Later 19th Century, by Prof. Saintsbury.

§ 4. The literatures of ancient Egypt, India, Mesopotamia, and China may be in part historically followed by help of Course VI, §§ 4, 5, 6; also in the Courses on History for the different countries; and the literature of the Hebrews by means of Course VII. Direct guidance may be had, however, from the 'History of Indian Literature' of Prof. ALBRECHT WEBER (E. tr. 1878); and two later works of much merit, the 'History of Sanskrit Literature' by Prof. A. A. Macdonnell, and the 'History of Chinese Literature' by Prof. H. A. Giles, both in Heinemann's series, of which the latter claims to be the first attempt in its kind. There are also a 'Literary History of India,' by R. W. FRAZER, in F. Unwin's ser. (1907); and the learned work of Prof. FELIX NÈVE, *Les Époques Littéraires de l'Inde: Études sur la poésie Sanscrite* (1883).

For Japan there is the competent 'History of Japanese Literature' (Hei.) by W. G. Aston (1899); also the brilliant *Anthologie* of Prof. MICHEL REVON (1910).

§ 5. Of Greek and Roman literature the history has been abundantly written in all the leading languages. To that of Greece there is an excellent guide in Prof. Gilbert Murray's 'History of Ancient Greek Literature' (Hei.) and 'Rise of the Greek Epic' (Cl. Pr.); and for Latin there is the admirable little work of J. S. Mackail, 'Latin Literature' (Mur. U.E.M.). Of older histories, that of Greek literature written by K. O. MÜLLER for the old L.U.K. (2nd ed. 1847), and continued in two more volumes by Prof. J. W. DONALDSON (1858), is still well worth study; but for results of later research resort should be made to the excellent general history by Prof. F. B. JEVONS (1886) and the remarkably interesting History of Prof. MAHAFFY (Mac. 3rd ed. 2 v. 1890-95), or the German compendium of Prof. W. CHRIST, *Geschichte der griechischen Litteratur bis auf die Zeit Justinians* (1898). Recent scholarly studies examine 'Tradition

and Design in the *Iliad*' and 'The Composition of Homer's *Odyssey*,' the former by C. M. BOWRA, the latter by W. J. WOODHOUSE (Cl. Pr.). See further some of the works in our Course on the History of Drama (LXV, §§ 1, 2, 3).

The 'History of Latin Literature' by G. A. SIMCOX (Lmns. 2 v. 1883) is rather a series of criticisms than a history; but there are available to the English reader the admirable 'Literary History of Rome' by Prof. J. W. DUFF (F.U. 1909), no less praiseworthy for its own literary charm than for its scholarship, and Prof. Warr's translation of the very learned 'History of Roman Literature' by W. S. TEUFFEL, as revised and enlarged by L. SCHWABE (Bell, 2 v. 1900). The 'History of Roman Literature' (App. 1903) and 'History of Ancient Greek Literature' (same, 1902) of Prof. H. N. FOWLER, have merit.

Prof. G. SAINTSBURY'S 'History of Criticism and Literary Taste in Europe, from the Earliest Texts to the Present Day' (Bld. 3 v. 1900-4) is the product of a wide literary knowledge; and G. H. PUTNAM'S 'Authors and their Public in Ancient Times' (Put. 1894) is a valuable sidelight on literary history.

§ 6. Celtic literature may be approached in the charming essay of MATTHEW ARNOLD 'On the Study of Celtic Literature' (sev. reps.), and in the works of D'ARBOIS DE JUBAINVILLE named in the Courses on Welsh and Irish History. As to Wales, the 'Mabinogion,' the translation of which by LADY GUEST (1838-49) gave a new attraction to the whole field, has been newly translated by T. P. ELLIS and JOHN LLOYD (O.U.P. 2 v. 1929). 'The Celtic Library,' ed. by Prof. P. Geddes and colleagues (Edinb. 1896, etc.), includes some interesting translations, with a properly annotated ed. of 'Ossian' as produced by Macpherson, and an account of his probable sources. Many scholarly papers, further, have appeared in *The Celtic Review* (ed. by W. J. WATSON and Prof. MACKINNON).

§ 7. On Italian literature in general Dr. Garnett's short History (Hei.) will compare favourably with any similarly short work in German or French; the 'Epochs of Italian Literature' by Cesare Foligno (Cl. Pr.) is competent, in short compass; as are the 'Modern Italian Literature' of L. COLLISON-MORLEY (Pit. 1911); and the careful 'History of Early Italian Literature to the Death of Dante,' by A. GASPARY, is trans. by Dr. H. OELSNER (Bell, 1901); but the student who seeks to make a detailed study will naturally resort to the larger histories in other languages.

The standard Italian history is Prof. BARTOLI'S *Storia della letteratura italiana* (7 t. 1878-87); but there is still much value in the older works of TIRABOSCHI, *Storia della letteratura italiana* (16 t. 1822-26), and GINGUENÉ, *Histoire littéraire de l'Italie* (cont.

by F. Salfi, 14 t. 1811-35), both being mines of knowledge. For the 14th, 15th, and 16th centuries much help may be had from Hallam (§ 1). There are a number of German histories, among which may be noted the *Geschichte der italienischen Litteratur* of K. M. SAUER (1883); and the *Geschichte der Litteratur Italiens im Zeitalter der Renaissance* of G. KOERTING (3 Bde. 1878-84); and there is a good short French one, *Littérature italienne*, by HENRI HAUVETTE (Colin, 1906). For the literature of recent years, resort may be had to the *Panorama de la littérature italienne contemporaine* of BENJAMIN CRÉMIEUX (Paris, 1928).

§ 8. SISMONDI'S 'Survey of the Literature of Southern Europe' (E. tr. B.L. 2 v.) is still well worth reading for its broad view of the connections between the Provençal, French, and Peninsular literatures; but it requires checking by the results of later philology. There is still no more comprehensive history of Spanish literature in English than that of GEORGE TICKNOR (6th ed. rev. Boston, 1888, 3 v.); though the 'New History of Spanish Literature' by J. Fitzmaurice Kelly (O.U.P. 1926), described as his "life work," and superseding his earlier and shorter book (Hei.), is an excellent performance in every respect worthy of the promise of his 'Chapters on Spanish Literature' (Con. 1908). BOUTERWEK'S 'History of Spanish and Portuguese Literature' (E. tr. B.L.) is in certain respects out of date, but still worth consulting; and there is an up-to-date 'Portuguese Literature,' by A. F. BELL (Milford, 1922). Prof. S. DE MADARIAGA'S 'The Genius of Spain' (Cl. Pr.) deals ably with its contemporary literature.

§ 9. To the history of French literature there is an attractive introduction by Prof. Dowden (Hei.), and another by H. G. KEENE (Mur. U.E.M.); besides a charming primer on **Medieval French Literature** by Prof. Gaston Paris (Dent); and by way of general manual there is the 'History of French Literature' by F. BRUNETIÈRE (E. tr. F.U.), of which the main value lies in its chronological detail. There are also: a 'Literary History of France' by the distinguished critic ÉMILE FAGUET (E. tr. F.U. 1907); a very competent work on 'The Literature of the French Renaissance' by ARTHUR TILLEY (C.U.P. 2 v. 1904); a 'Modern French Literature,' by Dr. B. W. WELLS (Put.); 'French Literature during the last Half-Century' by Prof. DE BACOURT and Dr. J. W. CUNLIFFE (Mac. N.Y.); and a critical and annotated compilation 'French Prose Works of the 19th Century and After,' by VICTOR LEULIETTE (Pit. n.d.). The English reader may further resort to C. H. WRIGHT'S 'History of French Literature' (O.U.P. 1925). 'Contemporary French Literature,' by RENÉ LALOU (E. tr. Cape, 1925), is a notably competent survey.

But English works are no substitute for such a full and brilliant French history as the *Histoire de la littérature française* of Prof. G. LANSON (Hachette, 8e éd. rev. 1903), which should be in the hands of every student who reads French. It gives abundant clues for further special study of all periods. The *Histoire illustrée de la littérature française: Précis Méthodique*, by Profs. ABRV, AUDIC, and CROUZET (Didier, 4e éd. 1918), has its abundant special attractions, giving 324 illustrns. from books of all periods. Finally, there is the great *Histoire de la langue et de la littérature française* edited by Prof. L. PETIT DE JULLEVILLE, the work of many collaborators (8 t. 1896-1900), which says the last word, thus far, of French scholarship. The monographs on the leading authors are countless; Lanson specifies hundreds.

§ 10. Histories of English literature have been somewhat rapidly multiplied in recent decades. Our literary historiography is even now behind that of France; and though there are more exact researches than the 'History of English Literature' by the late M. TAINÉ (E. tr. rep. in 2 v.), there is no general native history of equal brilliance. Of older manuals a number have merit. But the student may with profit begin on Stopford A. Brooke's primer of 'English Literature' (Mac. rev. ed. 1900); the late Prof. HENRY MORLEY's 'First Sketch of English Literature' (Cas. 1886); and the extensive history by Dr. EDMUND GOSSE and Dr. GARNETT, entitled 'English Literature: An Illustrated Record' (Hei. 1903). A very copious and in some respects authoritative record is now available in the 'Cambridge History of English Literature,' by many hands (C.U.P. 15 v. 1908, etc.—lists of corrigenda and addenda in later impressions). There is also a short 'History of English Literature' by two American Professors, NELSON and THORNDIKE (Mac. N.Y.).

Of early English literature a learned and thorough historical survey has been made by the late Prof. BERNHARD TEN BRINK, 'Early English Literature' to Wyclif, and 'History of English Literature' to the death of Surrey (E. tr. B.L. 3 v. in all); but Stopford Brooke's 'English Literature from the Beginning to the Norman Conquest' (Mac. 1898)—a recast of his earlier and larger 'History of English . . . Poetry from its beginning to the accession of King Alfred' (Mac. 2 v. 1892)—has more of literary charm. The period 'From the Norman Conquest to Chaucer,' again, is ably handled by Prof. W. H. SCHOFIELD of Harvard (same, 1906), who promised another vol. covering the period from Chaucer to the reign of Elizabeth. Prof. J. SCHIPPER's 'History of English Versification' (E. tr. Cl. Pr. 1910) is an important scholarly service; and a useful

general study of 'The Arthurian Epic' is supplied by A. HUMPHREYS CURTEEN (Put. 1895).

'Elizabethan Literature' is discussed with discursive learning, if in faulty style, by Prof. G. SAINTSBURY (same). Dr. Gosse has written brilliantly of 'Jacobean Literature' (Mur. U.E.M.) and of 'Eighteenth-Century Literature' (Mac. 1889), with which may be compared 'The Literature of the Georgian Era,' by the late Prof. W. MINTO (Bld. 1894), the work of an exact scholar and an original thinker; and there is a very readable 'Short History of Modern English Literature' by Dr. Gosse (Hei. 1905).

The greatest of all English literary histories, up to date, is the series of 6 vols. by Prof. OLIVER ELTON, 'A Survey of English Literature' (from 1730 to 1880): 2 v. '1730-1780' (1928); 2 v. '1780-1830' (1924); 2 v. '1830-1880' (1928: all Arnold). The historical, critical, and literary values are alike of a high order.

Literary history necessarily runs increasingly to studies of periods; and in this order praise is due to the series of Handbooks of English Literature, edited by Prof. Hales (Bell). It consists of: 'The Age of Chaucer,' by F. J. SNELL; 'The Age of Shakespeare,' in 2 vols. (i, Poetry and Prose; ii, Drama), by THOMAS SECCOMBE and J. W. ALLEN; 'The Age of Milton,' by J. H. B. MASTERMAN; 'The Age of Dryden,' by Dr. R. GARNETT; 'The Age of Pope,' by JOHN DENNIS; 'The Age of Johnson,' by Thomas Seccombe; 'The Age of Wordsworth,' by Prof. C. H. HERFORD; and 'The Age of Tennyson,' by Prof. HUGH WALKER.

Second to none of these in merit are the brilliant studies of the French scholar Prof. J. J. JUSSERAND, 'The English Novel in the Time of Shakespeare' (E. tr. F.U. 1890); 'A Literary History of the English People to the Renaissance' (same, 1895); and 'A Literary History of the English People, from the Origins to the Civil War' (E. tr. 3 v. 1906-25, same)—which show that M. Jusserand had mastered the subject more intimately than Taine. There are at least three other French (untrans.) histories of English literature—by L. BOUCHER (1890), H. TESTARD (1882), and AUGUSTE FILON (1883). The *Englische Literatur in Zeitalter der Königin Viktoria*, by the late Prof. LEON KELLNER (Tauchnitz, 1909), may profitably be studied for the reactions of an accomplished foreign scholar, a master of English.

For English drama see the preceding Course, § 5; and for poetry separately considered the 'History of English Poetry' by W. J. COURTHOPE (Mac. 5 v. 1895-1905)—a copious but (critically) not very adequate treatise. The old 'History of English Poetry from the 11th to the 17th Century' by THOMAS WARTON (last rep. rev. by W. C. HAZLITT, 4 v. 1872) is still of much historical

value. There is also a 'Popular History of English Poetry,' by T. EARLE WELBY (Philpot, *n.d.*). Prof. WALTER RALEIGH has written a slight but attractive little book on 'The English Novel' (Mur. 2nd ed. 1895); and there are fuller monographs by American scholars: 'The Development of the English Novel' by Prof. W. L. CROSS, and 'The Evolution of the English Novel' by F. H. STODDARD (both Mac. N.Y.). 'A Century of the English Novel' (from Scott to Conrad) by CORNELIUS WEYGANDT (Brentano, 1927) has much interest. There is real critical value in Prof. Minto's 'Manual of English Prose Literature' (Bld. 1872); and the recent 'Development of English Biography' by HAROLD NICOLSON (Hogarth Pr. 1907) is a good survey. Technically connected with the subject of literature is the history of the newspaper press, for which see H. R. FOX-BOURNE's well-informed 'English Newspapers' (C. & W. 2 v. 1887).

The history of 'English Literature during the last Half-Century' is written by an American scholar, J. W. CUNLIFFE (Mac. N.Y.).

§ 11. Scottish literature has been separately treated by Prof. J. H. MILLAR in Unwin's ser. (1903); and there is a very competent study of 'Scottish Vernacular Literature' by T. F. HENDERSON (Nutt, 1898). The field has further been well surveyed in departments and periods. DAVID IRVING's 'History of Scottish Poetry,' ed. by Dr. J. Aitken Carlyle (1861), is a thoroughly learned work; LAING's 'Select Remains of Ancient Popular and Romance Poetry of Scotland,' ed. by John Small (Bld. 1885), has high scholarly value; and Dr. JOHN M. ROSS's 'Scottish History and Literature to the Period of the Reformation,' ed. by Dr. James Brown (MacL. 1884), usefully connects the literary with the general history. But the 'Scottish Literature: Character and Influence' of Prof. C. GREGORY SMITH (Mac. 1919) has a special value.

§ 12. Latterly, American (U.S.) literature has naturally received special attention in its own country; and a comprehensive record is furnished in 'A History of American Literature' by a number of academic writers (Eng. C.U.P. 1918, etc. 4 v.), of which vol. i deals with 'Colonial and Revolutionary' and 'Early National' works. There has followed 'A Short History of American Literature,' in 1 v. (same), based on the other; but there is a shorter—the 'American Literature' of Prof. W. P. TRENT (Hei. 1903); as well as a monograph on 'The American Novel,' by C. VAN DOREN (Mac. N.Y.). There is also an informative 'Manual of American Literature,' by several hands, ed. by THEODORE STANTON, in the Tauchnitz Collection (1909, vol. 4000).

§ 13. Scandinavian literature is to be followed in connection

with Scandinavian history (Course XXX), to which the Eddas more or less belong. A good survey of the literary evolution is made in the *Encyc. Bri.* article on 'Icelandic Literature,' by the late Prof. YORK POWELL, and in the introduction to the *Corpus Poeticum Boreale*, edited by him and Prof. VIGFUSSON (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1883). The German work of PH. SCHWEITZER, *Geschichte der skandinavischen Literatur* (2 Bde. 1886), comes down to the modern period, for which there was promised, but not produced, a critical record from the very competent hand of GEORG BRANDES (whose 'Main Currents' deals with other literatures), 'Modern Scandinavian Literature' (Hei.). Later developments are set forth in 'Scandinavian Literature from Brandes to Our Day,' by H. TOPSÖE-JENSEN (E. tr. by I. Anderson, A. & U. 1930).

§ 14. The Slavonic literatures are represented by the 'Bohemian Literature' of Count LUETZOW, the 'Russian Literature' of K. WALISZEWSKI (both Hei.); the '**Modern Russian Literature**' of Prince D. S. Mirsky (Cl. Pr. 1925); the 'Studies in Russian Literature' of C. E. TURNER (Low, 1882); 'The Epic Songs of Russia,' by ISABEL F. HAPGOOD, with intr. by Prof. Mackail (Con. 1915); 'The Russian Novel,' by VICOMTE DE VOGÜÉ (E. tr. C. & H. 1913); and the 'Landmarks in Russian Literature' of MAURICE BARING (Met. 1910). Polish literature may be followed in 'Polish Romantic Literature,' by Dr. JULIAN KRZYŻANOWSKI (A. & U. 1930); in N. NITSCHMANN's German *Geschichte der polnischen Literatur* (1881); and in the trans. work of Georg Brandes, 'Poland: A Study of the Land, People, and Literature' (Hei. 1903). A 'History of Hungarian Literature,' by F. RIEDL, appears in Heinemann's ser. (1906).

§ 15. Of Dutch literature there is an interesting sketch by Dr. Gosse in the *Britannica*. Students desiring to go deeper into the matter will naturally turn to Dutch works, among which may be named the *Kleine Geschiedenis der Nederlandsche Letteren* of Dr. JAN TEN BRINK (Haarlem, 1882), and the *Beknopte Geschiedenis der Nederlandsche Letterkunde* of Dr. W. J. A. JONCKBLOET (2de Uitg., Groningen, 1880).

§ 16. For the young student of German literature there are available the H.U.L. handbook of Prof. J. G. Robertson; his 'History of German Literature' (Bld. 1902); the 'Brief History' (based on KLEE's *Grundzüge*), by Prof. G. M. PRIEST (F.U. 1910); the 'Short History,' by J. K. HOSMER (Low, 1892); and the 'History,' by C. THOMAS (Hei. 1909). There is also, fortunately, an adequate English translation of the excellent 'History of German Literature,' by Prof. W. SCHERER (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1886); and of this there is further an abridged edition in 1 vol. (same, 1891). The 'History of German Versification: Ten Centuries of Metrical

Evolution,' by Prof. H. G. ATKINS (Met. 1922), is a welcome addition, in this field, by an English scholar.

For more elaborate histories the student will of course turn to German works, of which the number is great, and the literary merit (apart from Scherer's) moderate. Dr. GEORG WEBER's *Geschichte* (11te Aufl. 1880) is a very complete and compendious record. A. F. G. VILMAR'S (17te Aufl. 1875) is less detailed, but somewhat more readable. FRANZ HIRSCH'S (3 Bde. 1884) is more copious; and Dr. HERMANN KLUGE'S (14te Aufl. 1883) is brief and vivid, for higher schools and private students. Yet further, there are R. KOENIG'S (1881) and E. BRENNING'S longer work (Lahr, 1883, etc.). There are also very extensive histories of German poetry by G. G. GERVINUS (5 Bde. 5te Aufl. 1871-74) and C. GOEDEKE (5 Bde. 1885-93).

The 'Main Currents in Nineteenth-Century Literature' by GEORG BRANDES (E. tr. Hei. 6 v. 1901-5) is the most comprehensive attempt, by a cosmopolitan scholar, to set forth the general intellectual movement of Modern Europe in *belles lettres*. The *Études de littérature européenne* of JOSEPH TEXTE (1898) is on a smaller scale, but of good quality; and B. CROCE'S 'European Literature in the 19th Century' (E. tr. C. & H. 1924) is a service of similar kind, though constituted by a series of separate studies.

§ 17. Turkish literature has latterly received attention at English hands. There are a 'Literature of the Turks,' by C. WELLS (Quar. 1890), and 'A History of Ottoman Poetry,' by E. J. W. GIBB (Luzac, 1900, etc.). There is also a *Türkische Literaturgeschichte* in German, by G. JACOB (Berlin, 1900, etc.).

§ 18. A copious and excellent 'Literary History of Persia' by Prof. E. G. BROWNE (Unwin's ser. 2 v. 1902-6) carries its survey down to Sadi. Modern aspects are noted in his book mentioned in Course XXXVIII. There is a Clarendon Press Manual, 'Arabic Literature: An Introduction,' by H. A. R. GIBB (1926); and a 'Literary History of the Arabs,' by R. A. NICHOLSON, is included in Unwin's ser. (1907). There are also available E. A. REED'S 'Persian Literature' (Chicago, 1893) and the German *Geschichte der arabischen Literatur* of C. BROCKELMANN (Weimar, 1897, etc.).

GEOLOGY

§ 1. THOSE who desire merely an outline knowledge of Geology may turn to the primer by Sir A. GEIKIE (Mac.), or MARR's 'Introduction to Geology' (Cl. Pr.)—an excellent book for a beginner. Other trustworthy primers are :—'A Popular Geology,' by W. PLATT (Sheldon Pr.), 'Geology for Beginners,' by W. W. WATTS (Mac.); 'A First Book of Geology,' by A. WILMORE (Mac.); and 'Introduction to Geology,' by C. GARDINER (Bell).

No man, however, may get much of any natural science through books alone; he must observe and touch things for himself, or his reading will avail him but a little. This maxim is of especial truth in regard to the science of Geology. For the rocks of the earth's crust are not to be seen every day; and to most men rocks are, in imagination, isolated and rare rather than universal; while their mode of occurrence and relations are inconceivable if they have not been seen in the field. But at the same time there is no science the essential principles of which are so few and so simple, and the main facts of which are so easily demonstrated and understood, as the facts and principles of Geology. Therefore, let anyone who would begin this study find out, if he may, a master in it, and go with him out along the river banks and by the shore and among the mountains; then, after such companionship, he will be able to read with profit.

§ 2. Otherwise, let the student take Sir A. Geikie's 'Outlines of Field Geology' (Mac.) out into the country with him, and, reading there, follow that author's advices. Provided with this or GRENVILLE COLE's 'Aids in Practical Geology' (Griffin, 5th ed. 1906) with the map of his district prepared by the Geological Survey, and with the accompanying memoir, let him work over the structure and physical features of the neighbourhood, and visit any region that the map shows to be of peculiar geological interest. Let him not, at first, trouble over details or complexities; nor, unless one feels the inclination, is it well to attempt any particular knowledge of the fossils that are to be found in the rocks. The first thing to aim at is a vivid realisation of the

two great, antagonistic, ceaseless processes that are for ever changing the face of the land—the process of the destruction, denudation, decay, weathering of the rocks, and the accumulation of the resulting débris. These are the great tools that have carved the contours of the earth—‘The Unstable Earth,’ as it is indicated by the recent treatise of J. A. STEERS (Met. 1932).

The beginner cannot fail to be struck at first by the seeming scantiness of the evidence, relying upon which the geologist has boldly drawn upon his map the nature and disposition of rocks that are invisible. A quarry here and there, a roadside or railway cutting, the exposed bed of an occasional stream, or the steep slopes of a valley, a few wells sunk, a mine, a few miles of rock exposed along the sea-shore—that is all. Yet there are no blank spaces upon the map, and the miner in search of wealth or the engineer sinking for water trusts confidently in the statements of the geologist, whose map is a triumph, the result of careful observation and inference. It is a good plan to make sketch maps for oneself, correcting them by that of the Survey.

Sufficient hints for the beginner will be found in Sir Archibald Geikie's book already mentioned; the more ambitious worker will gain great help from ‘Methods in Geological Surveying’ by Dr. E. GREENLY and Dr. H. WILLIAMS (Murby & Co., 1930). Having gained some acquaintance with the structure of his own county, the student should read some account of that of more distant parts, such as Sir A. Geikie's ‘Scenery of Scotland’ (Mac. 3rd ed. 1901), which contains a small geological map of that country; Sir A. C. RAMSAY's ‘Physical Geology and Geography of the British Islands’ (Stan. 6th ed. 1894); J. E. MARR's ‘Scientific Study of Scenery’ (Met. 1903) and LUBBOCK's (Lord Avebury) ‘Scenery of Switzerland’ and ‘Scenery of England’ (Mac.).

§ 3. It will be well at this stage to get a clear view over the whole field of inquiry; and of most excellent books, large and small, that can help one to this, there is a great abundance. WATTS's ‘Geology for Beginners’ (§ 1) covers the whole ground. In Newnes' Story series the ‘Story of the Earth,’ by Prof. SEELEY, is admirable, and the volumes by PYCRAFT on ‘Reptile, Fish, and Bird Life’ give clear and interesting palæontological information, as does also LINDSAY's ‘Animal Life’; while Brend on ‘Ice’ and Martin on ‘Coal,’ in the same series, are equally valuable to the beginner. From a rather different point of view, we have HUXLEY's ‘Physiography’ (Mac.), which last is interesting as being the earliest book of its kind, and the one for which the title, embodying an idea that is now current coin, was minted; but the latest and probably the best book of this kind is H. R.

Mill's '*The Realm of Nature*' (Mur. U.E.M.), which, however, is only in part geological. In place of Sir CHARLES LYELL's classic '*Principles*' it will now be profitable to study Prof. J. W. JUDD's '*The Student's Lyell*' (Mur. 736 illustrns.) which preserves what is most valuable in the original.

§ 4. Other good text-books are the '*Classbook*' and '*Text-book of Geology*' (Mac. 4th ed. 2 vols.) of Sir A. Geikie; MARR's '*Stratigraphical Geology*' (Clay, 1898); '*The Physio-graphical Evolution of Britain*,' by L. J. WILLS (Arnold, 1929); '*The Surface History of the Earth*,' by JOHN JOLY (Cl. Pr. 1925); and A. J. JUKES-BROWNE's '*Building of the British Isles*' (B.L. 1888). '*The Face of the Earth*,' by SUESS (E. tr. 5 v. Cl. Pr.), is costly but comprehensive. '*A Text-Book of Geology*,' by Prof. A. W. GRABAU of Pekin (2 large v. Har. 1921), is another storehouse of modern research. These works contain a series of maps showing the disposition of land and water over that portion of the crust now occupied by Great Britain and Ireland; and a few hours spent in studying them make clear many matters that without their help are most puzzling.

§ 5. Having gained a wide outlook over the facts of structure and history of the earth by rather extensive reading, one may with advantage return to a more detailed and practical study of rocks, minerals, and fossils. There is no better book for the commencement of such a study than Grenville Cole's '*Aids in Practical Geology*' (Griffin). Others of value are the '*Introduction to Palæontology*' of A. M. DAVIES (Murby, 1920); and the '*Palæontology: Invertebrate*' of H. WOODS (C.U.P.). Cole's work contains instructions that enable one to distinguish all the more important minerals, rocks, and fossils. His description of the manner in which fossils may be recognised is especially valuable, and students may be recommended to omit the reading of the parts of other books on Palæontology until this one has been mastered to a great extent. Exception may be made in favour of RAY LANKESTER's '*Extinct Animals*' (1905), a simple and most entertaining treatment of Palæontological Geology, within its limits quite abreast of the most modern results, and excellently illustrated. The Rev. H. M. HUTCHINSON's '*Extinct Monsters*' (C. & H. rev. ed. 1910) has similar merits. Palæontology considered as a branch of Biology is best studied in the '*Text-book of Palæontology*,' ed. by Prof. C. R. EASTMAN from the German of Prof. KARL A. VON ZITTEL (Mac.), and in Prof. R. S. LULL's '*Organic Evolution*' (Mac. N.Y.). See also A. HOLMES's '*Age of the Earth*' (Harp. 1913), which deals with methods of measuring geological time; Dr. C. E. P. BROOKS's

'Climate Through the Ages' (Benn, 1926); Prof. A. WEGENER's 'Origin of Continents and Oceans' (E. tr. Met. 1924); and 'An Introduction to Stratigraphy (British Isles),' by L. DUDLEY STAMP (Murby).

§ 6. A few books on special departments of Geology may be useful. Thus James Geikie's 'The Great Ice Age' (3rd ed. rev. Stan. 1894) deals with the more recent phases of the earth's history, and his 'Structural Geology' (O. & B. 1912) contains articles dealing with special points in the history of glacial times; the development of surface features; and the origin, growth, and decay of mountain ranges. TYNDALL's 'The Forms of Water' (I.S.S.) gives a lucid exposition of the manner of flow of glacier ice. See also his 'Glaciers of the Alps' (rep. O.U.P.), and W. B. WRIGHT's 'The Quaternary Ice Age' (Mac.) is a standard treatise. CHARLES DARWIN's 'Vegetable Mould and Earthworms,' his 'Coral Reefs,' and DANA's 'Coral Reefs and Coral Islands,' are most delightful books to read. On the last-named problem there has been much and long debate, which is competently surveyed in 'Coral Reefs and Atolls' by J. STANLEY GARDINER (Mac. 1931)—a course of Lowell Institute lectures embodying a survey of the protracted discussion.

§ 7. For a somewhat detailed description of the geology of this country see WOODWARD's 'Geology of England and Wales,' in which will be found copious references to isolated monographs that deal with small areas. See also the Geol. Assoc. vol. 'Geology in the Field'; H. J. MACKINDER's 'Britain and the British Isles' (Frowde, 1907); the 'Handbook of the Geology of Great Britain,' edited by J. W. EVANS and C. J. STUBBLEFIELD (Murby). Good books on Petrology are F. H. HATCH's 'Study of Petrology' and 'Text-book of Petrology' (Son. 1891, 1902); G. W. TYRRELL's 'Principles of Petrology' (Met. 1926); A. HARKER's 'Natural History of Igneous Rocks' (Met. 1909); A. HOLMES's 'Petrographic Methods and Calculations' (Murby, 1923); FRANK RUTLEY's 'Mineralogy' (Mac.); J. P. IDDINGS's 'Igneous Rocks' (C. & H. 1909); and the 'Mineralogy' of Sir H. A. MIERs (Mac. 2nd ed. rev. by Prof. H. L. BOWMAN, 1929). On the vexed question of Crystallography, consult the manual of EVANS and MACDONALD-DAVIES (Murby).

§ 8. A series of books on the application of geology to industrial work—as on coal and coal-mining, agriculture, minerals, etc.—is published by the C.U.P.; and Messrs. Murby, who deal in all current geological books, supply rock specimens, separately, or in sets. The 'Geol. Atlas of Great Britain and Ireland,' by H. B. WOODWARD (Stan.), contains maps for every county, with illustrns. of fossils, descriptions of what may be seen from railway trains, etc.

COURSE LXVIII

BIOLOGY, PHYSIOLOGY, AND ZOOLOGY

I. APPROACHES

§ 1. At his outset the student should get a clear idea of what the scientific interpreters of organic nature are really seeking to achieve. The more elementary student should read, for instance, 'Living Things,' by A. Bailey-Churchill (Bell); A. HILL's 'Introduction to Science' (T.P.S. Dent, 1900); and HUXLEY's 'On Our Knowledge of the Causes of the Phenomena of Organic Nature' and 'Introduction to Zoology.' The more advanced student should ponder the introductory chapters to KARL PEARSON's 'Grammar of Science' (rev. ed. Black, 1900), and J. T. MERZ's 'History of European Thought in the Nineteenth Century' (2 v. Bld. 1896, 1903). It will also be profitable to read Book i of Sir J. ARTHUR THOMSON's 'Progress of Science in the Nineteenth Century' (Chambers, 1904).

§ 2. *Practical Inter-relations between Animal and Human Life.* The first report on Economic Zoology, by Mr. Fred V. Theobald, issued by the B. M. (1903), contains an important introductory essay by Prof. E. Ray Lankester, on the manifold inter-relations between animal and human life, as far as practical affairs—of domestication, acclimatisation, competition, elimination, and the like—are concerned. 'The Earth and its Life,' by A. W. Sears (Har.), is vividly sketched in terms of that idea.

See also, for instances, DARWIN's 'Animals and Plants under Domestication'; A. DE CANDOLLE's 'Origin of Cultivated Plants' (K.P. 1883); CORNEVIN's *Zootechnie Générale* (3 t. 1890); R. LEUCKART, 'The Parasites of Man' (tr. of vol. i, 1886); H. DE VARIGNY, 'Experimental Evolution' (Mac. 1892); T. LOCKWOOD KIPLING, 'Beast and Man in India' (Mac. 1892); and J. RITZEMA BOS, 'Agricultural Zoology' (E. tr. C. & H. 1894). Students living in the country will find it profitable to follow the march of the seasons. See GILBERT WHITE's 'Selborne'; ROBERTS's 'Naturalist's Diary'; 'The Field Naturalist's Handbook,' by J. G. and TH. WOOD (Cas. 1879); MIALI's 'Round the Year'; and THOMSON's 'Natural History of the Year' (for young

students). To follow the seasons in studying the animate world is perhaps the most natural of all methods, as it is probably the most primitive.

Another introductory subject is that of the inter-relations between plants and animals in the web of life. This may be studied in HERMANN MÜLLER's 'Fertilisation of Flowers' (E. tr. Mac. 1883); DARWIN's 'Fertilisation of Orchids,' 'Cross-Fertilisation,' and 'Insectivorous Plants'; KERNER's 'Flowers and their Unbidden Guests'; Kerner's 'Natural History of Plants,' vol. i; GEDDES's 'Chapters in Modern Botany' (Mur. U.E.M.); Thomson, 'The Study of Animal Life' (3rd ed. 1901, same); S. GAYE, 'The Great World's Farm' (S.S. & Co. 1893); E. A. ORMEROD's 'Injurious Insects' (2nd ed. S.M. 1891); and LUBBOCK, 'British Wild Flowers in Relation to Insects' (1875).

§ 3. The problem of geographical distribution, further, may be approached through concrete and personal narratives, such as Darwin's 'Voyage of the *Beagle*'; BATES's 'Naturalist on the Amazons'; MOSELEY's 'Naturalist on the *Challenger*'; R. SEMON's 'In the Australian Bush' (Mac. 1899); S. J. HICKSON's 'Naturalist in Celebes' (Mur. 1889), and so on through a long list of fine books, many of which are recorded in J. A. Thomson's Introductory Essay to the translation of BREHM's 'From North Pole to Equator' (Blackie). Another useful approach is to select some particular area, or type of area, and make a careful regional survey of it in its different aspects, as in M. I. NEWBIGIN's 'Life of the Seashore,' or G. H. LEWES's 'Seaside Studies' (1858).

Another way of approach is to select some definite problem and work at it till it becomes fairly familiar. Take colour in nature, for instance, and the pursuit of its many problems soon introduces the student to almost every possible biological problem. See Miss Newbigin's 'Colour in Nature' (Mur.); E. B. POULTON's 'Colours of Animals' (K.P. 1890); F. E. BEDDARD's 'Animal Colouration' (Son. 1892); and A. R. WALLACE's 'Darwinism' (Mac. 1889).

§ 4. Many students are particularly attracted by certain kinds of animals, and this is another reasonable mode of approach, well represented by HUXLEY's classic 'The Crayfish' (I.S.S.). Those who are fond of birds may profitably start with W. P. PYCRAFT's fascinating and suggestive 'Story of Bird Life' (Newnes), and go on to 'The Book of Bird Life,' by Prof. A. A. ALLEN (C. & H.), or 'A Bird Book for the Pocket,' by E. SANDARS (2nd ed. 1929, O.U.P.); or HEADLEY's 'Life and Structure of Birds' (Mac.), LLOYD MORGAN's 'Habit and Instinct' (Arnold), the vol. on Birds in the Camb. Nat. Hist., NEWTON's 'Dictionary of Birds,' and so on. For the study of British birds, one of the

most satisfactory books is HOWARD SAUNDERS's 'British Birds.' Similarly, for the study of insects, the old 'Introduction to Entomology' by KIRBY and SPENCE is hard to beat, though it must now be read with critical discretion. There are good introductory text-books by Packard, Carpenter, Kellogg, and many others. Dr. Sharp's two vols. on Insects in the C.N.H. are masterly and reliable, and Prof. MIALl's 'Natural History of Aquatic Insects' is indispensable. C. A. EALAND's 'Insect Life' (Black, 1921) is of larger range. The general text-book of 'Zoology' by Prof. T. D. A. COCKERELL (Har.) supplies a large repertory. Other approaches may be made by such books as 'Butterfly Love,' by H. ELTRINGHAM; 'British Snails,' by A. E. ELLIS; or 'British Spiders, their Haunts and Habits' (all Cl. Pr.).

II.—GENERAL BIOLOGY

Biology, in the stricter sense, is an inquiry into the nature, continuance, and evolution of life. It has to do with general phenomena common to both plants and animals—e.g., the physical basis of life and its metabolism, the structure and life of cells, growth and development, reproduction, sex, and heredity; the process of organic evolution and the factors in it. As biology is based upon the concrete facts of zoology and botany, its generalisations cannot be fully appreciated by those who have not some practical acquaintance with representative phenomena.

(a) *Orientation*.—To get a survey of the field of biology the student may begin with 'Animal Biology,' by J. B. S. Haldane and Julian Huxley (Cl. Pr. 1927), or some of the Encyclopædia articles: 'Biology,' by HUXLEY, in the *Britannica*; 'Biology,' by P. GEDDES, in *Chambers's*; 'Biology,' by J. ARTHUR THOMSON, in *Harmsworth's*. Very suggestive is Patrick Geddes's short paper, 'Synthetic History of Biology' (Proc. R.Ph.S., Edin. 1885-86); W. M. BAYLIS's 'Introduction to General Physiology' (Lmns. 1919) and 'Principles' of that science (same, 1918).

(b) *General Surveys*.—There are good primers on 'Evolution' and 'Embryology,' by Prof. E. W. McBride in Benn's 6d. ser. The student will find it useful to read and re-read the short historical survey by J. A. Thomson, 'The Science of Life' (Blackie, 1899); the biographical portion of his 'Progress' (§ 1) and the biological chapters of the works of PEARSON and MERZ, above named. Among later handbooks are the 'Elementary Biology' of T. H. SAVORY; 'Biology for Beginners,' by T. J. MOON of N.Y.; 'Biology of Sex,' by Dr. T. W. GALLOWAY (all Har.); and the 'Biology' of Dr. G. N. CALKINS (Bell). For further study, 'The History of Biological Theories,' by E.

RÁDL (tr. and adapted by E. J. Hatfield, Cl. Pr. 1930); 'Animal Ecology and Evolution,' by C. ELTON (same, 1930); 'The Genetical Theory of Natural Selection,' by R. A. FISHER (same, 1930), and 'The Interpretation of Development and Heredity' by E. S. RUSSELL (same, 1930), present all the main aspects of scientific development of the main problems since Darwin.

(c) *Protoplasm and the Cell*.—The higher reaches of modern biology cannot be explored without some patient preliminary study of what is known in regard to protoplasm and the cell—i.e., the physical basis of life and its unit-areas. The student should begin by reading Huxley's famous address on 'The Physical Basis of Life.' He should then go on to such general essays as the following: Three articles in the old *Britannica*—'Physiology' (Foster), 'Protoplasm' (P. Geddes), 'Protozoa,' the large type (E. Ray Lankester); the relevant articles in the later vols.; the article 'Protoplasm' in *Chambers's*; the chapter on 'Vitalism' in BUNGE'S 'Physiological Chemistry' (E. tr. K.P. 1890). Of special pioneering importance are E. B. WILSON'S 'The Cell in Development and Inheritance' (2nd ed. Mac. 1901); YVES DELAGE'S *La structure du protoplasme et les théories sur l'hérédité et les grands problèmes de la biologie générale* (2nd ed. 1902); and Prof. E. B. WILSON'S 'The Cell in Development and Heredity' (Mac. N.Y. 3rd ed.). All of these are great works, with detailed bibliographies. An important study is LOEB'S 'Dynamics of Living Matter' (Mac. 1906). A standard treatise is the 'Text-book of Embryology' by several specialists (Mac. 3 v.).

(d) *Reproduction and Sex*.—A useful introduction to this subject is 'The Evolution of Sex,' by P. Geddes and J. Thomson (C.S.S. rev. ed. 1901), in which there is a full bibliography. See also J. T. CUNNINGHAM'S 'Sexual Dimorphism in the Animal Kingdom' (Black, 1900). Prof. COSSAR EWART'S 'Penycuik Experiments' (Black, 1899) is of great interest in regard to hybridisation and the like. A useful introduction to the general problems of development will be found in Sir P. Chalmers Mitchell's trans. of O. HERTWIG'S 'Biological Problem of To-day' (Hei. 1896) and his pamphlet 'Logic and Law in Biology' (Mac.). So also the Woods Holl 'Biological Lectures'—a series of vols. with much valuable material, largely embryological; the 'Evolution,' of Prof. J. G. KERR (Mac.); 'The Physiology of the Continuity of Life,' by Prof. D. NOEL PATON (same); 'The Mutation Factor in Evolution,' by Dr. R. R. GATES (same); and 'The Germ-Cell Cycle in Animals,' by Prof. R. W. HEGNER (Mac. N.Y.).

(e) *Heredity*.—In regard to this difficult but fundamentally

important subject, the student may begin by reading the primer of Dr. F. A. E. Crew, 'Heredity,' in Benn's 6d. ser., or some of the Encyclopædia articles under this title in *Chambers's*, *Blackie's*, *Harmsworth's*, *Encyc. Medica*, all by Sir J. Arthur Thomson; and the article by Sir P. Chalmers Mitchell in the supplementary part of the *Britannica*. He should then read the article on 'Heredity' in Pearson's 'Grammar of Science'; FRANCIS GALTON's 'Natural Inheritance'; WEISMANN's 'Germ-plasm' (C.S.S. 1893) and 'Papers on Heredity and Kindred Subjects' (Cl. Pr. 2 v. 1891); DELAGE's *L'Hérédité* (1903); Sir J. A. Thomson's 'Heredity' (Mur. 1908); and ARCHDALL REID's 'Principles of Heredity' (C. & H. 1905). Of great importance is BATESON's statement of 'Mendel's Principles of Heredity' (1902). The most convenient statement of the Mendelian theory is R. C. PUNNETT's 'Mendelism' (Mac. 7th ed. 1927). See also his 'Heredity in Poultry' (same).

Weismann's 'Germ-plasm' should be compared with Delage's *L'Hérédité*, to get at two different points of view; and similarly Spencer's 'Principles of Biology,' COPE's 'Factors in Evolution,' and EIMER's 'Organic Evolution' (tr. 1890), which accept the transmission of acquired characters or bodily modifications, should be contrasted with W. PLATT BALL's 'Effects of Use and Disuse' (*Nature* Ser.); LLOYD MORGAN's 'Animal Life and Intelligence' (1890; rev. under title 'Animal Behaviour': Arnold, 1900); and 'Habit and Instinct,' by the same author. A development of Weismann's views will be found in 'The Evolution Theory' (E. tr. ed. by Sir J. A. Thomson: Arnold); 'New Views on Evolution,' by Dr. G. P. CONGER, and 'Genetics: An Introduction to the Study of Heredity,' by Prof. H. E. WALTER, author of 'Biology of the Vertebrates: A Comparative Study of Man and his Animal Allies' (all Mac. N.Y.).

(f) *The Theory of Descent*.—While there is no understood fact of zoology or botany which may not be used as "an evidence of evolution," there are some sets of facts which are more suggestive and more convincing than others, and we may refer to G. J. ROMANES's 'Evidences of Evolution' (*Nature* Ser. 1882) and 'Darwin and After Darwin' (vol. i, 1892); ERNST HAECKEL, 'Natural History of Creation' (8th ed. 1890); HUXLEY, 'American Addresses' (1877); E. CLODD, 'Story of Creation: A Plain Account of Evolution' (R.P.A. rep.; Watts); WALLACE's 'Darwinism' and 'Contributions to the Theory of Natural Selection' (Mac.); METCALF, 'Outline of the Theory of Organic Evolution' (1904); JORDAN and KELLOGG, 'Evolution and Animal Life' (1907); J. P. LOTSY, *Vorlesungen über Descendenztheorien* (Jena, 1906), and Kellogg's 'Darwinism To-day' (Holt, 1907). Among

introductions to the study of organic evolution are: 'The Foundations of Biology,' by Prof. L. L. WOODRUFF; 'The Gist of Evolution,' by Prof. H. H. Newman; 'Creation by Evolution: A Consensus of Present-Day Knowledge by Leading Authorities,' ed. by FRANCES MASON; and 'The Meaning of Evolution,' by Dr. S. C. SCHMUCKER (all Mac. N.Y.).

(g) *Evolution of Evolution Theories*.—To students accustomed to historical and philosophical discipline it is always interesting to approach a subject historically. These may begin by reading HUXLEY's 'Lectures on Evolution' (Essays, vol. iv) and H. F. OSBORN's 'From the Greeks to Darwin' (Mac. 1894), a short and lucid treatment. The historical chapters on the Evolution theory in Thomson's 'Study of Animal Life' and 'The Science of Life' will also be useful at the outset. Further surveys are supplied in several of the general works above named. A vivid account of the rise of the Evolution theory is given by Haeckel in the early chapters of his 'Natural History of Creation' (E. tr. K.P.), and another by AUGUST WEISMANN in his 'Evolution Theory' (tr. 1904).

(h) *Recent Contributions to the Theory of Evolution*.—The theory of Evolution is still being evolved, and additional light is being gained in regard to the factors in the evolution process as in 'Recent Progress in the Study of Variation, Heredity, and Evolution,' by Dr. R. H. LOCK (Mur. 3rd ed. 1911). The following should be consulted: W. BATESON's 'Materials for the Study of Variation' (1894); MENDEL's 'Principles of Heredity' (Camb. 1902); F. Galton, 'Natural Inheritance'; P. Geddes, art. 'Variation and Selection,' in the *Britannica*, and 'Evolution,' in *Chambers's*; T. H. Morgan, 'Evolution and Adaptation' (Mac. 1903); Vernon, 'Variation in Animals and Plants' (I.S.S. 1903); the works of Lloyd Morgan, Romanes, Weismann, and Pearson, before mentioned; K. SEMPER's 'The Conditions of Existence as they affect Animal Life' (I.S.S.); DE VRIES, *Die Mutations-Theorie* (2 Bde. 1901-3) and 'Species and Varieties' (K.P. 1905); T. H. MORGAN, 'Experimental Zoology' (Mac. 1907); and V. L. KELLOGG, 'Darwinism To-Day' (Holt, 1907).

(i) *Animal Intelligence*.—The student should begin with C. Lloyd Morgan's 'Animal Life and Intelligence' (re-edited under title 'Animal Behaviour'), and with the 'Introduction to Comparative Psychology' and 'Habit and Instinct,' by the same author. He should also ponder over E. MACH's 'Contributions to the Analysis of the Sensations' (tr. Chic. 1897). Having got a sound working basis, he should increase his realisation of the facts by making personal observations, and seeking to discover the simplest interpretations of these. He may profitably spend

some time in critically examining the mass of recorded facts—sometimes observations subtly intermingled with inferences—of animal behaviour, *e.g.*, in Romanes's 'Animal Intelligence'; F. HOUSSAY's 'Industries of Animals' (trans. in C.S.S.).

In tackling the different problems of "Instinct," the student may usefully compare three works: Lloyd Morgan's 'Habit and Instinct,' Romanes's 'Mental Evolution in Animals,' and JACQUES LOEB's 'Comparative Physiology of the Brain' (1901), which represent different positions. See also WASMANN's *Instinkt und Intelligenz im Thierreich* (1897) and GROOS's 'Play of Animals' (E. tr. C. & H. 1900).

It will be found useful to inquire into the vague hints of mentality observed in very simple animals. See VERWORN's 'General Physiology' (E. tr. Mac.); BINET, *La vie psychique des micro-organismes* (1891); Romanes's 'Jelly-fishes,' etc. (I.S.S.); and to contrast what can be detected at this low level with the behaviour of highly evolved types. See LUBBOCK's 'Ants, Bees, and Wasps' (I.S.S.); A. ESPINAS, *Des Sociétés Animales, Études de Psychologie comparée* (1877 and later); P. GIROD, *Les Sociétés chez les Animaux* (1890); and HOUZEAU, *Des Facultés mentales des Animaux* (Brux. 1872).

For theories of instinctive behaviour see, in addition to those last mentioned, Darwin, 'Origin of Species'; Wallace, 'Contributions to the Theory of Natural Selection'; Spencer, 'Principles of Psychology' and 'Principles of Biology'; G. H. Lewes, 'Problems of Life and Mind' (1874-79); Samuel Butler, 'Life and Habit' (1878); J. J. MURPHY, 'Habit and Intelligence'; SCHNEIDER, *Die Thierische Wille* (Leip. 1880); Eimer, 'Organic Evolution' (1890).

(j) In the general zoological connection may be recommended Dr. J. H. BRADLEY's 'Parade of the Living: A History of Life on Earth' (Rout. 1931); and 'The Living Animals of the World in Picture and Story,' by a number of specialists (Hut. 4 v. 4to, with nearly 2000 illustrns.).

COURSE LXIX

BOTANY

Modes of Approach.—THE worst approach to this fascinating study is probably that afforded by many elementary text-books, which are strangely forbidding and lifeless. It is better to walk in the country with someone whose knowledge has passed through the analytic mill and lost the straw and chaff of technicality. It is better to work in a garden and to learn by experience what individual plants need, what their characters are, and how they behave. A useful mode of approach, which commends itself to many, is to select individual types—a bean plant, a buttercup, or a bracken, it matters little—and study it down to the ground. MARSHALL WARD'S 'Oak Tree' (K.P. 1892) may be recommended.

Three types, the wallflower, the white lily, and the spruce fir, are given in a more modern work, 'Structural Botany,' Part I (1927), by SCOTT and BROOKS; and for the flowerless plants, a necessarily larger number are described in Part II (1924), of which a new edition is in preparation. A still larger range of typical examples of plant-life is depicted more briefly, and limited to their external features and adaptations, in Caver's 'Life-Histories of Common Plants.' Another mode of approach, especially useful to those who know other departments of natural history, is to inquire into the interrelations between plants and animals as in lichens, gall-formation, and so on. Here Lord Avebury's 'Flowers and Insects' (Mac.); DARWIN'S 'Cross-fertilisation of Flowers' and his 'Forms of Flowers' (Mur.); SWANTON'S 'British Plant Galls' (1912), and GEDDES'S 'Chapters in Modern Botany' (Mur. U.E.M.) should be studied.

Another way of getting into the heart of things is to select a particular problem. To those who wish to become aware of the method of Botany, rather than to get a grasp of the science as a whole, this approach may be strongly recommended. We would suggest, for instance, such problems as "Insectivorous Plants," beginning with Geddes's article in the *Britannica*; consulting KERNER and OLIVER'S 'Natural History of Plants,' and so on till REYNOLDS GREEN'S great work on 'FERMENTS' is reached.

Similarly the student might select "Climbing Plants," and work from Darwin *père* to Darwin *fils*.

There are many ingratiating popular books, such as STEPHEN'S 'Wild Flowers Month by Month,' the same author's 'Wayside and Woodland Trees,' and 'Mushrooms and Toadstools of the Country-side' (all Warne); HULME'S 'Wild Fruits of the Country-side' (Hut.); and HENNESEY'S 'School Garden' (Blackie).

Introductory Text-books.—These are legion, but among the most satisfactory are CAVER'S 'Botany for Matriculation' (Clive); 'Botany, a Junior Book for Schools' by YAPP; 'The Elements of Botany' by Sir F. DARWIN (both from the C.U.P.), and E. N. TRANSEAU'S 'General Botany' (Har. 1924).

Larger Text-books.—Excelling all others in vitality is KERNER and OLIVER'S 'Natural History of Plants' (2 v. Blackie). The first vol. is a book to read and enjoy, the second is chiefly for reference; both are profusely illustrated in colour and in black and white. An indispensable work of reference, which may at once be mentioned, is WILLIS'S 'Dictionary of Flowering Plants and Ferns' (C.U.P. 1925). For regular study STRASBURGER'S 'Text-book of Botany' (6th E. ed. 1930, Mac.) must be resorted to. A good laboratory guide is 'Practical Plant Biology' by H. H. DIXON (Lmns. 1922). There are also TANSLEY'S 'Elements of Plant Biology' (A. & U. 1922) and MACGREGOR SKENE'S 'Biology of Flowering Plants' (Sidgwick & J. 1924). On the morphological side GOEBEL'S 'Organography of Plants' (trans. Balfour: O.U.P. vol. i, 1900; vol. ii, 1905) is excellent, and should be followed by 'An Introduction to Plant Anatomy' by EAMES and MACDANIELS (McGraw Hill, 1925), a book up to date and of moderate bulk. For the functions and activities of plants JOST'S 'Lectures on Plant Physiology,' though not recent, is comprehensive. MAXIMOW'S 'Text-book of Plant Physiology' (McGraw Hill, 1930), STILES'S 'Photo-synthesis' (Lmns. 1925), and 'The Transpiration Stream' by Dixon (U.L.Pr. 1924) should be mastered.

For fossil plants reference should be made to D. H. SCOTT'S 'Studies in Fossil Botany' (3rd. ed. 1920 and 1923), and this author's 'Extinct Plants and Problems of Evolution' (Mac. 1924) is even more important. We cannot omit SEWARD'S 'Plant-Life Throughout the Ages' (C.U.P. 1931).

On that attractive aspect of plant-study known as ecology, or plants considered in relation to their environment, A. G. TANSLEY is the acknowledged master, and his 'Types of British Vegetation' (C.U.P.) and 'Practical Plant Ecology' (A. & U. 1923) should on no account be neglected. RENDLE'S 'Classification of Flowering Plants' is the chief authority in this department, which

serves as a general introduction to the floras, general and local, given below.

It should be added that a survey of these various departments of the subject, by their respective chief English exponents, is to be found in the *Encyc. Brit.* (14th ed. 1929) under the general heading 'Plants.' The history of the science is given under 'Botany,' and here we may cite 'Outlines of the History of Botany' by HARVEY-GIBSON (Black, 1919), and 'A History of Botany in the United Kingdom,' by J. REYNOLDS GREEN (Dent, 1914), as sequels to the classic work of JULIUS VON SACHS: 'The History of Botany, 1530-1860' (E. tr. 1890).

For the biology of the great classes of cryptogams we would recommend the following:—'The Ferns' by BOWER (3 v. 1923-28); 'The Structure and Development of Mosses and Ferns' by CAMPBELL (3rd ed. 1918); 'Treatise on the British Freshwater Algae,' by WEST and FRITSCH (C.U.P. 1927); also 'Algae' by WEST (vol. i, 1916), a more general account; MURRAY's 'Study of Seaweeds' (Mac.); 'Lichens' by Miss A. L. SMITH (1921); the same lady's monograph of the British Lichens (B.M. 1926), and 'The Structure and Development of the Fungi,' by Dame HELEN GWYNNE-VAUGHAN and J. BARNES (1927). All from the C.U.P.

A curious study, and one throwing light on the nature and origin of plant-organs, deals with aberrant or "monstrous" forms, of which the most familiar is the "doubling" of flowers: 'Vegetable Teratology' by MASTERS (Hardwicke).

Field Work.—The student, being now equipped with a general acquaintance with the structure and life-history of plants, will be able to do justice to what, for many who call themselves botanists, is the only part of the study they pursue, that is to say the search for, identification, and preservation of botanical specimens, a pursuit so delightful that we hesitate to disparage it, however unscientifically conducted, except just to hint that merely to acquire the name (too often the English name only) of a plant is but the beginning of wisdom. At the worst, field work does bring home to the more careful student the meaning and scope of "species," and he can get it from our British flora even more readily than from our fauna, since the records are more complete and identification is more secure. From Botany, even better than from Zoology, the student can soon learn what is meant by "variation."

There are many smaller British "Floras" (books describing our wild plants in proper sequence), but it is best to get a really complete one to begin with, and undoubtedly the best for the amateur is BENTHAM and HOOKER's 'Handbook to the British Flora,' with an Introduction to the outlines of Botany in special

reference to local Floras, and analytical keys to the families and genera (7th rev. ed. edited by RENDLE). There are two accompanying vols.:—‘Illustrations of the British Flora’ by FITCH and W. G. SMITH and others, 5th rev. ed., and ‘Further Illustrations of the British Flora’ by STRUDWICK, with brief descriptions by BUTCHER, bringing the subject down to 1930.

The constant *vade mecum* of the rambling searcher is HAYWARD’S ‘Botanist’s Pocket-book,’ 18th ed. 1930, rev. by DRUCE (Bell). The final court of appeal in the sometimes difficult but always fascinating questions of identification is SOWERBY’S ‘English Botany’ (edited by Syme, 3rd ed.). These are supplemented by county and other local “Floras.” Dr. Druce, chief of all our field-botanists, has produced four: Berkshire, Oxfordshire, Buckinghamshire, and Northamptonshire—a unique feat. See also TOWNSEND’S ‘Flora of Hampshire,’ 2nd ed. 1904 (Lovell Reeve) and its ‘Supplement’ (1929), by RAYNER.

The increasing sub-division of many genera in the hands of specialists is set out in a number of handbooks, of which we will only instance ‘British Rubi’ by MOYLE ROGERS; ‘British Violets’ by Mrs. GREGORY; ‘Potamogetons’ by A. BENNETT; and ‘Charophyta’ (the Stoneworts and their allies, those curious aquatics) by GROVES and BULLOCK-WEBSTER. A mine of information on these critical points will be gained from the annual *Reports* of the Botanical Society and Exchange Club of the British Isles, of which Dr. Druce is secretary (Yardley Lodge, Oxford). The *Journal of Botany* (Taylor & Francis, Red Lion Court, E.C. 4) is another established oracle.

For the field-worker among the cryptogams or flowerless plants the following may be indicated: *Ferns* and their allies are described in BENTHAM’S and other “Floras”; for the species of *Mosses* the authority is the ‘Student’s Handbook of British Mosses’ by DIXON, figures by JAMESON (2nd ed. Sumfield, Eastbourne). For *Liverworts* the authority is MACVICAR’S ‘British Hepatics’ (Sumfield); but the older and cheaper ‘Handbook of British Hepaticae’ of COOKE is still useful. For *Fungi* the only single vol. “Flora” is MASSEE’S ‘British Fungi and Lichens’ (Rout.). It gives brief descriptions of practically all the larger (non-microscopic) species, and many coloured plates, but these are rather crude. There is a good introduction. SWANTON’S ‘Fungi and How to Know Them’ (Met.) has informative chapters on the physiology and ecology, also the economic aspect of the study, and numerous excellent figures, but only a selection of species is described. Step’s ‘Mushrooms and Toadstools of the Country-side,’ above mentioned, is uniform with his other pocket vols.

COOKE’S ‘Edible and Poisonous Mushrooms’ (S.P.C.K.) is

the best guide to this department of the subject, and his magnificent 'Illustrations,' if accessible, are invaluable. CARLETON REA's 'British Basidiomycetae' (C.U.P. 1922) is the authority for this great class. *Lichens* are perhaps the least popular of cryptogams. For them there is no popular English "Flora" in print; but the *Nouvelle Flore des Lichens* of BOISTÈL (Dupont, Paris) is a first-rate little guide. Miss A. L. SMITH's 'Lichens' has already been referred to; and it remains to mention her smaller 'Handbook of British Lichens' (Brit. Mus.) which is the best introduction in English, giving descriptions of typical species and a number of very clear figures.

For *Seaweeds* the best for collectors are GRAY's 'British Seaweeds' (L. Reeve), and the smaller but still useful 'Common Seaweeds' of Mrs. LANE CLARK (Warne).

Directions for COLLECTING and PRESERVING are exhaustively provided by HORWOOD's 'Practical Field Botany,' and a pamphlet on the subject is issued from the Nat. Hist. Museum, S. Kensington.

The terminology of Botany is claimed to be the most copious in all the sciences, and the student will often turn to B. D. JACKSON's 'Glossary of Botanic Terms' (Duck. 1916). A smaller work is ZIMMER's 'Popular Dictionary of Botanical Names and Terms' (Rout.), and the meaning of Latin or Latinised names of plants—a terror to many worthy folk—is to be found at the end of Colonel MACKENSIE's 'Wild Flowers and How to Name them without Botany,' a little book which has run into 11 editions and over 150,000 copies, but, as it dispenses with our science, ought not perhaps to be mentioned here! A glossary is often given in "Floras" and other botanical works, such as BABINGTON's 'British Botany,' a work of high repute, though not hitherto mentioned.

Evolution.—While Evolution is now generally admitted to be a fact, the processes of Evolution are in dispute. The botanist should read, in addition to Dr. Scott's work given above, such books as PUNNETT's 'Mendelism' (Mac. 1927); 'The Mutation Theory' by DE VRIES (E. tr. by Farmer, 1910); 'Age and Area' by Willis (C.U.P. 1922); and of course the *fons et origo* of the whole matter, CHARLES DARWIN's 'The Origin of Species by Means of Natural Selection' (6th and last ed. 1s. Watts, and others).

· INDEX OF SUBJECTS

- ABBAS II, 228
 Abyssinia, 395-96
 Acoustics. *See* Sound.
 Acts, Book of, 94
 Ægean civilisation, 27, 232
 Aeroplanes, 34, 430, 434
 Æsthetics, 165-77, 449
 Afghanistan, 337-38
 Africa, 10, 60, 198, 281, 332, 378
 African races, 393
 Agnosticism, 64, 101, 117, 125
 Agricola, 247
 Agriculture, 401, 467, 468
 Ainu, the, 14
 Akbar, 100, 330
 Alaric, 249
 Alaska, 384
 Albert, Prince, 353
 Alchemy, 425
 Alexander the Great, 233, 235,
 236, 328
 — I, 303
 — II, 302, 303
 Alfonso XIII, 263
 Alphabet, 320
 Ambrose, St., 96
 America, 36, 47, 198, 199, 201,
 260, 352
 — Central, 388-92
 — North, 60, 198, 271, 380-92
 — South, 60, 188, 382, 388-92
 American literature, 387, 461
 — Negro, 387
 Amusements, 424-27
 Anarchism, 185, 192
 Ancestor-worship, 41
 Ancient history, 26, 181, 213,
 236, 320, 342, 359, 368
 Anglo-Saxons, 342 sq.
 Animal intelligence, 136, 472,
 473, 474
 Animism, 17, 40, 62
 Anne, Queen, 343, 352
 Anthropology, 1 sq., 101, 178,
 392, 393, 433
 Antichrist legend, 89
 Antigua, 378
 Antiquities, Classical, 35, 179,
 237, 238, 247
 Apes, 20
 Apocalypse, 89, 94
 Apocrypha, 73, 91, 94
 Apollonius of Tyana, 95, 97, 108
 Apologetics, 100
 Apostles, 78, 86, 87, 89
 Arabia, 9, 316, 405
 Arabs, 51, 226, 260, 318, 394
 Archæology, 15 sq., 249, 303, 342,
 347, 438
 Architecture, 175, 341, 437-40
 Argentina, 392
 Aristotelianism, 106, 125, 138,
 168, 169
 Armada, 261
 Arnold of Brescia, 251
 Arts, 169, 172, 230, 248, 272, 433
 sq.
 Aryans, 5, 38
 "As If," philosophy of, 131, 144,
 147
 Ashanti, 11, 378, 394
 Asia, 224, 281
 Asoka, 329
 Assyriology, 27, 50, 70, 74, 221
 sq., 318, 414, 442
 Astrology, 80, 208, 426
 Astronomy, 429
 Atheism, 65, 106, 127
 Athens, 179, 235, 238, 240
 Augustus to Augustine, 98
 Aurangzeb, 330
 Aurelius, 97, 137, 246
 Australia, 11, 198, 205, 376-77,
 378, 422
 — South, 376
 — West, 376
 Austria, 294-96, 311
 Babylon, 27, 50, 74, 221 sq., 414
 Bach, 446, 449

- Bacon, 110, 168, 208, 351
 Balfour, A. J., 62, 63, 76, 122,
 127, 129, 166
 Balkans, the, 311-13
 Baluchistan, 337
 Banking, 199-201
 Baptists, 357, 422
 Barbadoes, 378
 Basil, St., 96
 Bastile, 276
 Beauty, 131, 165-77
 Beethoven, 175, 449
 Behaviourism, 159
 Belgium, 285-86
 Belisarius, 246
 Bengal, 271, 330, 331, 332
 Bergson, 17, 123, 124, 163
 Bhotan, 338
 Bible, 33
 Bimetallism, 200, 384
 Biology, 160, 430, 468 sq.
 Birds, 469
 Bismarck, 188, 290, 293, 398
 Black Death, 350
 Boehme, 109
 Boer War, 375
 Boerhaave, 432
 Bohemia, 296, 311
 Bokhara, 338
 Bolingbroke, 190, 352
 Bolivia, 391
 Bolshevism, 305-8
 Borgias, Cesare, 253
 Borneo, 13, 334, 339, 340
 Botany, 430, 475 sq.
 Botha, Gen., 375
 Boulanger, 280
 Boulton, 435
 Bourbons, 255, 278
 Brahmanism, 47, 54
 Brahms, 449
 Brain, 160-61
 Brazil, 390
 Britain, 341 sq.
 British India, 330-32, 373
 Brooke, Rajah, 340
 Brown, John, 381
 Bruno, 109
 Buddhism, 46, 47, 52, 54, 137,
 324, 329, 407
 Bulgaria, 311 sq.
 Burgundy, 283
 Burke, 168, 181, 182, 209, 352
 Burma, 54, 337
 Burr, 383
 Bushmen, 11
 Byzantium, 239, 245, 438
 Cabanis, 113
 Caesar, 245, 248, 266, 342
 Cambodia, 340
 Campanella, 109
 Canada, 205, 271, 373-74
 Cannibalism, 16, 394
 Canning, 190
 Cape Colony, 375
 Capitalism, 202
 Cardan, 109
 Cards, playing, 426
 Carinus, 248
 Cartesianism, 110
 Carthage, 27, 229
 Catherine II, 302
 Catiline, 246, 248
 Cave-life, 15, 441
 Celibacy, priestly, 32
 Celsus, 97
 Celtic history, 342, 361, 362, 365,
 368
 — literature, 457
 — Place-Names, 361
 — religion, 61, 365
 Ceylon, 334, 339
 Chance, 153
 Channel Islands, 347
 Charlemagne, 288, 417
 Charles I, 354
 — II, 261, 352, 354, 363
 — V, 259, 267
 — VII, 267
 — VIII, 267
 Chartism, 185, 353
 Chemistry, 429
 Chess, 426
 Child-life, 157
 Chile, 391
 China, 10, 32, 51, 281, 319-22,
 333, 338, 340, 378, 414, 453, 456
 — religion in, 55
 Chivalry, 412, 422
 Christian Science, 65
 Christianity, 33, 77 sq., 334, 394
 Christina, Queen, 301
 Christism, Gentile, 94
 Chronology, 251, 320
 Chrysostom, St., 96
 Church and churches, 96, 97, 98
 sq., 266, 275, 347, 355, 356, 361,
 363-64, 366, 368, 385, 412, 421-
 23, 451
 Cicero, 107, 137, 247
 City State, the, 179, 237, 238

- Civilisation, I, 9, 30 sq., 33, 101,
 178, 215, 232, 259, 320, 360,
 421-27
 Claverhouse, 363
 Climate, 467
 Clive, 331
 Clodius, 246
 Cobden, 185, 190
 Coins, 240
 Coligny, 268
 Colombia, 390
 Colonies, 271, 281, 284, 332, 340
 — British, 373-78, 379
 Colour, 171, 175
 — in nature, 469
 Comenius, 419
 Comic, the, 163
 Commerce, 195, 198, 354, 355,
 371, 401, 414-15, 433, 435
 Communism, 189, 280, 307-8, 385,
 423
 Comtism, 65, 117-18, 127, 187
 Concordat, 276, 281
 Condillac, 113
 Confession, 98, 99
 Confucianism, 47, 51, 52
 Confucius, 51, 137
 Congregationalism, 357, 422
 Co-operation, 185, 385, 415
 Coral Islands, 467
 Corea, 339
 Corsica, 254
 Costa Rica, 389
 Costume, 425, 427
 Councils, Church, 94
 County Histories, 347
 Crayfish, 469
 Creation, 4, 472
 Credit, 195, 199, 200
 Crete, 233
 Crime, 209, 218, 355, 412
 Cromer, 227, 228
 Cromwell, 351, 354, 451
 Crusades, 257-58, 316
 Cuchulainn, 43
 Cullen, W., 432
 Culture-history, 5, 30 sq., 37, 68,
 238, 250, 359, 425
 Customs, 303, 347, 368, 424, 425
 Cyprus, 241
 Czecho-Slovakia, 296, 311
 Dacia, 313
 Dante, 254, 457
 Danton, 274
 Darwinism, 3, 187
 David, King, 72
 Davis, Jefferson, 382
 Decoration, 176, 435, 436
 Defectives, 158, 160
 Democracy, 180, 188, 192
 Demonology, 44
 Denmark, 299 sq., 436
 Descartes, 110, 111, 132
 Determinism, 139
 Devil, 43, 99, 426
 D'Holbach, 113
 Diderot, 113, 169
 Dioscuri, 96
 Disarmament, 402
 Dissent, 356
 Docetists, 80, 93
 Dogma, 99, 100
 Dominions, British, 373-78, 379
 Domitian, 246, 248
 Drama, 174, 239, 450-54
 Drawing, 441 sq.
 Dreams, 18, 162
 Dreyfus, 280
 Druids, the, 366
 Drummond, T., 372
 Duns Scotus, 108
 Duplex, 332
 Dynamics. *See* Mechanics.
 Earth, the, 4, 465, 466, 468
 Earthquakes, 440
 East, the ancient, 237
 — the near, 232, 257, 312, 405
 Eastern Question, 312, 314
 Economics, 23, 147, 179, 194-
 205, 401
 Ecuador, 390
 Edison, 430
 Edom, 318
 Education, 34, 158, 416-20
 — Ancient, 416
 — English, 417
 — French, 417-18
 — German, 416, 418
 Edward I, 348, 349, 412
 — II, 349
 — III, 349
 Egypt, 27, 48, 222, 224-28, 414,
 431, 438
 Eighteenth century, 261, 352, 356
 Electricity, 34, 430, 435
 Elizabeth, 347, 350, 356, 370
 — Farnese, 261
 Embryology, 470, 471
 Empire, Holy Roman, 28, 244,
 245, 257, 258

- England, 341 sq., 424, 437, 438,
 439, 465
 Enoch, Book of, 94
 Entomology, 470
 Epicureanism, 105, 107
 Epidemics, 355, 432
 Erigena, 108
 Eskimos, 14
 Essenes, 56, 90
 Ethics, 48, 55, 74, 75, 101, 114,
 121, 134-48, 160
 Ethiopia, 396
 Ethnology and Ethnography, 1
 sq., 218, 219, 223, 255, 334, 343,
 376, 381, 393
 Etruscans, 27, 243, 250
 Europe, 26, 188, 255, 257, 408
 Evolution, 2, 4, 123, 466, 470,
 472
 Exchanges, 199, 201

 Fairy Tales, 15, 36
 Family, the, 9
 Fascism, 256-57
 Fashion, 272, 427
 Federalism, 181
 Feminism, 406
 Ferdinand and Isabella, 261
 Ferrer, 335
 Fetishism, 17, 62
 Feudalism, 348, 412-13
 Fichte, 114, 116, 143, 188, 209
 Fiction, origin of, 36
 Fiji, 12
 Film industry, 435
 Finance, 180, 191, 193, 384, 401
 Finland, 303, 405
 Finnish religion, 61
 Fire, Sacred, 40
 Fiscal policy, 204
 Florence, 251, 254
 Folk-lore, 9, 13, 36 sq., 43, 64,
 300, 320, 365, 407, 424-25.
 Force and Matter, 119
 Fox, 190, 352
 France, 33, 264-81, 290, 332, 359,
 438, 439, 451, 458
 Francis I., 267
 Franklin, 383
 Franks, 266
 Frederick II., 100, 251, 271, 288
 — the Great, 289, 295
 Freemasonry, 426
 Freethought, 33
 Free Trade, 185, 193, 203-5, 211,
 384

 Free-will, 123, 138-39, 154
 French Revolution, 181, 214, 265,
 271, 273, 277
 Freudism, 162
 Furniture, 176, 436

 Gaius, 411
 Games, 424, 426
 Gandhi, 336
 Gardening, 427
 Garibaldi, 256
 Garrison, 381
 Gassendi, 111
 Gaul, 264, 266, 270
 Genoa, 251
 Geography, 21 sq.
 Geology, 21, 430, 464-67
 George III., 190, 352
 — IV., 190, 353
 Germany, 99, 200, 287-93, 416,
 418, 440, 458
 Gibraltar, 261, 378
 Gladstone, 62, 142, 191, 372
 Gluck, 175, 448
 Gnosticism, 56, 93
 God-idea, 17, 41, 119, 125
 Gold, 199, 200, 396, 401, 435
 Gold Coast, 378, 394
 Gold-work, 435
 Gordon, 226
 Gorillas, 20
 Gospels, 73, 77, 87
 Government, 181, 185, 188, 341
 Granada, 261
 Graphology, 163
 Great Britain, 341 sq.
 Greece, 27, 32, 57, 105, 179, 213,
 232-41, 407, 438, 450, 456
 — Modern, 240, 311-13, 405
 Greenland, 301
 Gregory of Nazianzun, 96
 Grey, Sir G., 377
 Grieg, 449
 Guatemala, 389
 Guesclin, Du, 267
 Guiana, 378
 Gustavus Adolphus, 300
 — Vasa, 300
 — III., 301
 Gypsies, 76

 Hadrian, 248
 Hamilton, 383
 Hammurabi, 51, 71, 221
 Haroun Alraschid, 317

- Hastings, 331
 Hayti, 392, 395
 Head-hunting, 13, 340
 Healy, Tim, 372
 Heathenism, 97
 Hebrews, 27, 51, 74, 230
 Hedonism, 142, 147
 Hegel, 114, 115, 116, 118, 131,
 132, 143, 153, 163, 170, 171,
 180, 209
 Hell, 99, 101
 Henri II of France, 267
 — III of France, 268
 — IV of France, 268, 272
 Henry II of England, 349, 371
 — III of England, 349
 — IV of England, 350
 — V of England, 350
 — VII of England, 350
 — VIII of England, 350
 Heraldry, 413
 Herbart, 114, 115
 Herculanum, 249
 Heredity, 471-72
 Hertz, 430
 Hierology, 46 sq.
 Hinduism, 43, 53
 History, 1, 29, 30, 178, 221 sq.
 — Political, 24 sq.
 Hittites, 223
 Hobbes, 111, 139, 141, 163, 168,
 169, 181, 208, 237
 Holland, 139, 282-84
 Home Rule, 191, 335, 372
 Homer, 407, 437
 Honduras, 378, 389
 Hong-Kong, 320, 334, 378
 Hoover, 404
 Hôpital, De l', 267, 268
 Hottentots, 11
 Huguenots, 267, 268, 423
 Humanism, 128, 147, 178
 Hume, 112, 113, 114, 116, 121,
 130, 131, 141, 144, 148, 168,
 169, 170, 182, 209, 345, 410
 Hungary, 294-96
 Hypnotism, 67, 161
 Ice Age, 467
 Iceland, 299 sq.
 Iconography, 44
 Immortality, doctrine of, 49, 64,
 101, 126, 154
 Imperialism, 180
 Impey, Sir E., 331
 Independency, 356, 422
 India, 9, 26, 27, 53 sq., 198, 199,
 262, 271, 317, 328-36, 340, 373,
 407, 436, 440, 453, 456
 — philosophy in, 132
 — religion in, 53-54, 328, 334
 Indians, North American, 13,
 386-87
 Industry, 189, 198, 272, 346, 384,
 401, 414-15, 435
 Inquisition, 33, 262
 Insects, 469, 470
 Instinct, 57, 474
 Intelligence, 158. *See* Psycho-
 logy.
 International law, 411-13
 Inventions, 34, 433, 435
 Iranians, 27, 221
 Ireland, 37, 367-72, 424
 Islam, 28, 32, 59, 60, 92, 258, 260,
 315, 316, 394, 407
 Israel, 27, 32, 69, 231
 Italy, 28, 179, 250-58, 438, 440,
 451, 457
 — Modern, 192, 256
 — philosophy in, 119, 120
 Jackson, 382
 Jainism, 56
 Japan, 52, 53, 199, 201, 323-5,
 333, 339, 414, 440, 454, 456
 — religion in, 52-53, 323
 Java, 284
 Jefferson, 383
 Jeschu, Toledoth, 84
 Jesuits, 258, 396, 422
 Jesus, 77 sq.
 Jews, 68 sq., 219, 230, 310
 Joan of Arc, 266, 270, 278
 John, King, 349
 — Scotus, 108
 — Sobieski, 309
 Jonah, 71
 Judaism, 46, 48, 68 sq., 138
 Julian, 57, 96, 246
 Jurisprudence, 411-13
 Justinian, 246, 411
 Kabbalah, 93
 Kaffirs, 10
 Kant, 114, 115, 116, 118, 119,
 131, 140, 143, 148, 163, 169,
 170, 172, 209
 Kinship, 9, 316
 Knox, 359, 360
 Koran, 60
 Krishna, 54

- Lake-dwellings, 16
 Lamaism, 338
 La Mettrie, 110, 113
 Land Nationalisation, 186
 — Question, 186, 201, 355
 Language, 19, 25, 38, 223, 230
 Lao Tse, 52
 Lassalle, 188
 Laughter, 123, 163
 Law, 178, 186, 191, 214, 239, 303,
 348, 366, 411-12
 Law, J., 270
 League of Nations, 401
 Lee, 382
 Leibnitz, 110, 112, 115
 Lenin, 307
 Liberalism, 189, 190, 191
 Liberia, 394
 Life, origin of, 474
 Light, 175
 Lincoln, 381
 Literature, 53, 252, 258, 321,
 329, 341, 345, 455-63
 Livy, 248
 Local Government, 191, 348, 374
 Locke, 111, 112, 140, 154, 163,
 181, 190, 208, 420, 431
 Locomotive, 434
 Logic, 115, 116, 128, 142, 149-55,
 160
 Logos, 86, 102
 Lollards, 350
 Louis Philippe, 278
 — St., 270
 — XI, 264, 267
 — XII, 267
 — XIII, 268, 269
 — XIV, 169, 269, 290, 352
 — XV, 269, 271, 273
 — XVI, 270, 271, 273
 Lowe, Sir H., 277
 Lucretius, 107
 Lynching, 395

 Mabinogion, the, 437
 Machiavelli, 181, 208, 254
 Madagascar, 395
 Madison, 383
 Magic, 17, 39, 62, 426
 Magyars, the, 37, 294, 295
 Mahrattas, 332
 Majorca and Minorca, 254
 Malay Archip., 13, 339
 Malebranche, 111, 112
 Malta, 16, 378
 Malthusianism, 183-84
 Man, 186, 424, 441
 Mandated States, 400-1
 Manichæism, 57, 92
 Maori, 12, 377
 Marat, 273
 Marcion, 92
 Maria Theresa, 295
 Marionettes, 427
 Marie de' Medici, 268
 Marlowe, 452
 Marriage, 9, 316, 411
 Mary of Scotland, 360, 362
 Mashonaland, 396
 Materialism, 110, 119, 129, 217
 Mathematics, 429
 Matriarchy, 7
 Matter, 123, 130, 430
 Mazarin, 268, 269, 354
 Mazzini, 256
 Mechanics, 429
 Medici, 251, 255, 268
 Medicine, 430, 431, 432
 Medieval history, 28, 266, 346,
 349, 359, 368
 Melanesia, 7, 11, 397
 Meliorism, 65, 145
 Melville, 359
 Memory. *See* Mnemonics.
 Mesmerism. *See* Hypnotism.
 Mesopotamia, 221, 327, 399
 — Modern, 399
 Metaphysics. *See* Philosophy.
 Meteorology, 23
 Methodism, 357, 366, 422-23
 Mexico, 261, 388-9
 Middle Ages, 32, 33, 99, 181, 199,
 257, 288, 344, 421, 425
 Mill, J., 142, 143, 156, 185, 330
 — J. S., 66, 116, 118, 142, 143,
 149, 151, 152, 153, 156, 158,
 181, 185, 195, 196, 211, 408
 Mind, 130, 158, 474.
 Mirabeau, 274
 Miracles, 100
 Missions, 52, 101, 258, 332
 Mississippi Bubble, 270
 Mithraism, 57, 84, 92
 Mnemonics, 160
 Mohammedanism, 48, 56, 317,
 328, 329
 Monasticism, 32, 99, 346, 408,
 422
 Money, 195, 199, 200, 384, 414
 Mongols, 320, 327, 338
 Monomotopa, 394
 Montanism, 92

- Montenegro, 311
 Montfort, Simon de, 349
 Montrose, 363
 Morality, 16, 134, 140
 Moravians, 296, 311, 423
 Mormonism, 65, 66, 380
 Morocco, 10, 317
 Motors, 434
 Music, 13, 175
 Mycenæans, 232, 240
 Mysticism, 63, 108, 128
 Mythology, 35 sq., 71, 78, 232
 Mustapha Kemal, 315

 Naples, 255
 Napoleon I, 226, 255, 261, 276,
 277, 310, 378
 — III, 279, 286
 Nasmyth, 435
 Natal, 375, 393
 Natural History. *See* Biology,
 Zoology, Botany.
 Neo-Platonism, 93
 Nepal, 337-38
 Nero, 246
 Netherlands. *See* Holland.
 Newfoundland, 373-75
 New Guinea, 12, 14
 New South Wales, 376
 Newspapers, English, 461
 New Zealand, 376, 377-78
 Nicaragua, 389
 Nicolas of Cusa, 109
 Nihilism, 214, 304
 Nineteenth century, 29, 256, 258,
 280, 293, 352, 356
 Nineveh, 222
 Nonconformity, 356, 366, 422-3
 Norman Conquest, 349, 354
 Normans, 255, 299, 342, 343,
 344
 Norway, 299-sq.

 Oak, 475
 Occultism, 66
 O'Connell, 371
 Olaf, King, 300
 Oligarchies, Greek, 236
 Opera, 448
 Optics. *See* Light.
 Oratorio, 448
 Orders, 421
 Organ, 449
 Oriental history, 222
 Ossian, 457
 Odin = Othin, 42, 125

 Paganism, 13, 44, 97
 Pain, 171
 Paine, 65, 182, 383
 Painting, 170, 175, 176, 441 sq.
 Palestine, 51, 69, 75, 231, 401
 — Modern, 231
 Pantheism, 62, 108, 126, 132
 Papacy, 253, 257-58, 266, 369
 Pape, F. C., 248
 Paraguay, 391, 392
 Parliaments, French, 270
 — English, 184, 191, 347-49,
 351
 Parnell, 371, 372
 Parseeism, 47
 Passion Play, Oberammergau,
 451
 Patriarchal theory, 9
 Paul, 87, 92
 Peasant Wars, 350
 Peel, 190, 352, 371
 Pelagius and Pelagianism, 139
 Pentateuch, 70 sq.
 Pericles, 238
 Persia, 27, 56, 108, 222, 326-27,
 407
 Peru, 261, 390-91
 Pessimism, 118, 126
 Peter the Great, 302
 Petra, 318
 Petrarch, 254
 Petrology, 467
 Phallicism, 40
 Philip II, 260, 261
 — III, 260
 — Augustus, 266
 — le Hardi, 270
 — le Bel, 270
 Philistines, 27, 230
 Philo, 86
 Philology, 85
 Philosophy, 55, 61, 75, 104 sq.
 — Moral, 134-48
 Phœnicia, 27, 51, 229, 442
 Photography, 435
 Phrenology, 161
 Physics, 429
 Physiology, 160, 432, 468 sq.
 Pianoforte, 448, 449
 Piedmont, 256
 Pitt, 190, 352, 371
 Place, 183, 190
 Plantagenets, 349
 Plato, 106-7, 137, 168, 180, 208
 Platonism, 106
 Plotinus, 107

- Poetry, 35, 72, 105, 169, 170, 172
 Poland, 309-10
 Politics, 24, 147, 178-93, 237, 385
 Polynesia, 12, 60, 397
 Pompeii, 249
 Porto Rico, 384, 388, 392
 Portugal, 259-63, 332, 390, 458
 Portuguese in India, 262
 Positivism, 65
 Pottery, 435
 Poverty, 186, 189
 Pragmatism, 114, 122, 127, 128, 147
 Predestination, 139
 Pre-history, 242, 342, 361, 368, 414, 441
 Presbyterianism, 357
 Printing, 434
 Probabilities, 152-53
 Property in land, 292
 Prophecy, 72
 Protection, 203-5
 Psycho-analysis, 162
 Psychology, 18, 61, 139, 156-64, 420, 474
 Puritans and Puritanism, 346, 351, 356, 357
 Purgatory, 99
 Pygmies, 15

 Quakerism, 423
 Queensland, 376

 Rabelais, 418
 Races. *See* Ethnology.
 Radicalism, 184, 190
 Randolph, E., 383
 Rationalism, 33, 46, 62, 63, 92, 100, 139, 220
 Reason, 130, 171
 Redmond, 372
 Redskins, 386-87
 Reformation, 28, 180, 253, 258, 262, 268, 270, 288, 350, 359, 369
 Reid, 91, 111, 113, 116, 142, 169, 170
 Relativity, 129
 Religion, 16, 17, 112, 116, 248, 346
 Renaissance, 109, 252-53, 261, 266, 288, 408
 Rent, 203
 Rhythm, 102, 174, 449
 Richard I, 349
 — II, 350

 Richard III, 350
 Richelieu, 268, 269
 Robespierre, 274
 Romanism, 94
 Rome, 27-28, 32, 58, 97, 213, 242, 49, 438, 450, 456, 457
 Roumania, 311-13
 Russia, 99, 188, 192, 299, 302-8, 339, 403

 Sacrifice, 11, 17, 74
 Sagas, 299-300
 St. Bartholomew Massacre, 267
 St. Helena, 378
 Saints, ancient and modern, 94, 96, 300, 358, 368
 Saladin, 317
 Salvador, 389
 Samoa, 397
 Samson, 71
 Sanscrit, 53, 329, 456
 Santa Domingo, 392
 Saracens, 226, 316-18
 Sardinia, 254
 Satan, 98-99
 Savonarola, 254
 Scandinavia, 61, 299-301, 461-62
 Scepticism, 72, 105, 107, 122, 127
 Schelling, 114, 115, 116, 170, 209
 Scholasticism, 107-8
 Sciences, physical, history of, 428 sq.
 Scotland, 37, 358-64, 424, 425, 439, 461
 Sculpture, 176, 441 sq.
 Secret Societies, 255, 423
 Sects, 423
 Seismology, 23
 Semites, 27, 51, 221, 230
 Serbia, 311-13
 Serfdom, 410
 Serpent-worship, 40
 Servia. *See* Serbia.
 Sex, 162, 406-7, 470, 471
 Shaftesbury, 190, 352
 Shakespeare, 172, 173, 347, 452
 Shamanism, 18, 61, 431
 Shintoism, 53
 Shorthand, 434
 Siam, 337
 Siberia, 14, 304, 339
 Sicily, 250, 252
 Siemens, 435
 Sierra Leone, 378, 394
 Sikhs, 332
 Simon Magus, 82

- Sinn Fein, 372
 Slavery, 215, 381, 410
 Socialism, 185, 186-87, 189, 217, 257, 385
 Sociology, 1, 6, 14, 74, 147, 178, 206-20, 259, 261, 272, 301, 320
 Socrates, 105, 137, 167
 Solar myths, 38
 Solon, 180
 Sonata, 449
 Songs, 449
 Soudan, 226-28
 Sound, 175
 South Africa, 375-76, 393-96
 South America, 60, 188, 382, 388-92
 South Sea Islands, 11, 12, 397
 Spain, 33, 259-63, 451, 458
 Spinoza, 110, 111, 112, 127, 139, 140, 147, 181
 Spiritualism, 65, 66
 Stafford, 351
 Stalin, 307, 308
 State, the, 180, 186, 189
 Stein, 290
 Stephenson, 435
 Stoicism, 97, 105, 107, 137
 Stone Age, 3, 16, 250
 Stonehenge, 15
 Subconscious, the, 162, 163
 Sumatra, 340
 Sumerians, 26, 51, 74, 221 sq., 414
 Sumner, 382
 Sun, 38
 Sunday, 99
 Sun Yat Sen, 321
 Superconscious, the, 162
 Superstition, 424-27
 Sweden, 299 sq.
 Switzerland, 188, 297-98, 465
 Symbolism, 40, 129
 Tacitus, 248
 Talmud, 60, 75, 84
 T'ang Leang Li, 322
 Taoism, 47, 52, 137
 Tapestry, 435, 436
 Tariffs, 191, 193, 203, 384, 401
 Tartary, 338
 Telegraphy, 430
 Telepathy, 66
 Teutonic religion, 61
 Theatre, 450
 Theism, 62, 65, 112, 125
 Theology, 68 sq., 99 sq., 112
 Thirty Years' War, 289, 292
 Thucydides, 236
 Tiberius, 245, 246
 Tibet, 52, 54, 338
 Tithes, 98
 Toryism, 183, 190
 Totemism, 6, 7, 40, 64, 162
 Toussaint L'Ouverture, 395
 Toys, 424
 Trajan, 244, 246
 Transvaal, 375
 Trappists, 421
 Tree-worship, 37
 Turgot, 208, 210
 Turkestan, 338
 Turks and Turkey, 226, 239, 311, 314-15, 328, 407
 Tuscany, 251, 252
 Tyre, 230
 Unemployment, 189, 203, 403
 Unitarianism, 95, 99, 423
 United States, 188, 374, 379-87
 Universities, 418
 Uruguay, 391, 392
 Utilitarianism, 141, 142, 147
 Vaccination, 432
 Value, 189, 197, 202
 Vampire, 426
 Vanini, 109
 Vedas, 14, 53
 Venezuela, 390
 Venice, 252, 254, 268, 436
 Vespasian, 246
 Victor Emmanuel, 256
 Victoria, 190, 345, 353
 Victoria (Australia), 376
 Vikings, 299, 342
 Village Communities, 9, 347
 Violin, 449
 Voltaire, 80, 113, 114, 208, 209
 Wages, 203
 Wagner, 175, 449
 Wales, 365-66
 Walpole, 190, 352
 Washington, 382, 383
 Water, 467
 Waterloo, 190, 277
 Watt, 435
 Wilhelm I, 290
 William II, 349
 — III, 352
 — IV, 190, 353
 Wireless, 34, 430

- Witchcraft, 409, 425-26
Witt, John de, 283, 284
Wolf, H., 449
Women, 186, 334, 386, 406-9
World War, the, and post-War
 problems, 188, 191, 199, 200,
 281, 398-405, 413
Writing, art of, 163
Wycliffe (or Wiclif), 347, 350, 356
Zanzibar, 396
Zimbabwe, 396
Zionism, 76
Zodiacal myths, 40, 81, 89
Zoology, 38, 468 sq.
Zoroastrianism, 48, 56
Zululand, 393
Zwingli, 298

· INDEX OF AUTHORS

- ABAILARD, 108**
Abbey, 356
Abbot, 239
 — Dr. E., 27, 233
 — Dr. E. A., 100
 — F. E., 125
 — F. F., 246
 — G. F., 37, 334
 — T. K., 114
Abdy, 412
Abdy-Williams, 175,
 449
Abeken, 248
About, 240
Abrahams, E. B., 427
 — I., 32, 69, 73, 75
Abry, Audic, and
Crouzet, 459
Āchārya, 132
Achelis, 207
Acland and Ransome,
 349
Acton, Lord, 29, 33,
 273
Adam, A. M., 106
 — C., 110, 117
 — E., 324
Adamic, 386
Adams, B., 215
 — C. K., 25
 — F. O., 323
 — and Cunningham,
 298
 — Francis, 226
 — G. B., 26, 345
 — G. P., 129
 — H. F., 159
 — I., 327
 — J., 158
 — Sir J., 416
 — J. T., 386
 — T. S., 384
 — W. H. D., 266
Adamson, 105, 111, 115,
 116, 142, 143
 — J. W., 416, 417
 — Prof. R., 150
Adari, 260, 317
Addis, 72, 74, 98
Addison, 168
Addy, 355
Ady, 256
Affalo, 317
Agresti, 256
Ahmad, 260
Ahnfelt, 301
Aikins, 155
Ainslie, 153, 176
Airy, 352
Aiyer, 329
Akeley, 20
Akers, 388, 390
Alabaster, 55
Albee, 143
Albert, 432
Albright, 318
Alcock, 325
Alexander, A. B. D.,
 104
 — G. G., 52, 137
 — S., 111, 128, 134
 — and Staub, 218
Alexinsky, 305
Alger, 95
Aliotta, 128
Alison, 29
 — A., 170
Allain, 276, 418
Allbrecht, 430
Allbutt, 431
Allcroft, 15
Allen, Prof. A. A.,
 469
 — B. M., 226
 — C. F., 300
 — F., 23
 — Grant, 17, 62, 80,
 171, 343
 — J. H., 423
 — J. T., 450
 — J. W., 452, 460
 — and Eddy, 423
Allers, 160
Allier, 158
Allmer, 245
Alls, 98
Allshorn, 251
Alpers, 378
Alston, 97
Altamira, 259
Alvisi, 253
Amador, 259
Amberley, 62
Ambros, 447
Ambrose, St., 96
Ameer Ali, 59, 60, 316,
 407
Amelineau, 93, 226
Amherst, 427
Amicis, 284
Amory, 327
Amos, 180, 190, 353
Amphoux, 267
Andersen, 37
Anderson, 355
 — Sir G., 330
 — I., 462
 — J., 337
 — Dr. J. D., 9
 — R. E., 33
 — W., 325
 — W. J., 438, 440
André, J. F., 266
 — L. E. T., 73
 — Père, 169
Andrew, Prince, 405
Andrews, C. F., 336
 — E. B., 382
Anesaki, 53
Angas, 201
Angell, J. R., 159
 — N., 404
Angus, 97
Anstey, 198
Antal, 121
Antonini, 321
Anwyl, 43, 61
Anz, 94
Anzilotti, 217
Apport, 323
Aquinas, 88, 108, 138
Arana, 391
Araujo, 390
Archer, T. A., 349
 — W., 101, 175, 335,
 387, 420, 453
Archibald, 197
Ardouin, 395
Argenson, 269
Aristides, 91

- Aristotle, 106, 125, 137,
 145, 151, 168, 172,
 179, 180, 208, 236,
 237, 407
 Arminius, 139
 Arminjon, 228
 Armitage, C. H., 394
 — Smith, G., 203
 Armstrong, E., 255,
 259, 260, 261, 262,
 268
 — H. E., 66
 — O., 369
 Arnaudo, 304
 Arneth, 295
 Arnold, E., 54, 334
 — E. L., 334
 — E. V., 107
 — M., 457
 — R. B., 126
 — Sir T., 32, 338
 — Prof. T. W., 59
 — W. T., 246
 Arréats, 123, 163
 Arrian, 236, 237, 329
 Arthur, G., 281
 — T. C., 334
 Artz, 278
 Ascham, 419
 Aschbach, 419
 Ashley, 349
 — P., 191, 204, 384
 — Sir W. J., 199, 204,
 283, 285, 347, 412
 Ashmead-Bartlett, 307
 Ashton, 426
 Ashwin, 426
 Aspinall, 378
 Asquith, 400
 Asser, 349
 Aster, 132
 Aston, 52, 323, 456
 Atchley, 404
 Atherley-Jones and
 Bellot, 413
 Atholl, Duchess of, 308
 Atkins, 463
 Atkinson, C. T., 268
 — F. M., 41
 — J. J., 6
 — T. D., 439
 Aube, 97
 Aubert, 270
 Aubertin, 273
 Aubrey, 346
 Aubry, 321
 Audiat, 418
 Audic, 459
 Audin, 289
 Audolent, 244
 Augustine, Saint, 96,
 98, 208
 Aulard, 274, 275, 276
 Ault, 342
 Aust, 59
 Austin, Mrs., 288, 290
 Austin and Lloyd, 203
 Autran, 230
 Avebury. *See* Lub-
 bock.
 Avenel, 269
 Averill, 158
 Ayling, 184
 Aymonier, 340

 Baas, 431
 Babbitt, 171
 Babeau, 273, 276, 418
 Babelon, 200
 Babington, 479
 — B. G., 432
 — W. D., 6, 219
 Bach, 295
 Bachofen, 9
 Bacon, 110, 168, 208
 — A. M., 324
 — B. W., 77, 78
 — G., 434
 — L. W., 385
 — R. H. S., 394
 Bacourt and Cunliffe,
 458
 Baden-Powell, Rev., 9
 — R. S., 394
 Bader, 407
 Baedeker, 227
 Baehr, 72
 Baehrenbach, von, 216
 Baentsch, 69
 Baerlein, 312
 Bagehot, 16, 196, 201,
 211, 216
 Bagger, 294
 Bagwell, 370
 Baikaloff, 307
 Baikie, 16, 91, 224
 Bailey, C., 32, 58, 107
 — Churchill, A., 468
 — S., 150
 Baillie, 115, 116, 153
 Bain, Prof. A., 134,
 144, 149, 151, 156,
 157, 163, 167, 171,
 420
 — F. W., 301
 — J., 362
 — R. N., 299, 301,
 302, 309
 Baines, 434
 Bainville, 265, 275
 Baird, H. M., 267
 — J. G. A., 332
 Bajanov, 307
 Baker, E. A., vi
 Baker, F. G., 297
 — G. P., 246, 454
 — J. E., 321
 — J. N. L., 22
 Balbo, 254
 Balch, 271
 Baldachini, 109
 Baldwin, J. M., 105,
 151, 156, 158, 216
 — O., 306
 Balfour, A. J., 62, 63,
 76, 122, 127, 129, 166
 — H., 436, 441
 Ball, C., 333
 — C. J., 73
 — Hon. J. T., 371
 — O., 313
 — W. Platt, 472
 — W. W. R., 429
 Ballard, 346
 Ballau, 286
 Ballet, 163
 Ballou, 378
 Balls, 228
 Balzani, 251, 257
 Bamberg, 312
 Bancroft, 36, 60, 380,
 388, 389
 Banner, 14
 Bannow, 376
 Bapst, 451
 Barante, 267, 283, 285
 Barberot, 439
 Barbour, 200
 Barbusse, 281
 Bard, 320
 Baring, 305, 306, 462
 Barker, D. A., 199
 — E., 28, 179, 180,
 186, 258
 — E. R., 249
 — J. E., 293
 Barley, 202
 Barlow, 225
 Barman, 437
 Barnard, A., 427
 — F. P., 347, 369
 — H. C., 418
 Barnes, D. G., 198
 — H. E., 198, 218,
 385
 — J., 477
 — Prof. W. E., 72
 Barnett, D. L., 53
 — L. D., 450
 — P. A., 420
 Barni, 278
 Barns, 20, 394
 Barrante, 389
 Barrett, P., 266
 — W. A., 448
 Barrow, 410

- Barrows, 74
 Barry, 150
 Bartels, 406
 — M., 432
 Barth, A., 53
 — F., 67
 — K., 67
 — M., 43
 — P., 212, 216
 Barthélémy, 278, 279
 Bartholmæss, 109
 Bartholomew, 23
 Bartoli, 457
 Baruzi, 146
 Barwell, 306
 Baskerville, 310
 Bassett, J., 327
 — J. S., 379
 Bastable, 180, 204
 Bastian, 161, 213
 Bastide, 269
 Batbie, 271
 Batchelor, 14, 37
 Bates, 390, 391, 392, 469
 Bateson, 472, 473
 — Miss, 349
 Batson, 198
 Batteux, 169
 Batty, 14
 Bauch, 132
 Bauer, B., 80
 — B. A., 406
 — H., 429
 — M., 408
 Baum, 174
 Baumgarten, A., 249
 — A. G., 170
 — H., 262, 291
 Baumgartner, 445
 Baur, F. C., 78, 80, 86, 87, 88, 91, 92, 93, 226
 Bauza, 391
 Bax, 118, 128, 186, 273, 279
 Bayet, 442
 Bayley, 330
 Baylis, W. M., 470
 Baynes, Prof., 417
 — N. H., 68
 Bayot, 146
 Bazin, 321
 — A., 269
 — R., 256
 Beal, 52, 55
 Beaman, 228
 Bear, 370
 Beard, C. A., 384, 386
 — C. and M., 66
 — Dr. J. R., 98
 — M. R., 384, 386
 Beard and Radin, 313
 Beattie, 111, 169
 Beatty, 399
 Beauchamp, 138
 Beauchone, 276
 Beaucourt, 267
 Beaulieu, 189
 Beaumont, 368
 Beaufre, 200
 Beausobre, 93
 Beaussire, 418
 Beauvisage, 281
 Beazley, 21
 Bebel, 317, 407
 Beccari, 396
 Beccaria, 142, 209, 218
 Beccer, 317
 Bechhofer, 305
 Beck, 434
 Becke, 399
 Becker, 424
 Beckmann, 34, 433, 435
 Beckurts, 249
 Beddard, 469
 Bedollière, 389
 Beer, 295
 — M., 187
 Beers, 425
 Beesly, A. H., 244, 274
 — E. S., 66, 246, 248, 350
 Beeton, 435
 Behn, 112
 Belgiojoso, 208
 Belhaven, 398
 Bell, A. F., 458
 — C., 52, 173
 — Sir C., 170, 338
 — E., 438
 — G. K. A., 100
 — R., 60, 316
 Bellamy, 187, 218
 Bellesheim, 369
 Bellesort, 312
 Bellew, 337
 Belloc, 274
 Bellot, 413
 Beloch, 235
 Bemont, 28, 347
 Benecke, 407
 Beneke, 115
 Bennett, 147
 Benham, F. C., 198
 — W., 346
 Benjamin, P., 430
 — S. G. W., 326, 327
 Benn, A. W., 104, 105
 — Sir E., 192
 — W., 399
 Bennet, 346
 — A., 478
 — A. W., 423
 Bennis, 29, 353, 405
 Benrubi, 117
 Benson, 199
 Bent, 251, 396
 Bentham, 138, 142, 143, 144, 155, 181, 182, 184, 477, 478
 Bérard, 58
 — A., 241
 — V., 42, 230, 304
 Berenson, 443
 Berge, De la, 246
 Bergmann, 403
 Bergson, 117, 123-24, 127, 163
 Berkeley, 112, 140
 — G. F. H., 396
 Berman, 295
 Bernard, Dr., 114
 — P. C., 418
 Bernete, 444
 Bernfield, 159
 Bernhain, 164
 Bernhardi, 303
 Bernhöft, 247
 Bernouilli, 389
 Bernstein, 187
 Berr, 224
 Berry, A., 429
 — R. J. A., 161
 Berthelot and Didier, 247
 Bertin, 324
 Bertolini, 253
 Bertoni, 108
 Bertrand, A., 43, 61, 164
 — L., 269
 Besant, Mrs., 183
 — Sir W., 268
 Best, 412
 Besterman, 8
 Betham-Edwards, 280
 Bethe, 451
 Bethune-Baker, 80, 96, 100
 Bett, 108
 Bettany, 53, 61
 — G. T., 46
 — G. W., 182
 Beurlier, 59
 Bevan, E., 107, 336
 — E. R., 32, 74, 225, 236, 327
 Beveridge, 203, 403
 Bey, C. L., 227
 — E., 308
 Bezold, 288
 Bhandarkar, 329
 Bickley, 423
 Biddle, 396
 Bie, 449

- Biedermann, 292
 Biese, 171
 Bigandet, 54
 Bigelow, J., 383
 — P., 290
 Bigg, 78
 Bilbasov, 302
 Bilby, 14
 Billington, 334
 Binet, 161, 164, 474
 Bing, 325
 Bingham, 92
 — B., 399
 Binns, 435
 Binyon, 445, 453
 Biolley, 390
 Bioves, 331
 Birch, 225, 435
 Bird, H. E., 426
 — H. M., 248
 — J., 393
 Birdwood, 334
 Biré 276
 Birkenhead. *See* F. E. Smith.
 Birnie, 405
 Bischoff, 90
 Bishop, Mrs., 339
 — J. B., 395
 — J. L., 384
 Bissell, 70
 Bjorkman, 82
 Black, 425
 — J. B., 29
 Blagden, 13
 Blake, G. R., 364
 — J. F., 41
 — K. Jex-, 442
 Blakeney, 99
 Blanc, 274
 Blanchard, P., 8
 — R., 281, 395
 Blanqui, 197
 Blass, 85
 Blease, 190
 Bleckly, 106
 Bled, 272
 Bleek, D. F., 441
 — W. H. I., 37, 69
 Bleibtreu, 279
 Blinkenberg, 45
 Bloch, 247
 Blok, 282, 285
 Blom, 175, 449
 Blomfield, 439
 — and Thomas, 427
 Bloxam, 438
 Blum, 292
 Blume, 293
 Blumenfeld, 80
 Blunt, A. W. F., 73, 74
 Blunt, J. H., 355
 — W. S., 227, 335
 Bluntschli, 180
 Blyden, 394, 395
 Boas, F., 18
 — F. S., 452
 Boccardo, 217
 Bochart, 229
 Bode, 420
 Bodin, 208
 — J., 163
 Bodkin, 445
 Bodley, 280
 Boeckh, 238
 Boehm-Bawerk, 197, 202
 Boehme, 109
 Boehmer, 288
 Boell, 335
 Boethius, 108
 Bogart, 199
 Bogue and Bennett, 356
 Boguet, 426
 Böhl, 230
 Bohn, 426
 Boillot, 429
 Boirac, E., 123, 158
 — H., 164
 Boissier, 59, 97, 226, 247, 249
 Boissonade, 359
 Boistel, 479
 Bolingbroke, 80
 Bollaert, 261
 Bolles, 384
 Bon, 317
 Bonar, 182
 — Dr. J., 140, 182, 183, 188, 194, 197, 200, 202
 Bonet-Maury, 423
 Bonifas, 268
 Bonn, 372, 386
 Bonnard, 321
 Bonnemere, 272
 Bonner, C. B., 89
 — H. B., 101, 383
 — R. J., 239
 Bonney, 23
 Bonomi, 257
 Bontin, 281
 Bonwick, 358
 Bookwalter, 339
 Boole, 152
 Boone, 385
 Booth, A. J., 65
 — C., 199
 Bord, 276
 Borda, 390
 Borderie, 343
 Borelli, 227
 Borrel, 255, 276
 Bos, J. Ritzema, 468
 Bosanquet, 115, 151, 152, 167, 168, 170, 180, 237
 — Mrs., 189, 409
 Boscawen, 51, 222
 Bose, 333
 Bossi, 81
 Bossuet, 208
 Bost, 423
 Bosworth, 373
 Botta, 120
 Böttger, 61
 Bouché-Leclercq, 225, 247
 Boucher, 460
 Bouillet, 432
 Bouillier, 111
 Boule, 5
 Boulger, 285, 286, 319, 320, 333
 Boulting, 250
 Bourdon, 163
 Bourelly, 354
 Bourgeois, 280
 Bourgoin, 318
 Bourinot, 374
 Bournand, 442, 445
 Bourne, H. Fox, 190, 373
 Bournichon, 317
 Bousfield, 406
 Bousset, 78, 81, 89, 98, 103
 Boutaric, 270
 Boutell, 413
 Bouterwick, 458
 Boutroux, 133, 155, 420
 Boutteville, 138
 Bouverie-Pusey, 368
 Bowden, 137
 Bowen, 284
 Bower, 477
 Bowers, 383
 Bowley, 197, 402
 Bowman, Prof. H. L., 467
 — I., 404
 Bowra, 457
 Bowring, 337
 Bowtell, 346
 Box, E. C., 12
 — G. H., 68
 — and Bonnemere, 270
 Brace, 33, 300
 Brackett, 436
 Bradby, 273
 Bradey, 160
 Bradlaugh, 62, 127, 183, 335

- Bradley, A. C., 173
 — A. G., 271, 366
 — F. H., 121, 126,
 131, 145, 148, 151,
 152
 — Dr. J. H., 474
 — M. H., 20
 Braekstad, 301
 Brailsford, 312
 Bramwell, 161
 Brand, 42
 — H. R., 375
 — J., 425
 Brande and Cox, 435
 Brandenburg, 398
 Brandes, Dr. G., 82,
 303, 310, 462, 463
 Brandt, A. J. H. W.,
 86
 — Dr. W., 78
 Brasch, 131
 Brasier and Brunet,
 412
 Brau, 392
 Brawley, 386, 451
 Bray, 185
 Braye, Baron de, 434
 Brayne, 335
 Brayshaw, 423
 Breasted, 49, 224
 Breckinridge, 201
 Breffle, 22
 Brehier, 133
 Brehm, 20, 469
 Bremer, 368
 Bremner, 361
 — Miss, 419
 Bremond, 421
 Brend, 465
 Brenet, 448
 Brenier, 340
 Brenner, 362
 Brenning, 463
 Brentano, 136, 147, 203
 Breton, G., 105
 — Le, 430
 Brett, 111, 160
 Brewer, 350
 Brewster, 12
 Brice, 400
 Bridge, 264
 Bridges, Dr. J. H., 66
 — R., 167, 174
 Briffault, Dr., 4, 7, 160,
 178, 406
 Briggs, 437
 Brigham, 389
 Bright, J. F., 295
 — W., 96
 Brightman, 104
 Brill, 162
 Brine, 13, 320
 Brink, B. Ten, 459
 — J. Ten, 462
 Brinkley, 324
 Brinton, 36, 214
 Brion, 249
 Broad, 110, 147
 Broc, 274
 Brocard, 123, 164
 Brocklemann, 463
 Brode, 394
 Brodrick, 248
 Brodrick, G. C., 345,
 356
 — M., 224
 Broglie, Duc de, 269,
 271, 281, 295
 Bronner, 159
 Brook, 393
 Brooke, C. F. T., 452
 — S. A., 459
 — T. H., 378
 Brooke and Laver, 427
 Brooks, A. M., 438
 — C. E. F., 466
 — J. G., 189
 — Scott and, 475
 Broomhall, 59
 Brosch, 354
 Brown, 252
 — A. J., 321
 — A. S., 396
 — C. L. M., 34
 — E. G., 337
 — F. H., 334
 — G., 12, 397
 — G. B., 171, 441
 — H. A., 226
 — H. R. F., 252
 — H. V., 3
 — I. J. C., 192
 — J., 300
 — Dr. J., 431, 461
 — J. C., 303
 — J. D., 427
 — J. H., 380
 — J. M., 12, 397
 — J. T., 11
 — J. W., 440
 — N. R., 21
 — P. A., 273
 — P. H., 358, 359,
 360, 361, 364
 — R., 40, 41, 42, 44
 — R. N. R., 14
 — W., 160
 — W. G., 380
 — W. J., 412
 — W. N., 436
 Browne, E. G., 327,
 431, 463
 — J., 361
 Brownell, 280
 Browning, O., 25, 26,
 180, 254, 255, 273,
 276, 280, 302, 341,
 416
 Bruce, Prof., 100
 — C., 340
 — J., 396
 — P. A., 380, 395
 — R. J., 334
 — S. M., 205
 — W. J., 430
 Bruckner, 302
 Brueggen, Baron von,
 310
 Bruhl, 18
 Brunet, T. L., 412
 — L., 281, 395
 Brunetiere, 458
 Brunn, 442
 Brunner, 67
 Brunnhofer, 109
 Brunschwig, 123, 133,
 164
 Brunt, 23
 Bryan, 445
 Bryant, S., 368
 — W., 429
 Bryce, 25, 28, 180, 188,
 288, 370, 385
 Buchan, 63, 363
 Buchanan, M., 305
 Büchner, 100, 110, 119,
 409
 Buck, 175, 446
 Buckland, 294
 Buckle, 186, 208, 210,
 211, 212, 213, 214,
 216, 217, 259, 260,
 261, 262, 359, 360,
 363, 409
 Bude, 298
 Budge, E. W., 49, 50,
 222, 225, 227, 396
 — F. A., 423
 Budish and Shipman,
 308
 Buecher, 408
 Buell, 405
 Buer, 194
 Buffier, 111, 169
 Buhler, 54
 Bujak, 310
 Bullied, 16
 Bullock, A. B., 143-44
 — C. J., 201, 384
 Bullock-Webster, 478
 Bultmann, 85, 103
 Bunbury, 22
 Bunge, 471
 Burch, 83
 Burckhardt, 238, 252
 Burgess, 381

- Burke, E., 168, 181,
 182, 209
 — U. R., 259, 261,
 262, 389, 410
 Burkitt, F. C., 77, 79,
 82, 83, 84, 85, 92, 93
 — M. C., 4, 441
 Burlet, 255
 Burn, 27, 232
 Burne, 425
 Burnet, 105, 106
 — Bishop, 352
 Burney, 446
 Burnley, 435
 Burnouf, 42, 48, 55
 Burns, A. C., 394
 — A. R., 199, 414
 — C. D., 81
 — E., 308
 — L. E., 80
 Burrows, G., 15
 — R. M., 233
 — S. G., 430
 Burstall, 419
 Burton, J. H., 352, 359
 — Sir R. F., 76, 244,
 317, 318, 394
 Bury, 27, 29, 33, 219,
 220, 233, 235, 236,
 239, 244, 249, 258,
 314, 368
 — H., 306
 Busch, 354
 Busolt, 235
 Bustron, 241
 Butcher, 168, 478
 Butler, A. J., 226, 254,
 316
 — Bishop, 141, 142,
 148
 — Dr. C. M., 300
 — Sir H., 336
 — Samuel, 474
 — W. A., 99
 — W. F., 251
 Butterfield, 276
 Buxton, Earl, 375
 — H. J. W., 445
 — L. H. D., 3
 — N., 314
 — S., 191
 Byblius, 229
 Byrne, 370
 Byron and Rice, 443
 Bywater, 168

 Cabet, 187
 Cadbury, E., 408
 — H. J., 87
 Caesar, 248
 Cahen, 290
 Cahuet, 314

 Caillet, 268
 Caird, E., 115, 118, 152
 — J., 111, 334
 — L. H., 254
 — M., 409
 Cairnes, 196, 381
 Cajori, 429
 Caldecott, 373
 Calder, 203
 Caldwell, 128
 Calhoun, 239
 Calkins, 470
 Callaway, 72
 Calonne, 273
 Calthrop, 427
 Calvert, A. F., 11, 263,
 376, 377
 — J., 12
 Calverton, 8, 387, 406
 Calvin, 139
 Calvo, 389
 Calvocoressi, 175
 Cambiagi, 254
 Campanella, 108
 Campbell, 477
 — D., 10, 11, 16, 60,
 394
 — Sir G., 315
 — J., 87
 — J. F., 37, 43
 Campos, 396
 Candler, 338
 Candolle, A. de, 468
 Canivet, 271
 Cannan, 194, 197, 199,
 204
 Canney, 48
 Cantecor, 66
 Cantlie and Jones, 321
 Cantu, 250
 Capart, 442
 Capes, 107, 244
 Capitan, 5
 Caraway, 377
 Cardan, 109
 Carden, 251
 Carette, 270
 Carey, 184
 — G. V., 398
 Caritt, 167, 168
 Carlile, 196, 200
 Carlisle, 417
 Carlson, 300
 Carlyle, 273, 289, 309,
 351
 — A. J., and R. W.,
 181, 208
 — E. T., 182
 — J. A., 461
 Carneri, 146
 Carpenter, 470
 — E., 187

 Carpenter, J. E., 47, 72
 — M., 219
 Carr, H. A., 160
 — H. W., 112, 120,
 124, 130, 139, 153, 176
 — J. C., 176
 — L., 386
 — W., 311
 — and Evans, 204
 Carr-Saunders, 184
 Carrau, 127
 Carré, 271
 Carrel, 354
 Carrière, M., 172
 Carstairs, 334
 Carter, J. B., 59
 — J. C., 33
 — R. B., 432
 Cartwright, 258
 Carus, P., 44, 52, 86,
 114, 126, 158
 Caruselli, 255
 Carver, 214
 Cary, H., 237
 — M., 342
 Case, 214
 Caspari, 234
 Cassau, 417
 Cassell, 325
 Cassels, 84, 92
 Castil-Blaze, 448
 Castillo, 388
 Castren, 61
 Cathcart, 369
 Cather, 22
 Catlin, 13, 386
 Caton, 336
 Caudel, 317
 Cave, 339
 Caver, 475, 476
 Cavour, 256
 Cayley-Webster, 12
 Caylus, 170
 Ceccaldi, 241
 Cecil, E., 413
 — Lord H., 191
 — H. M., 122
 — R., 400
 Cerdoune, 303
 Cerruti, 418
 Cescinsky, 436
 Ceuleneer, 246
 Cevallos, 390
 Chacalli, 241
 Chadwick, 42, 342, 343
 Chailley-Bert, 340
 Chaillu, du, 299
 Chair, 404
 Challamel, 272
 Chalmers, 52
 Chamberlain, B. H., 53,
 324, 454

- Chamberlain, G. A., 389
 Chambers, 15, 360
 — E. K., 451, 452
 — J. D., 93
 — R., 425
 — R. W., 342
 — T., 376
 Champion, E., 114, 281
 — L. G. M., 266
 Chandler, 382
 Chaninov, 302
 Channing, 379
 Chapais, 271
 Chapet, 243
 Chapin, 214
 Chapman, A. B. W.,
 and M. W., 408
 — B., 301
 — C. E., 259, 380, 384
 — E. M., 101
 — S., 194
 — S. J., 434
 Chapman-Heston, 263
 Chapot, 26
 Chapuzzeau, 451
 Charles, 72, 73, 94, 95
 — C., 389
 — W. R., 339
 Charlevoix, 324
 Charriaut, 286
 Chassang, 455
 Chatterji, 340
 Chatto, 426
 Chaucer, 174
 Chavanne, 272, 278
 Chaytor, 245
 — H. J., 451
 Cheetham, 91, 98
 — F. H., 279
 Chéland, 292
 Cheneau, 281
 Cherrier, 252, 267
 Chervel, 269
 Chesney, 334
 Chevalier, 107
 Chevreul, 175
 Cheyne, 68, 72, 73
 Chiala, 256
 Child, 391, 392
 Childe, 16, 32, 33, 433
 Chilperic. See Edwards.
 Chinnock, 237
 Chirol, 228
 Chisholm, G. G., 22
 — H., 304
 Chladni, 209
 Choisy, 437, 438
 Chomley, 205
 Chouquet, 448
 Chrish, W., 456
 Christie, 190, 352
 Christlieb, 108
 Christy, 15
 Church, 247, 248
 — F. J., 106
 — R. W., 111
 Churchill, 400
 Cicero, 107, 141
 Cilleuls, 418
 Circourt, 260
 Clapham, 195, 200,
 273
 Clapperton, 65, 145
 Clare, 201
 Clarendon, 351
 Claridge, 11
 Clark, J., 455
 — Mrs. Lane, 479
 — R. T., 293
 Clarke, E. L., 150
 — G., 417
 — H. B., 261
 — H. W., 98, 384
 — J., 420
 — J. B., 187
 — J. F., 48
 — W. K. L., 96
 Clarkson, 395
 Clausse, 438
 Clavière, 267, 272
 Clay, A. M., 248
 — A. T., 230
 — H., 403
 Clayden, 191
 Clemenceau, 281, 344,
 400
 Clement, 447
 Clerke, 429
 Clermont-Ganneau, 44
 Cleveland, 408
 Clifford, 428
 — W. K., 62, 127
 Clinton, 233, 249, 326
 Clodd, 2, 4, 17, 36, 62,
 66, 428, 433, 472
 Cloney, 371
 Clough, 237
 Clutton-Brock, 444
 Coates, A., 128
 — W. P., 308
 Cobbe, 408
 Cobbett, 182, 185
 Cobbold, 52
 Cobden, 185, 190
 Cobham, 241
 Cocheris, 227
 Cochrane, 436
 Cochran-Patrick, 359
 Cockerell, 470
 Cocks, 337
 Codrington, H. W., 339
 — R. H., 11, 37, 397
 Coffey, 15
 Cohen, C., 33, 63, 129,
 410
 — J. L., 203
 — M. R., 130
 Coignet, 267
 Coit, 146
 Colby, 346
 Colden, 386
 Cole, G., 464, 466
 — G. D. H., 182, 185,
 192
 Colebrooke, 53, 132
 Colenso, Miss, 393
 Coleridge, 163, 172,
 173, 174
 Collar and Crook, 420
 Colles, 446, 447, 449
 Collet, C. D., 355
 — Miss, 409
 Colletta, 255
 Collignon, A., 113
 — M., 41, 44, 442
 Collingwood, R. G.,
 120, 128, 187, 208,
 342
 — W. G., 176
 Collins, A., 139, 154
 — F. H., 121
 — W. L., 141
 Collision-Morley, 253,
 457
 Colquhoun, A. H.,
 320
 — A. R., 389
 Colvin, Sir A., 226
 — S., 443
 Colyer-Fergusson, Mrs.,
 47
 Combe, 297
 Comines, 267
 Commager, 379
 Comparetti, 61, 303
 Compayré, 416
 Comte, 65, 117, 118,
 127, 146, 206, 207,
 209, 210, 213, 214
 Comte, C., 210
 Condé, 260
 Conder, 75
 Condillac, 113
 Condliffe, 377
 Condorcet, 208, 223
 Confucius, 51, 137
 Conger, 472
 Congreve, 146
 Connell, 334
 Connellan, 368
 Conrad, H., 281
 — J., 461
 Conscience, H., 285
 Constant, 39, 210
 Contenau, 50

- Contenson, Baron de,
 321
 Conti, 290
 Conturat, 112
 Conway, M. D., 44,
 73, 138, 383, 439
 — W. M., 441, 444
 Conybeare, C. A. V.,
 301
 — F. C., 82, 95, 100,
 119
 Cook, 46, 69, 231, 316
 Cooke, 478
 — J., 368
 — H. P., 49
 — S. A., 51
 Coomaraswamy, 54
 Cooper, 168
 Cope, 472
 Copleston, 54
 Coquard, 448
 Coquelle, 276, 312
 Corbett, J. S., 399
 — P. E., 411
 Corbin, J., 382
 — I. W., 34
 Coriat, 162
 Cornelius Nepos, 248
 Cornevin, 468
 Cornford, 105, 237, 450
 Cornill, 69
 Cornish, 32
 Corrêard, 276, 280
 Corssen, 244
 Cory, 375
 Coryndon, 10
 Cosentini, 216
 Cosmetatos, 405
 Cosnac, 269
 Cossa, 195
 Costa, 279
 Coster, 171
 Cotton, 335
 Couchoud, 41, 82, 85,
 87, 89, 103
 Coulange, 89
 Coulanges. *See* Fustel.
 Coulton, G. G., 32, 101,
 346, 347, 359, 421,
 422
 Coupland, R., 374
 — W. C., 118, 138
 Courroyer, 438
 Courthope, 460
 Courtney, Lord, 191
 — W. L., 117, 142
 Cousin, 108, 109, 170
 Cowan, A. R., 24
 — J., 12
 — M. G., 334
 Cowell, Prof., 329
 Cowl, 173
 Cowley, 68
 Cox, F. W., 422
 — Sir G. W., 38, 39,
 233, 236, 258
 — H., 184
 Coxe, 261, 294
 Coyer, 309
 "C. R. A.," 100
 Crackenthorpe, 183
 Craig, 222
 Craigie, 61
 Craik, G. L., 354
 — Sir H., 360
 Crane, 257
 Cram, 440
 Crane, 272
 Cranmer-Byng, 52
 Crapsey, 174
 Crawford, O. G. S., 4
 — W. S., 96
 Crawford, J., 339
 — O., 262
 Crawley, 8, 62, 406
 Creelman, 70
 Crehange, 303
 Creighton, Bishop, 242,
 258, 350
 — Dr. C., 355, 432
 Creizenach, 451, 452
 Cremieux, 458
 Crespi, 120
 Cresson, 133, 143, 146
 Créssy, 34
 Cretineau-Joly, 422
 Crevea, 259
 Crew, 472
 Crewe, Marquis of, 399
 Crichfield, 388
 Crichton and Wheaton,
 299
 Crickmer, 102
 Crippen, 92
 Croce, 29, 120, 153,
 176, 177, 208, 217,
 256, 463
 Crocker, 325
 Croll, 154
 Cromer, Lord, 227, 228
 Crompton, G., 384
 — R. H., 86
 Cronholm, 300
 Crook, 420
 Crooke, 9
 Crooks, Sir W., 65
 Crookshank, E. M., 432
 — Dr. F. G., 130
 Crosbie, 357
 Cross, 461
 Crousay, 169
 Crouzet, 459
 Croweand Cavalcaselle,
 443, 444
 Crowest, 448
 Cruel, 422
 Crump, 201
 — C. G., 29, 32
 — N., 194
 Cruyplants, 286
 Cubas, 396
 Cudworth, 140
 Culbertson, 383
 Cullen, 73
 Culton, 271
 Culverhouse, 448
 Cumberland, 140, 141
 Cumming, 9
 Cummings, 440
 Cumont, 57, 59
 Cumston, 431
 Cunha, 262
 Cuniglio, 256
 Cunliffe, 458, 461
 Cunningham, A., 281
 — D. W., 195
 — G. W., 104
 — J., 364, 423
 — J. F., 11
 — J. T., 471
 — W., 33, 199, 202,
 347, 434
 Cug, 411
 Cureau, 10
 Curteen, 460
 Curteis, 236
 Curtin, 36, 37
 Curtis, A. R., 264
 — Prof. E., 369
 — G. G., 382
 — L., 319, 336
 — W. E., 390, 444
 Curtiss, 51, 76
 Curtius, 58, 234, 238
 Curzon, 327, 339
 Cusack, 422
 Cushing, 22
 Cust, 444
 Cuttaneo, 440
 Cutts, 442
 Czaplická, 14
 Czerny, 295
 Czoernig, 255
 Dadson, 63
 Daendliker, 297
 Daguet, 297
 Dahlinger, 290
 Dahlmann, 293, 300
 Dahn, 291
 Dakyns, 237
 Dale, 422
 Dallas, 173
 Dallet, 339
 Dalman, 79
 Dalton, 390

- D'Alviella, 45
 Daly, 184, 190
 Damiron, 113, 117
 Dana, 467
 Danby, 83
 Dance, 346
 Dangin, 278
 Daniels, 422
 Dannreuther, 446
 Danvers, F. C., 332
 — N., 437, 441
 Danville, 164
 Dardye, 391
 Dareste, 109
 Darmesteter, 56, 266
 Darwin, C., 3, 144, 163,
 170, 183, 210, 430,
 468, 469, 474, 475,
 476, 479
 — E., 270
 — Sir F., 476
 — L., 201
 Daryl, 372
 Das, 335
 Dasgupta, 132
 D'Aubigne, 288
 Daudet, 276, 278
 D'Auvergne, 279
 Davenport, C., 439
 Davey, 448
 David, 285
 Davids, Rhys, 54, 55,
 56, 329
 Davidson, J., 115
 — S., 71, 75
 — T., 120, 238, 416,
 417
 — W. L., 125, 137
 Davies, 54
 — A. M., 466
 — G. C., 284
 — H. A., 24
 — Sir J., 370
 — J. C., 349
 — R. T., 346
 — T., 282
 Davis, A. M., 424
 — H. C., 353
 — H. W. C., 288,
 344, 347
 — J. F., 319, 320,
 453, 454
 — J. H., 109
 — T., 370
 — V. D., 419
 Davison, 203, 403
 Davitt, 372
 Davy, 26
 — N., 84
 Dawes, 418
 Dawkins, B., 15
 — R. M., 240
 Dawson, M. M., 137
 — T. C., 388
 — W. A., 298
 — W. H., 188, 205,
 289, 290, 376
 — W. R., 431
 Day, C., 198, 284, 414
 — P. J., 201
 Dayal, 137
 Deane, C. P., 367
 — Rev. W., 12
 — W. J., 73
 Debrit, 120
 De Brito, 133
 De Broses, 39
 De Careil, 112
 Decasse, 177
 De Cauzons, 33
 Decharme, 42, 58
 Declareuil, 180, 248,
 411
 Decle, 304
 De Dubor, 161
 Deecke, 243
 De Greef, 207, 208, 216
 De Harberz, 52
 Deissmann, 91
 Dejob, 418
 Delacourt, 284
 Delacroix, 176
 Delafosse. *See* Turmel.
 Delage, Yves, 471, 472
 De La Grasserie, 95
 De Lanessan, 137
 Delaporte, 221
 Delarc, 255
 Delbos, 112
 Delisle, 272
 Delitzsch, 50, 71, 222,
 320
 Dellenbaugh, 13
 Delplace, 286
 Demersay, 391
 Demetrius, 312
 De Mezade, 256
 De Morgan, 152, 153
 — J., 3
 Deniker, 5
 Denis, A., 276
 — E., 296
 — P., 390, 392
 Dennett, 10
 Dennis, G., 244
 — J., 460
 Dennys, 320
 Denton, 311, 350
 Denvir, 371
 De Perceval, 316
 Deploige, 193
 De Pomerai, 8
 De Quatrefages, 15
 De Quincey, 173
 De Ruggiero, 104, 187
 Desai, 197
 Desanctis, 98
 Descartes, 110, 111
 Deschamps, 278
 Descoedres, 158
 Descours and Jones,
 210
 Desideri, 338
 Desmaze, 419
 De Soyres, 93
 De Tracy, 117
 Deussen, 132
 Deutsch, E., 75
 — Leo, 304
 De Vries, 473, 479
 Dewaule, 113
 Dewey, J., 159
 — D. R., 199
 Dewick, 95
 De Witte, 312
 De Wulf, 108
 Dezert, 261
 Diamond, 101
 Dibdin, 419
 Diblee, 160
 Dicey, A. V., 191
 — E., 226, 256
 Dick, 263
 Dickey, 445
 Dickinson, E., 447, 448
 — G. L., 353
 — T. H., 453
 Dickson, 243
 — W. and A., 430
 — W. G., 324
 Didon, 290
 Diehl, 239, 443
 Dierauer, 297
 Diercks, 262, 436
 Diesel, 293
 Dieterici, 317
 Dietzel, 183, 204
 Digby, Sir K., 412
 — W., 335
 Dignat, 432
 Dill, 57, 59
 Dillon, E., 325
 — E. J., 305, 389
 — E. T., 72
 Dio Cassius, 248
 Dionne, 271
 Dionysius of Halicar-
 nassus, 248
 Director, 403
 Ditchfield, 424
 Dittmar, 291
 Dix, 271
 Dixon, 478
 — H. H., 476
 — R. B., 5
 — R. W., 355

- Dixon, W. G., 324
 Dobb, M., 202, 208
 — M. H., 203
 Dobschütz, E. von, 95
 Dodds. See Powell,
 A. E.
 Dodge, 236
 Dodson, 124
 Dodwell, 328
 Doellinger, 94
 Dominguez, 392
 Domville-Fife, 13, 392
 Donaldson, J., 169
 — J. W., 450, 456
 Doniol, 271, 272, 274,
 410
 Donisthorpe, 192
 Donne, 12
 D'Ooge, 240
 Doolittle, 435
 Dorland, 421
 Dorman, 36
 Dornan, 15
 Dörner, 92, 138
 Dörpfeld and Reisch,
 450
 D'Orsey, 332
 Dorys, 315, 407
 Doubleday, 183
 Doughty, 318
 Douglas, Dr. C., 117, 143
 — R. K., 52, 319,
 320, 321, 323
 — W. S., 363
 — and Director, 403
 Douglas-Smith, 26
 Doumergue, 70
 Dove, 246
 Dowden, Bishop, 363
 — Prof., 458
 Dowman, 436
 Doyle, A. C., 375
 — J. A., 380
 Dozy, 260
 Drachmann, 106
 Drake, 339
 Drander, 312
 Draper, 33, 428
 Dreiser, 307, 386
 Dresser, C., 325
 — H. W., 123
 Drew, 451
 Dews, 81, 83, 93, 103,
 105
 Driaault, 314
 Driberg, 1, 10
 Driesch, 159
 Driesmans, 3
 Driscoll, 128
 Driver, 70, 72
 Droysen, 235, 291
 Droz, 274
 Druce, 478
 Drummond, H., 122
 — Sir W., 39
 — Principal, 86, 99
 Dryden, 168
 Drysdale, A. H., 357
 — C. R., 183
 Dubard, 324
 Dubnow, 76
 Dubois, W., 387
 — W. E. B., 387
 Dubois-Guchan, 248
 Du Bos, 169
 Ducasse, 173
 Duchartre, 451
 Duckworth, 3
 Ducoudray, 30, 433
 Duemichen, 225
 Duff, Prof. A., 74
 — J. D., 26
 — J. G., 332
 — J. W., 457
 — M. E. G., 68
 — R. A., 181
 Dufferin, Lady, 334
 Duffus, 386
 Duffy, B., 160
 — C. G., 370
 — Miss, 251
 Dufieux, 59
 Dugas, 163, 164
 Dugat, 317
 Duggan, 314
 Dühring, 219
 Dujardin, 82
 Dukes, 450
 Dulaure, 40
 Duller, 291
 Dumas, G., 164
 Dumont, 182
 Dunan, 164
 Dunand, 266
 Dunbar, 209
 Duncan, Miss, 324
 Duncker, 27, 50, 230,
 234, 238
 Dunlop, J. C., 455
 — R., 367, 371
 Dunning, 181, 208
 Dunoyer, 274
 Dunraven, 372
 Duparcq, 267
 Dupouy, 432
 Duprat, 146, 164
 Dupuis, 39, 80, 81, 89
 Durand, J., 172, 274
 — U., 421
 Durham, 394
 Durkheim, 18, 62, 207,
 216
 Duruy, 234, 238, 243,
 264
 Dussieux, 269
 Dutt, R., 198
 — R. C., 329, 332,
 333
 Dutton, 10
 Duviquet, 246
 Dwight, 116
 Dyde, 115
 Dyer, A. S., 423
 — L., 58
 — T. H., 249
 Dykes, 346
 Dymes, 237
 Dyson, 175
 Eakin, 77
 Ealand, C. A., 470
 Eames, 476
 East, 184
 Eastlake, 385
 Eastman, 466
 Eayers, 357
 Ebora, 421
 Eckenstein, 408
 Eddison, 299
 Eddy, 65, 66
 Eden, 199
 Eder, 390
 Edersheim, 74
 Edgeworth, 197
 Edib, 315
 Edkins, 52
 Edmonds, 399
 Edmunds, 55
 Edmundson, 282, 283
 Edwardes, 26
 Edwards, A., 391, 392
 — B., 378
 — C., 51, 70, 71, 100,
 221
 — H. T., 366
 — J., 139, 154
 — N. P., 319
 — N. S., 303
 — O. M., 365
 — S. M., 328, 330
 Egerton, 352, 373, 380
 Egerton, 180
 Eggeling, 54
 Ehrenburg, 354
 Eichler, 425
 Eimer, 472, 474
 Einstein, 129, 130
 Einzig, 199, 200, 201,
 403
 Eisenhart, 197
 Eisler, 83
 Eitel, 320, 378
 Ekrem, 315
 El-Hasan, 327
 Eliade, 312
 Eliot, G., 79, 118

- Eliot, Sir J., 181
 Elkan, 301
 Elkin, 201
 Elkington, 12
 Elliot, G. F. S., 3, 15
 — H. S. R., 124
 Elliott, Miss F., 273
 — Mrs., 261
 — Sir H. M., 330
 — L. E., 388, 390,
 391
 Ellis, A. B., 10, 378,
 394
 — A. E., 470
 — Havelock, 218,
 406
 — Sir H., 425
 — and Lloyd, 457
 — and Spedding, 110
 — W., 12
 Ellis-Fermor, 452
 Ellwanger, 427
 Ellwood, 300
 Elphinstone, 329, 331
 Elsmie, 334
 Elson, H. W., 379
 — L. C., 448
 Elton, C., 342, 471
 — O., 174, 300, 456,
 460
 Eltringham, H., 470
 Elwes, 111
 Ely, 197
 Emerton, 195
 Emiliani-Guidici, 451
 Enbel, 422
 Engel, 447, 449
 Engels, 186, 217
 Enock, 388, 390
 Enriquez, 339
 Ensor, 186, 285
 Epictetus, 107, 137
 Epinois, 267
 Epps, 377
 Erbe, 384
 Erdie, 312
 Erdmann, 105
 Erdmannsdörfer, 292
 Erigena. *See* John
 Scotus.
 Erman, 49
 Ernouf, 435
 Erskine, S., 263
 — W., 330
 Escott, 353
 Esher, 400
 Espagnolle, 260
 Esparbès, 277
 Espinas, 120, 197, 208,
 433, 474
 Eucken, 63
 Eulart, 440
 "Europasian," 306
 Eusebius, 91
 Eutropius, 248
 Evagrius, 91
 Evans, 2, 433, 467
 — A., 252
 — Sir A., 240
 — H. T., 365
 — I. H. N., 339
 — J., 15, 359
 — J. W., 467
 Evemerus, 39
 Everett, C. E., 116
 Ewart, Prof. Cossar,
 471
 Ewart, K. D., 255
 Ewen, 426
 Ewing, 373
 Faber, 51
 Fagnan, 260
 Fagniez, 272
 Faguet, 208, 458
 Fahie, 430
 Fahsel, 118
 Fairbanks, 105
 — A., 213
 Fairbridge, 375
 Fairbrother, 121
 Fairchild, 384
 Fairgrieve, 21
 Falckenberg, 119
 Falkener, 424
 Falkiner, 372
 Fallaize, 1
 Falls and Becke, 399
 Fanshawe, 334
 Farbman, 308
 Farman, 227
 Farnell, L. H., 46, 62
 — L. R., 42, 58
 Farquharson, 151
 Farrar, 89, 99
 Farrer, 16, 97, 138, 190,
 208
 — Lord, 204
 Fateh, 327
 Fauld, 324
 Faulkner, 100
 Faulmann, 31
 Fauriel, 254, 276
 Faut, 99
 Favé, 270
 Favenc, 375
 Fawcett, 204
 Fay, 399
 Fayle, 399
 Faynaud, 317
 Feasey, 32, 422
 Feavearyear, 200, 201
 Febvre, 25
 Fechner, 172
 Feiler, 308
 Feiling, 190, 352
 Felice, 268
 Félix, 448
 Fenarolis, 254
 Fénelon, 419
 Fenton, 376
 Féré, 164
 Ferguson, A., 209
 — I., 409
 — J., 339
 — M. C., 369
 — W. S., 235
 Fergusson, J., 15, 437
 — T., 320
 Fernandez, 60
 — L., 389
 Ferrari, 257
 Ferraz, 117
 Ferrero, 245
 Ferri, B., 409
 — L., 120
 Ferrier, D., 161
 — J. F., 116
 Ferrière, 43
 Fessler, 296
 Fétis, 447
 Feuerbach, 67, 118, 126
 Fialho, 390
 Fichte, 114, 116, 143,
 188, 209
 Field, G. C., 106
 — H. M., 378
 — and Himes, 184
 Fielding, 55
 Figgis and Lawrence,
 273
 Filippi, 338
 Filitti, 312
 Filmer, 181, 182
 Filon, 460
 Finberg, 167, 176
 Finck, 449
 Findlater, 156
 Findlay, 420
 Fink, 429
 Finlay, 239
 Finlayson, 431
 Finn, 376
 Finnis, 376
 Finot, 219
 Finzi, 254
 Firth, C., 29, 351
 — C. H., 363
 — J. C., 378
 Fischbach, 434
 Fischer, E., 312
 — Karl, 288
 — Kuno, 110, 111,
 115
 — L., 307
 — P. D., 256

- Fisher, G. P., 379
 — H., 26
 — H. A. L., 28, 67,
 181, 188, 290, 306,
 345
 — H. H., 306
 — I., 200
 — J. H., 371
 — R. A., 471
 — S. G., 352, 379,
 380, 383
 Fiske, 220
 — A. K., 72, 378
 — F. S., 270
 — J., 38, 125, 271,
 380, 381
 Fison, 11
 Fitch, 477
 Fitzpatrick, J. P., 375
 — T., 370
 — W. J., 371
 Fitzsimmons, 20
 Flach, 270, 412
 Flammarion, 41
 Flathe, 25
 Fleay, 452
 Flecker, 356
 Fleet, 163
 Fleming, D. H., 364
 — Miss J. H., 350
 — W. B., 230
 Fletcher, B. and B. F.,
 437
 — C. R. L., 273, 301,
 398
 — J., 356
 — W., 434
 Fleure, 3
 Fleuriau, 187
 Flick, 421
 Flint, Prof., 125, 126,
 208, 209
 — H. M., 389
 Floigel, 230
 Florence, 196
 Florus, 248
 Floyer, 53
 Flugel, 198
 Flux, 197
 Flynn, 357
 Foakes-Jackson, 78, 85,
 93
 Foligno, 457
 Foncin, 271
 Fonsegrive, 110, 123
 Fontana, 120
 Fontenelle, 38, 39, 220
 Foord, 342
 Foote, G. W., 62
 Foras, 408
 Forberg, 114
 Forbes, A., 279, 338
 Forbes, C. J. F. S., 337
 — G., 429
 — H. O., 20
 — N., 311
 Forchhammer, 35
 Ford, H. K., 188
 — P. L., 181, 383
 — R., 263
 Forder, 318
 Forlong, 40, 48
 Formey, 169
 Fornander, 397
 Forneron, 276
 Forrest, Sir G., 331
 — G. W., 333
 Forsyth, 123
 Fortescue, 276
 Fosses, 271
 Foster, 471
 — M., 432
 — T. S., 33
 — W., 331
 Fotheringham, 345
 Foucart, 47, 58
 Foucher, 449
 Fouillée, 123, 163, 217,
 406
 Fourier, 187
 Fournier, 372
 "Four Scholars," 250
 Fowler, H. N., 442, 457
 — M., 226
 — T., 110, 112, 140,
 145
 — W. W., 2, 27, 59,
 179, 237, 238
 Fox-Bourne, 461
 Fox, D. R., 386
 — Sir F., 435
 Foxwell, 185
 Fragapane, 217
 Framji, 333
 France, 266
 Franck, 75, 109
 Frank, V., 337
 Franklin, 272
 Frantz, C., 116
 — E., 443
 Fraser, A. C., 112, 126
 — A. H. L., 334
 — F., 277
 — J. F., 339, 376
 — L., 334
 Frazer, J. G., 6, 7, 17,
 37, 43, 58, 61, 64, 80,
 82, 425
 — R. W., 456
 Freeman, 22, 252, 314,
 343, 349
 — E., 26
 — K. J., 416
 — L. K., 444
 Freer, 268
 French, Bishop, 370
 — M., 451
 Freud, 6, 40, 64, 162
 Freycinet, 227
 Freytag, 174, 289
 Friedjung, 292
 Friedlander, G., 75
 — M., 74, 75
 — Max., 449
 Friedrich, 94
 Friess, 295
 Fritsch, 477
 Froebel, 389, 419, 420
 Frobenius, 2
 Froude, 245, 261, 350,
 370
 Frou de Frontpertius,
 321
 Fuchs, 246
 Fuentes, 390
 Fuhrmann, 81
 Fuller, B. A. G., 105,
 107
 — F. C., 336
 — M., 408
 Fuller-Maitland, J. A.,
 446
 Fullerton, 104
 Fulton, 354
 Fumagalli, 396
 Furness, 13, 340
 Furnivall, 417
 Furtwängler, 442
 Fustel de Coulanges,
 27, 58, 179, 214, 238,
 247, 270, 292
 Fyfe, 228, 375, 389
 Fyffe, 233
 Fytche, 337
 Gachard, 283
 Gaidoz, 43, 61
 Gairdner, 350, 355
 Gall, 161
 Gallenga, 256, 300
 Galliard, 269
 Galloway, G., 63
 — R. L., 434
 — Dr. T. W., 470
 Galton, A., 69, 266
 — Francis, 472, 473
 Gamble, 399
 Gammage, 185
 Ganneron, 368
 Gantier, 291
 Garcia, 392
 Garcon, 43
 Gardener, Miss, 409
 Gardiner, C., 464
 — Dr. E. N., 424
 — J. S., 467

- Gardiner, S. R., 289,
342, 345, 346, 351,
363, 370
— Mrs., 273
Gardner, 236
— A., 96, 108, 246
— E. A., 238, 240
— E. G., 254
— Miss H., 441
— P., 100
— S., 438
Gardthausen, 245
Garis, 384
Garland, 13
Garner, J. W., 179, 399
— R. L., 20
Garnett, L. M. J., 315,
407
— Dr. R., 253, 457,
459, 460
Garnier, E., 435
— T. L., 253
— R. M., 355
Garreau, 272
Garrett, 330
Garstang, 71
Gaspary, 457
Gasquet, 57, 346, 350
Gaston-Routier, 278
Gates, Dr. R. R., 471
Gautier, L., 412
— T., 451
Gavard, 298
Gavin, 90
Gaxotte, 275
Gay, C., 391
— Rev. J., 140, 141
— S., 469
Gayangos, 260
Gayarré, 380
Gayet, 442
Gebhart, 253, 254
Geddes, J., 283
— M., 396
— Prof. P., 457, 469,
470, 471, 473, 475
— and . Thomson,
406
Geddie, 303
Geffroy, 300
Geiger, Lazarus, 19
— Ludwig, 252, 253
Geijer, 300, 301
Geike, 467
Geikie, A., 21, 430, 464,
465, 466
Gell, 321
Gellion-Danglar, 231
Gent, 132
Gentile, 120
George, H., 186, 189,
203
George, L., 400
Gerard, 169
— J. W., 400
Gerhardt, 112
Gerin, 269
Gerland, 429
Germain, 296
Gervinus, 463
Gettell, 181
Gevaert, 447
Gfrörer, 240, 253
Gheltof, 436
Ghose, 54
Ghosh, 56
Gibb, E. J. W., 463
— H. A. R., 463
Gibbins, H. de B., 195,
355, 414, 434
— J. H., 323
Gibbon, 27, 77, 91, 97,
166, 209, 226, 239,
245, 257, 314, 316,
410
— J. M., 375
Gibbons, 179, 392
Gibbs, 378
Gibson, C. R., 34, 430
— J., 112
— W. R. B., 154
Giddings, 207, 215
Gide, 197
Gidel, 272
Gierke, 181, 348
Giesebrecht, 291
Gieseler, 91, 226
Giffen, 200
Gilbart, 201
Gilbert, G., 238
— R., 321
Gilbertson, 14
Gilbreath, 399
Giles, 172, 454
— Prof. H. A., 51,
319, 320, 321, 456
— L., 52, 320
Gill, C., 80
— Prof. C., 350
— W. W., 37
Gilman, A., 316
— Mrs., 408
Gilson, E., 133
— Miss M. B., 403
Gindley, 289
Ginguené, 457
Ginn, 436
Ginsberg, 111, 219
Ginsburg, 75, 90
Gioberti, 120
Giollitti, 256
Girard, 280
— P., 417
Girod, P., 474
Given-Wilson, 163
Givry, 426
Gizycki, 146
Gjerst, 299
Gladstone, 62, 142, 191
Glaire-Horstenau, 296
Glanville, S. K., 224
— W., 87
Glaser, 318, 396
Glasgow, 404
Glass, 351
Glazier, 436
Gleichen, 396
Gleig, 331
Glotz, 27, 232, 238, 433
Gneist, 348
Gobat, 297
Gobineau, 60, 327
Goblot, 155
Goddard, 160
Godfrey, 352
Godkin, E. L., 188
— G. S., 256
Godwin, 182, 183, 185,
209
Goebel, 476
Goedeke, 463
Goethe, 167, 168, 170
Goetschius, 447
Goguel, 83
Goguet, 209
Goibein, 18
Goldberg, 40
Goldenweiser, 2, 6, 16,
178, 179
Goldman, 306
Goldring, 254
Goldschmid, 327
Goldschmidt, H., 448
— L., 75
Goldsmid, 327
Goldstrom, 435
Goldziher, 43, 71
Golovine, 398
Gomes, 340
Gomme, A. B., 424
— G. L., 36, 424
Gomperz, 105
Gonner, 186, 187, 196
Gooch, 29, 182, 241,
296, 353
Good, 423
Goodfellow, 198
Goodheart, 310
Gorce, 279
Gordon, A., 89
— D., 227
— J., 371
Gordy, 385
Gore, Bishop, 63, 70,
77, 85
Gorgolini, 257

- Gorham, 33, 64, 78,
 101, 135
 Gory, 164
 Gosch, 300
 Goschen, 201
 Gosnell, 385
 Gosse, 459, 460, 462
 Gotch, 439
 Gothein, 255, 391, 422
 Goubertin, 280
 Gouger, 376
 Gould, F. J., 46, 66,
 101
 — S. Baring, 44, 90,
 277, 290
 Gounard, 278
 Gourko, 400
 Gourmon, 271
 Gow, 232
 Grabau, 466
 Grad, 290
 Graetz, 74, 94
 Graf, 43
 Graffigny, 435
 Graham, A., 244, 251
 — D., 205
 — H. G., 360
 — S., 302, 307
 — W., 181, 189
 Grandidier, 395
 Granet, 52
 Granger, 59
 Grant, Sir A., 137, 419
 — A. J., 238, 267,
 269
 — I. F., 359
 — J., 329
 — M. H., 375
 — R., 429
 — General, 382
 Granville-Baker, 313
 Gratten, 282, 285
 Gray, G. B., 72
 — Mrs. H., 244
 — H., 16
 — J. H., 319, 320
 479
 Greard, 419
 Greaves, 401
 Greeley, 22
 Green, J. R., 342, 343
 — Mrs., 349, 350,
 368
 — Reynolds, 475,
 477
 — R. I., 426
 — T. H., 112, 113,
 121, 134, 142, 148
 Greenaway, 251
 Greene, 311
 Greenidge, 238, 243,
 247, 248, 424
 Greenly, 82, 465
 Greenwood, A. D., 257
 — F., 304
 — Sir G. G., 64
 Greg, 184
 — P., 382
 Gregg, 368
 Gregor, W., 425
 — W. G., 319
 Gregorovius, 240, 246,
 252, 254
 Gregory of Nazianzus,
 96
 Gregory, B., 423
 — D., 361
 — J. C., 163
 — J. W., 4, 376
 — Mrs., 478
 — T. E., 205
 — W. K., 4
 Grenard, 338
 Grenfell, 91
 Grenier, 248
 Gretton, 29, 405
 Greville, 353
 Grew, 304
 Grey, Sir G., 37
 — G. A., 337
 — Viscount, 192,
 400
 Grice, 191
 Grierson, 456
 Griesbach, 102
 Griesinger, 258
 Grieve, 364
 Griffin, 333
 Griffiths, 52, 323, 339
 Griffiths, 277
 Grimm, 36, 43
 Grinko, 308
 Grinnell, 387
 Griveau, 171
 Gronlund, 187
 Groos, 474
 Grosart, 181
 Grose, 112, 113
 Gross, 345
 Grosse, 172, 441
 Grote, 156, 298
 — G., 58, 106, 138,
 142, 144, 230, 232,
 233, 238, 239
 — J., 116, 117, 136,
 143
 Grove, Sir G., 447, 449
 Groves, 478
 Grub, 363
 Grubb, 423
 Gruber, 312
 Gruening, 388
 Grundy, 27, 236, 237,
 327
 Grupp, 292
 Gruppe, 42, 45
 Guardia, 432
 Guastalla, 176
 Guazza, 426
 Gubberley, 416
 Gubernatis, 38, 43, 280,
 455
 Guedalla, 279
 Guenin, 271
 Guerville, 226
 Guest, G., 346
 — Lady, 457
 Guhl and Koner, 239,
 247, 424
 Guieysse, 280
 Guillaume, 32, 70
 Guimps, 419
 Guiraud, 247
 Guizot, 214, 264, 265,
 270, 354
 Guldenpenning, 246
 Gulick, S. L., 324
 Gull, 321
 Gummere, 61, 287
 Gumpowicz, 216
 Gundry, 321, 339
 Gunkel, 41, 50, 69, 71,
 72, 98
 Gunn, 117, 124
 Gunther, 31
 Gupta, 330
 Gupte, 330
 Gurney, 175
 Gurvitch, 133
 Gutjahr, 298
 Gutschmid, 326
 Guyard, 317
 Guyau, 146, 171, 176,
 218
 Guyot, 138
 Gwynn, D., 372
 — S., 367, 368, 372
 Gwynne-Vaughan,
 Dame Helen, 477
 Hackett, 241.
 Hackmann, 55
 Haddon, 1, 2, 4, 5,
 13, 16, 17, 62, 343,
 424, 441
 Hadeln, 444
 Hadley, A. T., 192,
 205
 — J., 411
 Hadow, 175, 446, 448,
 449
 Haeckel, 62, 126, 472,
 473
 Haesar, 432
 Haeusser, 288
 Hagenbach, 92, 288

- Haig, 328
Haigh, A. E., 450
— D. A., 343
Haire, 407
Haldane, 152
— E. S., 110
— J. B. S., 470
— J. S., 160
— Lord, 104, 128,
141, 293, 399
— Miss, 116
Haldar, 129
Hales, 460
Halévy, D., 192
— E., 398
— M. J., 230
Hall, C., 185, 209
— Dr. E., 23
— F. T., 43
— H., 345, 347, 355,
398
— H. R., 33, 221,
222, 224, 232
— Sir J. R., 278
— R. N., 396
— Prof. T. C., 138
— W. W., 174
Hallam, 28, 190, 288,
348, 352, 455, 458
Haller, 432
Hallet, 385
Halliday, 335
Halsted, 350
Hambley, 34
Hamerton, 176, 280,
444
Hamilton, A., 181
— J. T., 423
— Sir W., 113, 116,
152
Hammerton, 31
Hammond, J. L. and
B., 185
Hamont, 271
Hampden-Cooke, 102
Hampson, 430
Hampton, 237
Hancock, 391
Handelmann, 395
Hanna, 334, 338
Hannah, 319, 337
Hannay, 456
Hanotaux, 266, 268,
269, 280
Hansen, 310
Hapgood, 462
Harcourt-Smith, 442
Harding, 394
Hardwick, 410
Hardy, A. C., 22
— E., 55
— E. G., 97
Hardy, R. S., 55
Harford-Battersby, 72
Hargrave, 427
Harker, 467
Harland and Wilkinson,
425
Harmer, 345
Harnack, 78, 87, 89,
90, 91, 92, 93, 97,
99, 422
Harper, Prof., 71
— J. E. T., 399
— S. N., 307, 308
Harrent, 417
Harrington, 181, 182
Harris, H. B., 91
— C. R. S., 108
— H. W., 401
— J., 170
— Rendel, 90, 96
— W., 190
— W. C., 396
Harrison, C. W., 339
— F., 118, 127, 210,
239, 351
— H. D., 203
— Miss J., 35, 41, 42,
57, 240, 442
Harrop, 190
Hart, A. B., 345, 381
— Dr. E., 445
— G., 449
— L., 398
— Sir R., 320
Hartland, 7, 16, 36, 42
Hartley, 263
Hartman, 378
Hartmann, E. von,
118, 119, 126, 172,
188
— F., 109, 116
— Dr. H., 20
— L. M., 255
— N., 146
Hartwig, 251
Harvey, C. H., 217
— M., 374
Harvey-Gibson, 477
Hasan, 129
Hasbrouck, 385
Hassall, 257, 264, 268,
277, 288, 289, 309,
348, 412
Hassencamp, 369, 370
Hastings, 85
Hatch, E., 97, 138
— F. H., 467
— W., 334
Hatfield, 471
Hattersley, A. F., 32
— C. W., 10
Hatton, 374
Haug, 57
Haupt, 78
Hauréau, 108
Haurigot, 271
Hauser, 217
Hausrath, 87
Hausser, 292
Hauvette, 458
Havard, 436
Havell, E. B., 440, 445
— H. L., 172
Haverfield, 243, 264,
342
Havet, 58, 86, 98
Hawkins, 446
Hawtrey, 200
Hay, E., 371
— J., 382
Haycraft, 4
Hayden, A., 436
— R., 389
Hayes and Moon, 309
Hayford, 394
Haym, 115
Haynes, 101, 126
Hayter, 228
Hayward, 478
— F. H., 141, 419
Hazard, 392
Hazlitt, 163, 173, 183
— W. C., 252, 425,
460
Headlam, Bishop, 100
— J. W., 236, 290
Headley, 469
Healy, 369
Heard, 24
Hearn, L., 56, 323, 324
— W. E., 411
Hearnshaw, 29, 181,
189, 192, 294, 420
Heath, 110
— R., 355
Heaton, D. H., 198
— J. A., 436
Heawood, 22
Hebbel, 175
Hecker, 432
Heckethorn, 423
Hedges and Winter-
bottom, 203
Hedin, 338
Heeren, 317
Heeren-Ukert, 354
Hefe, 94
Hegel, 114, 115, 116,
118, 131, 132, 143,
153, 163, 170, 171,
180, 209
Hegner, 471
Heller, 67
Heitland, 243, 247

- Heller, 429
 Hellwald, 31
 Helmholtz, 175
 Helholt, 25
 Helps, 261
 Helvetius, 113, 142
 Helyot, 421, 422
 Henderson, B. W., 246
 — E. F., 287, 288,
 291
 — Dr. G., 43, 61
 — G. F. R., 382
 — T. F., 352, 359,
 362, 363, 364, 461
 — W., 425
 — W. J., 446, 448
 Henne am Rhyn, 31
 Hennesey, 476
 Hennings, 349
 Henry, 163
 Henslow, 432
 Hensman, 338
 Herbart, 114, 115, 420
 Herbert, A., 189
 — J. E., 367
 — S., 29
 Herder, 19, 33, 209
 Herford, C. H., 460
 — R. T., 73, 90
 Hermann, 209
 — E., 124
 — J., 281
 Herodotus, 236, 237
 Heron, A., 90
 — Dr. J., 98, 369
 Herrick, 114
 Herring, 14
 Hershon, 75
 Hertwig, 471
 Hertz, 6, 219
 Hertzberg, 234, 235,
 239, 243, 245
 Hertzka, 216
 Hervieu, 270
 Hessey, 99
 Hetherington, A. L.,
 435
 — and Muirhead,
 220
 Hewart, 297
 Hewins, 371
 Heyck, 291
 Heyd, 414
 "H. H.," 387
 Hibino, 324
 Hicks and Hill, 234
 Hickson, 469
 Higgin, 263
 Higgins, 39
 Higgs, 205
 Higham, 341
 Hildreth, 182
 Hilgenfeld, 91
 Hill, A., 468
 — B., 294
 — C. E., 381, 383
 — Miss G., 408
 — G. F., 240
 — Dr. J. H., 87
 — Miss M., 300, 345
 — S. C., 271, 331
 Hillebrandt, 36, 43
 Hind, 444
 Hinde, 394
 Hindus, 306, 308
 Hinkhouse, 380
 Hinks, 50
 Hinnebeg, 133
 Hinton, 435
 Hipkins, 449
 Hippolytus, 93
 Hirn, 441
 Hirsch, A., 432
 — F., 463
 — M., 189
 Hirsch-Davies, 365
 Hirst, 348
 — F. W., 383
 — W. A., 392
 Hirth, 176
 Hitchcock and Brown,
 90
 Hitomi, 324
 Hittel, 380
 Hoag and Hallett, 385
 Hobbes, 111, 139, 141,
 163, 168, 169, 181,
 208, 237
 Hobhouse, L. T., 7, 14,
 16, 19, 135, 158, 191,
 192, 215, 219, 406
 — W., 416
 Hobson, J. A., 185, 188,
 189, 192, 194, 203,
 204, 374
 — R. L., 445
 Hochart, M., 248
 — P., 98
 Hocken, 377
 Hockett, 385
 Hodder, A., 127, 131,
 146
 — E., 376
 Hodge, 387
 Hodgkin, 28, 246, 249,
 266, 345, 423
 Hodgskin, 185
 Hodgson, B., 338
 — G., 418
 — S., 121, 124
 — Dr. W. B., 409
 Hoernes, 2
 Hoernle, 432
 Höffding, 123
 Hoffman, 426, 432
 — General von, 399
 — J., 78
 — P. E. F., 422
 — W. J., 33
 Hofmeyr, 375
 Hogarth, C. H., 302
 — D. G., 223, 240,
 311, 316, 318
 — G., 236
 — W., 168
 Holcombe, A. N., 322
 — C., 320
 Holdsworth, 412
 Hole, 356
 Holland, A. W., 287
 — C., 286
 — F., 191
 — Sir T. E., 411, 412
 Hollander, 158, 161,
 218
 Hollmann, 73
 Holm, 234
 Holman, 417
 Holmes, A., 466, 467
 — C. J., 325
 — Sir C. J., 444, 445
 — J. H., 12
 — T. R., 180, 333,
 342
 — T. R. E., 266
 — W. G., 239
 Holmes-Forbes, A. W.,
 167
 Holtham, 324
 Holtendorff and
 Rivier, 413
 Holtzmann, 87
 Holyoake, 415
 Homan, 205
 Hommel, 221, 222, 230
 Homo, 243, 246, 247,
 250, 255
 Hone, 425
 Honegger, 31
 Honigswald, 133
 Hook, 356
 Hooker, 181, 477
 Hoole, 90
 Hoover, 308
 Hope-Moncrieff, 36
 Hopkins, E. W., 53
 — J. C., 374
 — J. H., 385
 — R. V. N., 246
 Hoppe, 430
 Horace, 141, 172
 Horden, 14
 Horn, 327
 Hornblower, 427
 Horne, 336
 Horner, 407

- Horowitz, 76
 Horsburgh, 277
 Horton, 242
 Horwood, 479
 Hosack, 362
 Hose, 13
 Hoskins, 84
 Hosmer, 76, 462
 Houdas, 28, 59
 Hough, P. M., 284
 — W., 14, 332
 House, E. M., 400
 — F. N., 214
 Houssay, 474
 Houssaye, A., 270
 — H., 277
 Houston and Horn-
 blower, 427
 Houtin, 88, 89
 Houze, 6
 Houzeau, 474
 Hovelacque, 56
 Howard, G. E., 406
 — J. G., 442
 — R. D., 14
 Howarth, 21
 Howey, 38
 Howitt, 11
 Howland, 400
 Howorth, 320, 338
 Hoyland, 30
 Hoyt, 414
 Huard, 74
 Huber, 108, 138
 — A., 294
 — J., 107
 — J. N., 422
 Hubner, von, 253
 Huc, 338
 Hudson, G. F., 319
 — W. H., 277
 Hueffer, 448
 Hug and Stead, 297
 Hughes, R., 383
 — T. P., 60
 — W., 366
 Hugo, 279, 451
 Hugonnet, 240
 Huhn, von, 312
 Huish, 325
 Hull, 367, 372
 Hullah, 447
 Hullinger, 306
 Hulme, 476
 — F. E., 413
 Humboldt, 185
 Hume, D., 62, 112-13,
 114, 116, 121, 130,
 131, 141, 144, 148,
 168, 169, 170, 182,
 209, 345, 410
 — M., 392
 Hume, M. A. S., 259,
 260, 261, 262, 351
 Humphrey, F. L., 448
 — G., 160, 390
 Hunfalvy, 296
 Hunnewell, 439
 Hunt, A. S., 91
 — H. G. B., 446
 — L., 163
 — Rev. W., 250,
 345, 355, 356
 Hunter, J. W., 80
 — Sir W. W., 59,
 330, 332, 333
 Huntington, E., 75,
 215
 — E. W., 22
 — G., 422
 Hurd, 399
 Hurtrel, 407
 Hutcheson, 113, 140,
 141, 168, 170
 Hutchins and Harri-
 son, Misses, 189
 Hutchinson, F., 376
 — Hely, 371
 — H. M., 466
 Hutton, 13
 — A. W., 356
 — J., 283
 — J. E., 423
 — S. K., 14
 — W. H., 266, 349
 Huyshe, 312
 Huxley, 21, 62, 64, 112,
 130, 214, 420, 428,
 465, 468, 469, 470,
 471, 472, 473
 — Julian, 470
 Hyamson, 231
 Hyett, 251
 Hylan, 65
 Hyndman, 415
 Hyslop, 141
 Iddings, 467
 Ihering, 412
 Ihm, 44
 Ihne, 242, 243, 244
 Ikin, 428
 Ilbert, 330
 Inderwick, 251
 Inge, 107
 Ingersoll, 62
 Inglis, 263
 Ingram, 197
 — J. F., 393
 — J. K., 145, 410
 — T. D., 355, 371
 — T. I., 323
 Ingrams, 378, 396
 Inman, A. H., 412
 Inman, Dr. T., 40
 Innes, A. D., 331, 333,
 344
 — C., 362
 Inouye, 201
 Iorga, 311
 Irenaeus, 93
 Irons, 146
 Irvine, R. Y., 378
 — W., 330
 Irving, 260
 — D., 461
 — W., 261
 Irwin, Lady, 336
 Iselin, 209
 Isham, 445
 Istrati, 308
 Ivanoff, 305
 Iyer, C. S. R., 335, 336
 — G. Subramakia,
 333
 Izoulet, 214
 Jacks, 160
 Jackson, A. V. W., 56,
 326
 — B. D., 479
 — E. L., 378
 — H. L., 86
 — Lady, 268, 273
 — S. M., 298
 — T. G., 313
 — Sir T. G., 437,
 438
 Jacob, E. F., 32, 347,
 349, 443
 — G., 316, 317, 463
 — G. A., 132
 — Miss G. L., 340
 Jacobi, 56, 114, 127
 Jacobs, 37
 Jacquemaire, 274
 Jacquemart, 436
 Jaeger, H., 427
 Jaell, 164
 Jager, 253
 Jahay, 390
 Jaini, 56
 James, H. G., 390
 — H. R., 108
 — M. R., 94
 — W., 63, 122, 125,
 126, 128, 130, 157
 Jameson, 478
 Jametel, 321
 Jamin, 163
 Jamison, 267
 Jane, 188
 Janet, P., 104, 113, 11
 — Pierre, 163
 Jannet, 238
 Janssen, 288

- "Janus," 94
 Jarde, 27, 232
 Jarrett, 181
 Jarrott, 435
 Jastrow, 43, 50, 222
 — Prof. J., 160, 162
 — M., 63, 221
 Jaurès, 217, 274, 275, 279
 Jay, 181
 Jeans, 434
 Jebb, 240
 Jeffrey, 173
 Jenkins and Mackenzie, 421
 Jenks, 179, 348, 353, 376, 412
 — and Lauck, 188, 384
 Jennings, H. S., 8
 — J. G., 174
 — Rev. W., 72
 — W. W., 198
 Jensen, 41
 Jerdan and Haire, 407
 Jernigen, 321
 Jerrold, D., 398
 — L., 280
 — W. B., 226
 Jerry, 399
 Jerusalem, 104
 Jervis, A. H., 264
 — W. H., 276
 Jespersen, 20
 Jessopp, 422
 Jevdwene, 346, 349
 Jevons, F. B., 2, 17, 19, 46, 62, 63, 456
 — Stanley, 127, 151, 152, 196, 200, 202
 Joachim, 139
 Joad, 179
 Jobez, 271
 Jodl, 146
 John, R. T., 308
 — Scotus, 108
 Johns, 71, 221
 Johnson, A. H., 288
 — R., 381
 — R. A., 288
 — S., 48, 393
 — S. C., 198
 — W. E., 155
 Johnston, A., 385
 — A. W., 190
 — Sir H., 11, 101, 393, 394
 — J., 320
 — R. M., 255, 273, 277
 — W. A., 383
 — W. H., 115, 153
 Johnstone, 243
 Jolly, J., 54
 — Jules, 270
 Joly, 16
 — J., 21, 466
 — N., 3, 433
 Jonckbloet, 462
 Jones, C. F., 388
 — C. S., 66, 321
 — D. B., 366
 — E. D., 415
 — E. E. C., 155
 — F. W., 4, 16
 — G. H., 32, 433
 — H. A., 399
 — J. E., 366
 — M., 78
 — P. and G. E., 412
 — S., 305
 — W. H. S., 431
 Jonquière, de la, 314
 Jordan, D. S., 22
 — W., 395
 — and Kellogg, 472
 Jørgensen, 151
 Jose, 373
 Joseph, H. W. B., 150, 189
 — Rev. M., 74
 Josephus, 74, 80, 83, 229
 Joshi, 199
 Joshua, 320
 Jost, 476
 Jouffroy, 170
 Jourdain, 174, 450
 Jouvenel, 274
 Jowett, 106, 179, 237
 Joyce, 367, 368
 Joyner, 241
 Jubainville, 365, 368, 457
 Judd, 466
 Juglar, 415
 Jukes-Browne, 466
 Julian, 96
 Jülicher, 78
 Julléville, 266, 459
 Jullian, 247
 Junck, 292
 Jung, C. J., 162
 — J., 247
 — T., 278
 Junod, 10
 Jusserand, 452, 460
 Juste, 283, 285, 286
 Justi, 326, 337, 444
 Justin, 248
 — J., 395
 Juvalta, 147
 Kadison, 101, 126
 Kaemmel, 418
 Kaempfer, 323
 Kaerst, 235
 Kalgren, 306
 Kalidasa, 453
 Kalisch, 70
 Kalka, 106
 Kalthoff, 81
 Kames, 169
 Kammerer, 318
 Kandel, 416
 Kant, 114, 115-16, 118, 119, 131, 140, 143, 148, 163, 169, 170, 172, 209
 Kantorowicz, 288
 Kapadia, 56
 "Kappa," 420
 Kara, 14
 Karkaria, 334
 Karlowa, 412
 Karolyi, 404
 Karpeles, 455
 Karppe, 111
 Karsten, 13, 61, 392
 Kästner, 109
 Kauffmann, 291, 418
 Kaufman, 188
 Kaufmann, 35
 Kautsky, 187, 307, 398, 423
 Kautzsch, 70
 Kay, De, 389
 Kaye, 333, 334, 338
 Keane, 2
 — A. H., 5, 10, 22
 — J. F., 318
 Keary, 299
 Kebbel, 190
 Keene, H. G., 329, 330, 334, 458
 Keenleyside, 374
 Keightley, 36
 Keith, Sir A., 4, 316
 — A. B., 348, 453
 Keller, A. G., 208, 214, 215
 — L., 291
 Kellett, 36, 74, 177
 Kellner, 460
 Kellogg, 470, 472, 473
 Kelly, 302, 303, 451, 458
 Kelsey, 229
 Keltie, 21, 394
 Kemble, 343
 Kendrew, 23
 Kendrick, 299, 342, 347, 366
 Kennan, 339
 Kennedy, A. B. W., 318

- Kennedy, A. J., 391
 Kenrick, 229
 Kent, 190
 Kenyon, 71
 Ker, 174, 456
 Kerensky, 305
 Kermack, 353, 373
 Kern, 55
 Kerner, 469, 475, 476
 Kerr, J., 417, 425
 — Prof. J. G., 471
 — P. H. and A. C., 341
 Kerry, 277
 Kershasp, 326
 Ketelbey, 286
 Keyes, 399
 Keynes, J. M., 200
 — J. N., 152, 196
 Khull, 300
 Kidd, B., 122, 215
 — B. J., 97
 — D., 10
 Kiesewetter, 447
 Kilburn, 448
 Kinai, 305
 Kincaid, 454
 King, 141
 — B., 256, 257
 — C., 93
 — C. C., 383
 — J. S., 330
 — Mrs. L., 338
 — L. M., 338
 — L. W., 50, 51, 221, 224
 — and Okey, 256
 Kinglake, 303
 Kingley, 162
 Kingsford, 374
 Kingsley, Miss, 10, 378, 394
 Kinkel, 115
 Kinley, 200
 Kinloch, 360, 364
 Kipling, T. Lockwood, 468
 Kirby, 470
 Kirchheim, 278
 Kirk, 260, 261
 — J. F., 267
 — Mrs., 424
 Kirkland, 382
 Kirkpatrick, 388, 392
 Kirkup, 186, 187
 Kisch and Elkin, 201
 Kitchin, 264, 267, 269
 Kittel, 69
 Kitto, 75
 Kittredge, 426
 Klaar, 451
 Klausner, 83
 Klee, 462
 Klein, 450, 452, 453
 Kluchevsky, 302
 Kluge, 463
 Kluver, 159
 Knapp, 200
 Knibbs, 12
 Knight, Charles, 354
 — E. F., 315
 — G. E. O., 338
 — M. M., 8, 198
 — Payne, 42, 170
 — Prof. W., 111, 112, 167, 168, 169, 170, 171
 Knoop, 403
 Knope, 103
 Knorr, 310
 Knott, G. C., 23
 Knowles, 198
 Knowling. See M. Buchanan.
 Knowlson, 155, 425
 Knox, G. W., 53
 — W. L., 88
 Knudtzon, 51
 Koch, A., 312
 — M. E., 301
 Koebel, 259, 391
 Koehler, W., 20
 Koenig, 463
 Koenigbauer, 416
 Koerting, 450, 451, 458
 Köhler, 42
 Kohn, 401
 Kollmann, 10
 Kolmer, 295
 Kondakov, 443
 Köpler, 159
 Köstlin, 289
 Kovalevsky, 303
 Krasinski, 296, 309, 311
 Krassin, 307
 Kraus, 442
 Krauss, G., 290
 Krausse, 320
 Kremer, 133
 Kretschmer, 171
 Kroeber, 2, 16
 Kroeger, 115
 Kröner, 133
 Kronos von Marchland, 294, 295
 Kropf, 393
 Krüger, P., 96
 Krzyzanowski, 462
 Ktêsiâs, 329
 Kuenen, 48, 55, 56, 60, 69, 72
 Kugler, 258, 445
 Kuhn, 38
 Kulin, 424
 Kulischer, 80
 Kulpe, 131
 Kurtz, 92
 Kuykendall, 384
 Labourt, 327
 Labriola, 187, 217
 Lacey, 68
 Lachatre, 257
 Lacombe, 29
 — C. de, 268
 Lacouperie, Terrien de 320
 Lacroix, A., 280
 — D., 278
 — P., 425
 La Croze, 396
 Ladd, 119, 122, 145
 Laërtius, 137
 Lafuente, 262
 Laible, 90
 Laing, 461
 — D. T., 394
 — M., 359, 361
 — S., 62, 300
 Laird, 113, 129, 162
 Lake, 77, 78, 85
 Lalor, 195
 Lalou, 458
 Laloux, 438
 Lamartine, 274, 279
 Lamb, A., 238
 — C., 172
 — H. B., 258
 Lambert, 204
 La Mettrie, 110, 113
 Lamouche, 312
 Lamprecht, 290
 Lanarre, 255
 Lanciani, 247
 Land, 111
 Landau-Aldanov, 307
 Landon, Rev. E. H., 94
 — P., 338
 Landor, 14, 338
 Landry, 108
 Lane, 318
 — E. W., 227
 — M. A., 214
 — Poole. See Poole.
 — W. H., 222
 Lanfrey, 278
 Lang, Andrew, 2, 6, 11, 17, 39, 41, 61, 62, 64, 172, 303, 358, 360, 361, 362, 363
 — J. D., 376
 Langdon, 222
 Lange, A., 110, 111
 — C. G., 164

- Lange, L., 247
 Langeron, 253
 Langhaus, 447
 Langlois, 25, 270
 Lanier, 174
 Lankenau and Oelnitz, 303
 Lankester, E. R., 62, 124, 466, 468, 471
 Lanman, 323
 Lanson, 451, 459
 Lanzi, 443
 Laplace, 153
 Lappenberg, 354
 Lardner, 90
 Larpent, 314
 Larrazabel, 391
 Larroque, 410
 Larson, 307
 Laski, 101, 179, 180, 182
 Lasserre, 408
 Lasterie, 436
 Latimer, E. W., 256, 280, 295
 — H., 404
 Latta, 112
 Lauck, 188, 384
 Laughlin, 199, 201, 384
 Lauribar, 396
 Laurie, 416, 418, 419
 Lausdell, 339
 Lavallée, 265, 272
 Laveleye, 189, 200, 256
 Laver, 427, 444
 Lavergne, 271
 Lavigne, 304
 Lavine, 386
 Lavissee, 265, 266, 269
 — and Rambaud, 258, 265
 Law, A., 332
 — E., 141
 — W., 140
 Lawrence, R. V., 273
 — T. E., 316
 — T. J., 413
 Lawson, J. C., 37
 — J. P., 364
 — R. W., 130
 Lawton, 306, 308, 403
 Layard, 222, 267
 Layton, 201, 203
 Lea, 32, 33, 98, 260, 262
 Leach, 346, 417, 419
 Leadam, 345
 Leaf, 201
 Leared, 317
 Lebeau, 326
 Lebey, 281
 Lechartier, 141
 Lecky, 33, 138, 180, 352, 367, 370, 410
 Leclerc, L., 317, 432
 Lecrivain, 247
 Le Dantec, 123
 Lee, F., 382
 — F. G., 356
 — G. C., 345
 — I., 306
 — V., 160, 167, 171
 Lefebvre, 396
 Lefevre, A., 291
 — G. J. S., 371
 Lefranc, 419
 Lefrancais, 279
 Legeay, 267
 Leger, 294, 303
 Legg, 273
 Legge, 51
 — J. G., 420
 Legrange, 417
 Lehfeldt, 199
 Lehmann, 63
 Leibnitz, 110, 112, 115
 Leighton, 70
 Leitch, 419
 Leland, 368
 — C. G., 426
 Lely, 335
 Lema, 263
 Lembke, 262
 Le Mesurier, Mrs., 218
 Le Nain, 421
 Lenormant, 50
 Lenôtre, 275
 Léon, E. de, 226
 Leonard, 10
 Le Play, 216
 Leroux, 133
 Leroy, M. O., 18
 Leroy-Beaulieu, 76, 303
 Lesage, 227
 Lessing, 168, 169, 170, 209
 Lessmann, 40
 Lessou, 397
 Letourneau, 9, 31, 135, 410, 433
 Lettenhove, 282, 283, 285
 Leuba, 63
 Leuckart, R., 468
 Leuliette, 458
 Levasseur, 272, 390, 415
 Levi, 355
 Levine, 307
 Levonian, 318
 Levy, 434
 Levy-Bruhl, 66, 146, 210
 Lewes, G. H., 106, 118, 121, 144, 157, 469, 474
 Lewis, Sir G. C., 238
 — H., 366
 — H. K., 432
 — J., 69
 Leyden, 340
 Lha-Mo, 338
 Liard, 423, 151
 Libby, 428
 Licht, 407
 Lichtenberger, 127, 214
 Liddell, 242
 Lightfoot, 84, 90, 94
 Lilienfeld, von, 212, 216
 Lillie, A. S., 56
 Lilly, 334
 Linden, 285
 Linder, 291, 292
 Lindsay, 465
 Lingard, 345, 356
 Linn, 380
 Lippert, 9, 30, 44, 61, 178, 215
 Lipps, 163
 Lipson, 198, 346
 Lissagaray, 279
 List, 204
 Litchfield, 436
 Litting, 382
 Little, A. G., 365, 422
 — C. M., 362
 Litton, 99
 Littré, 66, 118
 Livingstone, 420
 Livy, 248
 Lloyd, A. B., 15
 — H. D., 188
 — J., 457
 — J. E., 365
 — Lady, 302
 — W., 423
 — W. F., 203
 L'Maritain, 133
 Lobstein, 78
 Loch, 189
 Lock, Dr. R. H., 473
 Lock and Dreyfous, 265
 Locke, C., 258
 — J., 111, 112, 140, 154, 163, 181, 190, 208, 420, 431
 — J. C., 426
 Lockhart, W., 363
 Lockman, 396
 Lodge, R., 268, 345
 — R. C., 137
 — Sir O., 65, 66, 428, 430

- Loeb, 471, 474
 Löher, 241, 292
 Loiseleur, 267
 Loisy, 69, 84, 85, 86,
 87, 88, 99, 102
 Loman, 80
 Lomas, 351
 Lombard, F. A., 454
 — T. R., 389
 Lombroso, 218
 Londonderry, Lord,
 263
 Long, 137
 — A. C., 403
 — B., 382
 — G., 237
 — R., 308
 Longfield, 372
 Longford, 323
 Longinus, 172
 Longman, 289, 349
 Lonkowsky, 305
 Loofs, 83, 93
 Loria, 187, 217
 Lorimer, 359
 Lorin, 281
 Lorini, 327
 Loserth, 295
 Lossky, 128, 130, 139
 Lot, 26
 Lotsy, J. P., 472
 Lotze, 119, 157, 163,
 172
 Louandre, 272
 Louis, G., 109
 — P., 27, 248, 433
 Loulay, de, 312
 Loumyer, 298
 Love, 331
 Low, A. M., 205
 — B., 162
 — Sir S., 191, 227,
 345, 353
 Lowell, A. L., 188
 — J. R., 174
 — P., 324
 Lowie, 7, 17, 18
 Lowrie, D. A., 312
 — W., 78
 Lubbock, 3, 4, 6, 7, 16,
 17, 21, 61, 178, 406,
 428, 433, 465, 469,
 474, 475
 Lubke, 437, 439, 440,
 441, 443
 Lucas, C., 353
 — E. V., 284
 — H., 254
 Luce, 272
 Luchaire, 270
 Ludlow, 330, 381
 Ludwig, 54
 Luetzow, 296, 462
 Lull, 466
 Lumholtz, 17
 Lummis, 389
 Lund, 301
 Luquet, 18
 Luthardt, 138, 139
 Luther, 139, 181, 262,
 289
 Luys, 161
 Luzzato, 217
 Lyall, 39, 331
 Lyell, 4, 466
 Lynch, Dr. A., 159
 — Miss H., 251
 Lyne, 396
 Lyttleton, Mrs., 409
 — E., 162
 Mabillon, 421
 Macalister, Dr., 249
 — Prof. R. A. S., 13,
 230
 Macaulay, Lord, 183,
 184, 261, 352, 370
 — G. C., 237
 Macbain, 361
 Macbeth, 369
 McBride, 470
 McCabe, 2, 3, 4, 33, 34,
 63, 66, 81, 94, 96,
 97, 101, 126, 130,
 138, 158, 258, 263,
 311, 392, 409
 McCarthy, J., 190, 353
 — J. H., 367
 Macartney, 294, 296
 McClintock and Strong,
 75
 MacCoan, 226
 McCormick, 307
 McCosh, 113, 140, 142
 McCrackan, 297
 McCrady, 380
 McCrie, 253, 262, 359
 McCrindle, 237, 328
 McCullagh, 284
 McCulloch, J., 197
 — J. R., 195, 284
 MacCulloch, J. A., 36,
 46, 47, 62
 MacCunn, 363
 McCurdy, 444
 — Dr. J. T., 158
 MacDaniels, 476
 Macdonald, A. J., 347
 — D., 338
 — D. B., 36, 59, 60
 — G., 342
 — J. Ramsay, 335
 — W., 379, 381
 — Messrs., 362
 Macdonald-Davies, 467
 Macdonell, A. A., 36,
 328, 329, 456
 — Sir J., 106
 McDougall, 18, 148,
 156, 158, 159, 215
 Macdowall, H. C., 268
 McDowall, A., 129
 — S. A., 167
 McElroy, 378
 Macfarlane, 22
 McGee, 422
 MacGeorge, 334
 MacGibbon, 439
 Macgowan, 319
 McGrady, 341, 353
 Macgregor, A. S. M.,
 362
 — W. L., 332
 McGuire, 257
 Mach, 429, 473
 McHenry, 434
 Machray, 309, 310
 Macintyre, 109
 Maciver, 181
 Mackail, J. S., 456
 — J. W., 173, 174,
 462
 Mackay, R. W., 99
 — T., 190
 McKechnie, 349
 Mackensie, 479
 Mackenzie, A., 362
 — A. S., 455
 — D., 431
 — D. A., 36, 44, 359,
 362
 — D. R., 11
 — J. S., 134, 214
 — K. D., 421
 — W. C., 362
 — W. M., 249, 358,
 362, 439
 McKeon, 111
 Mackie, 341
 Mackinder, 467
 Mackinnon, Prof. J.,
 83, 289, 349, 361,
 363, 457
 — J. and J. A. R.,
 359
 — S., 361
 Mackintosh, Sir J., 140,
 141, 142
 — Dr. J., 360, 361
 — Rev. R., 100, 116
 MacLagan, 37
 MacLaine, 192
 McLaren, 293
 Maclean, D., 360
 — J. M., 362
 Macleay, 362

- McLennan, 9, 372, 406,
 411
 Macleod, 200, 201
 Macmillan, R. A. C.,
 114
 — W. M., 375
 Macnair, 322
 Macneille, 78, 88
 McNeill, 371
 Macphail, 374
 Macpherson, 457
 — Col., 9
 — D., 332, 355
 Macquoid, 436
 Macrae, 362
 Macran, 153
 Macrobius, 38
 MacTaggart, 116
 MacVicar, 478
 Macy, 385
 Madariaga, 259, 263,
 458
 Maddox, 18, 431
 Madelin, 274, 275
 Madion, 395
 Madison, 181
 Magnin, 427, 451
 Magnus, 74
 Magnússon, 300
 Mahaffy, 39, 111, 114,
 233, 234, 235, 236,
 237, 238, 240, 243,
 290, 369, 416, 456
 — and Bernard, 114
 Mahan, 277
 Mahon, 246, 261
 Maine, 8, 181, 186, 212,
 411, 412
 Mair, A., 124
 — J. E., 21
 Maisch, 179
 Maitland, 181, 349
 — F. W., 348, 412
 — S. R., 356
 Major, H. D. A., 84
 — R. H., 377
 Makeev and O'Hara,
 306
 Malcolm, I., 334
 — J., 327, 331, 332
 Malebranche, 111, 112,
 139
 Malevsky - Malevitch,
 306, 403
 Malinowski, 7, 8, 16,
 406
 Malleson, 290, 330, 331,
 332, 337
 Mallet, 42
 — Sir C., 356
 — Sir C. E., 273
 — Sir L., 204
 Mallock, 63, 189
 Malone, 369
 Malthus, 182, 183, 195
 Mamiani, 120
 Mandat-Grancey, 281
 Mandeville, 140, 209
 Mangin, 427
 Manitiuss, 291
 Mann, K., 427
 — W., 52
 Mannhardt, 37, 43
 Manoflesco, 205
 Manriquez, 421
 Mansel, 93, 117, 150
 Manucci, 330
 Maori, 377
 Maranon, 406
 Marcelin, 395
 Marchant, F. J. W.,
 414
 — Sir J., 184
 Marchland. *See*
 Krones.
 Marcovitch, 312
 Marcu, 307
 Marcus Aurelius, 97,
 137
 Marechal, 276
 Maret, 2, 16, 17, 160,
 433
 Marez, 285
 Margoliouth, A. M., 401
 — D. S., 59
 Marholm, 407
 Mariana, 262
 Mariano, 120
 Mariette, 224
 Marindin, 35
 Mariner, 12
 Mario, 256
 Mariti, 241
 Mark, 416
 Markham, 22, 254, 327,
 350, 391
 Marks, A., 355
 — Mrs., 352
 Marmery, 428
 Marquardt and Momm-
 sen, 247
 Marquis, 385
 Marr, 464, 466
 — J. E., 465
 — W., 389
 Marriott, C., 439
 — J., 289
 — J. A. R., 190, 193,
 314, 345
 Marriotti. *See* Gal-
 lenga.
 Marsden, 356
 Marshall, A., 195, 196,
 197
 Marshall, F. H., 236
 — H. R., 171
 Martel, 275
 Martène, 421
 Martensen, 99, 109, 138
 Martha, 137
 Martin, 465
 — B. L. H., 265,
 269
 — D., 102
 — F., 324
 — Mrs. J., 214
 — S., 66
 — Sir T., 353
 — T. C., 430
 — W., 297
 — W. A. P., 321
 — W. T., 104
 Martineau, H., 118,
 190, 210, 330, 353,
 420
 — J., 62, 101, 111,
 125, 127, 142, 143,
 144
 — R., 254
 Martinengo-Cesaresco,
 256
 Martins, 259, 262
 Marx, 186, 189, 202,
 217
 Mason, D. G., 449
 — E. S., 279
 — F., 473
 — O. T., 34, 406,
 433
 Maspero, G., 26, 222,
 225, 230, 438, 442
 Massam, 11
 Massari, 256
 Massee, 478
 Massey, 352
 Masson, 421
 — D., 351
 — G., 264, 266, 268
 — P., 281
 Masson-Oursel, 130
 Masterman, 460
 Masters, 477
 Matheson, 107, 180,
 242
 Mathew, 11
 Mathews, C. T., 437
 — S., 87
 Mathieson, 360, 362
 Mathieu, 281
 Maton, 312
 Matter, 93
 Matthews, 174
 Matzat, 249
 Maude, 304
 Maudsley, A. P., 388
 — H., 60, 157

- Maugham, 394
 Maulde la Clavière, 408
 Maupas, 279
 Maurenbrecher, 292
 Maurer, von, 292
 Maurice, C. E., 296, 347
 — Sir F., 375, 399
 — Sir F. D., 303
 Mavor, 305
 Mavrogordato, 240
 Maximow, 476
 Maxwell, 362
 May, 190, 348, 351
 Mayer, 295
 Mayeux, 176
 Mayo, 335
 Mazelière, 329
 Mazumdar, 330
 Mead, 81, 84, 94
 Meaux, 267
 Medley, 348
 Megasthenes, 328
 Meik, 15
 Meldrum, 284
 Melena, 256
 Melgounov, 306
 Mellaert, 444
 Melliss, 378
 Mellone, 110
 Meltzer, 229
 Ménard, L., 235
 — R., 436, 443
 Mendel, 473
 Mendenhall, 430
 Ménéval, 277
 Menge, 441
 Menger, 185, 186, 188, 197
 Mennell, 376
 Mennicke, 449
 Menon, 163
 Menzel, 287
 Menzies, A., 46
 — S., 315
 Mercier, 100
 — Dr. C., 154
 Meredith, C. M., 217
 — G., 163, 324
 — H. O., 205
 Merger, 397
 Merivale, 242, 244, 245, 248
 Merriam, 188, 385
 Merriman, 260
 Merz, 112, 468, 470
 Mesmer, 161
 Metcalf, 472
 Metchnikoff, 33, 218
 Methuen, 375
 Métin, 227
 Mew, 435
 Meyer, A., 78
 — E., 27, 50, 51, 225, 229, 230, 234, 236
 — E. von, 429
 — E. H., 43
 — J. J., 407
 Meyerson, 133
 Meynier, 278
 Mézières, 254, 272
 Miall, 468
 — Prof., 470
 — B., 335, 391
 — L. C., 430
 — S., 356
 Michael, 310
 Michaud, 258
 Michel, E., 444
 — F., 260, 266
 Michelet, 208, 244, 265, 267, 273, 289, 410
 Michels, 192, 406
 Middlemore, 252
 Middleton, 95
 Miers, 467
 Migeod, 3, 16
 Mignet, 208, 267, 273, 292, 362
 Mijatovich, 312
 Mikusch, 315
 Milesbo. *See* Bossi.
 Milhaud, 107, 155
 Mill, H. R., 465
 — Jas., 142, 143, 156, 185, 330
 — J. S., 66, 116, 118, 142, 143, 149, 151, 152, 153, 156, 181, 185, 195, 196, 211, 219, 408
 Millar, J., 209
 — J. H., 364, 456, 461
 Miller, H. C., 161
 — R. F., 304
 — W., 241, 311, 314, 438
 — W. G., 412
 Milligan, 91
 Millington, 338
 Milloué, 55
 Mills, J. O., 13
 — L. H., 56
 Milman, 98, 103, 410
 Milne, J., 23
 — J. G., 225
 Milner, 226
 Milsand, 176
 Milton, 174, 351, 420
 Minayeff, 55
 Minchin, 311
 Miner, 13
 Minon, 273
 Minor, 385
 Minto, 117, 150, 151, 460, 461
 Mirsky, 462
 Mitchell, 234
 — A. F., 364
 — D., 362
 — E. K., 92
 — Sir P. C., 471, 472
 Mitford, 324
 Mitra, P., 329
 — R., 329
 — S. M., 334
 Mitrany, 313
 Mitre, 392
 Mixer, 384
 Mixter, 197
 Moberly, 399
 Mockford, 394
 Mockler-Ferryman, 394
 Moegs, 133
 Moffat, Dr., 102
 — R. S., 203
 Moffatt, 78
 Moke, 285
 Molema, 393
 Moleschott, 119
 Molesworth, 190, 353
 Molinier, 436
 Molmenti, 252
 Moltke, 14, 309
 Mommsen, 59, 242, 243, 249
 Monck, 116
 Mone, 61
 Money, 204
 Monnier, 417
 Monod, 28
 Monro, 447
 Monroe, 296
 Montague, F. C., 345, 348
 — V. F., 129
 — Prof. W. P., 128
 Montaigne, 420
 Montanaro, 394
 Montefiore, 75, 85
 Monteil, 266, 272, 434
 Montelius, 255, 301
 Montesquieu, 181, 208, 209
 Montgetas, 398
 Montgomery, 417
 Montmasson, 34
 Monypenny and Buckle, 191
 Monzie-Lasserre, 102
 Mookerjee, 329
 Moon, 309
 — T. J., 470
 Moore, C. H., 438

- Moore, G., 372
 — G. E., 130, 134, 146
 — Prof. G. F., 73
 — H. K., 419
 — J. H., 2
 — J. W., 380
 — Miss M., 229
 — W. I., 377
 Moore-Binns, 436
 Mordacq, 281
 More, H., 140
 Morel, 317
 Morelet, 389
 Morelli, 443
 Moret, A., 26, 27, 49, 224
 Morfill, 94, 302, 303, 309
 Morgan, Dr. A., 22
 — C., 95
 — C. L., 157
 — J. F., 349
 — J. H., 372
 — J. V., 366
 — Lloyd, 469, 472, 473, 474
 — L. H., 7, 206, 411
 — T. H., 473
 Morin, 272
 Morison, J. C., 269
 — S. E., 188, 281, 379
 Morley, E. J., 409
 — H., 109, 370, 459
 — J., 113, 185, 191, 270, 351
 Morrice, 366
 Morris, C., 38
 — C. R., 112
 — E. J., 254
 — G. S., 116
 — J., 63
 — J. E., 28, 286
 — M., 363
 — W., 176, 218, 300
 — W. O'C., 368, 371, 372
 — and Bax, 186
 Morrison, H., 187
 — W. D., 76
 Morrow, 296
 Morse, 382
 Morselli, 217
 Morthillet, 270
 Morton, 309
 Moryson, 370
 Moseley, 469
 Moses, 388
 Mosheim, 84, 91, 93, 226, 257
 Mossman, 324
 Mosso, 164
 Motley, 283
 Moubray, 7
 Moule, 320
 Moulinier, 109
 Moulton, H. G., 325
 — J. H., 56
 — R. G., 450
 Moutier-Rousset, 82
 Mouy, 269
 Movers, 51, 229
 Mowat, 28, 342
 Muchall-Viebrock, 444
 Mücke, 96
 Mühlbacher, 291
 Mulhause, 61
 Müller, A., 60, 310, 317
 — D., 291
 — Hermann, 469
 — J. von, 297
 — J. G., 60
 — K. O., 35, 232, 244, 456
 — Max, 5, 19, 38, 39, 47, 48, 52, 53, 54, 62, 114, 132, 329
 Muehlon, 400
 Muir, A., 254
 — E., 360
 — J., 53
 — R., 257
 — Sir W., 59, 316
 Muirhead, J., 411
 — J. H., 129, 220
 Mulhall, 392
 Muller, M., 114
 Muller-Freienfel, 133
 Mullinger, 345, 356, 417
 Mummery and Hobson, 203
 Muñoz and Jahay, 390
 Munk, 108
 Munro, D. C., 248
 — J., 430
 — J. E. C., 374
 — Dr. R., 4, 15, 16, 361, 433
 Munsterberg, 126
 Muntz, 267, 436, 443, 444
 Muratori, 251
 Murdoch, 323
 Murdock, 91, 207
 — G. P., 8, 30, 211, 215
 Mürdter, 222
 Mure, 106
 Murphy, G., 159
 — J. J., 474
 Murray, 264, 477
 — Miss A. E., 371
 Murray, A. S., 41
 — C. G., 378
 — D., 323, 361
 — Prof. G., 32, 58, 168, 192, 273, 404, 456
 — H., 12
 — J., 257
 — R. H., 180, 182, 289
 — T. D., 266
 Murry, J. M., 84
 Muspratt, 12
 Myers, C. S., 14
 — J. M., 74
 Myrand, 271
 Myres, 2
 — J. L., 24, 180, 232
 Nacquet, 189
 Naden, 150
 Nagel, 448
 Nahar, 56
 Nahas, 227
 Namier, 352
 Nansen, 301
 Naoroji, 57
 Napier, 251
 — J., 425
 — Mark, 363
 Narrien, 429
 Nasché, 455
 Nash, H. S., 100
 — R., 390
 Nathan, 204
 Nau, 395
 Naumann, 446, 447
 Naville, E., 48, 70
 — H. A., 96
 Nazin, 337
 Neal, D., 356
 — J., 182
 Neander, 91, 96, 226
 Neilson, 412
 Nelson, N. L., 66
 — and Thorndike, 459
 Nenni, 257
 Nery, 390, 392
 Nestle, 85
 Nettleship, 35
 Nettleton, 453
 Neuburger, 431
 Neukamp, 411
 Neumann, 81
 Nève, 456
 Nevins, A., 380
 — W., 96
 Nevins, 304
 Newbiggin, 21, 373, 469
 Newbolt, 399

- Newcombe, 334
 Newell, E. J., 366
 — W. W., 426
 Newenham, 371
 Newman, A. H., 422
 — B., 182
 — E., 173, 448, 449
 — E. M., 306
 — Prof. H. H., 473
 — J. H., 100, 138,
 153, 420
 Newth, 296
 Newton, 373, 469
 — D., 95
 — J. C. C., 324
 Neymarck, 271
 Nichol, 110
 Nicholson, Dr. B., 425
 — E. B., 94
 — J. S., 190, 196,
 200, 203
 — R. A., 463
 Nicolas, 70, 87
 — of Cusa, 109
 Nicolay, F., 425
 — and Hay, 382
 Nicolet, 418
 Nicolini, 258
 Nicoll, A., 452, 453
 — J., 96
 Nicolson, H., 461
 — W., 36
 Niebuhr, 242, 243
 Niecks, 449
 Niederlein, 389
 Nielsen, 258
 Niemann, 448
 Niese, 235
 Nietzsche, 144, 188
 Nikel, 31
 Nilsson, 232
 Nitobe, I., 324, 325
 Nitschmann, 462
 Nock, 96
 Noeldeke, 60, 230, 317,
 326
 Noer, 330
 Nohl, 448
 Nordhoff, 385
 Nordmann, 130
 Norgate, Miss, 349
 Nork, 43
 Norman, H., 324
 — M. C., 201
 Norris, 50
 North, 362
 Northridge, 162
 Northumberland, Duke
 of, 296
 Norwood, 450
 Notor, 407
 Novicow, 216
 Nowak, 399
 Noyes, 385
 Nurguet, 285
 Nutt, 43
 Nys, 198, 410, 413
 Oberholtzer, 193, 382
 O'Brien, B. J., 241
 — G., 372
 — R. B., 370, 371
 — W. P., 371
 O'Clery, 256
 O'Connor, T. P., 277,
 371
 — W. A., 367
 O'Curry, 368
 Oechsli, 297, 298
 Oelsner, C. E., 317
 — E., 408
 — Dr. H., 457
 Oesterley, Dr., 68
 — Rev. W. O. E.,
 95
 Oesterreich, 425
 Oettli, 71
 O'Farrell, 404
 O'Flaherty, 372
 Ogburn, 215
 Ogden, 156, 159, 167,
 182
 — and Richards, 159
 Ogilvie, 185
 Oglander, 399
 O'Grady, 369, 370
 O'Hara, 306
 Okey, 256
 Old, 52
 Olden, 369
 Oldenberg, 53, 54, 55,
 329
 Oldfield, 338
 Oliphant, 254, 266
 Oliver, 475, 476
 — V. L., 378
 Olmstead, 221
 Oltramare, 53
 Oman, 218, 233, 239,
 344, 345, 347
 — J., 89
 Omond, 174, 360
 — C. W. T., 363, 375
 — T. S., 456
 Oncken, 26, 225, 229,
 234, 240, 245, 288
 Oppenheim, 261
 Oppenheimer, F., 215
 — H., 293
 Oppert, 50
 Origen, 97
 Orlandinus, 422
 Orloff, 307
 Ormerod, 469
 Ornano, 275
 Orr, C. W. J., 378
 — Prof. J., 70, 98
 Orsi, 256
 Osborn, H., 161
 — H. F., 473
 — R. D., 317
 Osbourne, 397
 Osgood, 380
 Osmaston, 115
 Ostrogorski, 191, 355
 O'Sullivan, 128
 Oswald, 111
 Otté, 299
 Ottley, 73
 Otto, 63, 67, 125
 Overton, 356
 Owen, Rev. J., 127
 — R., 365
 — Robert, 185
 — S. J., 330
 Oxford, A. W., 68, 69
 — Earl, 192
 Ozanam, 254
 Ozieduszycki, 310
 Packard, 470
 Paetow, 28
 Page-Croft, 205
 Paine, 65, 182
 Pais, 242, 250, 252
 Paish, 403
 Paix-Seailles, 281
 Paley, 142, 144
 — F. A., 103
 Palfrey, 380
 Palgrave, 205
 — Sir F., 343
 — Sir R. F. D., 351
 — W. G., 314, 318
 Palliser, 371
 — Mrs., 436
 Palmer, Prof., 60
 — W. S., 64, 109
 Palustre, 440
 Pandian, 9, 334
 Papinot, 325
 Pâquerie, 272
 Paranjpye, 64, 335
 Pardoe, 267, 268, 269
 Pares, 302, 308
 Parfaict, 451
 Paris, G., 458
 — P., 442
 Park, J., 277
 — R., 431
 Parker, E. H., 26, 51,
 319, 320, 338
 — G., 394
 — J. H., 438, 439
 — K. T., 444
 — Mrs. L., 11

- Parker, De W. H., 173
 Parkes, 376
 Parkman, 271, 374
 Parkyn, 441
 Parmelee, 159
 Parnell, 370
 Parodi, 146
 Parry, C. H. A., 175, 446, 449
 — Sir E., 362
 — E. L., 290
 Parsons, 39, 80
 Parthist, 276
 Parton, 383
 Partridge, C., 10
 — J. A., 368
 Pârvan, 313
 Pascal, 153
 Pasquet, 348
 Pasquier, Duc de, 276
 Passfield and Webb, 202
 Pastor, 253, 258
 Pater, 106
 Paterson, A. R., 215
 — W. M., 174
 — W. R., 410
 Patin, 450
 Paton, A. A., 226
 — Prof. D. Noel, 471
 Patrick, 159
 Patten, 205
 Patterson, A., 448
 — A. J., 295
 — L., 57
 Paturet, 407
 Paul, E. and C., 162, 297
 — Herbert, 190, 353
 Paul-Dubois, 372
 Paulhan, 159, 164
 Pauli, C., 255
 — R., 347, 354
 Paulsen, 115, 146, 418
 Paulus Aegineta, 431
 Pausanias, 37, 64, 236, 237
 Pauthier and Bazin, 321, 453
 Payne, 416
 Peake, Dr., 70
 — H., 3
 Pears, 239
 Pearson, A., 252
 — C. H., 218, 349, 350
 — Karl, 218, 429, 468, 470, 473
 Pease, 379
 Peddie, 434
 Pedley, 374
 Peel, 226
 Peet, 250, 255
 Peirce, 128
 Peitschmann, 51, 229
 Pelham, 242
 Pelisson, 247
 Pell, 184
 Pellissier, 114
 Pelt, 175
 Pengelly, 15
 Penido, 124
 Pennell, 337
 Pensa, 281
 Pérès, 176
 Perez, 157
 Perigot, 414
 Perkins, 268, 269
 Perlman, 384
 Perrens, 251, 268, 272
 Perrier, 4
 Perris, 198, 375
 Perrot and Chipiez, 230, 442
 Perry, 355
 Perrycoste, 63
 Peschel, 433
 Pestalozzi, 433
 Peter I, King, 302
 Peters, 8, 137
 Petersen, 44, 61
 Petre, F. L., 391
 — M. D., 257
 Petrie, 33, 48, 69, 225, 226, 442
 Petrovitch, 311
 Peyre, 443
 Pfister, 162
 Pfizmaier, 52
 Pfeiderer, E., 119
 — O., 78, 81, 84, 92, 119, 127
 Pflugk-Harttung, 287
 Pfohl, 448
 Philby, 405
 Philips, 23
 Philipps, 318
 Phillips, Sir P., 257
 Phillipson, 413
 Phillpotts, E., 64
 Philo Judaeus, 86, 95
 Philpot, Mrs., 37
 Phythian-Adams, 57
 Piat, 106
 Picattier, 279
 Picavet, 108, 117
 Pichon, R., 96
 — S., 76
 Pick, 75
 Picot, 270
 Picton, 62, 111
 Piderit, 163
 Pierre, 276, 279, 418
 Pierret, 49
 Pierson, 80, 196
 — W., 292
 Pigeonneau, 414
 Pignotti, 252
 Pigou, 197, 200, 204
 Pike, 342, 355
 Pilar, Princess, 263
 Pillans, 277
 Pilling, 392
 Pilo, 176
 Pimcott, 333
 Pimloche, 418
 Pinchbeck, 408
 Pinches, 50
 Pinckney, 382
 Pingaud, 270
 Pinnow, 287
 Pioble, 40
 Pirro, 449
 Pitt, 420
 Pittard, 5
 Pizard, 270
 Pizzamiglio, 415
 Platina, 257
 Plato, 95, 137, 168, 208
 Platt, Dr. C., 219
 — W., 464
 Pleyte, 50
 Plimblett, 191
 Pliny, 442
 Ploetz, 25
 Ploss, 406, 433
 Plowden, 368
 Plummer, 349
 Plunkett, E., 41
 — Sir H., 372
 — I. L., 28
 Plutarch, 39, 236, 237, 249
 Podmore, 66, 67, 185
 Poe, 173, 176
 Pöhlmann, 255, 414
 Poggendorf, 429
 Poincaré, 281, 400, 428
 Poire, 272
 Poirier, 395
 Poirson, 268
 Pole, D. and W., 175
 — W., 435
 Pollard, A. F., 345, 347, 350, 352, 398, 399
 — S., 10
 Pollock, Sir F., 111, 181, 208, 348, 411, 412
 Polybius, 208, 236, 237, 249
 Pompa, 120
 Pontalis, 283
 Pontet, 215

- Poole, R. L., 108, 253,
345, 356
— S. L., 225, 226,
260, 261, 314, 315,
317, 318, 330
Pooley, 325
Poore, 443
Pope, 443
Popham, 444
Popoff, 308
Porritt, 373
Porter, Sir J., 314
Posnett, 455
Postgate, 305
Potter, B. *See* Mrs.
S. Webb.
— E. S. G., 289
Poulton, 469
Powell, A. E., 173
— E., 350
— H. J., 434
— Y., 462
Powers, 444
Powicke, 347
Poynter, 438, 445
Pradhan, 329
Prantl, 151
Prat, 455
Pratt, 12
Preller, 42, 105
Prendergast, 370
Prescott, 259, 260, 261,
390
— Prof. F. C., 35
Pressensé, E. de, 276,
372
Prestage, 32
Preuschen, 50
Preuss, 246
Previté-Orton, 251
Prevost-Paradol, 25
Preyer, 157
Prezzelini, 257
Pribram, 296
Price, J. M., 376
— L. L., 197
— M. P., 339
— Dr. R., 182
— R. U., 170
Prichard, 114
Prienne, 285
Priest, 462
Priestley, 182
Prince, 159
Pringle-Pattison, A.
Seth, 113, 115, 126,
152
Prior, 439, 445
Probyn, 256
Pröls, 452, 453
Prothero, G. W., 347
— M., 194
Prou, 270
Proudon, 184, 187
Prowse, 374
Prutz, 291, 292
Ptolemy, 329
Pulszky, 214
Pulteney and Brice,
400
Punnett, 472, 479
Puschmann, 432
Putnam, Dr. G. H., 99,
457
— R., 283
Pycraft, 465
— W. P., 469
Quennell, 3
Quick, 419
Quiggin, 4, 5
Quigley and Clark, 293
Quislung, 308
Rabbe, 266, 383
Rabbeno, 204, 384
Radau, 222
Radhakrishnan, 132
Radin, G., 313
— P., 19
Rádl, 471
Radoit, 316
Rae, 189, 197
Raebiger, 92
Raffles, 340
Ragozin, 222
Rait, 359, 364, 418
Raleigh, T., 179
— W., 174, 399, 461
Ralli, 318
Ralph and Griffiths,
198
Ralston, 37, 302
Rambaud, 258, 265,
302
Ramsay, 247
— Sir A. C., 465
— J., 360
— Sir J., 344
— Prof. W. M., 79,
98
— Mrs. W. R., 315
Ramseyer, 422
Randall, H. S., 383
Randall-Maciver, 244,
250, 255
Ranee of Sarawak, 339
Rangachari, 9
Ranke, 258, 268, 288,
289, 311, 314, 354
Rankin, 269
Ransome, A., 455
— C., 344, 353
Rao, 335
Rappard, 401
Rappes, 416
Rappoport, 26, 104,
185, 231, 286, 303,
307, 452
Rapson, 328, 332
Raschke, 93
Rashdall, 134, 418, 419
Rasmussen, 14
Rassam, 222
Rastoul, 280
Rattigan, 412
Rattray, 11
Ratzel, 19, 397, 433
Ratzenhofer, 213, 216
Raup, 159
Rauter, 295
Raux, 280
Raven, 191
Ravenstein, 391
Raverty, 317, 337
Rawling, 15
Rawlinson, Canon, 229,
236, 326
— A. E. J., 78
— H. C., 328
Ray, 155
Raymond, 173
Raynaud, 415
Rayner, 478
Rea, 479
Read, C., 8, 16, 130,
136, 149, 150, 155
— F. W., 48
Reade, H. G. R., 289
— W., 20, 25
Reber, 441, 443
Reclus, 16, 22
Redesdale, Lord, 324
Redford, A., 198
— G., 442
Redlich and Hirst, 191,
348, 355
Reed, A. W., 452
— E. A., 463
— Sir E. J., 323
Rees, G. B., 175
— J. F., 434
— T., 366
— W. L., 377
Reeves, 361
— Hon. W. P., 377
Regnard, 448
Regnaud, 35, 163
Reichardt, 90
Reichenau, von, 119
Reid, 91, 111, 113, 116,
142, 169, 170
— A., 472
— L. A., 128
Reimann, 292
Reimarus, 79

- Rein, 324
 Reinach, 44
 — M., 442, 443
 — S., 47, 57, 83, 92, 301, 441
 Reindorf, 378, 394
 Reinsch, P. S., 188
 — S., 38
 Reissmann, 447
 Remiro, 260
 Rémond, 164
 Rémusat, 108
 Remy, 426
 Renan, 74, 77, 89, 97, 108, 111, 229, 246
 Renard, 414
 Rendall, G. H., 96
 — M. J., 416
 Rendle, 476, 478
 Renouf, 49
 Renouvier, 106, 123, 146, 155, 212, 218
 Requa, 385
 Reumont, von, 28, 251, 252
 Reupeil, 396
 Reuter, 383
 Réville, A., 47, 62, 92, 99
 — J., 57, 100
 Revon, 53, 454, 456
 Rey, 396
 Reybaud, 188
 Reyes, 389
 Reynolds, Sir J., 169
 Rhéthore, 113
 Rhodes, H. T. F., 218
 — J. F., 381
 Rhyn, 407
 Rhys, 37, 43, 61, 101, 342, 365, 366, 368
 Ribot, 118, 156, 158
 Ricardo, 183, 195, 203
 Riccoboni, 451
 Rice, C. C., 327, 407
 — D. T., 443
 Richard, 207, 411
 Richards, I. A., 167, 173, 177
 — R., 197
 — S. A., 408
 Richardson, Sir B. W., 431
 Richey, 368
 Richter, A., 292
 — J. P., 420
 — R., 107
 — W., 424
 Rickman, 439
 Ridgeway, Prof. W., 450, 454
 — W., 200
 Ridgeway, 232
 Rieder, 309
 Riedl, 462
 Riehl, 109
 Riemann, 447
 Rignano, 159
 Rilliet, 297
 Ringbom, 6
 Rink, 301
 Ripley, 5, 343
 Rippy, 392
 Rist, 197
 Ritchie, Prof., 145, 147, 187, 207, 215
 Ritter, H., 105
 — J., 109
 — M., 291
 — and Bailey, 136
 Rive, 271
 Rivers, 5, 9, 12, 16, 18, 159, 162, 178, 397, 414
 Rives, 383
 Robbins, A., 371
 — L., 198
 Robert, C., 42, 311
 Roberts, 468
 — C. G. D., 373
 — Earl, 337
 — G. L., 129
 — P., 425
 — P. E., 332
 — S. H., 397
 — W. R., 233
 Robertson, Prof. C., 111, 122
 — C. G., 253
 — D. H., 199, 200
 — D. S., 232, 438
 — E. W., 362
 — J. G., 462
 — W., 259
 — W. S., 388
 Robertson-Scott, 320
 Roberty, 118, 123, 127, 216
 Robin, 238
 Robinet, 274
 Robinson, A. G., 384
 — F., 94
 — G. L., 318
 — J. H., 28
 — R., 151
 — T. H., 79
 Robiou, 238
 — and Delaunay, 247
 Rochau, von, 291
 Rochemont, 441
 Rocholl, 423
 Röck, 106
 Rockhill, 54
 Rocquain, 257, 276
 Rodbertus, 186
 Rodkinson, 75
 Rodocanachi, 249
 Rodway, 378
 Rodwell, 60
 Rogers, A. G. L., 199
 — A. K., 104
 — A. W., 326
 — Dr. J., 331
 — M., 478
 — R. A. P., 134
 — R. W., 222
 — Thorold, 43, 190, 195, 282, 283
 Rohde, 58
 Róheim, 18
 — G., 40
 Rolland, 448
 Rolle, 40
 Romanes, Dr. G. J., 19, 472, 473, 474
 Romey, 262
 Rooke, 237
 Roscher, 45, 203
 — W., 38, 180, 195
 — W. H., 42
 Roscoe, J., 10
 — W., 251
 Rose, H. J., 250
 — J. H., 29, 276, 277, 293, 310, 378
 — S., 258
 Rosebery, 277
 Rosenberg, 340
 Rosenberger, 429
 Roskoff, 18
 Rosmini, 119
 Rosny, De, 323
 Ross, E., 379
 — E. A., 305, 321
 — E. D., 327
 — G. R. T., 110
 — J., 320, 422
 — J. M., 461
 — T., 439
 Rossbach, 447
 Rossenberf, 293
 Rossignol, 417
 Rossington, 83
 Rostovitzeff, 26, 180
 Rostrevor, 124
 Roth, H. L., 11
 — L., 111
 Rotha, 435
 Rothfeld, 334
 Rothwell, 133
 Rott, 297
 Round, 348
 Rouse, 58
 Rousseau, 14, 181, 208, 418, 420

- Rousselot, 109
 Routier, 389
 Routledge, R., 428
 — S., 397
 Roux, 278
 Rowbotham, 446
 Rowe, C. J., 373
 — J. W., 203
 — N. A., 397
 Rowell, 328
 Rowley, 60
 Rowntree, 189
 Rowse, 29, 192
 Royce, 125
 Royle, 226
 Rudy, 263
 Ruebel, 291
 Ruediger, 420
 Runciman, 277
 Rusden, 376, 377
 Rusk, 419
 Ruskin, 166, 175, 176,
 445
 Russell, A. L. N., 437
 — B., 104, 110, 112,
 124, 128, 129, 130,
 131, 155, 192, 305,
 321
 — E., 360
 — E. S., 471
 — G. W. E., 191
 — H., 341
 — H. S., 376
 Russier, 340
 Rutgers, 184
 Rutley, 467
 Rutter, F., 445
 — O., 13
 — W. P., 22
 Ruville, 352
 Ryan, C., 442
 — J. H., 104
 Rydberg, 42
 Rylands, 82, 88

 Sabatier, 78
 Sabatini, 253
 Sach, 292
 Sachau, 330
 Sachs, 430, 477
 Sadi, 463
 Sadler, M., 183
 — Prof. W. S., 184,
 219
 Saglio, 436
 Saint Amand, 269
 Saint-Hilaire, B., 93
 — R., 262
 St. John, 339
 — Sir S., 395
 St.-Léonard, 44
 Saint Martin, 326

 Saint-Priest, 258
 Saintsbury, 174, 177,
 455, 456, 457, 460
 Saint Simon, Duc de,
 65, 187, 209, 269
 Saintyves, 44
 Saisset, 107, 111
 Salaman, 76
 Sale, 60
 Saleeby, 184
 Salfi, 458
 Salisbury, 259, 297
 Sallust, 248
 Salmon, Dr., 90
 — F. R., 442
 Salmond, 411
 Salt, 187, 281
 Salter, A., 404
 — F. R., 189
 Salvandy, 309
 Salvemini, 257
 Salverte, 209
 Salzmann, 346
 Samaddar, 329
 Samson - Himmel-
 stierna, 303
 Samuel, 401
 Samuelson, 311
 Sanborn, 381
 Sandars, E., 469
 — T. C., 115
 Sanday, 86
 Sandberg, 338
 Sandys, 35, 237
 Sanford, 129
 Sanger, 130
 Sankara, 54
 Sankey, 236
 Santayana, 171
 Sargeant, L., 266
 Sargent, 188
 Sarkar, 330
 Sarolea, 306
 Sartiaux, 143
 Satow, 295
 Sauer, 458
 Saunders, Howard, 47
 — T. B., 63
 — W. B., 118
 Saussaye, De la, 47
 Sauter, 334
 Saville, 12
 Savory, 470
 Saxo-Grammaticus, 300
 Say, 270
 Sayce, 50, 71, 223, 229,
 236, 237
 Sayer, 261
 Schacht, 404
 Schaefer, 67
 Schaefer, A. D., 292
 — H., 262

 Schaeffer, 236
 Schaeffle, 187, 189, 212,
 213
 Schafarik, 296
 Schaff, 92
 Schanz, 354
 Schapera, 11
 Scharf, 380
 Schasler, 172
 Schebesta, 15
 Schechter, 75, 76
 Scheffer, 307
 Schelling, 114, 115, 116,
 170, 209
 — F. E., 452
 Scherer, H., 414
 — Prof. W., 462
 Scheuchzer, 323
 Schevill, 28, 252, 286
 Schiaparelli, 41
 Schieman, 309
 Schiller, F., 169, 170
 — F. C. S., 128,
 160
 — H., 25, 245, 416
 Schipper, 459
 Schlagintweit, 55
 Schlatter, 74
 Schlesinger, 385, 386
 Schliemann, 239, 240
 Schmalenbach, 112
 Schmalhausen, 406
 Schmid, C. A., 416
 Schmidt, A., 455
 — B., 44
 — C., 33, 408
 — J., 416
 — L., 291
 — Max, 5, 16, 390,
 392, 393
 — O., 3
 Schmiedel, 78, 81, 85,
 86
 Schmitt, 215
 Schmitz, H., 436
 — M., 249
 Schmoller, 196, 391,
 415
 Schmucker, 473
 Schneider, 474
 — E. H., 30, 39,
 433
 — H. W., 257
 — J., 291
 Schoelcher, 279, 395
 Schoemann, 237
 Schoen, 175
 Schofield, A., 163
 — W. H., 459
 Schomburgk, 378
 Schone, 272
 Schoolcraft, 386

- Schopenhauer, 118,
119, 126, 141, 143,
144, 163, 172
Schorn, 416
Schott, 55
Schrader, 19, 50
Schulin, 411
Schultze, F., 18
— J. W., 387
— V., 97
Schulze-Gavernitz, 189,
354, 434
Schurhammer, 53
Schurman, 143
Schutte, 343
Schuyler, E., 302
— R. L., 381, 382
Schwab, J. C., 382
— M., 75
Schwabe, H., 457
— H. L., 442
Schweiger-Lerchenfeld,
407
Schweinfurth, 394, 433
Schweinitz, 428
Schweitzer, A., 78, 79,
85, 88
— Ph., 462
Scotidis, 227
Scott, Dr. A., 88, 358
— A. B., 361
— A. M., 338
— Clement, 453
— Dr., 475, 479
— D. H., 476
— E., 376, 427
— G., 439
— H. M., 194
— H. S., 398
— Sir J. G., 55
— R., 425
— S. P., 260, 316
— Sir W., 461
— W. A., 197, 199
— W. R., 140, 202
Scott and Brooks, 475
Scott-Elliot, 391
Scott-Moncrieff, 98
Scrivener, 434
Scudamore, 286
Seager, 197
Seailles, 104, 123
Seal, 187
Sears, A. W., 468
— E. H., 188
— L. M., 383
Searson, 21
Sebillot, 343
Seccombe and Allen,
452, 460
Séché, 277
Sedgwick, F. R., 304
Sedillot, 316, 317
Seeböhm, F., 288, 347,
365, 411
— H. E., 238
Seed, 406
Seeley, Prof., 465
— Sir J. R., 277, 290
— R. B., 349
Seelye, 387
Segond, 124
Seignobos, 25, 29, 32,
258, 280, 412, 433
Seippel, 298
Seitz, 374
Sekon, 434
Selby-Bigge, 112, 113,
140
Seligman, Prof., 199
— Dr. C. G., 12, 14
— E. R. A., 197
Sell, 60
Sellers, 442
Semenoff, E., 304
— V., 305
Semler, 71, 87
Semon, 160, 469
Semper, 473
Sempere, 262
Sen, 330
Senart, 46, 55
Sencourt, 263
Seneca, 137
Senft, 423
Senior, 226, 413
Sense, 93
Sephton, 300
Sepp, 362
Sergeant, 240
Sergi, 255
Sering, 403
Servières, 290, 448
Seth A. *See* Pringle-
Pattison.
— James, 145
Seton-Watson, 296
Sevestre, 281
Seward, 476
Seydel, 56
Seyffert, 35
Seymour, C., 400
— F. W., 13
— J. B., 203
Shadwell, A., 189
— Gen., 332
Shaftesbury, 140, 141,
168
Shanahan, 388
Shann, 377
Sharp, Dr., 470
Sharpe, 102
Shastri, 104, 132
Shaw, A. E., 268
Shaw, W. A., 199, 201,
355, 356
Shawcross, 173
Shedd, 92
Shedlock, 448
Shelley, 27, 173
— G., 306
— H. C., 254
Shenstone, 169
Sheowing, 334
Shepherd, 270
Sheridan, Gen., 382
Sherman, 382
Shihlien, 322
Shiplee, 383
Shipman, 308
Shore, T. W. and L. E.,
343
Shortland, 37
Shotwell, 64, 404
Shuckburgh, 237, 242,
245, 249
Shucking, 398
Shute, 122
Sibley, 413
— and Westermann,
394
Sibree, 395
Sibthorpe, 378, 394
Sichel, Miss E., 268
— W., 190
Sicilian, 120, 217
Sidgwick, 181, 196
— A., 150, 155
— H., 121, 134, 138,
139, 141, 144, 145,
148, 180
— H. D., 250, 259,
264
Sidhanta, 27, 328
Sidney, A., 182
— P., 101
— Sir P., 168
Siecke, 38
Siegfried, 264, 281, 374
Sièrbois, 138
Sierra, 388
Sigwart, 153
Sihler, 98
Silani, 257
Silva, 262
Simcox, Miss E., 33,
320
— G. A., 457
Sime, 287
Simiand, 29
Simkhovitch, 189
Simmel, 146, 216
Simmond, 310
Simon, G. E., 321
— J. and G., 407
— L., 160

- Simons, 283
 Simpson, D. C., 72
 — L. F., 260
 — M. W. H., 11
 — S., 298
 — W., 55, 72
 Simrock, 43
 Sinding, 299
 Singer, 32, 431
 Sismondi, 265, 451,
 458
 Skae, 363
 Skeat, W. W., 13, 37
 Skeats, 356, 369
 Skelton, 360, 362
 Skene, M., 476
 — W. F., 361, 365
 Skrine, C. P., 320
 — F. H., 303
 Skrzynski, 310
 Sladen, 227
 Slater, 438
 Slavici, 296
 Sloane, 275, 277
 Small, A. W., 208
 — J., 461
 — and Vincent, 213
 Smart, F. W. B., 267
 — W., 186, 197, 199,
 202, 204
 Smellie, 364
 Smiles, 423, 435
 Smith, Miss A. L., 477,
 479
 — Adam, 141, 168,
 182, 195, 197, 202,
 209, 211, 214, 284
 — A. H., 320
 — A. L., 347
 — B., 81
 — D. H., 415
 — E. C., 382
 — F. E., 307, 413
 — G., 70
 — Gerard, 445
 — Goldwin, 63
 — G. A., 72
 — G. E., 4, 19, 159,
 162, 359
 — G. G., 456, 461
 — H. F. R., 182
 — H. L., 199
 — J. H., 186
 — J. W., 412
 — L. C., 341, 353
 — M., 63
 — N., 172
 — N. K., 114
 — P., 32
 — P. V., 348
 — R. B., 60, 229,
 244
 Smith, R. M., 384
 — R. T., 266
 — S., 221
 — S. P., 321
 — S. P. Kaines, 57
 — T. F. A., 293
 — T. R., 438
 — V. A., 26, 328,
 329, 330
 — W., 35, 114
 — W. C., 13
 — W. G., 478
 — W. H., 144, 381,
 410
 — W. R., 9, 51, 72,
 74, 316
 — W. W., 159
 Smuts, 376
 Smythe, C., 285
 Snell, 456, 460
 Snowball, 346
 Snowden, 408
 Socrates (histor.), 91
 Söderblom, 57
 Sohm, 411
 Sohrabji, 57
 Sokolow, 76
 Soldan, 391
 Sollas, 3
 Sollier, 163
 Solomon, 80
 Soltas, 271
 Soltau, 187, 188, 281
 Somary, 205
 Sombart, 187, 202
 Somerset, Duke of, 180
 Sonntag, 20
 Soothill, 319
 Sorel, A., 274, 295,
 314
 — G., 97, 217
 Sorley, 86, 112, 144,
 145, 150
 Sorokin, 306
 Soubies, 448
 Souriau, 176
 Soury, 51, 71, 110
 Sozomen, 91
 Spalding, 28, 250
 Sparks, E. E., 384
 — J., 383
 Spawn, 385
 Spearing, 98
 Spears, 381
 Specht, 418
 Speck, 414
 Spedding, 110, 351
 Spence, 470
 — Canon, 90, 98
 — J. M., 390
 — L., 35, 388
 — T., 185
 Spencer, B., and Gillen,
 11
 — Prof. F., 420
 — H., 18, 39, 41,
 64, 117, 118, 121,
 127, 144, 149, 150,
 156, 163, 166, 167,
 171, 178, 184, 186,
 207, 211, 213, 214,
 220, 420, 472, 474
 Spenser, 174, 370
 Spiegel, 326
 Spiers, 438
 Spiller, 220
 Spinka, 308
 Spinoza, 110, 111, 112,
 127, 139, 140, 147,
 181
 Spitta, 89
 Spon, 435
 Spooner, 434
 Sprague, 153
 Sprenger, 426
 Springer, 443
 Spuller, 279
 Spurzheim, 161
 Spykman, 216
 Squier, 389, 390
 Squire, 36, 42
 Stace, 105, 116, 131,
 177
 Stade, 69, 72
 Stadelmann, 417
 Stafford, 370
 Stahl, 432
 — R., 86, 87
 Stahr, 246
 Stainer, 351
 Stair, 12
 Stalin, 188, 307
 Stallo, 116, 429
 Stallybrass, viii, 42
 Stamp, D., 22, 23
 — Sir J., 195, 199,
 200, 403
 — L. D., 467
 Stangeland, 183
 Stanhope, Earl, 261, 352
 Stanley, H. M., 394,
 396
 Stannik, 304
 Stansbury, 64
 Stanton, H. U. W., 59
 — T., 408, 461
 — V. H., 77
 Stanwood, 204
 Starbuck, 47
 Starcke, 9, 406
 Staré, 296
 Starr, 33
 Statham, 393
 Staub, 218

- Stäudlin, 138
 Stawell, 233
 Stead, A., 312
 — W. T., 304, 375, 451
 Stebbing, 172
 — Miss, 150
 Steers, 465
 Stein, A., 16
 — H., 172
 — L., 112, 216
 Steiner, 317
 Steinhausen, 292
 Steinmetz, 422, 427
 Steinthal, H., 71
 — W., 280
 Stengel, 58
 Stenning, 308
 Step, 476, 478
 Stéphan, 389
 Stephen, D. J., 132
 — Sir J. F., 331, 412
 — Sir L., 62, 64, 111, 113, 134, 143, 144
 Stephens, Dean, 355
 — H. M., 259, 289, 345, 390
 — W. See Whale, Mrs. G.
 — Rev. W. R. W., 96, 253
 — W. W., 270
 Stephenson, 23
 Stepniak, 99, 304
 Stern, A., 455
 — M., 292
 "Stern, D.," 279
 Stetson, A., 67
 — C. P., 408
 Steudel, 81
 Steuding, 35
 Steveni, 305
 Stevens, 433
 — A., 357
 — E. T., 15
 — J. L., 301
 Stevenson, J., 54, 56
 — R. A. M., 444
 — W. B., 316
 — W. H., 349
 Stewart, D., 142, 170
 — H. F., 108
 — H. L., 188
 — J. A., 106
 — J. M., 124
 Stieve, 404
 Stiles, 476
 Stillman, 256
 Stillwell, 404
 Stimson, 389
 Stirling, Miss H., 361
 — J. H., 114, 115, 116
 Stobart, 59
 Stöckl, 119
 Stocks, 106
 Stockwell, 394
 Stoddard, F. H., 461
 — O., 383
 Stoffel, 245
 Stokes, F. G., 260
 — Prof. G. T., 369
 Stoll, 389
 Stomberg, 300
 Stone, C. J., 80
 — E. H., 15
 — E. M., 271
 — G., 409
 — T. G., 352
 Stopes, Mrs., 408
 Stopford, 95
 Storey, A., 163
 — M., 382
 Storrs and O'Brien, 241
 Stoughton, 253, 262
 Stout, G. B., 130, 159
 — R. and J. L., 377
 Stow, 393
 Strachan-Davidson, 248
 Straeten, 447
 Strahan, 158
 Strange, G. Le, 327
 — T. A., 436
 — T. L., 80
 Strasburger, 476
 Strassen, 20
 Stratilesco, 312
 Straus, 160
 Strauss, 78, 79, 80, 85, 119
 Streane, 74
 Streatfield, 447, 448
 Street, 263
 Streeter, 78
 Strehl, 248
 Streve, 295
 Strong, 160
 Strudwick, 478
 Struthers, 115, 153
 Stuart, D., 327
 — D. R., 249
 Stubblefield, 467
 Stubbs, Dr., 190, 288, 348, 349
 — J. W., 419
 Stucken, 41
 Stuckenberg, 213
 Studemund, 64
 Stumm, 339
 Sturdza, A. A. C., 312
 — D. A., 312
 Sturge, 67
 Sturgis, 437, 438
 Sturluson, 300
 Sturt, 148, 155
 Sudre, 280
 Suess, 21, 466
 Suetonius, 248
 Sugenheim, 410
 Sullivan, A. M., 367
 — Prof., 368
 Sully, J., 118, 156, 157, 163, 167, 171, 420
 — Duc de, 268
 Summers, 425
 Sumner, H. L., 384
 — W. G., 130
 — and Keller, 208, 215
 Sutherland, A., 136
 — A and G., 376
 — G., 435
 Swanton, 475, 478
 Swete, 87
 Swettenham, 339
 Swift, F. D., 261
 Swinburne, 184
 Swinder, 442
 Sybel, von, 258, 274, 290, 291
 Sykes, E., 201
 — E. C., 327
 — Sir P., 326
 Sylvester, 174
 Symes, 273
 Symonds, 105, 252, 254, 444, 452
 Symons, 228
 Tabari, 326
 Tacitus, 248, 287
 Taggart, 29
 Tagore, 453
 Taine, 117, 157, 172, 248, 274, 275, 459, 460
 Takekoshi, 199
 Takepoohi, 325
 Talbot, 96
 Talleyrand, 278
 T'ang Leang Li, 322
 Tanner, E. M., 288
 — J. R., 346
 Tansley, 476
 Taplin, 11
 Tapper, 447
 Tarbell, F. B., 441
 — I. M., 274
 Tarde, 164, 216, 411
 Tardieu, 400
 Tarsot, 418

- Tarver, E. J., 437
 — J. C., 245
 Tatham, E. H. R., 309
 — G. B., 351
 Tatian, 87
 Taussig, 197, 204, 384
 Tawney, 187, 198
 Taylor, 426
 — A. E., 146
 — Bayard, 287, 291
 — Dr. C., 90, 91
 — G. R. S., 190
 — H., 145
 — H. O., 108, 359
 — I., 5, 244
 — Col. Meadows, 320
 — R., 13, 80
 — S., 449
 — T., 107
 Teeling, 370
 Tejada, 392
 Telang, 54
 Teleki, 294
 Temperley, H., 392
 — H. W. V., 193, 400
 Temple, Sir R. C., 331, 333
 — Sir W., 284
 Ten Brink, B., 459
 — J., 462
 Tennent, 339
 Tenney, 183
 Tenzzer, 215
 Terman, 159
 Ternaux-Campans, 390
 Terry, 358, 363, 364
 Testard, 460
 Teuffel, 457
 Teulon, 423
 Texier and Pullan, 438
 Texte, 463
 Tharaud, 74
 Thayer, W. R., 256
 Theal, 375, 376, 393
 Theobald, 468
 Theodoret, 91
 Théry, 227
 Thibaut, 54
 Thibeau-deau, 276
 Thierry, Amedée, 96, 270, 354
 — Augustin, 270
 Thiers, 269, 274, 276, 278
 Thilly, 104, 134
 Thirwall, 232, 233, 238
 Thomas, B., 316
 — C., 462
 — E., 56, 279
 — E. D., 322
 Thomas, F., 111, 215
 — J. P., 198
 — N. W., 9, 11
 — W. I., 407
 Thompson, E., 9
 — D. J. W., 28
 — G., 391
 — J. M., 79
 — R. E., 204
 — V. A., 167
 — W., 185, 186
 — Waddy, 379
 Thomsen, 299
 Thomson, B., 12
 — C. L., 374
 — G. M., 364
 — J., 11, 432, 471
 — Sir J. A., 406, 468, 469, 470, 472, 473
 — J. A. K., 233
 — M., 333
 — W. G., 436
 Thorburn, 83
 Thorgelsson, 299
 Thorndike, 28, 30, 459
 Thorney, 350
 Thorpe, B., 354
 — Sir E., 429
 Thucydides, 236, 237
 Thurston, 9
 Thynne, 377
 Ticknor, 451, 458
 Tiele, 43, 47, 48, 51, 52, 61
 Tikhomirov, 303
 Tilaker, 54
 Tilby, 160
 Tillemont, 326
 Tilley, 266, 458
 Tilney, Prof., 161
 — F. C., 443
 Tiraboschi, 457
 Tisdall, 83
 Tissot, 304
 Titchener, 156, 159
 Titherington, 383
 Tivier, 451, 455
 Tocqueville, 273, 274
 Todd, A., 191, 353
 — J. A., 201
 Todhunter, 153
 Tönnies, 216
 Tolstoy, 173, 304
 Tooke, 19
 Topinard, 5, 393
 Topse-Jensen, 462
 Torday, 11
 Tormay, 296
 Torrens, 331
 Tournan, 281
 Tourville, 215, 217
 Tout, 257, 288, 341, 345, 349, 353
 Toutain, 198
 Townsend, 357, 478
 Toynbee, A., 415
 — A. J., 226, 286, 400, 404
 — P. J., 254
 Tozer, 22
 — A. M., 8
 — H. F., 239
 — H. J., 181
 Traill, 163, 346, 351, 352
 Trailokyanatha, 436
 Transeau, 476
 Trede, 44
 Treich, 281
 Treitschke, 290
 Tremearne, 11
 Trendelenburg, 132
 Trent, 461
 Trevelyan, G. M., 256, 342, 344, 347, 350, 352, 353
 — Mrs. G. M., 250
 — Sir G. O., 333, 352
 — G. O. M., 29
 Trismegistus, 93
 Troland, 159
 Trolle, 255
 Trollope, A., 378
 — T. A., 251, 253
 Trotter, 331, 333
 Trotzky, 306, 307
 Trouverez, 123
 Trumbull, 203
 Trumpp, 56
 Tucker, 169
 — J., 182
 — J. G., 239
 Tuckermann, A. L., 437
 — W. P., 427
 Tuma, 312
 Turgot, 208, 210, 270, 271
 Turiello, 188
 Turmel, 88, 99, 103
 Turnbull, 113
 Turner, C. E., 462
 — F. S., 423
 — G., 12
 — J. E., 129, 134
 — S., 343
 — T. H., 439
 Twain, M., 67
 Twiss, 197
 Tyler, 393
 Tylor, 2, 3, 16, 17, 19, 37, 41, 178, 406, 411, 425, 433

- Tyndale, 254
 Tyndall, 467
 Tyrrell, 100
 Tyrrell, 467
 Tyrwhitt, 438
 Tyson, 15
 Tytler, 359

 Ubicini, 315
 Ueberweg, 104, 108,
 120, 139, 151
 Uhlhorn, 97
 Ular, 304
 Ulman, 291
 Ullmann, 96
 Underhill, 63, 109
 Unger, 199
 Unwin, 198, 349
 Upward, 52, 315
 Ure, 434, 435
 Urwick, E. J., 106,
 132
 — W., 369
 Usher, A. P., 198
 — R. G., 379
 Using, 417

 Vaihinger, 114, 122,
 131, 143, 144
 Vaissiere, 268
 Valois, 266
 Vambéry, 60, 294, 315,
 338
 Vandal, 277, 303
 Vandam, 279
 Vanderkindere, 283,
 285
 Vanderlinde, 426
 Vandervelde, 286
 Van Doren, 461
 Van Eysinga, 78, 82,
 89
 Van Kampen, 282, 285
 Van Limburg, 286
 Van Lennep, 282
 Van Loon, H., 24
 — H. W., 283
 Van Manen, 88
 Van Middeldyk, 392
 Van Muyden, 297, 298
 Vansteen-Berghe, 109
 Van Tyne, 353, 380
 Van Vloten, 111
 — G., 317
 Van Wijk, 312
 Varendouck, 162
 Varigny, 468
 Varisco, 128
 Vasiliev, 130
 Vassilyev, 304
 Vaughan, 456
 Vaux, 222, 326

 Veale, 307
 Veblen, 214
 Vedder, 422
 Veditz, 197
 Vehse, 295
 Veitch, 116, 151
 Velasco, 390
 Velleius Paterculus, 248
 Vendriges, 25
 Venn, 152, 153
 Venturi, 256
 — A., 443
 Vercamer, 285
 Verlander, 133
 Vernadsky, 307
 Vernes, 47
 Vernon, 473
 — Mrs., 250, 255
 Véron, 46, 171
 Verrall, 416
 Verschoyle, 30
 Verworn, 474
 Vésinier, 279
 Vicary, 299
 Vickers, 344
 Vico, 120, 208
 Vigfusson, 462
 Vignes, 216
 Vignoli, 36, 41
 Vignon, 281
 Vigouroux, 377
 Vijnne, 282
 Vilevsky, 296
 Villa, 164
 Villari, 250, 251, 254
 Villefranche, 279
 Villemain, 253
 Villermont, 295
 Villiers, 408
 Vilmar, 463
 Vincent, 297
 Vinchon, 43
 Vinci, 172
 Vinogradoff, 344, 346,
 411, 412
 Vinson, 48
 Viollet-le-Duc, 437, 439
 Vischer, 172
 Vissering, 199, 201
 Vivian, H., 312, 396
 — P., 64, 101
 Vogt, C., 119
 Vogué, 462
 Voigt, 253
 — Dr. G., 258
 — M., 412
 Vollgraff, 249
 Volney, 39, 80, 209
 Voltaire, 80, 113, 114,
 208, 209, 269
 Von Soden, 78, 83
 Vowenel, 164

 Vuillier, 427

 Wace, 99
 "W. B.," 12
 Waddell, 55
 Wadding, 421
 Waddington, C., 105
 — J., 357
 Waddie, 158
 Wadia, A. R., 406
 — P. A., 199
 Wagner, A., 183
 Wahl, 133
 Waitz, 2, 16, 392, 433
 Wake, 40
 Wakeman, H. O., 290,
 348, 355, 356, 368,
 412
 Walckenaer, 209
 Waldo, 23
 Walford, 237
 Waliszewski, 302, 462
 Walker, E., 448
 — E. A., 375
 — H., 460
 — H. W., 12
 — L. E., 284
 — T. A., 413
 — W., 422
 Wallace, A. R., 20, 34,
 189, 340, 429, 469,
 472, 474
 — E., 106
 — Dr. Mackenzie,
 303
 — R., 423
 — W., 175, 446
 — Prof. W., 107,
 110, 115, 118, 136,
 153
 — W. S., 374
 Wallas, 183, 189, 190,
 219
 Wallaschek, 447
 Wallé, 391
 Wallin, 158
 Wallon, H., 410
 — H. A., 270, 350
 — H. H., 266
 Walpole, C. G., 367
 — S., 191, 353
 Walsh, J. H., 426
 — T., 369
 — W. T., 261
 Walston, 442
 Walter, 472
 Wangemann, 448
 Ward, A. W., 234, 283,
 287, 288, 289, 352,
 364, 452
 — H., 17, 130, 131,
 394

- Ward, J., 115, 158, 159,
342
— J. W. C., 90
— Lester, 207, 214
— Marshall, 475
— S., 135
— T. H., 353
Warner, F., 157
— T., 355
— Sir W. L., 333
Warnkoenig, 282, 285
Warr, 457
Wæren, H. C., 160
— H. L., 438
— R. C., 55
Warschauer, J., 83
— O., 187
Washburn, C. A., 391
— Dr. M. F., 159
Washington, 387
Wasmann, 474
Waters, 198, 346
Watt, Sir G., 334
— H. J., 175, 449
Watts, A., 435
— C., 62
— H. E., 261
— W. W., 464, 465
Watson, Dr. F., 417
— G., 263
— G. L. de St. M.,
277
— J. B., 159
— P. B., 300
— T. E., 277
— W. J., 361, 457
Waugh, A. T., 314
— W. T., 350
Wauters, 284
Wauwermans, 394
Waxweiler, 213
Webb, B., 202
— S., 186
— and Mrs., 189
— Mrs., 203, 415
Weber, A.; 53, 55, 133,
202, 329; 456
— G., 463
— H., 224, 271
— Max, 198
— O., 317
Webster, H., 24
— W. C., 414
Wedgwood, 19
Weeden, T., 376
— W. B., 384
Wegelin, 209
Wegener, 467
Weigall, 224
Weil, 60, 279, 317
Weill, A., 423
— E., 407
Weir, J., 157
— Dr. T. H., 59, 71,
316
Weismann, 472, 473
Weiss, B., 78
— J., 103
— J. B., 26, 240
Weitemeyer, 300
Weitenkamf, 445
Weizsäcker, 87, 101
Welby, 461
Welch, 346
Weller, 240
Wellhausen, 69, 72, 73,
78, 85, 316, 317
Wells, B. W., 458
— C., 463
— H. G., 24, 218,
402
— L. R., 384
Welton, 420
Wenley, 107
Wenzelburger, 282, 285
Werner, A., 10
— M. R., 66
Wernle, 81
Wertheimer, 200, 294
— E. de, 278
West, 477
— E. W., 56, 57
— G. H., 438
— Julius. See Rap-
poport.
Westcott, 58
Westermann, 394
Westermarck, 6, 7, 8,
10, 16, 135, 406, 411
Westgarth, 377
Westlake, 413
Weston, Miss, 40
Westphal, A., 68
— R., 447
Westropp, 40, 249
Wethered, 176
Weyandt, 461
Weymouth, 102
Whale, Mrs., 82, 266
— P. B., 199
Wheaton, 299, 413
Wheeler, B. J., 236
— C. K., 132
— G. C., 219
— G. O., 436
— J. M., 100
— J. Talboys, 331,
333, 337
— R. E. M., 342
Wheeler-Bennett, 404
Whetham, 34, 429
Whewell, 140, 141, 142,
143, 428
Whibley, L., 179, 236
Whigham, 327
Whistler, 176
White, A., 428
— A. G., 64
— A. S., 226
— F. S., 34, 438
— G., 468
— G. F., 263
— H. A., 382
— J., 377
— Col. S. D., 333
— W., 432
Whitehead, A. N., 129,
130
— A. W., 268
— G., 335
Whiteway, Prof., 332
Whitman, S., 294
Whitney, 298
Whittaker, T., 38, 66,
88, 97, 107, 108, 109,
118, 122, 130, 131,
134, 147, 189, 218
Whittall, 289
Whittle, 387
Whitton, 381
Whyte, A. G., 135
— A. J., 256
Wickwar, 426
Widgery, 134
Widmann, 291
Wiedemann, 49, 225
Wiegler, 251
Wieser, 197, 202
— F. von, 205
Wieth-Knudsen, 406
Wigand, 292
Wilamowitz-Moellen-
dorff, 236
Wilberforce, 333
Wilhelm, 32, 320, 321,
433
Wilken, 258
Wilkins, A. S., 417
— W. J., 43, 53
Wilkinson, Sir G., 49,
225, 438
— M., 268
Wilks, 332
Willard, 445
Willems, 247
Willert, 267, 268, 274
William, 217
— II., 400
Williams, A. R., 307
— C. H., 350
— C. M., 136
— F. W., 319
— G. W., 381
— H. L., 366
— H. M., 276
— H. N., 269

- Williams, H. S., 25, 428
 — Monier, 53, 333
 — R., 401
 — S. W., 319
 — T., 12
 — W. M., 161
 — W. R., 366
 Williamson, J. A., 344,
 353, 373
 — R. W., 12, 14, 397
 Willis, 476, 479
 Willoughby, H. R., 58,
 97, 138
 — W. C., 375
 — W. W., 181, 385
 Wills, C. J., 327
 — J. C., 339
 — L. J., 466
 Willshire, 427
 Willson, 332, 374, 375
 Wilmore, 21, 22, 464
 Wilmot, 394
 Wilson, 433
 — A. J., 201
 — Sir A. T., 326
 — C., 151
 — C. R., 331
 — Prof. D., 361
 — E. B., 471
 — H., 455
 — H. H., 53, 54, 331,
 453
 — H. W., 325
 — W., 180, 382
 — Woodrow, 383
 Winckelmann, 170, 442
 Winckler, 43, 50, 51,
 69, 72, 222
 Windelband, 105
 Windle, 15, 342
 Winfield, 413
 Winsor, 271, 380, 386,
 388
 Winter, E., 20
 — G., 292
 Winterbottom, 203
 Winternitz, 453
 Wishart, 422
 Wissener, 271
 Wissler, 13, 214
 Wissowa, 59
 Withers, 199, 200, 201,
 202
 Withington, 431
 Witt, 445
 Wittels, 162
 Wittgenstein, 129, 155
 Woelflin, 443
 Wolf, A., 155
 — J., 449
 — L., 304
 Wolff, 338
 Wollaston, 15
 Wollstonecraft, 182,
 408
 Wolowski, 195
 Wolseley, 277
 Wolski, 309
 Woltmann, C. L. von,
 292
 — and Woermann,
 443
 Wood, A., 449
 — Sir E., 333
 — G., 376
 — H. F., 227
 — H. G., 64
 — J., 53, 167
 — J. G., 426
 — J. G. and Th.,
 468
 — S. T., 194
 Woodbridge, 446
 Woodhouse, 457
 Wood-Martin, 43, 61
 Woodruff, 473
 Woods, H., 466
 — M., 190
 Woodward, A. F., 426
 — H. B., 430, 467
 — W. H., 254
 Woodworth, 156
 Woolcock, 423
 Woolley, 26, 51, 69, 221
 Woolsey, 180, 413
 Wooten, 380
 Worcester, 389
 Wordsworth, 172, 174
 — Bishop, 257
 Workman, 347, 357
 Worms, 207
 Worsaae, 436
 Worsfold, 231
 Worthington, 439
 Wortley, 399
 Wouters, 285
 Wrede, 77, 79, 85, 88
 Wright, A., 78, 339
 — C. H., 458
 — C. H. C., 451
 — C. H. H., 73
 — D., 338
 — F. A., 407
 — G. H. B., 68, 72
 — H., 184
 — J. H., 25, 234
 — R. F., 413
 — T., 99, 342, 407,
 408, 426
 — W., 223
 — W. B., 467
 — W. P., 427
 Wrightson, 250
 Wrong, 271, 374
 Wundt, 146, 157
 Wurm, 46
 Wuttke, 61
 Wyatt, 158
 Wyde, 396
 Wylie, 350
 Wyon, 311, 352
 Xenophon, 236, 237
 Yamagata, 323
 Yapp, 476
 Yearsley, 69
 Yeats, 433
 Yerks, 20
 Yetts, 445
 Yoshisaburo, 324
 You, 395
 Young, A., 270, 282,
 370
 — A. M., 325
 — D., 366
 — E., 21, 337
 — G., 228
 — K., 451
 — N., 277
 — T., 102
 Ypres, Earl of, 400
 Yriarte, 252
 Yule, 184
 "Z." 227
 Zaidin, 260
 Zammit, 16
 Zanichelli, 256
 Zart, 119
 Zeller, B., 268, 270
 — E., 86, 105, 107,
 119, 136
 — J., 253, 291
 Zenker, 192, 295
 Zettlin, 83
 Zevort, 278, 280
 Ziegler, 138, 416
 Ziliacus, 304
 Zimmer, 479
 — H., 365, 369
 Zimmermann, 172
 — A., 262, 292
 — J., 263
 — W., 287, 291
 Zimmerman, A., 178, 180,
 192, 419
 — H., 118
 — and Chaytor, 245
 Zincke, 227
 Zittel, von, 430, 466
 Zoller, 247
 Zwemer, 59

An entirely New Edition of
DENNIS HIRD'S
A PICTURE BOOK OF
EVOLUTION

Revised and brought up to date by
SURGEON REAR-ADMIRAL BEADNELL,
C.B., K.H.P., M.R.C.S.(Eng.)
 With Foreword by **SIR ARTHUR KEITH**

CONTENTS

SIMPLE EXAMPLES:—The Law of Growth—The Evolution of the Bicycle—The Horse, Elephant, Camel, Man, come from a group of animals not unlike Shrews.

ASTRONOMY:—How the Stars and our World came into their present state—The Moon a Dead and Airless World—Worlds in the Making.

GEOLOGY:—Stratified Rocks and the early forms of Birds, Beasts, and Reptiles as shown therein.

ZOOLOGY:—The lowest form of Animal Life—The Origin of the Backbone—Our "Third Eye"—Winged Reptiles.

MONKEYS AND MAN:—A curious Animal—How the Whale suckles her Young—Man-like Animals—Primitive Types of Human Beings.

AN OUTLINE OF THE LAWS OF EVOLUTION:—The Law of Heredity—The Law of Variation—The Law of Over-production and Over-population—The Struggle for Existence.

DEVELOPMENT AND VARIATION:—Artificial Selection—The Ancestor of the Chrysanthemum—"Throw-backs"—The adaptation of the Human Embryo.

COMPARATIVE ANATOMY:—Bones of Horse and Man are alike—The Webbed Limbs of the Human Embryo—Brains of Fish, Reptile, Bird, Mammal, and Man compared—The Organ of Thought.

EMBRYOLOGY AND RUDIMENTS:—The marvellous likeness existing between Animal Forms—Bacteria—The Springing Monad—Man has seventy little things which might be termed rudimentary.

PEDIGREE OF MAN:—A Review of a number of groups showing the probable Pedigree of Man from the Dawn of Life. Etc., Etc.

80,000 words
 260 illustrations

NET
10s. 6d.
 (by post 11s. 3d.)

bound in cloth
gold lettered

LONDON: WATTS & CO., 5 & 6 JOHNSON'S COURT, FLEET STREET, E.C. 4

Acc. No.

17376

THE WORLD OF YOUTH LIBRARY

Each 160 pp., strongly bound in cloth, with illustrations :
1s. 6d., by post 1s. 10d.

Nos. 1, 6, and 7 can be had in leather, with gilt top, 4s. 6d. net,
by post 4s. 11d.

1. **Great Sons of Greece** By F. J. GOULD
The Plutarchian Heroes are made to live again in Mr. Gould's fascinating pages.
2. **Temple Bells ; or, The Faiths of Many Lands** By E. ROYSTON PIKE
3. **The Origin of the World** By R. McMILLAN
The questionings of a young girl about the universe are here answered by an old and much-travelled friend.
4. **H.M.S. "Beagle" in South America** By Mrs. AMABEL WILLIAMS-ELLIS
This is the story of Charles Darwin's voyage to South America and the islands of the southern sea.
5. **Our World and Us** By A. GOWANS WHYTE
A fascinating account of what the world is made of, and "how its wheels go round," from the atom to the star.
6. **Boys and Girls and Gods** By NAOMI MITCHISON
Ten stories dealing with the lives of boys and girls who lived in the centuries before Christ.
7. **From Pyramid to Skyscraper** By H. BELLIS
An interesting study on the evolution of Architecture.
8. **Great Sons of Rome** By F. J. GOULD
A companion to "Great Sons of Greece."
9. **Bright Lamps of History and Daily Life** By F. J. GOULD
Stories of great deeds of many lands and times.
10. **The Wonder World : an Introduction to Biology** By A. GOWANS WHYTE
11. **African Stories** By Professor ALICE WERNER
Introduces Africans to their English cousins. Tells how Africans live.
12. **How Life Goes On** By A. GOWANS WHYTE
Tells how plants and animals contrive to live on from generation to generation.
13. **A Pre-History Reader** By T. F. G. DEXTER
History, not from books, but from Things.
14. **In Search of Wild Flowers, with J. F. RAYNER**
A Preliminary to the systematic study of Botany.

LONDON: WATTS & CO., 5 & 6 JOHNSON'S COURT, FLEET STREET, E.C. 4